



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

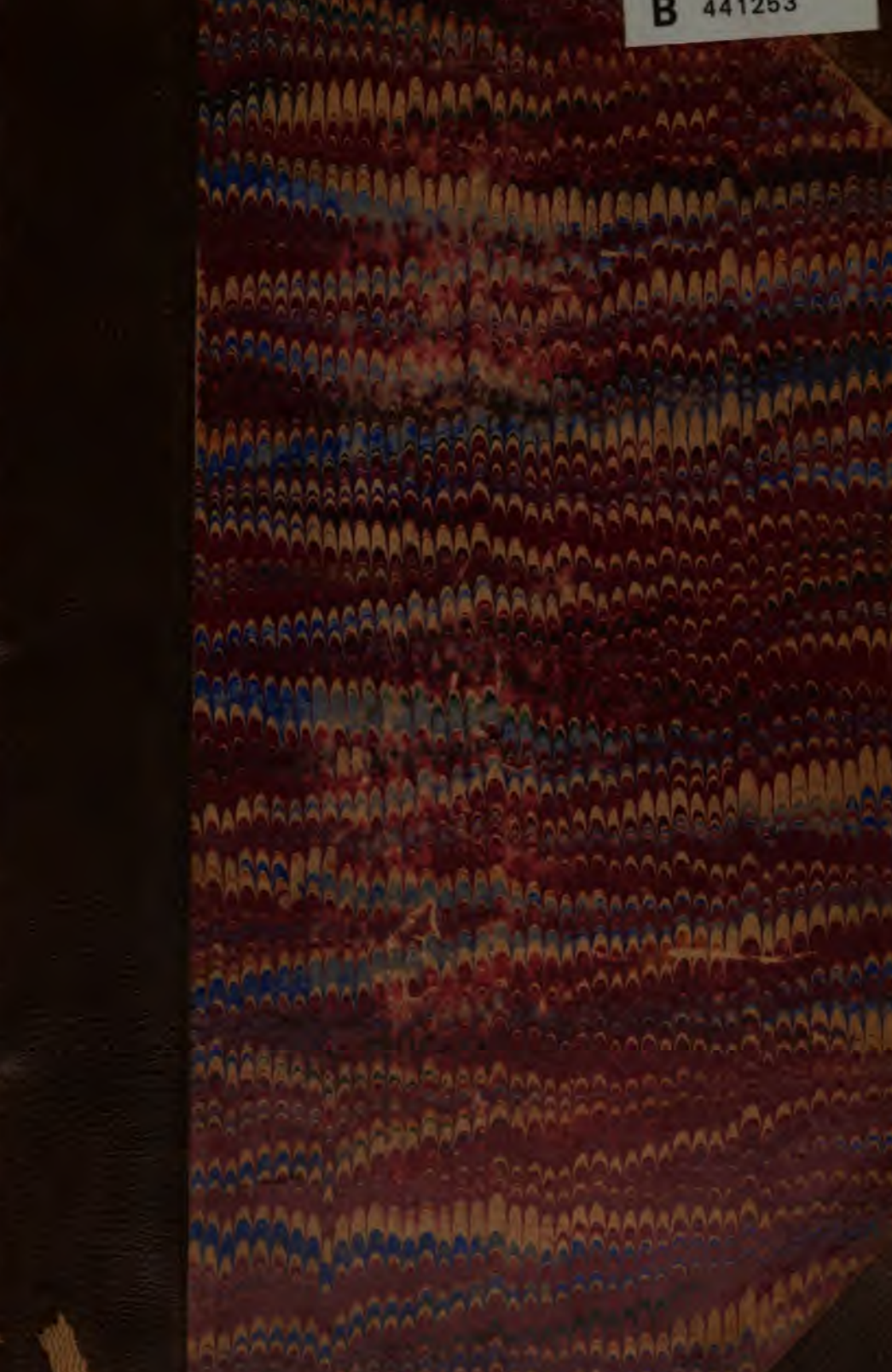
We also ask that you:

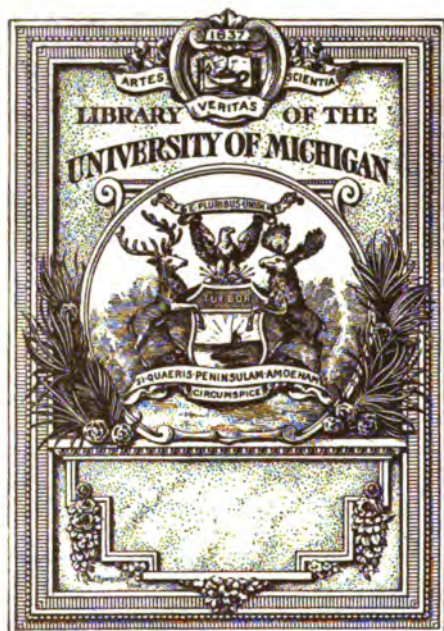
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

B 441253



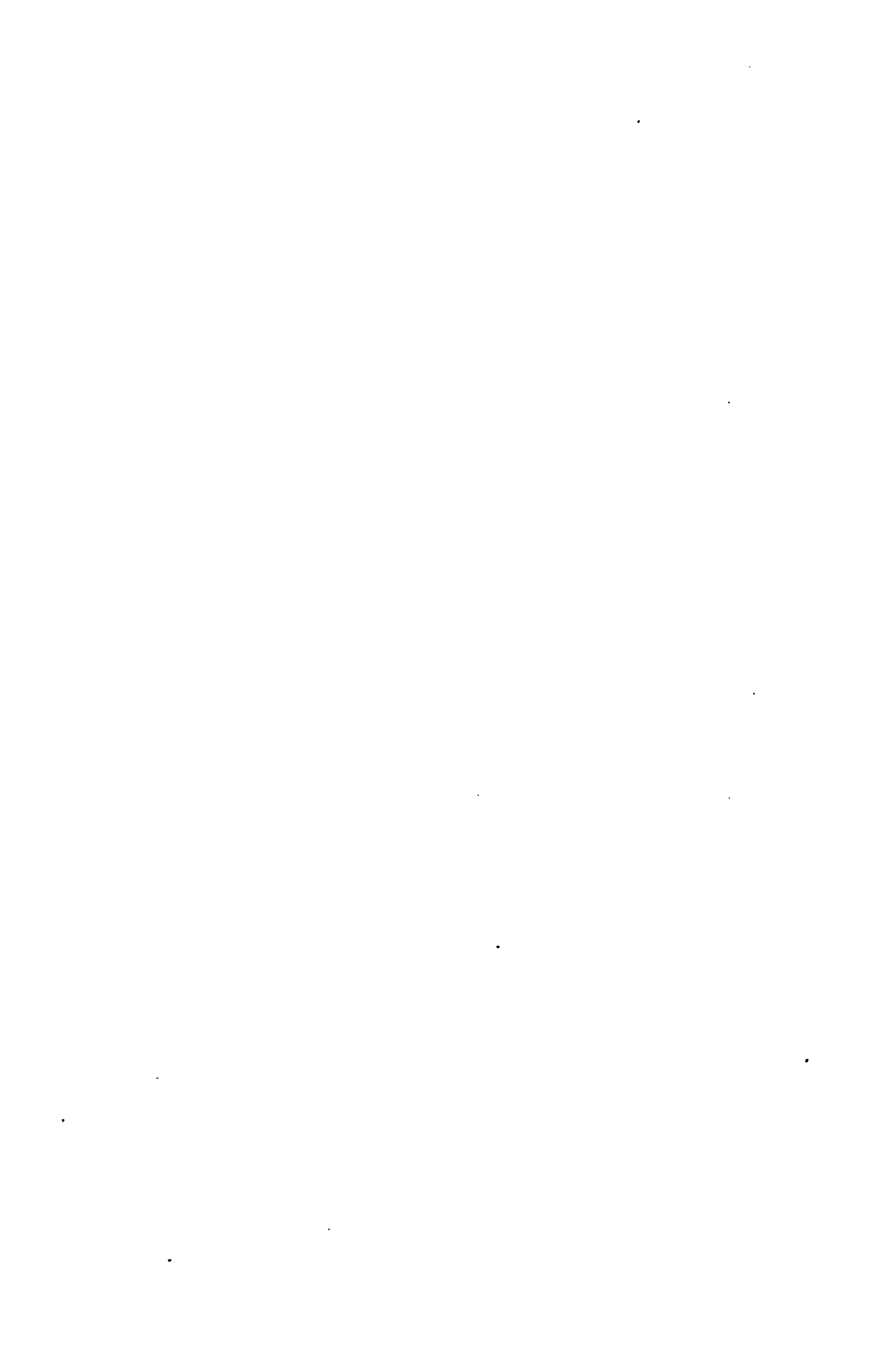


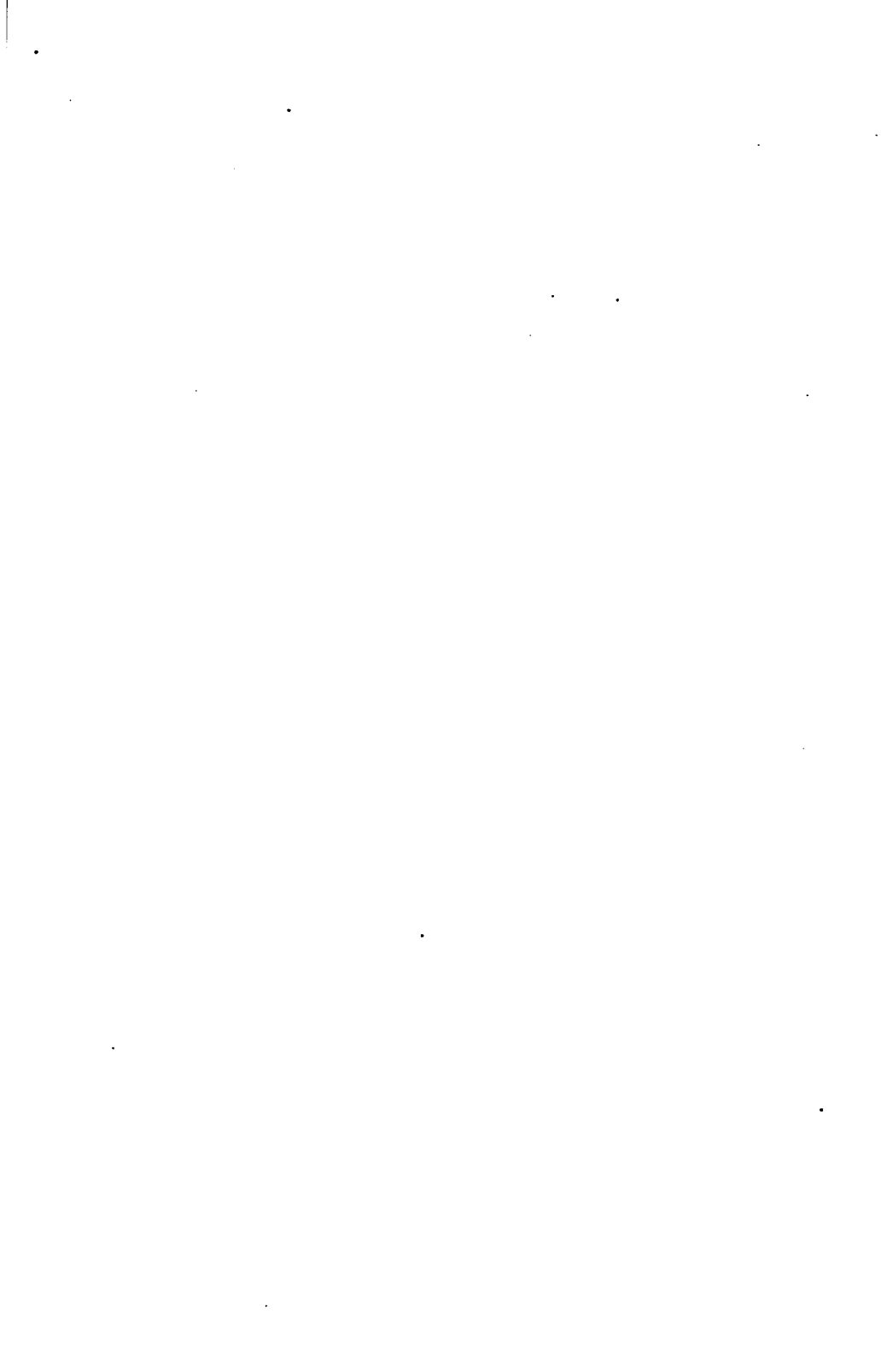
BX

8201

,M59







1881 3

METHODIST QUARTERLY REVIEW.

1881.



VOLUME LXIII.—FOURTH SERIES, VOLUME XXXIII.

D. D. WHEDON, LL.D., EDITOR.



NEW YORK:
PHILLIPS & HUNT.
CINCINNATI:
WALDEN & STOWE.

1881.



CONTENTS OF VOLUME LXIII.—1881.

JANUARY NUMBER.

	PAGE
LIFE AND WORKS OF HAMLINE.....	5
Rev. D. P. KIDDER, D.D., Professor, Drew Theological Seminary, Madison, N. J.	
OUR PACIFIC COAST PROBLEM.....	23
Rev. A. J. HANSON, A.M., San Francisco, Cal.	
PAN-PRESBYTERIAN COUNCIL.....	45
Rev. A. C. GEORGE, D.D., Chicago, Ill.	
ZOROASTER AND ZOROASTRIANISM.....	61
Rev. J. N. FRADENBURGH, Ph.D., Franklin, Pa.	
THE OLD TESTAMENT APOCRYPHA.....	77
Rev. M. B. TERRY, D.D., New York.	
BAIRD'S "RISE OF THE HUGUENOTS".....	103
Rev. E. B. OTHEMAN, A.M., Chelsea, Mass.	
PHASES OF THE CONFLICT BETWEEN FAITH AND INFIDELITY IN GERMANY.....	123
Rev. FRANK L. NAGLER, East Saginaw, Mich.	
SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES.....	144
FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.....	175
QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE.....	178

APRIL NUMBER.

MAN'S PLACE IN TIME.....	205
JAMES C. SOUTHALL, Esq., Richmond, Va.	
THE OLD BIBLES. THE HEBREW BIBLE DISTINGUISHED AMONG THEM.....	231
Rev. GEORGE W. HENNING, Topeka, Kansas.	
SOME CHARACTERISTICS OF ENGLISH THOUGHT IN THE EIGHT- EENTH CENTURY.....	246
Prof. WINCHESTER, Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn.	
THE RELATIONS OF THE CHURCHES AND MR. GARRISON TO THE AMERICAN ANTISLAVERY MOVEMENT. [ARTICLE FIRST].....	270
Rev. DANIEL DORCHESTER, D.D., Natick, Mass.	
THE PLACE OF CONGREGATIONALISM IN HISTORY AND LITERA- TURE.....	286
Rev. JOHN F. HURST, D.D., one of the Bishops of the Methodist Episcopal Church.	
HEERMANN LOTZE.....	312
W. L. GOODING, A.M., Heidelberg.	
HARRIET MARTINEAU.....	330
Rev. CHARLES ADAMS, D.D., Washington, D. C.	
SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES.....	339
FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.....	370
FOREIGN LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.....	373
QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE.....	375

JULY NUMBER.

	PAGE
THE TERRITORY OF ALASKA.....	405
Rev. DANIEL WISE, D.D., Englewood, N. J.	
ARE INDIAN MISSIONS A FAILURE?.....	424
Rev. J. E. SCOTT, Seetapore, Oudh, India.	
THE FREEDOM OF CHOICE	434
Rev. J. MILEY, D.D., Professor in Drew Theological Seminary, Madison, N. J.	
OUR GERMAN METHODISM: ITS HOPES AND DANGERS..	463
Rev. GEORGE GUTH, Covington, Ky.	
THE RELATIONS OF THE CHURCHES AND MR. GARRISON TO THE AMERICAN ANTISLAVERY MOVEMENT. [SECOND ARTICLE].....	474
Rev. DANIEL DORCHESTER, D.D., Natick, Mass.	
THE WESLEY MEMORIAL VOLUME.....	501
Rev. E. N. SLEDD, D.D., Richmond, Va.	
THAKOMBAU, CANNIBAL AND CHRISTIAN.....	521
Rev. JOHN ARMITAGE, Editor of the "New Zealand Wesleyan."	
SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES.....	537
FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.....	554
FOREIGN LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.....	557
QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE.....	560

OCTOBER NUMBER.

HINDU ECLECTICISM.....	605
RAM CHANDER BOSE, India.	
SHAKESPEARE: HIS GENIUS AND TIMES.....	623
Rev. HENRY J. FOX, D.D., East Saugus, Mass.	
POPULAR EDUCATION THE GENIUS OF AMERICAN INSTITUTIONS. 635	
Rev. BOSTWICK HAWLEY, D.D., Saratoga, N. Y.	
CHRIST AND OUR CENTURY	655
ANDREW A. LIPSCOMB, D.D., Athens, Ga.	
THE EARLY ERRORS AND RECENT PROGRESS OF PHILOLOGY.....	670
L. A. SHERMAN, Ph.D., New Haven, Conn.	
THE ELEMENTS OF THE LORD'S SUPPER.....	694
Rev. J. CLAREN HAGY, Washington, D. C.	
THE REVISED VERSION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT	715
Rev. H. A. BUTTS, D.D., President of Drew Theological Seminary, Madison, N. J.	
SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES.....	739
FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.....	765
FOREIGN LITERARY INTELLIGENCE	769
QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE	772

CONTENTS.

LIFE AND WORKS OF HAMLINE.....	PAGE 5
Rev. D. P. KIDDER, D.D., Professor, Drew Theological Seminary, Madison, N. J.	
OUR PACIFIC COAST PROBLEM.....	28
Rev. A. J. HANSON, A.M., San Francisco, Cal.	
PAN-PRESBYTERIAN COUNCIL.....	45
Rev. A. C. GROSS, D.D., Chicago, Ill.	
ZOROASTER AND ZOROASTRIANISM.....	61
Rev. J. N. FRADENBURGH, Ph.D., Franklin, Pa.	
THE OLD TESTAMENT APOCRYPHA.....	77
Rev. M. S. TERRY, D.D., New York.	
BAIRD'S "RISE OF THE HUGUENOTS".....	108
Rev. E. B. OTHEMAN, A.M., Chelsea, Mass.	
PHASES OF THE CONFLICT BETWEEN FAITH AND INFIDELITY IN GERMANY.....	128
Rev. FRANK L. NAGLER, East Saginaw, Mich.	
SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES.....	144
FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.....	175
QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE.....	178
Abbot's Authorship of the Fourth Gospel, page 178; Clark's Wesley Memorial Volume, 180; Delitzsch's Messianic Prophecies, 181; Schaff's Popular Com- mentary on the New Testament, 182; Dawson's Chain of Life in Geological Time, 183; Morris' British Thoughts and Thinkers, 185; Stuckenberg's Chris- tian Sociology, 186; A Year of Wreck, 186; Hagenbach's History of Christian Doctrines, 187; Coffin's Old Times in the Colonies, 188; Gibbon's History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire, 188; Symonds' Studies of the Greek Poets, 188; Trevelyan's Miscellaneous Works of Lord Macaulay, 189; The President's Message, 189; Foreign Theological Publications, 197; Miscellane- ous, 201.	



METHODIST QUARTERLY REVIEW.

JANUARY, 1881.

ART. I.—LIFE AND WORKS OF HAMLINE.

Life and Letters of Leonidas L. Hamline, D.D., late One of the Bishops of the Methodist Episcopal Church. By WALTER C. PALMER, M.D. With Introductory Letters by Bishops MORRIS, JAMES, and THOMSON. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe.

Biography of Rev. Leonidas L. Hamline, D.D. By Rev. F. G. HIBBARD, D.D. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. New York: Phillips & Hunt.

Works of Rev. Leonidas L. Hamline, D.D. Edited by Rev. F. G. HIBBARD, D.D. Vol. I, Sermons. Vol. II, Miscellaneous Writings. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. New York: Phillips & Hunt.

THE Christian Church is growing richer in biography from age to age. It is a principle of the divine economy that "the righteous shall be held in everlasting remembrance." While this is primarily true of the remembrance which God cherishes of his own, however little they may be thought of by an unsympathetic world, yet it also has its application to the Church, which delights to preserve the memory of her holy men and women.

The Methodist Episcopal Church has always manifested a commendable interest in properly written memoirs of her deceased Bishops. But, unfortunately, in several instances there has been either a lack of data attainable for the production of such memoirs, or a lack of interest or industry on the part of surviving friends in preparing them.

Bishop Asbury, following the example of Mr. Wesley, kept journals of his travels and his ministerial work. Those journals have required but small additions on the part of his biogra-

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—1

phers and historians to enable the press to perpetuate his life. Bishop Coke's life, based also upon his journals and letters, was well written by his friend Samuel Drew. Bishops Whatcoat, M'Kendree and George left such meager materials behind them that attempting biographers have only been able to produce sketches of their lives a little more detailed than are allotted to all deceased ministers in the Minutes of their Conferences.

The life of Bishop Roberts was well written by his friend Dr. Elliott. That of Bishop Emory was published in connection with his works by his son Dr. Robert Emory. Ample justice was done to the life of Bishop Hedding by Dr. D. W. Clark, to whom, in turn, a similar service was rendered by Dr. Daniel Curry. Bishop Hamline has had two excellent biographers, while of eight other of our deceased Bishops no adequate memoirs have as yet been published.

The life of Bishop Hamline, when surveyed as a whole, is found to have extended into its sixty-eighth year. It comprised five distinct periods. The first was that of youth and secular employment, extending to the thirty-first year of his age. The second was that of his preparatory and itinerant ministry, covering eight years. The third was that of his official editorship, covering eight years. The fourth was that of his episcopacy, also covering eight years. The fifth was that of his retirement from public life and of his protracted suffering as an invalid during thirteen years. It seems proper now to group together the principal facts of his life in the order named, coupled with an estimate of his character and influence as they will descend to future generations.

YOUTH.

LEONIDAS LENT HAMLINE was born in Burlington, Connecticut, in 1799. His parents, who were of Huguenot ancestry, were Congregationalists. His father, although a farmer, was a practical school-teacher. The education of the son, both religious and secular, was strict and thorough. In the former he was trained to rigid puritanic habits and the strictest views of Hopkinsian Calvinism. In the latter, by common-school instruction and a course at Phillips Academy, Andover, Mass., he was so grounded in the elements of learning that he

began his own career as a school-teacher at the early age of seventeen. His youth was characterized by precocity in study and a deep religious reverence, both of which encouraged his father to educate him for the ministry. Of his early religious life he himself wrote to his son in 1847 :

I was at seventeen under deep religious impressions, but my Calvinistic parents could not tell me how to be saved. I became stupid, and then they thought me converted; and for three or four years I thought so too, and studied Greek and Latin, expecting to be a minister in the Congregational Church, and prayed and talked in meetings; and some were convicted and converted under my little talks. But I gradually became convinced that I was not converted, and finally gave it all up, and went to studying law.

In the above extract we have his own estimate of his early religious experience. Yet from what has been recorded by others of the fruits of his influence at that period we might incline to a more favorable judgment. Dr. Hibbard says:

When about seventeen he engaged in teaching portions of the year to enable him to pursue his education. At that time he introduced religious services in his school. The awakening that followed was so strong that at times the school exercises were suspended. Many were hopefully converted. A Christian lady, living in East Barrington, Massachusetts, informed Mrs. Hamline that there were elders in the Church in that village, then living, who had been converted through Mr. Hamline's labors, when he was a young man of seventeen or eighteen, teaching classical school, with anticipations of the ministry.

Not long after these events he was overtaken by a serious calamity in the deterioration of his health, which, from hard study and a continued strain upon his nervous system, sympathetically affected his brain. As concerning the period of his life which followed, certain unfounded rumors have been circulated and unjust inferences drawn, it is well to consult Dr. Hibbard's careful and authentic statement of it:

Mr. Hamline's convalescence was slow. He continued his studies as he was able. But in the lapse of time he became dissatisfied with the evidences of his conversion, and changed his plan of life. He says of himself, "I gradually became convinced that I was not converted, and finally gave it all up and went to studying law."

On his return from the South, or soon after, he went West,

and in 1824 we find him at Zanesville, Ohio. Here he became acquainted with Miss Eliza Price, an amiable, well-reported, and carefully educated young lady, an only child and an heiress. To Miss Eliza Mr. Hamline was married. They lived together in much affection and harmony in the elegant paternal mansion, with an easy competence, but now without God. In 1827 he took license as a lawyer, at Lancaster, Ohio, and returned to his profession. Four children were given them, two sons and two daughters, of whom three died in infancy.

SECULAR LIFE AND CONVERSION.

During the years devoted by Mr. Hamline to the professional study and practice of law he lived a life of religious indifference, and at the same time of irreligious unrest. His love of metaphysics made him an easy disciple and admirer of Edwards, while his educational prejudice against, not to say his contempt for, the Methodists left him no doctrinal antidote to his pernicious speculations. But he was a child of Providence, and wonderful were the steps by which he was brought to Christ, in the personal assurance of his complete salvation.

In the fall or early winter of 1827 Mr. and Mrs. Hamline came to Perrysburgh, Cattaraugus County, New York. It appears that Mr. Hamline was called there on legal business which detained him for a length of time.

While in that vicinity he became the subject of a new and deep religious awakening. A full account of that awakening, and of the steps and processes by which he was gradually led through great spiritual darkness into glorious light, was prepared by his own hand and published in the "Ladies' Repository" of 1843, under the title of "The Metaphysician." The narrative was introduced as written by the editor, but without any suggestion as to who the subject might be further than might have been indicated by the initial L. Both biographers have published the narrative in full, substituting the name Hamline, or the initial H., where the L. was originally used.

Rarely has there ever been written a more graphic account of the struggles of a strong and intelligent mind while passing through the great change between a condition of sinful alienation and a state of gracious acceptance with God. It deserves, in several respects, to be compared with the Confessions of

Augustine. Concerning the latter, it has been said that "they are the delineation of an extraordinary intellect, and the issue of a remarkable experience." An intelligent writer has enumerated four distinguishing characteristics of Augustine's Confessions:

1. The singular mingling of metaphysical and devotional elements.
2. The union of the most minute and exhaustive detail of sin with the most intense and spiritual abhorrence of it.
3. They palpitate with a positive love of God and goodness.
4. The insight which they afford into the origin and progress of Christian experience.

All these characteristics may be predicated of Hamline's confessions, with the added statement that they are written in a more direct style and with a much clearer appreciation of evangelical truth.

The parallel between the two men, however, may be continued in the following facts. They were both converted at about the same period in life; Hamline in his thirty-first year, Augustine in his thirty-second. Both became Bishops. Both were diligent writers. Both cherished throughout life intense views of the malignity of sin, antagonized by overwhelming views of the power of divine grace to save the believing soul. It would not be difficult to extend this comparison much further with equal credit to both the North African and the North American Bishop, who, doubtless, ere this have happily fraternized in the presence of Him to whom their souls aspired with an absorbing affection.

When saving faith sprang up in the heart of L. L. Hamline his whole life was changed. Immediately he counted all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ. Nor did he hesitate to lay upon the altar of God the pride of social position, home, wealth, worldly honor, and ambition.

At first he did not seem to think of becoming a minister of the Gospel, but out of the fullness of his heart his mouth began to speak, testifying of the grace of God wrought out in his own deliverance from the powers of sin and unbelief. Fruits followed. "People were convicted and converted." Although a layman, and a probationer in the Church, he was not idle as a Christian. He engaged earnestly in work for God

as he found opportunity, whether in the ordinary means of grace or at camp-meetings and protracted meetings. He still, however, continued the practice of his profession as a lawyer until

One day, while conducting a suit before a single justice, an overwhelming conviction fell upon him that he must quit the law and preach the Gospel. This he endeavored to overcome or dismiss for the time, but it returned again and again, and so embarrassed him that he was forced to shorten his argument and close his speech. Here ended his legal pleading, thenceforward to turn to the sublimer calling of "beseeching men to be reconciled to God." He received license to exhort about six months after his conversion, and license to preach at the expiration of his first year of membership, November, 1829. The balance of that year, till September, 1830, he spent in varied labor as a licentiate, wherever a providential door was opened.

EARLY MINISTRY.

L. L. Hamline's first and second appointments as a preacher were made by presiding elders, who engaged him to supply vacancies on circuits in Eastern Ohio. These engagements took him far away from his pleasant home to portions of the country recently settled. In passing from place to place he was called to sleep often in cabins, where, in the bleak winter night, he had only to draw aside the hanging blanket in order to thrust his hand between the logs into the storm without. His meager income, after meeting his necessary traveling expenses, he gave to his poorer brethren. His easy pleasure-rides he exchanged for long, tedious, and often perilous traveling, fording streams, threading forests which sometimes were not even blazed.

But of these things he took little account so long as the work of the Lord prospered. He was as yet unfamiliar with Methodistic government and usage, but his wonderful experience in coming to Christ, his powerful conviction and conversion, his naturally incisive mind, now baptized with the Holy Spirit, made all his former studies and knowledge of men available to the pulpit, while in social life he was every-where at ease.

At one of the appointments on his first circuit, while preaching with great power, his audience suddenly burst into tears, rising simultaneously to their feet. A scene of power and mercy ensued. Among the converts of the day was one who became a preacher of the Gospel.

His preaching at a camp-meeting held on the district was attended with extraordinary power. Following the meeting one hundred and thirty-eight probationers were added to the Church.

In September, 1832, he joined the Ohio Conference, and was appointed as the third or second-junior preacher on the Granville Circuit. At the Conference of 1833 he was appointed to the Athens Circuit, with the Rev. Jacob Young for his senior colleague. At the Conference of 1834 he was ordained, and appointed to Wesley Chapel, Cincinnati, as a junior preacher. Not long after his removal to that appointment he was called to mourn the loss of his wife, who had for some time been a suffering invalid. His appointment to Cincinnati was renewed in August, 1835. But in June following he was transferred to Columbus to fill an important pulpit that had unexpectedly become vacant. He then, for the first time, became a preacher in charge, or a pastor in the fullest sense; but that office he only held for three months.

EDITORIAL LIFE.

By a singular train of providences Methodism has been led from its earliest organization to an active use of the press as an auxiliary of Church work. Mr. Wesley not only published books and tracts in great numbers, but a monthly magazine. His example was followed in America. But here the magazine rose in due time to become a Quarterly Review, while weekly papers became the more popular medium for diffusing religious truth and intelligence.

The Methodist Episcopal Church has not left this great interest to irresponsible parties, but from its beginning has assumed and maintained control of such publications, whether in book or periodical form, as it deemed essential to its work. Hence from time to time it has appointed leading ministers to the control of its official press.

The publication of the "Western Christian Advocate" was commenced at Cincinnati in 1834, under the editorship of Rev. Thomas A. Morris. When, in 1836, Mr. Morris was elected Bishop, Rev. Charles Elliott became his successor, with Rev. William Phillips as assistant editor. Mr. Phillips having died soon after, it devolved on the Ohio Conference to appoint

his successor. Rev. L. L. Hamline was designated for the office, and returned to Cincinnati as an editor in the autumn of 1836.

The withdrawal of such a man from the pastoral work at a time when he had become so peculiarly qualified for it was not only a great trial to the Church he was serving at Columbus, but would have been quite unjustifiable had there not been very broad and important interests to subserve by the change. Mr. Hamline seems to have been passive in the hands of the Church authorities, and not to have felt at liberty to decline the appointment, as he doubtless would have done had it required him to desist from preaching the Gospel. In point of fact, his sphere as a preacher was actually enlarged by the change, although his duties in that line could only be performed by greater effort.

In order to estimate rightly the character and extent of the work that was now put upon the subject of our notice, it is necessary to consider what religious journalism in this country was in its first stage. The "Christian Advocate" of New York was only ten years old. The "Western Christian Advocate" was in its third year, and, being a pioneer in the West, was without a corps of trained contributors. Nevertheless, it was launched during a period of exciting controversy respecting slavery and abolition, while the varied interests of aggressive evangelism, of Christian education, of temperance, and of kindred causes, were to be promoted through its agency. Such circumstances demanded great wisdom as well as labor at the hands of its editors. But Elliott and Hamline proved themselves to be eminently qualified for the position and its responsibilities. They both united unusual capacity with untiring industry, and co-operated with each other in the most perfect harmony. Both regarded the paper as an agency in diffusing the Gospel and edifying the Church; but as their editorial writing and supervision were limited to week-days, they devoted their Sabbaths to pulpit services in the city and the region round. Indeed, the ministerial services of Mr. Hamline were in such demand and so willingly rendered that he was often absent for considerable periods, preaching daily at camp-meetings, in revival meetings in the churches, and in missionary efforts in destitute places. Dr. Hibbard's biography gives most interesting accounts of the extraordinary spiritual power at-

tending his ministrations during this period, showing that with his editorial life was associated a career of wide, varied, and wonderful evangelism. After stating that Mr. Hamline never lost sight of the great object of that ministry to which he held every other call in subservience, Dr. Hibbard adds :

It was computed that nearly one hundred persons dated their awakening from the sermons of Mr. Hamline on a single Sabbath in Lebanon, Ohio. Indeed, his labors were every-where attended with visible results. His sermons were marked for their system, their force of argument, pathetic appeals and vivid description, and, above all, by the power of the Holy Spirit. His manner was earnest, often impassioned, always dignified and serious, his imagination lively and chaste, combining beauty and strength with a voice of richness and melody, and his appeals often seemed irresistible. The moment he opened his lips the people intuitively felt they were in the presence of a great mind and a man of God. From every quarter came calls for help in revival labors and for extra occasions, to which he gave a joyful response to the utmost limit of his time and strength. Every-where his labors were owned of God.

A single instance, selected from several, is subjoined :

At a camp-meeting, one evening, during a heavy rain, Mr. Hamline repaired to the church, on the edge of the ground, where he found a company of eight or ten men, who had retreated there to escape the rain, and were lying on the benches. He immediately began to exhort them with affectionate earnestness and power. The Spirit of God fell on the auditors, who yielded and sought the Lord. Before morning they were all happily converted to God.

At the period under review his mind was greatly drawn toward foreign mission work, particularly in France, the land of his ancestors. The subject of a mission from our Church to that country was then under official consideration, and, had it been decided on, there is little doubt that Mr. Hamline would have been appointed to it. But, although not called to enter a foreign field, his zeal in behalf of missions developed itself in a most practical and influential form in connection with the establishment of a German religious press in Cincinnati, and in the encouragement of evangelical effort in behalf of Germans, both in America and Europe. On this point Dr. Nast, the apostle of German Methodism, has spoken emphatically :

In private and in public I have often tried to express my gratitude for what, under God, we Germans owe to that great man of

God. Bishop Hamline, in the darkest days of my penitential struggle, when I was on the point to give it up, presented the Gospel to me with the power of a new charm and inspired me again with hope. During the first two years of my ministry, when I labored as a missionary in Cincinnati, I had the privilege of being every day in his company, and from him I learned, more than from any other source, how to attack successfully the skepticism of my countrymen. He was my pattern in preaching and in writing.

As to the mission of our Church among the Germans, which God has crowned with such glorious results, I am confident it would never have been taken hold of in earnest had it not been for the soul-stirring and convincing appeals of Bishop Hamline to the Church. It was his eloquent advocacy to which the "Apolo-gist" chiefly owes its existence; but he not only induced others to give, but, with his well-known liberality, he contributed out of his own ample means for the support of the German Mission work, and the building of a number of German churches.

No part of the Church was more deeply afflicted than the German ministry when Bishop Hamline felt compelled, on account of his physical debility and suffering, to resign his episcopal office. The Germans felt as though they had lost a father indeed. O, how deeply engraven are his episcopal addresses on the hearts of the older German preachers!

Mr. Hamline soon entered upon a new and more congenial sphere of editorial life. By the General Conference of 1840 he was again appointed assistant editor of the "Western Christian Advocate," and prospective editor of the "Ladies' Repository." Consequently, on him devolved the task of founding a monthly magazine under that title, which, notwithstanding the embarrassments incident to a new literary enterprise in the West, soon rose to an important position in the literature of the Church. Dr. Hibbard very properly speaks of the "Repository" as giving a wider scope to Mr. Hamline's literary and classical taste, as well as to the outreaching of his spiritual life. Of his style and skill as an editor of such a magazine, the following statement is justly made:

He possessed the true enthusiasm which warmed and animated whatever theme he took. In his hands common events assumed a new interest, not only by the illusive dress of fiction, but by the discovery of new and higher relations, while the crowning charm of his writings proceeds from the high moral end for which he wrote, and the inbreathed and living desire to save souls. Preaching or writing, he had this one object in view and uppermost. This was no detriment to literary taste or merit, but

gave to both a more exalted standard and refinement. Nor was his skill in engaging others to work inferior to his own ability to execute.

It was during his editorship of the "Repository" that Mr. Hamline entered upon that higher phase of religious experience known among Methodists as the blessing of perfect love or entire sanctification. A chapter is given to the subject by each of his biographers, inclusive of many quotations from his own pen. The details are full of interest and instruction to devout minds. The results are briefly set forth in the following quotations:

A new life now dawned upon him. Not one without clouds, temptations, and sore wrestlings, but one in which over all these he was to have victory. He could now say, as never before :

"Now I have found the ground wherein
Sure my soul's anchor may remain."

With a body afflicted little less than that of Paul with his "thorn in the flesh," with a nervous structure which even in health would be subject to great alternations, and with a life of intense labor, and the antagonisms of this "evil world," a perpetually "quiet sea" was not to be expected. His exquisite sensitiveness often occasioned him sorrow and temptation where a common mind would experience no embarrassment.

The great baptism amazingly quickened his love for souls and his ardent zeal to save them. In his diary for November 26, 1842, he says : "I feel as though I had come to the verge of heaven. I have had sad dreams, but am happy now, filled with weeping and praise. I feel like one who has been wrecked at sea and has got into the long-boat. Persons are sinking all around, and he clutches them by the hair. So I see souls are sinking. I feel in a hurry to save them. And it matters not what I eat or what I wear, or who are my companions, for when I have rowed a few miles I shall get home and shall find all my friends there."

He says, somewhat later :

"Within less than three months I have enjoyed the privileges of attending some eight or ten protracted meetings, at each of which there was a glorious display of God's saving power." Does the reader ask how he could, under such circumstances, not only give satisfaction, but win reputation, as the editor of the "Ladies' Repository?" He answers the question in part: "My labors are heavy. I take my papers often into the country, and write *between preachings*." He was a ready and rapid writer. When his mind was roused and concentrated, and that was as often as

duty demanded and health permitted, after the first dictation little was left for critical review.

In the midst of labors beyond his strength, and which he afterward admits laid the foundation of his premature infirmities and his retirement from public life, with a popularity which exposed him to envious criticism, and with the two mightiest social forces in his hands—the pulpit and the press—one might well fear for his humility. But to him selfish ambition was unknown. For himself he sought nothing, desired nothing; for Christ, every thing. His deadness to the world and his self-abnegation were almost startling, even to his friends. His views of natural depravity and the malignity of sin in the light of the divine law left him in utter amazement at that divine love which had borne with his life of unbelief so long, and had multiplied such boundless “grace upon grace” in his redemption.

As a pendant to the foregoing remarks from Dr. Hibbard, we quote a few sentences from a letter written by Dr. Elliott after Bishop Hamline’s death, in 1865. This extract will show that the peculiar experience of Mr. Hamline in 1842 was not temporary, but lasting, continuing to the very end of his life :

My pen is wholly incompetent to draw out in its full extent an adequate portrait of his high and holy character, whether it regards his natural talents or his extensive attainments, but especially the sanctity and purity of his religious life in theory, experience, and practical utility. He enjoyed, to the full extent, entire sanctification in all its experience and practical exemplifications. He was thoroughly scriptural and Wesleyan in all respects on this fundamental point. So clearly did he expound it to others in conversation, preaching, and writing, that many were led to experience it through his teaching and prayers.

While he was thoroughly Wesleyan and scriptural in this way of holiness, he was instrumental in teaching its great truths to ministers of other Churches. Many of them, Presbyterians, Baptists, and Episcopalians, were brought to the full enjoyment of this privilege of the sons of God through his instructions and prayers.

During the year 1843, and the early months of 1844, Mr. Hamline continued both his editorial and evangelical labors with quickened zeal, though with declining health. Several times he was laid aside by severe illness, but no sooner did partial recovery allow than he was again at his post.

ELECTION TO THE EPISCOPAL OFFICE.

The election of L. L. Hamline to the office of a Bishop in the Methodist Episcopal Church was a spontaneous tribute to

superior ability and obvious adaptation to the exigencies of the Church in a critical period of its history. It had not been pre-arranged by his friends, nor anticipated by himself. It was not the result of wire-pulling, canvassing, or bargaining. It was, in fact, a result born of an occasion and produced in the only manner that could have been in harmony with his sense of honor and of right.

Up to the last moment his physical ability to attend the General Conference of 1844 had been questioned by his physicians. He ventured to leave home in hope that his health would be improved by the journey to New York. The result in that respect justified his hopes. He was, therefore, enabled to take his seat in the body to which he had been elected as a delegate in September preceding.

Although deeply interested in the proceedings, he for a considerable time modestly shrank from any prominent participation in them, purposing to do his duty by his votes. But after having witnessed for days the struggle between the opponents of slavery and their antagonists, and having seen the growing mystification in which the special issue in the case of the slave-holding Bishop Andrew was becoming involved, he decided to take a part in the discussion.

Dr. (now Bishop) J. T. Peck has described the scene :

In the midst of the great debate he rose and addressed the chair. He was promptly recognized, and from the first sentence it was evident that the question, so involved and far-reaching, was in the hands of a master. His positions were logically perfect, without a word to spare, and yet, in rhetoric and oratory, as fine as if intended for popular entertainment. The tones of his voice were new to many of us, and they were actually enchanting. All noise in the vast assemblage ceased; and he seemed as if alone with God, uttering thoughts and arguments of inspiration. "True, true, every word of it true," we would say, without speaking, (no one would have dared to speak or move;) "conclusive, splendid, demonstrative, irresistible!" The last sentence was finished; the speaker quietly resumed his seat; a thousand people drew a long breath; and the great issue was logically settled.

While no abstract can give any just idea of such a speech as a whole, yet it seems proper to say that its strength lay in convincing demonstrations of the following propositions :

Executive authority in the Methodist Episcopal Church has

power to remove or depose any officer on the ground of improper conduct.

Bishops and officers of the Church are subject to the executive authority of the General Conference by which they are appointed and to which they are amenable :

Therefore, 1. The General Conference has power to depose a Bishop who has by any act rendered himself unacceptable to the Church in the character of a general superintendent.

2. Its obligation to depose an offending Bishop is increased by the eminence and responsibility of his office.

The conclusion of the address was designed to clinch the conclusion of the syllogism. It here follows in part :

A Bishop's influence is not like a preacher's or class-leader's. It is diffused, like the atmosphere, every-where. So high a Church officer should be willing to endure not slight sacrifices for this vast connection. What could tempt you, sir, to trouble and wound the Church all through, from center to circumference? The preacher and the class-leader, whose influence is guarded against so strongly, can do little harm—a Bishop infinite. Their improper acts are motes in the air; yours are a pestilence abroad in the earth. Is it more important to guard against those than against these? Heaven forbid! Like the concealed attractions of the heavens, we expect a Bishop's influence to be all-abiding every-where; in the heights and in the depths, in the center and on the verge, of this great system ecclesiastical. If instead of concentric and harmonizing movements, such as are wholesome and conservative and beautifying, we observe in him irregularities which, however harmless in others, will be disastrous or fatal in him, the energy of this body, constitutionally supreme, must instantly reduce him to order; or, if that may not be, plant him in another and a distant sphere. When the Church is about to suffer a detriment which we by constitutional power can avert, it is as much *treason in us not to exercise the power we have, as to usurp in other circumstances that which we have not.*

From and after the delivery of that speech, as was well said by Dr. J. T. Peck, "all could see that the clearness of his intellect, the meekness and humility of his bearing, and the grace of his movements, fitted him for high official rank, and promised extraordinary executive ability."

Scarcely less in the light of those facts, than as an indorsement of his clear and strong views of the office and responsibility of Bishops in the Methodist Episcopal Church, was the spontaneous movement made which resulted a few days later

in his own election to that very office. Such a result both startled and humbled him. Dr. Hibbard says :

As a human call he would have at once declined the honor, but the circumstances of the case were so extraordinary, and the exercises of his mind so strongly corroborative of the hand of God in all, that he bowed in humble submission. The office had sought him, not he the office.

At a subsequent period he himself wrote :

At the General Conference in 1844, most unexpectedly to myself, (and to nearly all, I believe,) I was elected to the superintendency. A translation in the chariot of Elijah would not have overtaken me much more unexpectedly. My struggles were peculiar, and yet I found evidence that I was *called to this ministry*.

EPISCOPAL ADMINISTRATION.

To him the will of God was supreme law and supreme delight. He contemplated the episcopacy from the spiritual stand-point, and entered upon it with the single aim to the salvation of souls and the sanctification of the Church. His past life had been a preparatory discipline, and his great baptism in 1842 the qualification of power for this strange and unexpected work. Not the least of his evidences and his consolations was the common and hearty approval of the Church at large.

He entered upon the presidency of successive Conferences without delay, and, although subject to violent attacks of illness, he was, nevertheless, enabled to fulfill his entire round of official obligations during a series of years. In Dr. Palmer's life those years are made the subjects of successive chapters, in which his travels from Conference to Conference and his engagements in the line of evangelical work are presented in detail, free use being made of his own diary and letters. Dr. Hibbard separates the topics of his episcopal administration and evangelical labors, and judiciously condenses his diary and correspondence.

From both volumes, as well as from what is remembered by many living persons, it is evident that Bishop Hamline took no narrow view of the brief and technical items in which our Discipline states the duties of Bishops. He did not conceive that merely traveling across the country in railroad cars, and presiding at Conferences, by any means fulfilled the spirit of

those requirements. He understood the word "travel" as the equivalent of itinerate in the character of a minister of the Gospel, whose duty the Discipline elsewhere enjoins in phrases like these: "You have nothing to do but to save souls; therefore spend and be spent in this work." "Observe, it is not your business only to preach so many times, and to take care of this or that Society, but to save as many as you can, to bring as many sinners as you can to repentance, and with all your power to build them up in that holiness without which they cannot see the Lord." Hence, he devoted the intervals of Conference sessions to visits among the Churches and people, stirring them up, both publicly and socially, to zeal and activity in the divine life. No one that knew or even met him failed to be impressed with the fact that he endeavored to wield the full amount, both of his personal and official influence, as an agency for honoring God and promoting the salvation of men. As said by his last biographer:

His one absorbing object was to awaken the ministry and the Churches to the higher claims of their holy calling, and to reach out a hand of rescue to the perishing. His summer months were spent in attending Annual Conferences, and his winters in visiting the Churches.

Bishop Hamline's bearing in Annual Conferences was distinguished for a wonderful combination of dignity and humility. He had the great art of securing promptness and order in the dispatch of business, without any bustle or show of authority. He also had the greater talent of diffusing over a deliberative body that calm thoughtfulness and spirit of prayer, without which the standing direction of our Discipline concerning deportment at the Conferences is never fulfilled: "It is desired that all things be considered on these occasions as in the immediate presence of God."

Dr. Hibbard says:

His eye was ever watchful of the devotional and charitable spirit of the Conference. Often at the appearance of uncharitableness or levity, he would arrest business, and, in his own inimitable way, address the brethren briefly, calling them lovingly to watchfulness and prayer, and then propose a brief season of prayer, calling on the brother aggrieved, or perhaps the one offending, to pray.

Such influences could only be exerted by a man of great spiritual power. That Bishop Hamline was enabled to exert them was one of the happy fruits of his deep religious experience and of his habitual life of devotion. The results proved that such a life in no way diminished, but rather increased, his administrative ability in the difficult circumstances through which he was often called to guide his Conferences. The earlier period of his episcopal service was one of intense excitement, caused by the agitation of the times, especially along the borders of the newly organized Southern Church. Perhaps no more exciting scene ever took place in an Annual Conference than that in which he relieved Bishop Soule from the chair, in the Ohio Conference of 1845. The circumstances are fully stated by Dr. Hibbard, but we have only space for Dr. Cyrus Brooks' description of the scene:

A large portion of the Conference had risen to their feet, and some members, I think, had left the house. The critical moment had arrived, and it seemed that the next instant must bring hopeless confusion. Just at that instant Bishop Hamline stepped upon the platform. I can never forget his appearance. Twenty years have not dimmed the recollection of it in the least. It was full of animation, yet calm, commanding, majestic. No human movement ever so impressed me with the idea of irresistible power. It was power, too, wielded with consummate skill, and for a most beneficent end. I have seen him in some of his happiest moments, in some of the loftiest flights of his sublime eloquence, but I never saw him appear to so good advantage as then. He seemed to me almost more than man.

As he came forward he said that there were times when it became necessary to waive all considerations of mere courtesy, and exercise the authority with which one was intrusted. Such a time had come, and it was clearly his duty now to interpose. As he said this he waved his hand to the temporary chairman at his left, who instantly obeyed the signal and gave place. Bishop Hamline took his seat, order was immediately restored, and business resumed its usual course. A few minutes afterward a stranger entering the house would not have suspected that any thing unusual had occurred in the Conference. So sudden and so complete was the restoration of order and confidence, that one could hardly help thinking of the time when the Master said to the tumultuous waves of Gennesaret, "Peace, be still," and there was a great calm.

It was not long until the lofty form of Bishop Soule was seen moving toward the door, with his portfolio under his arm and his hat in his hand. He disappeared, and was seen among us no more.

BISHOP HAMLINE AS A PREACHER.

The brief notices already given of his early ministry have shown that from the first an extraordinary influence attended his declarations of gospel truth. That kind of influence continued throughout the period of his episcopate. Wherever he went and whenever he preached, he was heard with profound and solemn interest. He did not limit his pulpit efforts to great occasions, but was as ready to preach to few as to many; nevertheless, his capacity to bring vast assemblies under the spell of the sublimest eloquence has been rarely equaled. His appearance when before an audience was that of perfect calmness and self-possession. He used few gestures, and no vociferation, but as he proceeded to present the great themes of the gospel in an easy but lucid style, clinching his positions with invulnerable logic, he impressed his hearers not only as a man having intimate communion with God, but as having in himself vast resources of intellectual and spiritual power. His emotions were not of the corruscating type. They did not blaze along the sky, like meteors. They rather heaved and swelled, like a suppressed but moving earthquake.

His habits as a preacher were formed during the six years of his itinerant ministry. It was never his custom to read or recite sermons to a congregation. In his preparations for pulpit address he wrote diligently, and thus acquired a style of peculiar transparency, precision, and force. Yet his writing was for self-discipline in the development and memorization of thought. In preparing for argumentative discussions, he carefully elaborated his definitions and propositions. In a few instances, and for special objects, he wrote out sermons at length, and thus became prepared to deliver them with more confidence and completeness. All his preparations were thus made auxiliary to effective extemporaneous preaching.

Dr. Hibbard says :

His imagination was not gorgeous, not copious; his taste, no less than his "godly sincerity," would have excluded all excess and dazzle. He was not a poet, but an orator, and his imagination described and illustrated rather than invented, and diffused an exquisite tinge of beauty over all his utterances.

"His elocution," says Dr. Lowrey, "was perfect. His voice—how could the Creator have improved it? like the key-note of

well-composed music, just right. Soft, mellow, full, rich in its grave accents, clear and insinuating in its higher inflections, tenderly impassioned and melting in its minor and sympathetic tones, it possessed the power of self-adjustment to every word, syllable, and sound of his sentences. I heard him speak twenty years ago, and to-day many of his words, and his mode of uttering them, live in my mind with all the vividness that belongs to the memories of yesterday. This I attribute largely to the enchanting effect of his elocution."

In his introduction to Bishop Hamline's works, Dr. Hibbard also gives this additional sketch, which is the more valuable from its historic comparisons :

It is not easy to do justice to his character without exaggeration on the one hand, or disparagement on the other. His individuality is so marked that, after all comparisons, he must stand alone. He possessed the enthusiasm, but not the frenzy, of Whitefield and Chalmers. He was more terse and pointed than Robert Hall, with less polish, and with an imagination and an order of intellect of superior adaptations to the ends of oratory. . . . The flow of his utterances was like the swell of the river current, more deep than rapid, yet moving on without interruption or commotion, always majestic, often quickened, like hurrying waters impatient of restraint, but never like the wild rush of the cataract. In this he contrasted with Olin. Hamline was impassioned, never boisterous—Olin was vehement ; Hamline was earnest—Olin impetuous ; Hamline was like the even, though often rapid, flow of a beautiful stream, bearing its buoyant burden safely and gracefully onward—Olin was like the torrent, or the whirlwind, hurrying all before it. With him the hurricane was inevitable, but he rode upon it in majesty, and, like the spirit of the storm, directed all its forces. Hamline never suffered the storm to arise, but checked it midway, and if the sweep and force of his eloquence were less, the auditors were left more self-controlled, and the practical ends not less salutary. With the rising inspiration of his theme, his dark, clear eye gathered new luster and emitted the fire of his thought, his countenance became suffused with the internal glow of his soul, and his whole person was animate with the genius of his subject.

It is a matter of no small interest, especially to students and young ministers, that a public speaker of such extraordinary power as Bishop Hamline has left on record in one of his published addresses, his own well-developed theory of eloquence. That address was delivered in 1836, but was not made accessible to general readers until the publication of the second volume of Hamline's works in 1871. That address, well studied,

can hardly fail to be of great value to many a young man desirous of qualifying himself to become eloquent in the advocacy of Christian truth and duty. It should, however, be taken in connection with the author's well-known theory that no eloquence can avail for the highest ends of the Christian ministry that is not vitalized by the deep pathos born of intense conviction, and nourished by intimate communion with the source of spiritual power. This our subject possessed in a high degree, and to it must be attributed a great measure of the success he had in winning souls to Christ, and to the higher Christian life.

A remarkable illustration of this occurred after his health had been completely shattered. It was at a grove-meeting which he had arranged for the benefit of his neighbors while residing near Schenectady. "At the closing service," wrote Dr. Carhart, "the Bishop arose, and, though scarcely able to stand without assistance, made an application of the sermon, and an appeal to the people, such as I have never heard equaled. The Holy Ghost fell on us. Weeping was heard in every direction in the vast assembly; sobs and cries for mercy followed; and, as the speaker continued, and even before the invitation was given, penitents crowded around the rude altar, and the whole assembly, rising to their feet, seemed drawn toward the speaker, and to melt like wax before the fire. When the invitation was given to those seeking Christ to come forward, it seemed to me that the whole audience moved simultaneously, while some actually ran and threw themselves prostrate upon the ground, and cried, 'God be merciful to me a sinner!' The memory of that scene can never be effaced from my mind."

BISHOP HAMLINE AS A WRITER.

Many an eloquent preacher has ceased to be a power in the Church and in the world when his voice has been silenced by disease or death. Others, who have enlisted the press as an auxiliary to their work, have been able to speak on to successive generations. Of this number Bishop Hamline was an eminent example, the more conspicuous from the fact that so few of his contemporaries in the heroic age of Methodism did likewise. It is proper, however, to say that he never neglected or left his primary work to become an author. When officially

appointed by the Church to an editorial chair he improved his opportunity as a means of increasing his Christian and ministerial influence, as well as of serving the Church whose call he obeyed. With this high end in view, many of his articles became from the first permanently valuable. Not a few of them have been preserved by appreciative readers in the volumes of the "Ladies' Repository," and handed down as heir-looms to their households. It is no less in the line of good taste than of a good providence that the more important of those articles have now been taken out of their serial form and placed side by side in the beautiful volumes already named.

Those of Hamline's works that are presented in this permanent form, although of limited extent, deserve to be ranked in the highest grade of American theological literature. The first volume, being filled with sermons, will be most read by ministers. Special attention may be called to a series of three on the "Depravity of the Heart," also to those on "The Seen and the Unseen," "Delight in the House of God," "The Incarnation and the Immutability of Christ." In reading the sermons named we have marked many passages as of superior excellence. But lack of space forbids their insertion. The second volume of Hamline's works contains forty-eight sketches and plans of sermons, five public addresses, and seventeen theological essays. These various articles, having been selected on the ground of intrinsic excellence, are all worthy of perusal, if not of study. The sermon sketches cover an ample variety of subjects and style of address, and may serve as suggestive examples of a class of productions of which every preacher must prepare many.

Of the public addresses of the author, that on "Eloquence," and that delivered in the General Conference of 1844 on "The Case of Bishop Andrew," deserve to be read and re-read. Another, on "The Church of God," delivered during the Centenary of Wesleyan Methodism, in 1839, is long and able. That on "The Grave," delivered at the opening of a cemetery, is a model for such a rare occasion.

Of the theological essays, those on Holiness, Faith, The New Birth, Arminianism, and The Holy Ghost, are the most important.

RESIGNATION OF THE EPISCOPAL OFFICE.

The facts relating to this decisive step are fully related and described in the twenty-second chapter of Dr. Hibbard's biography, which opens with the following statement:

The year 1852 marks an epoch, not only in the life of Bishop Hamline, but in the history of the episcopacy of the Methodist Episcopal Church as well. In that year, at the General Conference held in Boston, Mass., Bishop Hamline tendered his resignation as Bishop, and retired to the rank of a superannuated elder of the Ohio Conference. The doctrine of the Church as to the nature of our episcopacy had always been that it was an *office*, and not a distinct clerical *order*; but no act or precedent had ever occurred to give it practical and administrative sanction. Aside from ecclesiastical considerations, the spiritual loss to the Church by the retirement of such a man from the episcopacy was accepted with universal regret as a common affliction. The simple and only ground of his retirement was want of health.

The significance of the Bishop's resignation was heightened by the discussions which took place respecting it on the floor of the General Conference. From the whole tenor of those discussions, it was obvious that a request to be retired as a superannuated Bishop would have better accorded with the feelings of the Conference. But such a course did not comport with Bishop Hamline's stern views of propriety in his own case. Hence his resignation was unequivocal. When that fact became apparent, a reluctant consent was accorded and he was honorably released from the responsibilities of the office conferred upon him by the action of a previous General Conference.

So far, this is the only case of resignation of the episcopal office that has occurred in the history of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In 1836 Dr. Wilbur Fisk was elected to that office, but as he declined episcopal ordination he was never considered a Bishop. Bishop Hamline had received the ordination and exercised the office during eight consecutive years. He then, under a sense of duty, surrendered his certificate of ordination and retired to the ecclesiastical position he had occupied before his episcopal election. The formal approval of that act by the General Conference made the precedent complete.

In the eminent example that has now passed under review there is not only instruction for Bishops, present and future, but for ministers and Christians in every grade and circumstance of human duty and trial. In Bishop Hamline's life it is seen that the greatness of the man and the nobleness and purity of his Christian character were not dependent upon his office. The office was an accident, taken up and laid down as occasion required. The man, the Christian, and the minister preceded and followed it. The office, indeed, secured great and peculiar opportunities of usefulness, but it required the highest style of a man and a Christian to improve them to the *maximum*.

LAST DAYS.

After all that Bishop Hamline was able to accomplish by diligent and self-denying action in the days of his strength, it may be questioned whether the greatest triumph of his life was not accomplished by his patient endurance of affliction, when it fell to his lot to be withdrawn into the privacy and solitudes of suffering. That he found in such scenes the abiding and cheering presence of the sympathizing Saviour and the sanctifying Spirit to be equal to his extremest need, is a fact adapted to encourage every afflicted child of God. Few in any sphere of life have ever been called to endure greater or more protracted physical distresses. Although a man of robust frame, he became in middle life the subject of an alarming disease of the heart. Notwithstanding repeated admonitions of danger from physicians, he sternly nerved himself up to meet every call of duty so long as he might be able. During his whole period of episcopal service he was subject to attacks of illness so violent and protracted that they would have paralyzed the efforts of ordinary men; but he went steadily forward, meeting his Conferences and preaching among the Churches to the full limit of his strength. When released from official responsibilities, it was not to rest, but to retire and suffer, without the faintest hope of recovery. While death would have been a happy release at any moment, yet he was willing to wait all the days of his appointed time, though each added day brought its allotment of pain and trial.

It pleased God to prolong his life during thirteen years, not

only of invalidity, but of ever-increasing physical distress. As he could no longer do the will of God in active service, he saw it to be alike his privilege and his duty to suffer that will in the furnace of affliction. That he did do so with the meekness of a disciple and the faith of a martyr is obvious from the records of his life during that period. In all Christian biography there are few if any more edifying examples of joy in sorrow and triumph in tribulation.

In 1856 he removed to Mount Pleasant, Iowa, where, in the neighborhood of his cherished friends, Dr. Elliott, Z. H. Coaton, and others, he spent the remainder of his days.

His last words were, "This is wonderful suffering, but it is nothing to what my Saviour endured on the cross for me." Thus in the thought of the cross of Christ he triumphed over the last enemy.

Bishop Hamline's Christian life is open to imitation from all. In other spheres but few can follow him. But in the great matters of complete consecration, of earnest attention to the means of grace, and of simple trusting faith in the atoning Saviour, the humblest child of God may do likewise, in the confidence of obtaining similar divine favor, in life, in death, and in eternity.

ART. II.—OUR PACIFIC COAST PROBLEM.

The Chinese in America. By O. GIBSON. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe.

Certain Phases of the Chinese Question. By JOHN F. MILLER. In March number of "The Californian." San Francisco.

AGITATING the social fabric of the Pacific slope from Southern California to British Columbia, and from the ocean to the desert, is the momentous question, "What shall be done with the Chinaman?" It enters into all our political and business discussions; it invades our courts, our schools, and our religious assemblies; it finds its way into our homes, around table and fireside, and even into our secret chambers, as an ever-present, ever-disturbing factor in our lives. Thus far, and in its immediate local bearings, is the "Chinese question" the special problem of the Pacific coast; but above this, and in its higher and absolute relations, it is not a question belonging alone to

the Pacific, but reaching across to the Atlantic, extending northward and southward, and finally comprehending the American people in its embrace. It is a national question of gigantic proportions, demanding the highest wisdom and best integrity of our statesmen to give it an adequate, just, and ultimate settlement.

It so touches upon our relations with a foreign government, an extensive commerce, a time-honored policy of our own, and upon the matter of human brotherhood and equality of natural rights, that only the nation in its highest representative capacity can properly dispose of it. California and sister States of the Pacific are incompetent to frame legislation designed to abrogate articles of the Burlingame Treaty, either by the expulsion of the Chinese, or by depriving them of the rights of residence and labor. When the settlement comes it must needs be by federal authority, and in accordance with the enlightened moral sentiment of the nation. To reach that result and render that settlement both just and final, may take more time and cost more than any of us now anticipate. Whether we shall reach a peaceful solution of the problem, or reach it only at the end of another race war, depends mainly on the relative strength of forces, good and evil, struggling for mastery in our social and political system. If the bitter lessons of the past have been sufficiently learned, then shall we not need the chastisement of another internecine war to make us comprehend the designs of Providence, and follow on to the attainment of our destiny among the nations of the earth. It is not venturing too much to assert that the righteous sentiment of the American people demands a settlement in accordance with truth and justice, and that any solution upon the basis of race prejudice, false assumptions, and the misrepresentations of facts, must, in the affairs of men, meet reversal in the supreme court of the heavens, and share the fate of Judge Taney's decision against the colored man.

Before the writer are the two literary productions whose titles are given above. As they present the Chinese Question from opposite stand-points, so are their conclusions diametrically opposed. "The Chinese in America," a neat volume of some four hundred pages, has been noticed, read, reviewed, and assigned its place as a reliable authority on the subject of

which it treats. Ten years of missionary labor in China, and more than that length of time among the Chinese in America, as missionary and teacher, have given Dr. Gibson abundant opportunities for observation of the character and habits of this strange people. More than twenty years of acquaintance with their language, customs, and peculiarities, ought to be something of a guarantee that he knew whereof he wrote; while his high standing in the Methodist Episcopal Church, and the repeatedly expressed confidence of that respectable body of men, the California Conference, would conclusively attest that he has not misrepresented the facts. With full acceptance of the doctrines of divine Providence, human brotherhood, and the power of the Gospel to save and civilize all men, he has written from the Christian stand-point, and, presenting the facts to a Christian public, calmly waits for a Christian verdict.

"Certain Phases of the Chinese Question" appeared as a magazine article in the March number of "The Californian," this present year, and at once received the most favorable notice from the anti-Chinese press and politicians of the nation. General Miller, a gentleman well known in the social and military circles of San Francisco, appears as the representative of a very large, influential, and highly respectable class of people on the Pacific coast, who hold that the presence of the Chinese is a great detriment to the country, and that their immigration should be stopped. As to the stand-point from which General Miller views the case we are left somewhat in the dark; but from his remark that the "two civilizations which have here met . . . are each the result of evolution under contrariant conditions," and similar expressions, we are led to infer that the "evolution theory" is a favorite with him, while some of his concluding sentences, setting forth that peaceful resistance of Mongolian invasion (?) is simply "to preserve this land for our people and their posterity forever, and hold republican government and free institutions in trust for Anglo-Saxon posterity," imply that he accepts that venerable formula, "This is a white man's government," as a substantial article of his political faith. Be that as it may, the phases, facts, and conclusions presented by him are deserving of respectful consideration; the value of his opinions as those of an ordinary, and perhaps superficial, observer of Chinese character and habits, and his

general positions as compared with those of Dr. Gibson, are deserving of further reference in these pages.

THE ELEMENTS OF THE PROBLEM.

Within the embrace of this Pacific-coast problem, at least four elements prominently present themselves, and must needs be taken into account in the solution thereof. These are:

1. The number and character of the Chinese in America.
2. The origin, extent, and grounds of the anti-Chinese sentiment.
3. The doctrine of human brotherhood, and the time-honored American policy of open doors for all to enter.
4. Reciprocity relations, and their necessary operation.

(1.) As to the number and character of these strangers, something must be said at the outset. Thirty years have passed since the first Chinaman landed on these shores. During that period there has been no restriction placed on their immigration; they have come and gone freely; and yet, with all the inducements commonly supposed to be tempting them hither, and after all these years, according to carefully kept statistics of our Custom House and the Chinese "Six Companies," less than 150,000 of them are to be found in the whole United States of America.

Moreover, within the last four years there has been a marked decrease rather than increase in their numbers; they have come by hundreds, but have gone by thousands. Recent issues of the San Francisco dailies apprise us of the loss of 7,000 of this population within a recent period; yet Mr. Miller, and the press generally on this coast, would have us believe that Chinese immigration pours in like an ever-increasing flood, threatening to swamp our civilization and whole social system in a very short time. A yearly influx of 150,000 or more people from Europe appears to create no alarm, but seems rather a most wonderful benison to poor America!

It may be remarked in this connection that the heaviest immigration of Chinese took place in 1852, when 20,026 arrived in California; it may be further remarked that according to the rate of increase of the thirty years past, it would take about two hundred and fifty years for America to gain a Chinese population of one million! But, according to Mr. Miller's

own estimate of the increase of our white population, we shall, in sixty years, without the aid of immigration, have one hundred and eighty millions of people. One would suppose we might be able to take care of a few hundred thousand inferior (?) Chinamen almost any day in our future.

But allowing, as he justly claims, that from the over-crowded population of the single province of Canton, millions could be spared and their loss not felt, what evidence is there that any exodus will take place? Mr. Gibson makes the point that their clannishness, provincial feuds, and hatreds, are a pretty sure safeguard against the coming of any but those of the dialect already here, while traditional policy and disinclination to move must for generations serve to keep the masses of the Chinese people at home.

And suppose they do come according to the openings for employment found here, and suppose they do make openings for each other, and invest their little capital in business enterprises in this country, what of that? Have not Americans, Jews, Turks, and the enterprising people of this world generally, done that same thing, and pushed themselves into employments and business openings wherever there has been a chance, whether wanted or not by the native races? Or has the noble Anglo-Saxon at last found such a superior in economy and successful business habits that he must adopt the cast-off policy of exclusion toward one of the nations of the earth?

As to the object of the Chinese in coming to America, and their general character and behavior while here, the opinions of the wise differ quite materially. It would seem probable, however, that they have come without the least idea of invasion, colonization, or the acquisition of the Pacific coast as a province of the Chinese Empire, and that they have the sole purpose of bettering their financial condition. Other people, many of them, appear to have come for the same sordid purpose!

They are usually represented as the most vicious, immoral, filthily, and corrupt people in the world, without conscience or moral sense; but in almost the next breath their enemies pronounce them the most frugal, industrious, patient, painstaking and persevering people on earth. How both pictures may be correct it might puzzle a philosopher to explain. Certain it is that the Chinese have brought their stupid gods and heathen

customs to this Christian land ; true it is that many of them are gamblers, thieves, and desperadoes of the worst kind ; true, also, that some of them carry on an accursed traffic in human flesh—young girls and women are bought and sold by these monsters, and used and abused for the vilest purposes. But these things cannot be said of the mass of the Chinese in America, and their enemies know it. The merchants, artisans, and common laborers of that race, as a general rule, commend themselves as honest, peaceable, and law-abiding inhabitants of the country. Our missionaries and merchants in China, and America as well, sustain this statement by almost unfailling testimony. By reason of their docility, obedience, and reliability as laborers, they have won their way into thousands of places on the Pacific coast.

Their wonderful capability for acquiring our language, arts, and industries, is well understood, and their astuteness, skill, and imitative genius, render them formidable competitors of the white man. There is scarce any thing that the latter does which the Chinaman seems incapable of doing, and the chances are that, after a few trials, he will do it with more deftness and dispatch than his instructor. Their race is inferior only in point of civilization, and in that only because an inferior, a pagan, religion, has cursed their land for ages, while Christianity, born of heaven and endued with divine power, has produced and nurtured the civilization of the European and American families of men. Let the leaven of the Gospel and the light of God's word permeate the dead, stagnant masses of Chinese ignorance and superstition ; let contact with foreign nations go on ; let modern ideas and Christian faith enter into more vigorous conflict with venerable philosophy and a worn-out pagan theology ; give the Chinese people a few of the opportunities we have so long enjoyed, and then look for a race and nation taking rank with the foremost on the face of the earth. Such are the Chinese, and such their character and capabilities.

THE ANTI-CHINESE SENTIMENT.

Opposition to the Chinese had its origin years ago, when that people first began to appear in our mining regions as competitors of white laborers. They could well afford to work for less than the extravagant prices current at that time. They

took the worn-out "claims" abandoned by white miners, and made themselves rich by their untiring industry. Hence the "Foreign Miners' Tax" was imposed to check their operations, and collected of no other foreigners.

As the capabilities of our soil and climate for fruit-bearing and general agriculture became known, they again became active competitors of the white laborers, insomuch that they were willing to work for more reasonable wages, and proved more constant, obedient, and reliable. While it became the custom of the ordinary field hands to demand high wages for the busy seasons, then lie around taverns and saloons till their earnings were gone, the Chinese toiled on constantly, willing to work for almost nothing rather than be idle and on expense. When the Central Pacific Railroad was in process of construction again was there demand for their service, and soon they proved themselves more available railroad builders than any white laborers the railroad company could afford to employ. And when, in development of our splendid resources, certain manufacturing enterprises were entered upon, once more capital was glad to avail itself of their patient industry and rapidly acquired skill. Multitudes of business men have testified that none of these enterprises would have been possible for years to come had it not been for the presence of the Chinese.

Meantime, the opposition to their so-called cheap labor and reduction of prices, originating with the common laborers of America, but chiefly of European birth, was gaining strength; and, inasmuch as the one class of laborers had *votes* and the other had none, politicians, newspapers, and political parties, added fuel to the flame, while Jesuitical bigotry in the background was ever active in rousing race prejudice and fomenting class hatred. A marked revulsion in business came on in 1874, and financial depression settled down upon the State. There set in a reaction from the wild speculation, extravagance, and high prices of earlier years. A crash came when the Bank of California failed, and soon all classes began to feel the pressure of "hard times." The industrious middle classes—mechanics, artisans, and tradesmen—found employment more difficult to secure; values depreciated, and building enterprises and property investments almost entirely ceased. Meanwhile, the Chinese, more economical than others, toiled on, steadily

filling their places as cooks, laundrymen, common and skilled laborers. In the general depression and discontent it is somewhat natural that public attention should have been turned to them, and the opposition greatly extended and intensified. At length it took shape and crystallized itself in the "Working-man's Movement," whose motto has ever been, "The Chinese must go!" Largely in obedience to that movement a new Constitution was framed and adopted by the State of California, and at the first general election under its operation, held September 3, 1879, the electors of the State were required by gubernatorial proclamation to vote on the question of "Chinese immigration." As might have been expected, the verdict was overwhelmingly "against Chinese immigration." Out of a total vote of 161,094, there were but 883 "for," while 154,638 were "against" the immigration of the Chinese.

The politicians and newspapers bear Mr. Miller company in pronouncing this vote decisive as to the strength of Pacific coast sentiment on this question. But as to the real significance of this vote some remarks may be in order.

First. Let it be remembered that this vote was taken when political strife was at its height, and politicians of all parties were bidding for votes, and doing their utmost to make people believe they were in immediate danger of an Asiatic inundation.

Second. There was a heavy *silent* vote that would not be forced into an expression on the subject, and that silent vote represents some of the best citizens of the State.

Third. The *private* sentiment of at least half the people of California seems to differ very essentially from the *public* sentiment thus expressed, inasmuch as they show themselves quite in favor of the presence of the Chinese, by giving regular employment to some 75,000 of that race; and notably is this the case with certain well-known editors and politicians, who in their public utterances constantly and bitterly denounce the Mongolians, while keeping several of them steadily engaged in their kitchens and gardens! This illustrates the depth and sincerity of much of this clamor.

Fourth. This strong anti-Chinese sentiment has been largely produced by the one-sided statements and misrepresentations of demagogues and lying newspapers; hence, it is not a correct or

intelligent sentiment ; and an opinion not based on substantial facts is valueless.

Fifth. The so-called anti-Chinese element embraces a great variety of people. Lowest in the scale are the "Sand-Lotters" — a rabid, ignorant mob, mainly of foreigners, led by Dennis Kearney ; and this is a large class of our population. Next come the cunning demagogues and time-serving politicians — that mighty army of office-seekers, whose principles are cheap, and variable according to popular feeling. Then we have a great many honest, industrious, hard-working, and Christian people, who, misguided by the one-sided or false statements of the secular, and the silence or tame acquiescence of the religious newspapers of the coast, sincerely believe that the presence of the Chinese is a great evil, and the immediate cause of all that distress which has really come from land monopoly, stock gambling, reckless extravagance, and the expensive vices of the past. And, last of all, there are legions who feel no special opposition to the Chinese *per se*, but are so tired of this unceasing howl and agitation, which for three years has been cursing the State, that they would be glad to have the immigration cease, or almost any thing else take place that would give a respite from disturbance. Taking all the elements together, California furnishes a singular illustration of the way in which classes influence each other, and how a whole people may be swayed by misconceptions, and placed in opposition to avowed principles of human equality and justice !

These classes hold exceedingly various views as to the proper remedy for the evil. Absolute expulsion and entire exclusion are demanded by the first ; the second are ready for any thing ; the others favor restriction or limitation of the immigration, while they seem quite willing the 150,000 now here should remain ; and those who are able evince their willingness by keeping that number, less or more, at work on good wages.

But there are certain objections to the Chinese, grave and otherwise, that demand passing notice. It is objected by Mr. Miller and others :

1. That our country is in danger of being overrun by a pagan horde from China, who will ultimately subvert our Christian civilization.

As to the danger of a large influx of Chinese, and the prob-

abilities in that direction, perhaps sufficient has already been said in this article. But the subversion of the superior civilization by the lower and weaker—when has it taken place, and under what attendant circumstances? The western empire of the Romans fell before the invasion of Goth and Vandal; the Greek empire succumbed before the invincible Ottoman emperor and his daring legions; but the best-read historians tell us that internal corruptions, the decay of virtue, and the effeminacy of civilized life, operating for generations, subverted the nations, while on their ruins grew the nobler civilization of modern times. That civilization which under the lead of Charles Martel dashed down from the Pyrenees the hosts of Saracenic invasion, and in Luther's day hurled back the crescent from the plains of Hungary—which has encircled the globe with its institutions, and now commands the fear and respect of the world—can never be subverted, except by its own corruptions. History and faith unite in giving this assurance, while on the other hand the signs of the times strongly indicate that a hundred years of contact with Christian nations, and a hundred years of missionary effort, will completely overthrow the pagan civilization of China, and place her among the progressive Christian powers of the earth; and this may be the last and greatest victory of Christianity before the end and consummation of all things.

2. It is objected that they are coolie slaves, owned by the "Six Companies," degrading free white labor by their presence, and bringing down the prices paid for ordinary work below living rates.

But from the concurrent testimony of all the missionaries familiar with Chinese customs and language, the native Christians and the mass of the Chinese people themselves, together with the fact that in the hundreds of Chinese cases tried in our courts no contract for the sale or delivery of a slave has ever been discovered, Dr. Gibson shows conclusively that slavery does not exist among the male Chinese population of our country. That girls and women are enslaved for the purposes already indicated cannot be denied, and a glaring shame it is to our public officials and courts that of the six thousand Chinese women in this country, about five thousand are held in the vilest kind of servitude. That contracts occasionally exist, accord-

ing to whose terms numbers of Chinamen may work for small wages for some months, or longer, may also be the case; nor is it uncommon for the "Six Companies," or wealthy relatives in this country, to advance passage money to their poor countrymen desiring to come here, and then require them to pay back the money advanced by monthly installments from their wages; but this has not been uncommon among other nationalities. To call China "the great slave-pen of the world," as Mr. Miller does, is to considerably exceed the truth. One must also conclude that it is a singular kind of slavery which allows its victims to go where they please, make their own bargains, collect their own wages, and do what they please with the proceeds, as the Chinese are known to do! If we inquire very closely into the degradation of "free white labor," the discovery will soon be made that laziness, improvidence, tobacco, and rum are the active agents operating through a thousand channels, and ever lowering our common people to a more wretched scale of being.

If the Chinese have assisted in bringing down the prices of labor somewhat, they have done the Pacific coast good service; yet employers know to their sorrow that no such thing as *cheap* labor exists in California. Even the Chinese obtain from one half more to double the wages paid white men and women in the Atlantic States for the same kind of service, while the cost of living and clothing is less in San Francisco than in many Eastern cities. With the splendid resources of California for almost every kind of manufacture, why is so little manufacturing done? How is it that from an annual product of 40,000,000 pounds of wool, 38,000,000 are sent East, worked up by skillful operatives there, and sent back to us as woollen goods? Hides are produced by the million, sold to the Eastern buyer, and fifty thousand cases of boots and shoes come back to us in a single year; other things are in much the same state. With all our opportunities, and protected by a double freight on materials and goods a distance of three thousand miles, we are yet unable to carry on manufacturing enterprises extensively or successfully. One would suppose from this that one of our greatest needs is the importation of *cheaper* labor from some source. But our white laborers refuse to come down from high prices, and the Chinese work on at a little

below the standard of the others; so there is something of a dead-lock in manufacturing enterprise. That wages will ultimately come down in California to the level of other States, and that there will be plenty to do, there is no doubt. Just how low the Chinese may fall in their prices we cannot tell; but it seems certain that it will not be lower than the rates paid common hands in the Eastern States.

3. It is objected that they do not use our products, that it costs them nothing to live, and that their earnings are all sent out of the country.

A trip through the Chinese quarter of San Francisco, and a little observation directed to the variety of goods and provisions on sale, must render the objection somewhat curious. Pork, beef, fish, flour, potatoes, fruits of all kinds; sewing-machines, jewelry, time-pieces, clothing, and "Yankee notions" of all kinds, abound—so that it appears from a careful estimate of the value of these home products, that they use \$6,000,000 annually! However much ability they may possess for living on nothing, observation abundantly shows that there are no more heavy feeders in the State than these same starveling (?) Chinese! It may be remarked, though, that their liquor bills are not so heavy as those of the superior race.

The amount sent back to China each year is greatly overestimated. That bitter anti-Chinese organ, the "San Francisco Call," with a passing twinge of honesty, in a recent issue, allowed that it did not exceed \$1,500,000 a year, while Dr. Gibson places the figures at \$800,000—a large amount in either case, and better for us were it all spent here; but while our people are spending \$200,000,000 a year in Europe for pleasure, and many millions besides for French wines and silks, which we do not need, it would seem a little ridiculous to raise such an uproar against the Chinamen for sending home a small part of their earnings.

4. Again, it is objected that they buy no real estate, pay no taxes, and do nothing to support our institutions or government.

Though little encouragement has been given them to make permanent investments in this country, yet in San Francisco alone they have purchased real estate to the value of over \$800,000. In support of the government they annually pay duties on their imports of over \$2,000,000; poll tax, \$250,000;

other taxes and for licenses, \$500,000 ; rents, \$100,000 ; insurance, \$500,000 ; while our lines of travel and freighting are heavily patronized by them.

5. Once more, it is objected that they are an inferior race, incapable of assimilation, of becoming citizens or Christians, and withal a most dangerous element in our society. This is General Miller's stronghold, and really contains in itself the gravest valid objection that can be urged.

But let us look into the merits of the case. If the Chinese are indeed an inferior race, "a scrub stock," as Mr. Miller says, why should those who believe in the "survival of the fittest" feel any alarm in this exigency? Evolution will doubtless regulate the case in due time, and we have little to fear. As to assimilation, there is a wide distinction to be made between the *possibility* and the *fact* of such a thing taking place. If *intermarriage* of the races is meant, then the *fact* is that such assimilation is not yet very common ; but several instances of such intermarriage, and troops of children, whose features are mingled Caucasian and Mongolian, proclaim the *possibility* of such a thing. If the adoption of our language, mode of dress, and habits of life be meant, then the *fact* is that in these regards the Chinese assimilate very slowly, and it is an objection against them of considerable weight. But closer examination will show that many thousands of them do learn our language, and in many ways assimilate in the use of our customs, manners, and inventions, enough to show the *possibility* of their doing so generally.

But there are certain obstacles to assimilation which need to be remarked upon. First, on the part of the Chinaman there is just one thing that renders him peculiar, and that makes him a Chinaman the world over, and that one thing is his *cue*. It is the crowning glory of the Mongolian costume. That cue has now been worn for about two hundred and fifty years, and is the sign of subjection to the present Tartar dynasty of the empire, the badge of Chinese citizenship. But it is not an essential part of the man himself, and may be cut off without risking his life ! Now then, let the barber, instead of shaving the head of his patient, cut his hair a decent length all around ; ensoonce your subject in a suitable suit of clothes, polish him up a little in one of the schools, and lo ! you have such

a nice-looking, medium-sized youth that you would scarce recognize him as the Chinaman of a short time before. Many have already made that change, and thousands more would do so, were it not for losing caste among their own people, and the protection of their government. But China will at length do as Japan has done—allow her subjects to abandon this barbarous custom, and dress as they please.

For our part, we have put obstacles in the way of their assimilation such as these: We have made them ineligible to citizenship by our new Constitution; we have discriminated against them by such a set of laws as have not for years disgraced the statute-book of any civilized country; we have taxed them \$40,000 a year to support our public schools and sedulously excluded them from the privileges thereof; our hoodlums have made it unsafe for them to travel or live where they cannot easily secure protection; things of this kind have rendered their assimilation slow, tended to confirm them in their clannishness, and given them no encouragement to abandon the customs of their country. Yet, in spite of it all, a gradual change has been going on. Many have abandoned their heathenism and are leading Christian lives; many have their families here and desire to make this their home.

The charge that the Chinese are a most dangerous element of our population, living in beastly filth, corrupting the young, and defying our laws by secret and inexorable tribunals, is one often repeated. The truth is this: They are a heathen people, with heathen vices—gambling and opium dens, theaters and places of prostitution; there are plenty of these, and they have their patrons. But competent judges say the abominations of these things are no worse than are found among white people in all large cities. The few of our own race drawn into them have already been hopelessly corrupted by our own peculiar institutions. Breweries, beer-gardens, five thousand or more saloons in California, Sunday picnics, excursions, godless schools—these are mainly responsible for the army of hoodlums and the bad state of morals and finances among our people; and the Chinese are accountable alone in the fact that our own people have unwisely hired them to do the work they should have done themselves and taught their children to do. That they have secret courts in operation there is no reliable

evidence—neither prison, nor dungeon, nor testimony are found in proof.

About the only valid objections, then, are these, namely: Their slow assimilation to American customs and modes of life, and the fact that thus far so few have come to remain and identify themselves with the interests of the country, for which things we are ourselves largely responsible.

OUR TRADITIONAL POLICY.

Belief in human brotherhood and open doors for all has been our national doctrine for a hundred years. Under its operation our country has been closed to none, and it has been our theory to extend to all who might come the enjoyment of equal privileges with ourselves as to trade, labor, and residence. We have made no conditions looking to the limitation of the incoming tide; white or dusky, rich or poor, bad or good, to all the gate has stood open; but now we are confronted with an immigration from Asia, differing in some respects from that which has come from Europe. What shall be done to meet this new phase of the immigration question? Shall we change our time-honored policy and plant exclusion on our western shore? Is this immigration so threatening that we must now put limitations upon it and render it less free than in the past? Or is no action necessary?

Were there no turbulent European element on our hands, holding the ballot, swayed by crafty priests and designing demagogues, perhaps there would be no Chinese question to vex us; but, unfortunately, we cannot eliminate this disturbing element from our national life, and must, therefore, try to adjust the case in some other way. Is the expulsion of the Chinese, or a limited immigration, the solution of the problem? Allowing that there are some grave objections to them, and that indirectly they cause some disturbance in our political life, will the proposed remedy place us in any better position than we now occupy? Viewed in the light of our principles relating to human rights and justice, the plan would seem to involve too many contradictions and too radical a change of policy to be acceptable to the American people as a whole. Yet the nation must protect its own life and secure the best good of its citizens. It would seem from past experience that to have in our

midst so large a foreign element not possessed of the rights of citizenship must often, owing to the peculiarities of our popular government, be the occasion of grave disturbances and sometimes subject our system to a too heavy strain. The genius of our free institutions demands that we should make no distinction on account of race or nationality alone; that we should exclude no one on account of his color; and that we should extend to all who are willing to conform to American ideas and modes of life the same rights of residence and citizenship.

True, we may by treaty stipulations with China secure a limitation of Chinese immigration, provided we submit to the loss of some of our privileges in the Chinese Empire; but that can do little else than delay the final issue. Some time in the future we shall be compelled to face the question fairly, and settle the matter forever as to whether the Chinaman is a man on American soil or not. The readiest, safest, and most consistent solution of the case, is to place all foreigners on a common footing, make all eligible to citizenship on certain conditions, or else none at all, and then, if necessary to limit immigration, let the restrictions apply to Europeans and Asiatics alike. Let the most deserving come, no matter what the shade of his skin or shape of his eye. Once make the Chinese generally eligible to citizenship, no matter on how severe educational and moral conditions, and the question is solved. The objections will speedily vanish; the demagogues and newspapers cease to howl against them; and the ignorant mob will no more dare attempt their injury than they now do that of the colored citizen in the more civilized parts of our country.

RECIPROCITY RELATIONS.

Our relations of friendship and commerce with China are so intimately connected with this question that we cannot disregard them. The Burlingame Treaty was made at our instance and for our benefit. Through it we are allowed in China all privileges granted the "most favored nations." We cannot, therefore, legislate or take adverse action in the matter, and not be confronted by certain unpleasant consequences. We shall not be sustained in laying upon China conditions favorable only to ourselves; nor can we make conditions for others

to which we ourselves are not willing to submit. If an American has the right to go where he pleases, stay as long as he pleases, earn all he can, and dispose of it as he may choose, so has any other man the same right. If he has the right to lay limitations around the Chinaman in his coming and the use of his earnings in this country, the latter has an equal right to retaliate after his own fashion.

We now have a commerce with China yearly aggregating over \$24,000,000, carried on chiefly by our own vessels, and handled largely by our own merchants. With such a market and ever-increasing demands for our products of all descriptions, it would seem eminently proper that we should foster the trade and do nothing to turn it into other channels. England is anxious to monopolize the trade with China and Japan, and would only be too glad to sustain China in any discrimination she might make against American merchants and American products, by way of retaliation for discriminations against her people in this country. China is not the puny, helpless power we have been accustomed to regard her; but, with the throbbings of a new civilization and a new life, is awaking like a giant from long slumber, and will ere long be able to compel respect from the nations of the earth. America and China—the oldest and the youngest of great nations—ought ever to be on the most friendly terms, ought ever to deal justly by each other, and ought to mutually aid each other in the development of their respective destinies, and the advancement of humanity!

Finally, we have these conclusions to act upon:

1. To exclude or discriminate against any people simply on the ground of race, color, or previous condition, is a grave departure from American first principles, and an attempt to wrest from others rights we insist on for ourselves.

2. It is too late in the history of the world for liberal America to adopt the cast-off, selfish, and narrow policy of China. It is better to aid or compel China to adopt and carry out our own.

3. While we may justly protect home industries, and allow to citizens of all races superior privileges, we cannot repress free competition of the races, nor deprive men of the inalienable right of hiring and being hired in an open labor market.

4. The solution of the question is in placing all foreigners on the same basis, giving to all the rights of citizenship only

on certain high conditions of long residence, education, and sworn allegiance, and discriminating, if at all, not in favor of one race above another, but in favor of citizens of all the races!

5. While it seems almost certain that the Anglo-Saxon race will ever predominate on American soil, Providence, with the finger of destiny, points no less distinctly to this land as the one sacred spot where all the races of men shall meet and dwell in full fellowship, and where at last the unity and brotherhood of humanity shall find their noblest earthly illustration.

ART. III.—PAN-PRESBYTERIAN COUNCIL.*

"THE Alliance of the Reformed Churches throughout the world holding the Presbyterian System," is the official name of the General Triennial Council recently in session in the city of Philadelphia. This Pan-Presbyterian body originated in the action of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States (North) in 1873, in appointing Drs. Crosby and Hatfield, of New York, and Dr. M'Cosh, of Princeton, a committee "to correspond with sister Churches holding the Westminster standards, with the view of bringing about an ecumenical council to consider subjects of common interest to all, and especially to promote harmony of action in the mission fields, at home and abroad."

It will be observed that in the very inception of the movement "harmony of action" in the prosecution of missionary work was made the special prominent object. A preliminary conference was called in London, in 1875. Of one hundred and one delegates commissioned to attend that conference only sixty-four were present; but they represented more than a score of different Presbyterian bodies in Great Britain and her colonies, on the Continent, and in the United States. It was an

* It should be said that this article was prepared in advance of the official publication of the proceedings of the Council, reliance being chiefly placed on the reports of "The Philadelphia Press"—reports which were frequently commended by members of the Council for their accuracy and fullness. The official record may show some slight changes in paragraphs herein quoted, but these can hardly be considerable or important, and the general drift of the Council, with respect to the topics discussed in this article, was unmistakable in its character.

important meeting, characterized by great warmth of brotherly feeling; and by the expression of a concurrent judgment that a closer alliance and a more manifest fellowship of the Churches holding the Presbyterian system was demanded. The objects and methods of the proposed Council were defined as follows:

The Council shall seek to guide and stimulate public sentiment, by papers read, by addresses delivered and published, by the circulation of information respecting the allied Churches and their missions, by the exposition of scriptural principles, and by defenses of the truth, by communicating the minutes of its proceedings to the supreme courts of the Churches forming the Alliance, and by such other action as is in accordance with its constitution and objects.

The Council shall consider questions of general interest to the Presbyterian community; it shall seek the welfare of Churches, especially such as are weak or persecuted; it shall gather and disseminate information concerning the kingdom of Christ throughout the world; it shall commend the Presbyterian system as scriptural, and as combining simplicity, efficiency, and adaptation to all times and conditions; it shall also entertain all subjects directly connected with the work of evangelization—such as the relation of the Christian Church to the evangelization of the world, the distribution of mission work, the combination of church energies, especially in reference to great cities and destitute districts, the training of ministers, the use of the press, colportage, the religious instruction of the young, the sanctification of the Sabbath, systematic beneficence, the suppression of intemperance and other prevailing vices, and the best methods of opposing infidelity and Romanism.

The constitution adopted recognized the principle of equality of representation from the clergy and laity, declaring that the delegates, "as far as practicable," should "consist of an equal number of ministers and elders;" and it also inhibited the Council from interfering "with the existing creed or constitution of any Church in the Alliance, or with its internal order or external relations."

The first Pan-Presbyterian Convocation, for which provision was thus made, assembled in Edinburgh, Scotland, in July, 1877. It was a large, able, and influential body, and fairly representative of the Reformed Churches of the Presbyterian order in different parts of the world. This Council, though not satisfactory in every particular, did much to promote deeper fellowship among the Churches, to advance the cause of foreign missions, and to bring

more prominently before the mind of the Christian world the necessity and practicability of a confederation of Protestantism, especially in and through its several distinctive denominations, for the more successful performance of evangelistic work, and for a stronger demonstration of the essential unity of the Church and of the common headship of all believers in our Lord Jesus Christ. The published volume of its proceedings is an interesting and suggestive document. Provision was made for a triennial meeting of the Council, and the Convocation in Philadelphia in the last days of September and the first days of October, 1880, was the result of that arrangement. It is this second Pan-Presbyterian Assembly which specially interests us at the present time.

The roll of the Council showed the attendance of delegates from Austria, Belgium, France, Italy, Spain, Switzerland, England, Ireland, Scotland, Wales, United States, Canada and other British colonies and dependencies, Africa, India, Ceylon, and from Victoria, New South Wales, New Hebrides, South Australia, and Tasmania, in Australasia. It was, therefore, an Ecumenical Conference, or Pan-Council, representing, with scarcely an exception, all branches of the Presbyterian Church, in all parts of the habitable world. The names of forty men of distinguished merit appeared on the programme who had not been selected by their respective Churches as delegates. Altogether it was a body of men of marked ability, ripe culture, distinguished scholarship and unquestioned devotion to the cause of Christ, especially as represented by the Presbyterian Church.

An order of exercises had been carefully prepared for each day of the session, and themes for essays and reports assigned to certain leading members of the Council. Some of these were distinctively denominational, such as, Report of Statistics, Principles of Presbyterianism, Ruling Elders, Creeds and Confessions, Presbyterianism and Education, Presbyterianism in relation to Civil and Religious Liberty, Presbyterian Catholicity, the Theology of the Reformed Church, with special reference to the Westminster Standards, and Desiderata of Presbyterian History. The whole Christian world, however, is deeply concerned in the relation which the great Presbyterian body holds to some, at least, of these subjects. Many of the themes dis-

cussed were of the widest Christian interest, and of the highest importance, as, The Ceremonial and the Moral in Worship, Inspiration and Interpretation of the Holy Scriptures, the Relations of Science and Theology, Agnosticism, the Vicarious Sacrifice of Christ, Future Retribution, and the Conflict between Faith and Rationalism. Of a large number of the topics considered, it may be said that they were not only broader than the domain of the Presbyterian Church, but also that they were of such a practical character as to interest patriots, philanthropists and Christians in all lands; such as, for instance, Religion in Secular Affairs, Family Religion and Training of the Young, the Application of the Gospel to Employers and Employed, Christianity the Friend of the Working Classes, How to deal with Young Men trained in Science in this Age of Unsettled Opinion, Religion and Politics, Church Extension in large cities and in sparsely settled regions, Sabbath-schools, the Children in the Sabbath Service, Temperance, Popular Amusements, Observance of the Sabbath, Co-operation among Missionaries, Training of Candidates for the Ministry, Systematic Beneficence, Regeneration, and Revivals of Religion. These are subjects in which all men, countries, and Churches are interested and concerned. They touch the foundations of social order, of public law, of personal happiness, of the progress of the race, and of the civilization and conversion of the world. Their consideration by such a body of intelligent, cultured, and devout men as composed the recent Pan-Presbyterian Council, is an event of more than ordinary importance, and likely to exert a wide influence on the future of the Church and of the nations of the earth.

The able and eloquent opening sermon delivered before the Council by Rev. William M. Paxton, D.D., is remarkable from the fact that it presents six prominent characteristics of the great family of Presbyterian Churches, not one of which differentiates the Presbyterian body from other orthodox Protestant Churches. Change the name of the denomination, and select a different class of historic illustrations, and the sermon might as well have been preached before a Methodist Ecumenical Conference as before a Presbyterian Pan-Council. Certainly Methodism claims to be loyal to the person of Jesus Christ, to bear witness to the truth, to be catholic in spirit and purpose,

to stand for civil liberty, to be devoted to the work of Christian education, and to be missionary in its character and life. The facts and incidents of Methodist history furnish powerful arguments and elucidations to establish and to illumine every one of these propositions—some of them much more impressive than any which were employed by Dr. Paxton. This only shows that the greatest and best things of the Presbyterian Church and of the Methodist Church are those things which are held in common by all denominations of Protestant Christianity. It illustrates what Principal M'Vicar, of Montreal, said before the Council, that, "generally speaking, it will be found that the weakest part of a man's creed is that which he holds alone, and the strongest part is that which he holds in common with all true servants of the Lord." According to the noble sentiment of the great D'Aubigne, "That which gives life to Churches is not their diversities of government or worship or of discipline, but that 'most holy faith' which is common to them all."

The great value of an ecumenical council is not, it seems to us, in the able papers read; in the exhaustive reports made; in the brilliant and powerful array of talent and influence; in setting up new standards of orthodoxy, or in showing a pertinacious adherence to old standards, nor in any thing of this sort, however valuable such results may be in themselves considered. Jesus said, "By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another." Christianity demonstrated by an exhibition of spiritual brotherhood, by a full tide of holy love which will submerge all the rocks and shoals of difference, and showed by a practical and earnest co-operation in doing the Master's work, irrespective of denominational distinctions or doctrinal divergences—this is the great need of the Church, to-day, in order to compact its forces, to economize its expenditures, to harmonize its life with that of its glorious Head, and to make it victorious over the empire of darkness and death. Disbelief, in every form, is more impressed and shaken by exhibitions of Christian love than by any other gospel agency. It is the Holy Spirit of God dwelling in the hearts, shining in the faces, speaking in the words, and embodying itself in the deeds of Christian men, which, more powerfully than any other fact or influence, demonstrates Christ-

tianity to the world. Love, and not orthodoxy, is the test of discipleship. "If ye have love one to another"—not if ye all agree as to doctrinal symbols—then "shall all men know that ye are my disciples." Right thinking is important, and orthodoxy is not a thing to be disdained; but denominational differences are not usually in regard to the most important matters. The imperishable things of inestimable value are those in respect to which the great majority of Christians substantially agree. "Keep your smaller differences," said Calvin, when addressing the Lutheran Churches. "Let us have no discord on that account, but let us march in one solid column, under the banners of the Captain of our salvation, and with undivided counsels form the legions of the cross upon the territories of darkness and of death." "I should not hesitate to cross ten seas, if by this means holy communion might prevail among the members of Christ."

It is proper to judge a great convocation of the Church by this standard. Did the Pan-Presbyterian Council keep its smaller differences down? Did it show that it judged Christian brotherhood to be of more value than exact conformity to the standards? Did it make practical provision for joint and co-operative labors in the mission fields of the Church? These are topics which require a candid consideration.

The fact stares us in the face that this Council, as the previous one, in Edinburgh, met and parted without uniting, *as a body*, in the administration of the sacrament of the Lord's Supper. It seems that the Presbyterians who sing the psalms of David, and the Presbyterians who not only sing psalms but also hymns, which devout and spiritual, though uninspired, men have written, cannot agree, when set up as a spectacle before the world, to hold a joint communion service!

The following comment of a secular journal is what might have been anticipated:

The failure of the Council *as a body* to commune together is a matter of just lamentation to all who desire the Church's unity. It is vain to allege in justification of this failure that the various branches of the Church represented differ in regard to some doctrines and dogmas. The time is at hand when what is needed as the great deed befitting the manhood of the Church is that its sections, especially those bearing the same generic name, should resolve on union, *notwithstanding differences*—that they

should know how to debate these differences freely and earnestly, and yet at the same time be one in outward act as they are really one in inward spirit.

Do not the various delegates on the floor of the Alliance recognize their brethren and the constituencies they represent as sustaining a Christian relation and possessing a Christian character? If they do not, why do they fraternize with them at all? But if they do, why object to such close fellowship with them as would bring them together around the table of a common Redeemer? Why unite in common prayer, preaching and praise, and hold back from a joint participation of the ordinance without which all pretense of union is a mere sham?

How deeply seated are these psalm-singing differences is evidenced by one little circumstance. When the letter of greeting to the various Churches represented in the Council was read and approved—a letter which congratulates the Church on the flourishing state of religion—Dr. Schaff, after having taken the precaution to consult a member of the proper committee, proposed to sing the doxology, “Praise God, from whom all blessings flow,” and, pitching the tune, led the Council in a hearty singing of this strain of lofty praise. But Prof. D. R. Kerr, of Pittsburgh, who was in the chair, decided that the act “was an intrusion and an incivility,” and Dr. Schaff found it necessary to explain and apologize. It is to be presumed that every man who had been guilty of the grave offense of singing God’s praises in the language of Bishop Ken rather than in the words of King David laid his mouth in the dust. Did the Council, in these matters, follow the direction of Christ and the advice of Calvin? “It is high time,” some one has said, “for bodies of Christians to throw overboard their minor points of divergence and come together in solid column to battle with the enemy which they all have to dread, and for nothing have so much reason to dread as for their unjustifiable divisions.” We do not think that there is any thing to “throw overboard” except narrowness and bigotry. Every man is entitled to his opinions, but no man has a right to make his opinions the test of Christian brotherhood. We do not hesitate to affirm that the learning, wisdom, and piety of this Council did not accomplish so much for Christ and his cause, by all the able papers and reports which were presented, as would have been accomplished by a joint celebration of the sacrament of the Lord’s Supper. The Council was elevated on a platform, with

the eyes of the world fixed on it, to discover, not so much what it would do, as what spirit it possessed. If its members had said, "We are followers of the Prince of Peace, we are agreed in all important things, we certainly regard each other as Christians, and we can afford to sink our minor differences out of sight, and, whether we sing psalms or hymns, or both, we will come together around the table of our common Lord, and show to an infidel and pagan world that we are one in Christ Jesus," we believe that the melting and glorifying power of the Holy Spirit would have come on the Council, that their tears of grateful joy would have bedewed and gladdened the waste places of Zion, and that their shouts and halleluiahs would have sent their joyful echoes around the world.

Was this Pan-Presbyterian Council truly catholic in spirit? It professed to be. Professor Stephen Alexander, of Princeton, said :

There is an apostolic rule of Christian fellowship and recognition. It is found in 1 Cor. i, 2. It has been properly quoted several times in this Council. It tells who we are to recognize as a Christian brother : "Unto the Church of God, which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ, our Lord, both theirs and ours." It is very simple and beautiful : "All that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord." Whoever does that, according to the apostolic rule is my Christian brother.

Dr. Paxton, in the opening sermon, said :

We are not *the* Catholic Church, but a part of the great Universal Church of Jesus Christ, which has many members, who bear many names. Our name is Presbyterian. As another has expressed it, "Christian is our name, Presbyterian our surname." We are Presbyterian Christians, because we belong to Christ; Presbyterians, because we believe that the true original apostolic episcopacy was presbytery. Our principles and polity and methods of operation are all catholic, and may be reduced to practice with a wonderful facility under any circumstances and in any nationality.

Principal M'Vicar, of Montreal, said :

We hold that no one should presume in his denominational zeal to assert that Christ loved Presbyterians or Episcopalians or Congregationalists or Baptists or Methodists or any other body to the exclusion of the rest. The simple truth is that he redeemed the whole Church, all that are to be gathered finally into glory.

Dr. William H. Campbell, New Brunswick, N. J., of the Reformed Church, said :

There is one flock and one Shepherd, but there are many folds, and we in our Presbyterian fold must exercise love and brotherly kindness to every one that bears the image of Jesus Christ. Closer catholic unity is not going to diminish but increase our love and labor, our prayers and faith, and gifts for the Bible Society and the Tract Society and the Evangelical Alliance, and every other form of good work which calls for the unity of God's people.

Rev. A. F. Buscarlet, of Lausanne, Switzerland, said :

Where Christ, as the head of his Church, is firmly acknowledged, there the different members can harmoniously work together, and soon sympathize most truly with each other.

There were many other beautiful and forcible expressions of similar import, which we have not space to quote, but we put these on record that we may not be accused of misrepresenting the Council in the observations which we now have to offer. These professions of catholicity were put to the test in two notable instances. We refer to the case of the Cumberland Presbyterians, and to the proposal to send a deputation to the Methodist Ecumenical Conference.

Delegates from the Cumberland Presbyterian Church sought admission into the Council, and were refused. The Business Committee recommended the adoption of the following minute:

In the judgment of the Council the adoption of the Constitution of the Alliance by Churches should precede the admission of delegates, and in the absence of evidence that the Constitution has been adopted by either of these Churches, the delegates cannot be received.

Dr. Schaff asked if these delegates had refused to accept the Constitution. He also asked, "Has a single Reformed or Presbyterian Church in Europe, or Africa, or Asia, formally or informally, adopted the Constitution?" Hon. I. D. Jones, of Baltimore, made the very sensible suggestion that the sending of delegates to the Council was in itself an act of subscription to the Constitution, the provisions of which had been published to the Church for the last three years. Henry Day, Esq., of New York City, said :

I believe, brethren, that this is an Ecumenical Council—that we ought to bring in every body of the Presbyterian order and
FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—4

polity that comes anywhere near us. I believe the Constitution was intended to be drawn so that it would let in any one in all these great assemblies that comes really near or is somewhat joined with us. Now when application is made for admittance by the Cumberland Presbyterians, who, you will remember, represent about a half million of the people of this country, they are refused. They are Presbyterians in polity and they are Presbyterians in doctrine. I think certainly they come as near the required standard as the Reformed Churches.

But all appeals for catholicity and liberal judgment were in vain. The Cumberland Presbyterians were kept out. The controlling reason was expressed by Dr. Watts, who said that the Church applying must have a creed in harmony with the consensus of the Reformed Confessions. Wherein do the Cumberland Presbyterians differ from the standards? They have made slight changes in the Creed, in the sections on "Free-Will," and on "Effectual Calling." Instead of the words "*elect* infants," they employ the words "*all* infants." They affirm, not that the saints *cannot* fall away, but that they *will* not. "Immutability of the decree of election," as one of the reasons for "Final Perseverance," they have omitted. For the chapter on Decrees in the Westminster Confession, they have substituted the following :

1. God did, by the most wise and holy counsel of his own will, determine to act, or to bring to pass, what should be for his own glory.
2. God has not decreed any thing concerning his creature man, contrary to his revealed will or written word, which declares his sovereignty over all his creatures, the ample provision he has made for their salvation, his determination to punish the finally impenitent with everlasting destruction, and to save the true believer with an everlasting salvation.

It is claimed that there are other branches of the Church, as, for instance, the United Presbyterians of Scotland, which have made quite as serious changes in the subscription to the Confession, that the Westminster articles are not co-extensive with Presbyterianism, and that a more liberal interpretation of the Confession must be allowed, or other bodies, as well as the Cumberland Presbyterians, will be excluded from the General Council of the Church.

We have still another illustration of the catholicity of this ecumenical assembly of the Presbyterian Church. On the

third day of the session Rev. Henry A. Nelson, D.D., of Geneva, N. Y., a former Professor in Lane Theological Seminary, and a man of deserved repute, in his denomination and beyond it, for learning and piety, offered the following resolution :

Whereas, We are informed that our Christian brethren of the Methodist Churches are to hold an Ecumenical Council in London in the year 1881:

Resolved, That two ministers and two ruling elders be appointed to convey to that body the fraternal salutations of this Alliance, with the assurance of our hearty fellowship with them in the cause of our Redeemer and Lord.

On motion of Dr. Breed, of Philadelphia, the resolution was referred to the Business Committee. Rev. S. I. Prime, D.D., of New York City, made the report of the Committee, recommending the adoption of the following minute: "That inasmuch as the Constitution of our Alliance makes no provision for reciprocating such correspondence, and we are not apprised of the wishes of other Councils in that regard, it is not practicable at present to make such appointments as are contemplated in the resolutions."

Dr. Nelson stated that he had satisfactory, though, in the nature of the case, of necessity unofficial, assurances that such action as his resolution proposed would be acceptable to the Methodist Churches.

Principal Cairns, of Scotland; Hon. W. E. Dodge, of New York; Hon. Isaac D. Jones, of Baltimore; and Rev. William Reid, of Toronto, spoke at length, expressing warm commendation of the idea of fraternizing with sister Churches. The whole matter was then sent back to the Business Committee, together with a preamble to the resolution offered by Dr. Bronson, recognizing the "earnest zeal and faithful works of the Methodist Church in all Christian lands." In a subsequent report, submitted by Dr. Calderwood, it was recommended that a letter of friendly greeting and good wishes should be sent from this Council by the clerk indicating our desire for the success of that meeting. The recommendation was agreed to.

The two reasons given for the adverse report on Dr. Nelson's resolution are neither of them worthy of respect. The first

reason presented is, "The Constitution of our Alliance makes no provision for reciprocating such correspondence." Well, suppose it does not. Does it prohibit such correspondence? Is not that precisely one of the things which may be left to the sober judgment and fraternal impulse of the Council itself? But this is not, by any means, the whole strength of the case. The preamble to the Constitution—the instrument under which the committee takes refuge—contains these memorable words:

In forming this Alliance the Presbyterian Churches do not mean to change their fraternal relations with other Churches; but will be ready, as heretofore, to join with them in Christian fellowship and in advancing the cause of the Redeemer, on the general principle maintained and taught in the Reformed Confession—that the Church of God on earth, though composed of many members, is one body in the communion of the Holy Ghost, of which body Christ is the Supreme Head and the Scriptures alone are the infallible law.

Any one can see that the conclusion of the Committee is not in harmony with this grand, glowing, and truly catholic declaration.

The other reason given is a lack of knowledge in regard to the wishes of other councils. But it was proposed to send a deputation to a council called, but not yet convened, and which could not be expected to declare its wishes in advance of its organization. There was every reason to conclude that a deputation would be gratefully received. The final determination to send a fraternal letter is better than nothing, and yet what assurance had the committee that a fraternal letter would be received any more graciously than a deputation? On the very day on which the Council assembled, Professor E. D. Morris, D.D., of Lane Theological Seminary, published in the New York "Independent" a communication in which he advocated what this Quarterly proposed in its October number, in an article prepared four months before its publication, namely, "A Parliament of Protestantism," to "promote great causes by joint action"—causes too great to be confined within denominational limits, and requiring the joint exertions of all the followers of the Lord Jesus for their successful establishment in the earth. Speaking of the essential unity of the Church of God on earth, Professor Morris adds:

Will it not be a fitting expression of that sentiment on the part of the Alliance if, during its present session, a suitable delegation should be chosen to represent in the proposed Conference the confederated Presbyterianism of the world, and to convey to those there assembled the assurance of fraternal regard? Such an act would not only be in itself a graceful and brotherly thing, but would also become a conspicuous attestation before all men of the reality and worth of true Christian fellowship. Such a delegation would, doubtless, be most cordially welcomed, and its assurances would, beyond question, receive a cordial and enthusiastic response. Confederated Methodism would rejoice to grasp, with characteristic fervor, the extended hand of confederated Presbyterianism; and Evangelical Protestantism the world over would rejoice in the act.

The Alliance did not meet this expectation, and, as we believe, did not express the convictions of the leading and best minds in the Presbyterian Church, especially in this country. The fraternal letter which the clerk of the Alliance was directed to send to the Methodist Ecumenical Conference will, doubtless, be kindly received, and will be responded to in like manner and with hearty interest. Beyond that, of course, nothing will be expected of the Conference. The world moves slowly, but it moves, and as an admired Presbyterian divine said, "Christ is greater than Council or Conference," and a confederated Protestantism will yet stand, in the unity of the Spirit, and the strength of a common purpose, against the assaults of unbelief and misbelief, for the conversion of the world to Christ.

The interest in the Pan-Presbyterian Council rose to its culmination when the missionary work was considered; for in respect to the importance of this work the Church is a unity, and in its accomplishment, more emphatically than anywhere else, is the necessity of co-operation clearly seen. The report of the Council's Committee on Missions presented for consideration the following points:

1. Home arrangement for the management of missions.
2. Funds and modes of raising them.
3. Means adopted to awaken missionary zeal.
4. Supply and training of missionaries.
5. Modes of missionary operation.
6. Relation of missions to the home Churches.
7. Mutual relations of missions abroad.
8. Co-operation at home on behalf of missions.
9. Glance at fields still unoccupied.

The following facts were also noticed: Regions lately inaccessible are now thrown open to missionary labors; facilities of intercommunication are bringing the ends of the earth together; the supply of missionaries has never failed; an important portion of missionary labor, at home and abroad, is done by Christian women; native ministers must, for the sake of economy and efficiency, be trained for their work in their own lands; and for all the highest aims and ends of evangelism there must be associate missionary endeavors in the foreign field. "There is something sublime and grand," said Dr. Wilson, "in the idea that all the varied branches of our venerable Presbyterian Church should be found earnestly working, not to extend and perpetuate their own peculiarities of worship and government, but to rear one simple, pure, scriptural Presbyterian Church for each one of the great sections of the unevangelized world."

The United Presbyterian Church of Scotland sent a communication to the Council asking for a consideration of the question "as to the mode in which missionaries of different Churches laboring in the same or contiguous fields may be associated with each other so as most efficiently to secure, in harmonious co-operation, the ends contemplated in missionary work." Dr. Hutton, of Paisley, Scotland, referring to this communication, argued that, where mission Presbyteries do not exist, Presbyterian Churches should act in conjunction with Churches of other evangelical denominations in mission work in order to extend the sweep of their co-operative enterprise. Too often, the speaker said, different denominations in the mission field were looked upon as jealous camps. Dr. Murray Mitchell stated that there is a project pending in China which has been advocated by one of the leading Scottish missionaries, as well as by one of the Presbyterian missionaries, for a general Presbyterian college in that country, and the same idea has been suggested to our brethren in India. Rev. Mr. Stout, of Japan, informed the Council that they had one Presbyterian Church in Japan instead of three, and that the Japan Presbyterian Church had a native constitution; that, by means of this organization, they had been able to establish a common theological school; and that, having a common Church and one theological

school, they were enabled to present a common front to heathenism.

In view of these facts, overtures and accounts from mission fields, the Council adopted a report on "Co-operating with Foreign Missions," recognizing "the strong increasing desire among the Churches in connection with it that some suitable measures should be taken to secure, as far as practicable, co-operation in the work of foreign missions;" affirming that such desire should be regarded "as one of the most hopeful signs of the future;" and suggesting to the Reformed Churches the importance of further organizing and unifying their evangelistic labors, "in the several fields in which a plurality of Presbyterian missions are contiguously established;" and to carry into effect these suggestions to the Churches, the Council appointed two large committees, one for the United States and Canada, and one for Europe and other places not otherwise provided for; and the work of these committees it defined as follows: "It shall be the duty of these committees to communicate in such manner as they may deem best with the Churches assigned to them, and report the result to the next Council. Should it become manifest in the meantime that plans of co-operation to some extent can be agreed upon among some of the Churches interested, the said committees are authorized and requested to give such aid in carrying them into effect as may be found practicable."

It may reasonably be expected that increased unity, efficiency, and success in all the mission fields of the Presbyterian Church will result from the wise and earnest action of the Triennial Council, and from the advice and practical aid of its permanent supervisional Committee.

There are several other important matters which came before the Council, to which we had designed to refer, but our space forbids. The utility and advantage of such a general representative assembly was well expressed by Dr. Paxton in his introductory discourse. He said:

The smallest Presbyterian body struggling under discouragement in the most distant country must be made to feel that it does not stand alone, but is linked in effective sympathy with a great family of vigorous Churches who feel for it and will act with it in its time of need. No Church must be per-

mitted to have a feeling of solitary orphanage. The brethren must take home from this family council the salutations of the Churches to each other, and such messages of love and sympathy as will make the discouraged lift their faces from the dust, and thank God and take courage. So, too, the Churches and brethren laboring in the great centers and bearing the burdens of heavy responsibilities must be made to feel that in this strain and struggle they have the support of brethren and Churches who feel and work with them and for them, and that from the vast family all over the earth prayers are going up for their success.

Dr. Paxton insisted, in an eloquent strain, that this Christian unity could not be secured by mechanical appliances, by resolutions, or "ecclesiastical pressure," but that it must come from within, that it must be inspired by the Holy Ghost, and that it must find manifestation in a warm Christian affection.

To the ensuing Methodist Ecumenical Conference this Pan-Presbyterian Council will be both a beacon and an example. It furnishes both warning and instruction. It is a chart which reveals at once the shoals and the deep-sea soundings. It will be inexcusable to repeat its errors; it will be stupidity or bigotry not to discern the noble pattern furnished, and not to profit by its consideration. The Conference can afford to be less learned, metaphysical, and elaborate, but it cannot afford to be less earnest, spiritual, and catholic. It will be advisable to give more time to religious exercises, to the narration of personal experience in the things of God, and to services of consecration, prayer, and praise. Let the Holy Eucharist be duly administered, and the doxology be frequently sung. The Conference will not meet to magnify Methodism, but Christ, and to devise better methods of doing his work in all the earth. That it may be successful in its great object, let the whole Church offer constant prayer to Almighty God.

ART. IV.—ZOROASTER AND ZOROASTRIANISM.

The Religion of the Parsis. By MARTIN HAUG, Ph.D. Boston. 1878.

THE religion of Zoroaster is among the oldest of the religions of the world, and one of the eight great ethnic religions which possess a sacred literature. It is the religion of our kindred at a time shortly after our Aryan ancestors began their migrations from their primitive home. It originated probably not less than twelve hundred years before the Christian era, became a national religion, and, in spite of revolutions, conquests, and persecutions, is still professed by a small Parsi community in India and a few devotees in their fatherland. The religion of Zoroaster is most intimately connected with the religion of Moses and the prophets of the Old Testament. The Magi are mentioned by Jeremiah, chap. xxxix, 3. The "Chief of the Magi" (*Rab-mag*) was in the retinue of Nebuchadnezzar at his entry into Jerusalem. Ezekiel speaks probably of Zoroastrians when he says there were "about five and twenty men" standing "at the door of the temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar," who "put the branch to their nose;" "with their backs toward the temple of the Lord, and their faces toward the east; and they worshiped the sun toward the east." Ezek. viii, 16, 17.

The Bible never classifies the Persians among idolaters. Isaiah calls Cyrus "the anointed of the Lord whose right hand the Lord has holden, to subdue nations before him:" the Lord's "shepherd" to carry out his counsels; "a ravenous bird called from the east, the man that executeth the Lord's counsel from a far country." Isa. xlv, 1; xlv, 28; xlvi, 11.

Herodotus declares that the Magi worshiped no idols, (chaps. cxxxi, cxxxii.) We shall find their own sacred writings confirming this testimony. Magi came from the East to worship the infant Jesus at Bethlehem. Matt. ii, 1.

In the famous Behistun trilingual inscription, discovered by Major Rawlinson in 1835, consisting in the first four columns (omitting the fifth half column of thirty-five lines, which has been but imperfectly deciphered) of three hundred and seventy-six lines in an Aryan, a Semitic, and a Scythic language, the name of Ormazd occurs sixty-seven times. Darius says, "By

the grace of Ormazd I am king;" "By the grace of Ormazd I hold this empire;" "Ormazd brought help to me;" "I prayed to Ormazd;" "By the grace of Ormazd, my forces entirely defeated the rebel army;" "Under the favor of Ormazd have I always acted;" "Ormazd is my witness;" "May Ormazd be a friend to thee." A true devotional spirit which may be favorably compared with the spirit disclosed in like passages of history in the Old Testament, runs through the whole account.*

Until within a little more than a century our knowledge concerning the laws, customs, and religion of Persia came principally from classic sources. Modern Persian literature is poetic and traditional. Mohammedan writers give only the conquest of the country and the extinction of its religion A. D. 636.

Of the Greek writers who wrote concerning the religion of the Persians, prominent were Ktesias, (B. C. 400,) Deinon, (B. C. 350,) Theopompos of Chios, (B. C. 300,) and Hermippos of Smyrna, (B. C. 250.) Only fragments of their writings have been preserved by Plutarch, Diogenes of Laerte, and Pliny. Theopompos in his eighth book of the history of King Philip of Macedonia, "On Miraculous Things," treats specially of the doctrines of the Magi. Hermippos wrote a book, "On the Magi," which must have been of great value. Pliny says that Hermippos investigated with great care and labor the sacred books of the Zoroastrians, which were said to comprise two millions of verses. The loss of such a work is to be deeply regretted. The Greeks and Romans derived most of their information concerning the Zoroastrian religion from Theopompos and Hermippos.

To escape the persecutions of the Mohammedans, the adherents of this religion left their native land and settled in Western India. Here the nations of Europe came in contact with them, and in the seventeenth century manuscripts of their sacred books were brought to Europe, but were valued only as curiosities. In A. D. 1700 Hyde, a celebrated scholar of Oxford, published *Historia Religionis Veterum Persarum Eorumque Magorum*, which contained much and valuable information gathered from many authorities concerning their religion. But Hyde, although having access to original manuscripts, could

* "Records of the Past," vol. i, pp. 113-129.

not read a word of them, and hence his work cannot be considered an authority.

In 1754 the enthusiasm of Anquetil-Duperron, a young Frenchman, pursuing oriental studies at the Royal Library, was aroused at the sight of a Parsi manuscript, and he determined to visit India and Persia and collect manuscripts, bring them back, translate them, and give the results to the world. He enlisted as a soldier in the service of the Indian Company, marched out of Paris "to the lugubrious sound of an ill-mounted drum," landed at Pondicherry in 1755, steadfastly kept to his purpose, studied hard, collected manuscripts, returned to Paris in 1762, and in 1771 published his translation of the so-called "Zend-Avesta."

The authenticity of these sacred books was much discussed. Even the great jurist and oriental scholar, Sir William Jones, believed that they were forged and that Duperron had been imposed upon by the priests from whom he received instruction in the Avestan and Pahlavi languages.

Richardson, the celebrated Persian lexicographer, also held the opinion that these languages were forgeries. Erasmus Rask, a Danish scholar, in 1826, in a pamphlet "On the Age and Genuineness of the Zend Language," proved its close relationship with the Sanscrit. Eugene Burnouf, Professor in the Collège de France, (1833-46,) laid the foundation of Avestan grammar and etymology; proved the translation of Duperron, however valuable for affording a general idea of Avestan literature, yet utterly inaccurate and incorrect; and gave the first real translation of two chapters of the Yasna.

Professor Westergaard, of Copenhagen, edited and published the first complete edition of the Zend-Avesta in 1852-1854. Martin Haug edited, translated, and explained The Five Gáthás, (two vols., Leipzig, 1858-1860,) and did much in the interest of Zend scholarship (1852-1874) in other translations and philological works. His latest work, the title of which stands at the head of this article, and from which we take the translations which we use, furnishes the most complete and reliable account of Zoroastrianism with which we are acquainted in the English language. Spiegel, Windischmann, West, Darmesteter, Justi, and other investigators have entered this field of research, and the scriptures of the Parsis, of which, a little

more than a hundred years ago, no man living could read a word, may soon be accessible to the general reader.

The scriptures of the Parsis are usually called Zend-Avesta by Europeans and Americans. The Pahlavi books call them *Avistāk va Zand*, Avesta and Zend, or "Text and Commentary," both being written, probably, in the Avestan language. "Avesta," originally confined to the sacred texts ascribed to Zoroaster, afterward acquired an extended meaning; so as to embrace at the present time all writings in the Avestan language. It may be derived from *a+vista*, (*vista* is pluperfect of *vid*, "to know,") and hence would mean "what is known," or "knowledge;" or "what is announced," or "declaration," thus approaching very nearly the meaning of "revelation," like Veda, the name of the sacred scriptures of the Brahmans. When the Avesta language became unintelligible, a translation of these scriptures was made by priests of the Sassanian period into their vernacular, the Pahlavi. In later times the term "Zend" has referred to this translation. There are passages in the present Avesta which are supposed to be remnants of the old Zend. Zend is from the root *zan*, "to know," so that it means "knowledge," or science. Pāzand meant originally *re-explanation*, and some passages in the Avesta may be the old Pāzand in the Avestan language; "but at present the term Pāzand is applied only to purely Iranian versions of Pahlavi texts, whether written in the Avestan or Persian characters, and to such parts of Pahlavi texts as are not Huzvārish." * This word is applied to the Semitic elements in Pahlavi. The ancient Persians received their writing from a Semitic people. For Semitic words were translated bodily into Iranian writing as logograms, and pronounced as Pahlavi words of the same meaning; as though we were to write the Latin word "equus," but always pronounce it *horse*. These explanations of terms, in which I have followed Haug, seem to be necessary to the reading of works connected with Parsi studies.

The sacred writings of the Zoroastrians were very voluminous, but were greatly reduced when Alexander, at the instigation of the Athenian courtesan Thais, (according to the account, which may be somewhat traditional,) in a drunken frolic burned the citadel and royal palace at Persepolis, thus destroying the

* "The Religion of the Parsis," p. 122.

historic and sacred archives. By fragmentary collections this loss was partially repaired, when the Mohammedan persecutions still more effectually scattered or destroyed the sacred books. The names, however, remain with short summaries of their contents. These summaries, in the absence of the works themselves, are of great value.

According to accounts which remain to us, the whole scriptures were divided into twenty-one books, called *Nasks*, each containing an original text and commentary. Each *nask* was indexed under a particular word of the most sacred Zoroastrian formula: "Yathâ ahû vairyô, athâ ratush, ashâd chid hachâ, Vanhêush dazdâ mananhô shkyaothnanam anhêush mazdâi, Khshathremchâ ahurâi â, yim dregubyô dadhad vâstârem." Haug translates: "As a heavenly lord is to be chosen, so is an earthly master, (spiritual guide,) for the sake of righteousness, (to be) the giver of the good thoughts, of the actions of life toward Mazda; and the dominion is for the lord (Ahura) whom he (Mazda) has given as a protector for the poor." *

The *Nasks* were divided into three classes, to correspond with the three lines of this formula. Several descriptions of the contents of the *Nasks* have survived. They contain advice concerning prayer and all religious services; they teach virtue, truth, heedfulness, reverence, law, judgment, wisdom, knowledge, purity; they teach the value of good works and meditation, peace and obedience, duties to magistrates, and how kings should rule; they discourse concerning the creation of all things, good and evil, ranks among men, agriculture and culture of trees, medicine, astronomy, botany, philosophy; charities, and the merit of reciting scripture formulæ; the attributes of Ahuramazda, and final deliverance from hell; bringing mankind from good to evil, and the preservation and protection of cities; the good and evil influence of the stars; keeping evil spirits out of the heart, and the attainment of spiritual life; purification, care of the dead, the resurrection, future existence, rewards and punishments, things concerning the world to come, and other similar matters.

Of these *Nasks*, but one, namely, the *Vendidad*, is extant complete. Of two or three others some fragments remain, but in the *Zend-Avesta*, as used at the present time, there are other

books, such as the Yasna and Visparad. The Yashts also are not found in the Nasks, unless, as has been maintained, they are contained in the fourteenth and twenty-first.

The Yasna is the most sacred book of the whole Zend-Avesta. Hang suggests that the Yasna and Visparad may occupy with respect to the Nasks "the same rank as the Vedas in the Brahminical literature do in reference to the Shâstras and Purânas." The contents of these books show remarkable literary activity on the part of the ancient Persians. The texts now extant and published in Westergaard's edition are the following: Yasna, Visparad, Vendidad; twenty-four Yashts, including fragments of two Nasks; fourteen short prayers of various kinds, called Afringân, Nyâyish, and Gâh; nine miscellaneous fragments, and the Sîrôzah, or calendar. Not a voluminous literature to be sure, but priceless to him who is interested in the history of races when they think their first thoughts and breathe their first prayers to God.

Yasna is from the root *yaz*, which means "to worship by means of sacrifice and prayers." At present it consists of seventy-two chapters. There are two parts, which differ considerably in contents and language. The old Yasna is written in the Gâtha dialect, which differs from the Avestan not only in the lengthening of final vowels and the separation of certain syllables into two syllables, which we may suppose to be the result of chanting, but in other respects, showing it to be at least one or two hundred years older than the Avestan. All parts written in the Gâtha dialect have formed originally a separate book, and this book was already considered sacred when the other scriptures were written. These original writings are mentioned several times in the Vendidad with the meaning of "scripture." The later Yasna is in the ordinary Avestan language.

Gâtha is from the root *gai*, "to sing," and hence means "song." "The Gâthas, five in number, are comparatively small collections of metrical compositions, containing short prayers, songs, and hymns, which generally express philosophical and abstract thoughts about metaphysical subjects."* These Gâthas contain all that was revealed to Zoroaster. He learned them when in an ecstatic state from the choir of the archan-

* "The Religion of the Parsis," pp. 142, 143.

gels. The Gâtha dialect may be the language of the native district or city of Zoroaster.

The Visparad in twenty-three chapters is in the usual Avestan language, and in contents resembles the first part of the later Yasna. The Yashts, twenty in number, are collections of prayer and praise. Some of them are highly poetical, and contain in many cases metrical verses to be traced to the days of the bards of Media. Unlike the Yasna and Visparad, the Yashts celebrate the praises of some particular divine being or class of beings, instead of invoking all these beings promiscuously. The Vendidad, in twenty-two chapters, is the civil, criminal, and religious code of laws of the Zoroastrians.

The five Gâthas contain the teachings of Zoroaster in their purity. He is expressly mentioned as their author, (Yas. lvii, 8,) while nowhere is he said to be the author of other sacred writings. He speaks of himself in the first person, and acts as a man conscious of being commissioned of God. He teaches a pure religion, and exhorts his countrymen to forsake idolatry and worship the one only and true God. The later Yasnas are not regarded as the genuine works of Zoroaster, but rather of some of his earliest disciples. They descend somewhat from his high and pure principles, make concessions to idolatry, reform some of the old sacrifices, and invoke the ancient *devas*, whom Zoroaster charged with the origination of all evil and sin. The Visparad ranks with the later Yasna, and the Vendidad is still farther removed from the purity of the five Gâthas. The Yashts are most modern of all. The Gâthas were composed about B. C. 1200; the Vendidad, B. C. 1000-900; the later Yasna, B. C. 800-700; the Pazand portion of the Vendidad, B. C. 500; the Yashts, B. C. 450-350.

The Zoroastrian religion in its origin was a protest against Brahmanism. This is evident from several considerations. *Deva* in the Brahmanical literature is the name of the objects of Hindu worship; in the Zend-Avesta it is the general name for evil spirit or devil. The Vendidad is *vi-daêvôdâta*, "what is given against the devas." *Asura* is the name of the Parsi god in Ahura mazda; in the older parts of the Rigveda it is used in a good sense, but in the later Brahmanical literature it is applied to the most bitter enemies of the Hindu devas. In the Yajurveda seven meters are called *âsurî*. These are found in

the Gátha literature. *Indra*, the chief god of the Vedic times, is a demon among the Parsis, second only to *Ahriman*, (*Angrô-mainyush*.) The latter the Parsis call "devil of devils." The Brahmins call him "god of gods."

However, some of the Vedic devas are transformed into angels in the *Zend-Avesta*. The close connection of these religions is also shown where there is no evidence of hostility, not only in the names of gods, but also in the names and legends of heroes, in matters connected with sacrificial worship, and in various other particulars. Brahmanism and Zoroastrianism, then, were originally one religion. The causes of the conflict which led to their separation we may gather from the Gáthas. After the migration of the Aryan tribes from their original home, they long led a pastoral life, paying little attention to the cultivation of the soil. This was their condition throughout the earlier Vedic period, while they lived in the upper *Penjáb*, whence they migrated to *Hindustan* proper. When they reached the highlands of *Bactria*, the Iranians, tired of a wandering life, formed permanent settlements and became agricultural. The other Aryans became hostile, and made many hostile excursions into the settlements for the sake of booty.* Before entering upon these excursions they besought the assistance of *Indra* by *Soma* sacrifices. Their religion, hence, became an object of hatred to the Iranians, and they came to look upon it as the source of all wickedness, and instituted the beneficent religion of *Ahuramazda*, which forever separated them from their Aryan and deva-worshipping brethren. The Zoroastrian, *Mazdayasnian*, or *Parsi* religion was not originated by *Zoroaster*. He alludes to old revelations, and praises the "fire priests" as possessed of great wisdom. (*Yas.* xlv, 3, 6.) He teaches reverence and respect to the *Angra* or *Angiras* of the Vedas. (*Yas.* xliii, 15.) These *Angiras* are often connected with the *Atharvans*; *átharva* is the general name of the priestly order in the *Zend-Avesta*. The *Angiras* and *Atharvans* are the authors of the *Atharvaveda*, which greatly resembles the *Yashts* and *Vendidad*. To the *Saoshyantô*, or "fire priests," perhaps identical with the *Atharvans*, it is said the *Ahura* religion was revealed, (*Yas.* xii, 7.) Several centuries may have elapsed before the appearance of

* *Vend. Fars.* 1 and 2; *Yas.* xxxiii, xlv.

Zoroaster. He completed the separation of the hostile Aryan elements, established new laws, and absorbed the old religion of the fire priests (he himself seems to have been one of their number) into the true Parsi religion, and hence became its real founder.

But little is known concerning the life of Zoroaster. Greek and Roman accounts are legendary. Only in the *Yasna* does he appear as a real historic character. He belonged to the Spitama family. The *Hêchadaspas* appear to have been his nearest relatives. (*Yas.* xlv, 15.) His father's name was *Pôurushaspa*. (*Vend.* xix, 4, 6.) One daughter is mentioned under two names, *Haêchadaspânâ Spitâmi*. His surname was *Zarathushtra*, which the Greeks changed to *Zarastres* or *Zoroastres*, the Romans to *Zoroaster*, the Persians and Parsis to *Zardosht*. This name seems at first to have designated the office of high-priest, and, after having been worn by Spitama as high-priest, clung to him as pre-eminent in that office. When there were several high-priests in a district or province, *Zarathushtrôtemô* was sometimes used to designate the office of "the highest *Zarathushtra*." There might, then, have been many *Zarathushtras* before Zoroaster and during his life, yet the one called Spitama was alone the founder of the Parsi religion. His home was in Bactria. He lived probably not later than B. C. 1000. We place him B. C. 1200, as more probable.

Zoroaster was undoubtedly a great soul who enjoyed a large share of divine illumination. He passed through great spiritual struggles. The *Vendidad* preserves traditions which may refer to such struggles. *Drukhsh*, an evil spirit in the service of *Ahriman*, attempted to destroy him, but Zoroaster repeated the most sacred formula, *Yâtha-ahû-vairyô*, and the evil spirit was defeated; Zoroaster threatens the destruction of the evils produced by the demons of *Ahriman*. *Ahriman* tempts him to curse the *Mazdayasnian* religion, with the promise of the fortune of the traditional hero-king *Vadhaghana*. Zoroaster replies: "I will not curse the good *Mazdayasnian* religion, not (if my) body, not (if my) soul, not (if my) life should part asunder." He will smite the evils of *Ahriman* with the words of *Mazda*.*

The early Zoroastrian religion was strictly monotheistic.

* *Vend. Fars.*, xix, 1, 2, 5-9.

The Saoshyantô, or "fire priests," worshiped good spirits, called Ahuras, "the living ones," of whom those who possessed creative powers may have been called Mazdâonhō, "joint creators," or "creators of all." Zoroaster reduced this plurality of gods to unity, and called the one supreme being Ahura-mazdâo, of which Mazdâo was the chief name, and Ahura an adjectival epithet. Both words were at first inflected, (in which, however, there was a difference of custom,) but afterward were united in a compound, Ahuramazda; at the time of the Achæmenians, Aûramazdâ; in the Sassanian times, Aûhar-mazdi; in modern Persian, Hôrmazd or Ormazd. Their conception of Ahuramazda was quite identical with the idea of Jehovah held by Job and other early characters of the Old Testament.

Zoroaster was told by Ahuramazda that the best way to guard against evil spirits was to utter his different names. He then gave twenty names, among which we find: "I am," "the living one," "I am the wisdom," "I am who I am, Mazda." These cannot but remind us of some of the names of Jehovah as revealed to men.

Ahuramazda is creator of all things, most munificent spirit, righteous, wisdom, everlasting, eternal, good, brilliant, glorious, happy, the essence of truth, manifesting his life in his works, primeval spirit, faithful, generous, father of the good mind, "having his own light," (Yas. xxxi, 7;) "originator of all the best things, of the spirit of nature, (*gâush*), of righteousness, of the luminaries, and the self-shining brightness which is in the luminaries," (Yas. xii. 1;) giver of health, truth, piety, earthly good, and immortality; the rewarder of the good and the punisher of the evil.

Zoroaster was evidently staggered by the problem of evil. In attempting to solve it, he gave to one God two spirits, a beneficent spirit and a hurtful spirit.

Speñtô-mainyush, and Angrô-mainyush, (Yas. xix, 9; lvii, 2,) "the two creators," "the two masters." These two spirits fought against the devas, but not against each other. "Speñtô-mainyush was regarded as the author of all that is bright and shining, of all that is good and useful in nature, while Angrô-mainyush called into existence all that is dark and apparently noxious. Both are as inseparable as day and night, and, though opposed to each other, are indispensable for the preservation of creation.

The beneficent spirit appears in the blazing flame, the presence of the hurtful one is marked by the wood converted into charcoal. Spēntō-mainyush has created the light of day, and Angrō-mainyush the darkness of night; the former awakens men to their duties, the latter lulls them to sleep. Life is produced by Spēntō-mainyush, but extinguished by Angrō-mainyush, whose hands, by releasing the soul from the fetters of the body, enables her to rise into immortality and everlasting life."*

The transition from this form of Monotheism to the later dualism was easy. Spēntō-mainyush, "the beneficent spirit," was taken as a name of Ahuramazda himself, and Angrō-mainyush, "the hurtful spirit," was opposed to Ahuramazda. Hence arose the Zoroastrian notion of God and Devil, each independent and waging war against the other. Certain abstract ideas representing the gifts of Ahuramazda were personified and became archangels, forming the celestial council over which he presided. These were Vohu-manō, Asha-vahishta, Khshathra-vairya, Spenta-Armaiti, Haurvatād, and Ameretād, meaning originally, respectively, "good mind," "the best truth," "wealth," "devotion and piety," "health," and "immortality."

Separate from the Ameshaspentas or archangels stood the archangel, Sraosha, who seems to have been a kind of mediator between God and man, the great teacher of the good religion. He points out the way to heaven and judges human actions after death; at least, a part in these offices seems to have been assigned to him. Like Ahuramazda, Angrō-mainyush (Ahriman) has an infernal council over which he presides.

Fravardin Yasht is dedicated to the praise of the *Frohars*, in the Avesta *Fravashi*, in the Cuneiform Inscriptions *Fravartish*, which means protectors. Every being, living, dead, or still unborn, has its own guardian spirit, Fravashi. Originally they represented only the departed souls of men, like the *manes* of the Romans, and the *pitras* of the Brahmans. We may compare them with the *ideas* of Plato.

In favor of a primitive Parsi Monotheism we may consider such passages as the following:

In the beginning there was a pair of twins, two spirits, each of a peculiar activity; these are the good and the base, in thought, word, and deed. Choose one of these two spirits! Be good, not base. And these two spirits united created the first (the mate-

* The "Religion of the Parsis," p. 804.

rial things,) one, the reality, the other, the non-reality. . . . Of these two spirits you must choose one, either the evil, the originator of the worst actions, or the true, holy spirit. . . . You cannot belong to both of them. (Yas. xxx, 3-6.)

Although Haug urges a primitive Monotheism, his translations, as may be seen above, do not make this as plain as could have been desired. (See, however, Yas. xlviii, 4, and other passages.)

If you choose the good spirit it will be well :

Ahuramazda gives through the beneficent spirit, appearing in the best thought, and in rectitude of action and speech, to this world, (universe,) perfection and immortality, wealth and devotion. From his most beneficent spirit all good has sprung in the words which are pronounced by the tongue of the Good Mind, (*Vohu-manô*), and the works wrought by the hands of Armaiti, (spirit of the earth.) By means of such knowledge Mazda himself is the father of all rectitude in thought, word, and deed. (Yas. xlvii, 1, 2.)

Ahuramazda created the world in six periods in the following order : In the first period heaven was created, in the second the waters, in the third the earth, in the fourth the trees, in the fifth the animals, and in the sixth man.

There was a golden age in the reign of Yima, "the most sun-like of men," during which men and cattle were free from death, water and trees free from drought, food inexhaustible; there was "neither cold nor heat, neither decay nor death, nor malice produced by the demons; father and son walked forth, each fifteen years old in appearance." (Yas. ix, 4, 5.)

Besides the doctrines we have named, we may mention among the other original doctrines of Zoroaster, the following : The two-fold nature of man as body and soul, the two-fold origin of knowledge as heavenly and earthly, human responsibility, the value of prayer, angelic mediatorship, heaven and hell, immortality, a general judgment, future rewards and punishments according to the works, the resurrection of the body, the final overthrow of evil, and the renovation of all things.

A few quotations will give a fair idea of Zoroaster's teachings on some of these points :

I will proclaim, as the greatest of all things, that one should be good, praising only righteousness. Ahuramazda will hear those who are bent on furthering (all that is good.) . . . All that have been living, and will be living, subsist by means of his

bounty only. The soul of the righteous attains to immortality, but that of the wicked man has everlasting punishment. Such is the rule of Ahuramazda, whose the creatures are.*

The soul of the dead during three days sits near the head chanting the *Gâtha Ushtavaiti*, and experiences as much of pleasure each day as all that which it had experienced when a living existence.

On the passing away of the third night, as the dawn appears the soul of the righteous man appears, passing through plants and perfumes. To him there seems a wind blowing forth from the more southern side, from the more southern quarters, a sweet scent, more sweet-scented than other winds. Then, inhaling that wind with the nose, the soul of the righteous considers: Whence blows the wind, the most sweet-scented wind which I have ever inhaled with the nostrils? Advancing with the wind there appears to him what is his own religion, (i. e., religious merit,) in the shape of a beautiful maiden, brilliant, white-armed, strong, well-grown, erect, tall, high-bosomed, graceful, noble, with a dazzling face, of fifteen years, with a body as beautiful in (its) limbs (lit. growth) as the most beautiful creatures. Then the soul of the righteous man spoke to her, asking, what maiden art thou whom I have thus seen as yet the most beautiful of maidens in form? Then answered him his own religion, I am, O youth! thy good thoughts, good words, good deeds, (and) good religion, who am thy own religion in thy own self. Every one has loved thee for such greatness and goodness and beauty and perfume and triumph and resistance to foes, as thou appearest to me.

The soul of the righteous then advances four steps and reaches the four grades in heaven—good thought, good word, good action, and the eternal luminaries. Before entering heaven, the angel Vohuman has given him a cup of Zaremaya oil, which has made him oblivious of all worldly concerns and prepared him for eternal happiness.

The course of the wicked is directly opposite in all its stages till he reaches the fourth or lowest grade in hell, "eternal glooms."†

The Vendidad adds somewhat more to this account:

After a man is dead, at daybreak after the third night, he reaches Mithra, rising above the mountains resplendent with their own rightful luster. The demon Vizareshô by name carries the soul bound toward the country of the wicked Deva-worshipping men. It goes on the time-worn paths, which

* *Gâtha Ushtavaiti*, Yas. xlv, 6, 7.

† *Haddôkht Nask*, Yt. xxii, 1-36.

are for the wicked and which are for the righteous, to the Chinvad bridge, created by Mazda, and right, where they ask the consciousness and soul their conduct in the settlements, (i. e., world.) She, the beautiful, well-formed, strong (and) well-grown, comes with the dog, with the register, with children, with resources, with skillfulness. She dismisses the sinful soul of the wicked into the glooms (hell.) She meets the souls of the righteous when crossing the (celestial mountain) Harô-berezaiti, (Alborz,) and guides over the Chinvad bridge. Vohumanô (the archangel Bahman) rises from a golden throne; Vohumanô exclaims: "How hast thou come hither to us, O righteous one! from the perishable life to the imperishable life? The souls of the righteous proceed joyfully to Ahuramazda, to the Ameshaspentas, to the golden throne, to paradise (Garô-nemâna.)" *

Garô-nemâna is "the house of song," with which we may compare the Christian idea of heaven.

A splendor originally created by Ahuramazda attaches itself to the dead, causing them to rise.

This splendor attaches itself to the hero (who is to rise out of the number) of prophets (called *Saoshyantô*) and to his companions, in order to make life everlasting, undecayable, imperishable, imputrescible, incorruptible, forever existing, forever vigorous, full of power, (at the time) when the dead shall rise again, and imperishableness of life shall commence, making life lasting by itself, (without further support.) All the world will remain for eternity in a state of righteousness; the devil will disappear from all those places where he used to attack the righteous man in order to kill (him); and all his brood and creatures will be doomed to destruction.†

Garô-demâna, "house of hymns," heaven, where the angels sing hymns, is the abode of Ahuramazda and the righteous dead. (Yas. li, 15.) Another name is *ahu vahishta*, afterward shortened to *vahishta* only; modern Persian *bahisht*, "the best life," "paradise."

Drûjô-demâna, "house of destruction," hell, is the abode of the bad, especially the devotees of the Deva religion. (Yas. xlvi, 11.)

Chinvad bridge which the pious alone can pass, the wicked falling from it into hell, is also mentioned in the Gâthas. (Yas. xlvi, 10, 11.)

The resurrection and the renovation of all things are also mentioned in the Gâthas. (Yas. xxx, 9.) We see, then, that

* Far. xix, 28-32.

† Zamyâd Yt. xix, 89, 90.

these were original doctrines of Zoroaster, and only reached a fuller development in the later Avestan writings.

The Zoroastrians divided into two parties; the Magi held to the primitive monotheism of their religion; the Zendiks, whose doctrines are expounded in the Bundahish, adopted the later dualistic doctrine. The Magi found a proof of the unity of the supreme Being in the term *Zarvan akarana*, "boundless time." (Vend. xix, 9.) This doctrine concerning "*Zarvan akarana*," which has been held from early Sassanian times to the present, resulted from a grammatical misunderstanding. Translating in the locative instead of nominative and the doctrine disappears: "The beneficent spirit made, he made (these weapons required to defeat the influence of the evil spirit) *in boundless time*, the immortal benefactors, (Amesh-aspentas,) the good rulers and good arrangers co-operated." (Haug.)

The Zoroastrian religion is emphatically in its spirit a religion of work, devoted especially to the encouragement of agriculture. The five most pleasing spots of this earth are: the temple, the home of the pious, cultivated lands, stables, and pastures. (Vend. iii, 1-6.) The history of the rise of Zoroastrianism shows its close connection with agriculture. The earth was considered especially pure, and, lest it should be defiled, the dead were exposed on an iron grating in the Dokhma, or the "Tower of Silence," to be devoured by fowls of the air, or to decay. The bleached bones fall through into a pit beneath, from which they are removed to a subterranean cavern.

This religion, which at one time prevailed throughout Upper Thibet, Cabulistan, Sogdiana, Bactriana, Media, Persia, and other contiguous territory, and, had it not been for the victories of Marathon and Salamis, might have extended widely over the world, is now confined to a very limited territory. In India, near Bombay, there are (1879) 132,000 Zoroastrians, or twenty per cent. of the whole population. In Yezd and Kirman and twenty-three other surrounding villages there are 8,000. A few are found in Teheran, Ispahan, Shiraz, and Baku. The whole number in Persia is 8,188. The Parsis of Yezd and Kirman are poor, degraded, and ignorant; those of Bombay, wealthy, intelligent, and philanthropic, even beyond the other inhabitants.

The Parsis are monogamists; they eat nothing cooked by a

person of another religion ; they object to eating beef and pork. Their priesthood is hereditary, but the son of a priest need not become a priest unless he so wish. They have many and careful purification ceremonies.

They pray sixteen times per day, but none of them—not even the priests—understand the language in which these prayers are composed. They have no pulpits, and no discourses in the vernacular of the people. The Parsi devotee may recite his prayers for himself ; or, at any time when he pleases, he may go to the fire temple and give something to the priests to pray for him. The priests are bigoted and superstitious. There may be a dozen priests who know the meaning of the *words* of the Zend-Avesta, but know not the language.

There are two parties among the Parsis, the Conservatives, and the Liberals. The Conservatives hold to all the old and traditional customs ; the Liberals are striving to work reforms in abolishing the filthy purifications ; in reducing the number of obligatory prayers, in customs concerning marriages, weddings, and funerals ; and in the education of women, in all of which they have made considerable progress.

To the Parsi, the sun and other heavenly bodies, or fire, are symbols of the divine presence. In their Catechism (published less than fifty years ago) they say :

We believe in only one God, and do not believe in any besides him, the God who created the heavens, the earth, the angels, the stars, the moon, the fire, the water, or all the four elements, and all things of the two worlds ; that God we believe in. Him we worship, him we invoke, him we adore. Our God has neither face nor form, color nor shape, nor fixed place.

The commands God has sent us through his prophet Zoroaster are :

To know God as one ; to know the prophet, the exalted Zurthost, as the true prophet ; to believe the religion and the Avesta brought by him as true beyond all manner of doubt ; to believe in the goodness of God ; not to disobey any of the commands of the Mazdiashna religion ; to avoid evil deeds ; to pray five times in the day ; to believe on the reckoning and justice on the fourth morning after death ; to hope for heaven and to fear hell ; to consider doubtless the day of general destruction and resurrection ; to remember always that God has done what he willed, and shall do what he wills ; to face some luminous object while worship-

ing God. Your Saviour is your deeds and God himself. He is the pardoner and the giver. If you repent your sins and reform, and if the Great Judge consider you worthy of pardon, or would be merciful to you, he alone can and will save you.*

It will be seen how unjust it is to call the Parsi "Fire worshippers." They feel reverence in the presence of the sacred flame as it is a symbol of the divine presence. The priests protect the face with a veil lest their breath might defile the fire. They will not blow out a candle if they can help it. They are the only eastern nation not addicted to smoking. They cling to their creed, which has become so compact, for the very reason that they cannot read it from their sacred books; they cling to their creed with great tenacity of religious affection. Pure thoughts, pure words, pure deeds; this is the substance of its practical part. Its most earnest exhortation to every man is, "Be bright as the sun, pure as the moon."
—*Müller.*

ART. V.—THE OLD TESTAMENT APOCRYPHA.

WHATEVER sheds light upon the history and literature of the Israelitish people is of permanent interest to the Christian student. Christianity is not independent of Judaism. The Law, the Prophets, and the Psalms, all spoke of Christ; and now that Christ has appeared, and brought life and immortality to light, we can read and understand the ancient Scriptures more perfectly than those to whom the prophecies first came. We, in a measure, see the end from the beginning, and may trace the gradual unfoldings of divine revelation from its comparatively indistinct beginning. The history and substance of the revelation are embodied in our Holy Scriptures, and whatever confirms and illustrates the Book of books, must, therefore, be of interest and value to the Christian.

The present century has surpassed all others in the amount of labor bestowed upon antiquarian research. The hoary monuments of Egypt, by the persevering efforts of such men as

* Catechism in the Guzerati, translated by Mr. Dadabhai Naoroji, an adherent of the Parsi religion, Professor of Guzerati at University College, London; quoted by Max Müller in *Chips*, vol. i., pp. 169–174.

Young, Champollion, Lepsius, and Brugsch, have been made to yield up their secrets to the modern world. The deciphering and translation of the inscriptions on the monuments of ancient Babylon, Assyria, and Persia, have thrown great light both on the history and customs of those nations, and also on the narratives of Scripture. The minute and thorough exploration of Palestine, now in progress, promises to discover the sites of many a lost city, and to give fresh interest to the history of the Hebrew people. The zeal of research and exploration in these and other fields seems to be constantly increasing, for the discoveries already made are regarded as only a sort of first-fruits of a wondrous harvest.

Meanwhile, as we grow richer in such acquisitions, it is well for us not to neglect other treasures of antiquity. The sacred books themselves will never be superseded by all the hieroglyphic lore of Egypt, and all the libraries of Assyrian kings. The Book of Daniel is worth immeasurably more than the Rosetta Stone. And there are other ancient books, not held as sacred, but so connected with the history and literature of the Bible as to be of priceless value. Who would exchange the writings of Josephus for all that Assyrian research has yet produced? And yet there are other ancient books, quite neglected by even well-read Christians, and some of them scarcely known, which, if now first discovered, would be heralded as matters of the greatest moment to the Christian world. It is the purpose of this article to call attention to the character and value of some of these ancient writings.

TITLES AND SUBJECT-MATTER.

The following books are found incorporated in most editions of the Septuagint version of the Old Testament: Esdras, Tobit, Judith, Additions to Esther, Wisdom of Solomon, Wisdom of Jesus, son of Sirach, Baruch, Epistle of Jeremiah, Song of the Three Holy Children, History of Susanna, Bel and the Dragon, and three Books of Maccabees. In some editions we find a Fourth Book of Maccabees, and the Prayer of Manasseh. Most of these books are also contained in the Vulgate version, and all of them, except Third and Fourth Maccabees, were translated into English and published with King James' version of the Bible. In this latter also appeared the Second Book of

Esdras. These books now commonly pass under the name Apocrypha, a word which means *hidden* or *secret*, and early came to be used by Christian writers to denote a class of books whose age and authorship were unknown. The word was also applied to forged, spurious, and heretical works. "Let us omit," says Augustine, "those fabulous books of Scripture which are called *apocryphal*, because their obscure origin was unknown to the Fathers." In another place he writes: "Apocryphal books are not such as have authority, but books whose original is obscure, and which are destitute of proper testimonials, their authors being unknown, and their characters either heretical or suspected."

By reason of their long and honorable association with the Septuagint and Vulgate versions of the Bible, these apocryphal books acquired a sort of semi-sacred character. They were frequently quoted as Scripture by the ancient Christian Fathers, and their incorporation with many modern editions of the Bible has given them currency and name. The Church of Rome has pronounced most of them canonical, and this fact has, perhaps, been one reason why Protestants have treated them with so little respect. They are rarely included in modern editions of the Bible, and still more rarely are they published separately. We are not aware that the Old Testament Apocrypha has ever been published separately in the United States.

The period of Jewish history between Ezra and the destruction of the Temple by the Romans was prolific of this class of books. A creative fancy evidently led some bold scribes to attempt to replace some of the lost books of the ancient Hebrews. Every reader of the Old Testament has noticed the references to "The Book of the Wars of the Lord," (Num. xxi, 14,) "The Book of Jasher," (Josh. x, 13,) "The Book of the Acts of Solomon," (1 Kings xi, 41,) and "The Book of Shemaiah," (2 Chron. xii, 15,) and numerous other books no longer known. These allusions probably suggested or inspired the composition of apocryphal stories, prompting inventive minds to construct a romantic narrative in connection with some ancient hero's name.

The contents of these several books are of a very varied character. We have history and fable, legend and romance, poetry and prophecy, and hence these books are invaluable for the light they shed on the history, civilization, life, customs and

beliefs, hopes and superstitions of the Jews, during the period from 300 B.C. to about 100 A.D. This was a notable period of transition and decay in Judaism, and much of its literature has a most intimate relation to the origin and early history of Christianity.

I ESDRAS.

Esdras is the Grecized form of the name Ezra, the famous priest and scribe who fills so important a place in Old Testament history. Many apocryphal traditions would naturally gather round his name. But this book might, perhaps, as well have been called the Book of Zerubbabel; for the writer's object seems to have been to give a history of the restoration from Babylon, and to immortalize Zerubbabel as the hero of a legend which forms the central portion and the only original section of his work. The legend is about three young men who contended for the honor of speaking the wisest proverb, (chaps. iii and iv,) and is a document of great interest and beauty. Its tribute to women and truth is worthy of a place among the choicest passages of ancient literature. With the exception of this legend, the book is but a loose compilation from the canonical books of Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah. The narrative is involved in inextricable confusion by making Zerubbabel live and act under the reign of Darius. The author was evidently a Jew, familiar with the history and sacred books of his people, but inexact and careless in his statements. He must have lived a century or more before the Christian era, for his work had acquired such currency and reputation that Josephus used it freely, and even followed it more closely than he did the corresponding biblical narrative. His name and country, however, are unknown. Among scholars he is often called the "Pseudo-Ezra," and the Greek text of his work has been thought to be of some value in emending certain doubtful passages in the Hebrew text of the canonical Scriptures.

II ESDRAS.

The book called "Second Esdras" in the English translation of the Apocrypha is known by different titles. In most of the Latin MSS. it is named The Fourth Book of Ezra, because it follows Ezra, Nehemiah, and the Greek Esdras, which are

reckoned as First, Second, and Third Ezra. St. Jerome calls it by this name, and thus it is most commonly designated by modern scholars. But the most appropriate title, and that which it still bears in the Greek Church, is "The Apocalypse of Ezra." It is generally believed that the book was originally written in Greek; but the original was lost, and we have its substance imperfectly preserved in five different versions, Latin, Armenian, Arabic, Ethiopic, and Syriac. The Latin version is published in Walton's Polyglot, and appears to have been the only version known to exist at the time of the issue of that great work, (1657.) The Armenian version was published along with the Armenian Bible of 1666. An Arabic version was discovered among the MSS. of the Bodleian Library, and was translated into English by Simon Ockley, and published by Whiston in the last volume of his "Primitive Christianity," (London, 1711.) Still later an Ethiopic version was found in the same library, and was published by Archbishop Lawrence, together with English and Latin translations of the same, (Oxford, 1820.) The Syriac version was published in 1868.

The first two and last two chapters of the Latin version are wanting in the other versions, and are allowed on all hands to be the work of a later writer. These interpolations are probably as late as the second or third century after Christ, and from the anti-Jewish spirit which pervades them we may reasonably infer that the author was a Gentile Christian. The temptation for Christian writers to add such passages to Jewish apocalyptic works was often strong, and the additions themselves are fully in keeping with much of the early Christian apocryphal literature. There exists a spurious Revelation of Esdras, a weak imitation of this book; also a Revelation of Paul, and of Peter, and of others. It is very manifest that this Second Esdras has been greatly corrupted by later writers and transcribers, and hence it is difficult to decide what was, and what was not, a part of the original work. The most extensive and thorough work on the text and exposition of this book is Prof. Volkmar's, in his "*Handbuch der Einleitung in die Apokryphen.*" *

* "*ESDRA PROPHETA*, nunc primum integrum edidit ex duobus manuscriptis Italæ, adhibitis orientalibus prorsus recognitis, cum Commentariis et Glossario." Tubingen, 1863.

Notwithstanding the uncertainty of the text the work is of great value to the biblical scholar. The principal interpolations are so easily detected, that we can make out with tolerable certainty the leading doctrines of the original work. Its probable date is near the beginning of the Christian era. The expectation of the Messiah, the rewards of the righteous, the small number of the saved, the resurrection and judgment, the eternal counsels of God, the shortness and uncertainty of life, the wickedness and miseries of mortal men, their relations to Adam, the efficacy of good works—these and other related doctrines are prominent throughout the book, and some of the early fathers regarded and quoted its texts as if they were canonical and authoritative.

TOBIT.

The book of Tobit contains the history of a pious Israelite of the tribe of Naphtali, who was carried captive to Nineveh, and, having passed through various fortunes, ended a long life greatly blessed and comforted by reason of God's special favor toward himself and his only son. The historical truth of the narrative seems to have been unquestioned till about the time of the Reformation, but internal evidence militates against this view. There are inaccuracies in the historical allusions and the general tone of the narrative, and the character of the miraculous events detailed are far removed from the lofty spirit and impressive dignity of the sacred history. The story of Asmodeus killing seven husbands of Sara, and then driven away by fumigation; the peculiar modes of Raphael's appearance and action; his deceiving Tobit, and his journey with a servant and camels to bring ten talents of silver from Rages to Ecbatana, are alien from the character and style of Holy Scripture. There may be a basis of truth for the narrative, but if so, the real facts have become hidden by the legends of tradition and the genius of the author.

But aside from the question of its historical character, the book of Tobit has a manifest religious and esthetic value. As a work of Jewish fiction it abounds in beautiful domestic scenes, exhibitions of paternal care and of filial devotion, and also of the confiding friendship and brotherly devotion of the scattered exiles. Its moral and religious lessons are numerous, and in a

doctrinal point of view it is specially valuable as showing the later Jewish notions of good and evil angels. The date and authorship are altogether uncertain, but from the writer's apparent familiarity with localities in the far East, and with the habits and customs of distant exiles, we may infer that he was an eastern Jew, and lived some time before the beginning of our era. The best scholars incline to a date somewhere between 400 and 200 B.C. It is generally believed that the book was first written in Hebrew or Chaldee, but the original text is lost, and the oldest and best version is the Septuagint, from which our common English version was made. There are numerous other versions, and they vary greatly in details, so that on the whole the text of Tobit is in a very corrupt and confused condition. In his scholarly and truly valuable "Exegetisches Handbuch zu den Apocryphen," Fritzsche has undertaken to construct a revised text, giving part in Greek and part in Latin.*

JUDITH.

It is reported as a saying of Dr. Arnold, of Rugby, that he could accept the Book of Judith as a true narrative if only he could find a place for it in ancient history. But not only is there no place in ancient history for it, but we believe it is also impossible to make it self-consistent. It contains historical, geographical, and chronological statements which no efforts of learning or ingenuity have been able to harmonize with well-established facts. And yet there have not been wanting writers, at almost every period of the Christian Church, who have accepted the book as a genuine history.

The more ancient writers have assigned the history of Judith to a post-exile period, but they could not agree as to the exact date. The main difficulty was to find a Persian monarch who would answer to the Nebuchadnezzar of this book. Cambyeses, Darius Hystaspes, Xerxes, and Artaxerxes were all tried, but when or how any of these reigned at Nineveh, or why a post-exile writer came to call either of them by the name *Nebuchod-*

* See, also, "The Book of Tobit. A Chaldee text from a unique MS. in the Bodleian Library, with other Rabbinical texts, English translations and the Itala," edited by Ad. Neubaner. Oxford, 1878. Also, "Das Buch Tobias, übersetzt und erklärt," by Heinrich Reusch, Friburg, 1857; and "Das Buch Tobit, erklärt," by H. Sengelmann. Hamburg, 1857.

onoser, we nowhere find explained. The kingdoms of Assyria and Media had perished long before the Babylonish exile, and Nebuchadnezzar, the great Chaldean conqueror, was too prominent a character and too well known to be spoken of by any historian as king of the Assyrians and reigning at Nineveh.

More recent writers have referred the book to a pre-exile period. Prideaux places the events narrated in the reign of Manasseh, after that monarch had been brought back from his captivity in Babylon (2 Chron. xxxiii, 11-13) and had been restored to his kingdom.* The most recent work in defense of the historical character of the book is that of Wolff, who devotes thirty-six pages of his "Commentar über das Buch Judith" to a "Refutation of the chief objections to the historical worth and character" of this ancient work.† The principal results at which he arrives are the following: The Nebuchadnezzar of Judith is identical with *Kiniladan* of Ptolemy's Canon, and Arphaxad is the same as *Phraortes*, the son of Deioeces, King of the Medes, who, having first subjugated the Persians, made war against the Assyrians, but was defeated, and perished with the greater part of his army, after he had reigned twenty-two years. (See Herodotus i, 102.) But to all this it is sufficient to reply, that the narratives of Herodotus and Judith, (assuming Arphaxad to be Phraortes,) do not well agree. Judith represents the Assyrians as the aggressors, (chap. i, 5, 13,) but Herodotus makes the Medes the invaders of Assyria. Instead of becoming master of Ecbatana, and utterly destroying the power of the Medes, as Judith affirms, the King of Assyria was soon after defeated in battle by Phraortes' son, Cyaxares, and Nineveh itself was taken. (Herod. i, 103, 106.) Judith says Arphaxad (i. e., Phraortes) fortified Ecbatana, (i, 2,) but according to Herodotus, it was Deioeces, the father of Phraortes, (i, 98.)

But we have not space for this discussion. Let us only say that it is scarcely credible that the events of this book occurred during any period of biblical history, and received no notice by any sacred writer. We find no hint or allusion to it in the ancient histories, no mention of it in the writings of Philo or

* Prideaux's "Connection," vol. i, pp. 82-87.

† "Das Buch Judith, als geschichtliche Urkunde vertheidigt und erklärt," by O. Wolff. Leipsic. 1861.

Josephus; and we are driven to the conclusion that it is a late Jewish fiction of no historical value, and that its author was utterly indifferent as to historical and chronological accuracy. More plausible and satisfactory is the view of Volkmar, who maintains that "the Book of Judith is a poetical narrative of the historical victory of Judith or *Judea* over the Legates of the new Nebuchadnezzar *Trajan*, after his victorious war against the seemingly invincible new Medes or *Parthians*. The historical narrative is celebrated in the guise of Old Testament language for the feast of the Jewish triumph-day of Adar after *Trajan's* death."* Substantially the same view is advanced by Grätz, in his "History of the Jews," (English Trans., p. 96, ff.) He holds that the Book of Judith is a fictitious story, written about 116 A. D., to encourage the Jews of Palestine under the oppression of Lucius Quietus, who was sent thither by *Trajan* to put down insurrection. He conceives that by Nebuchadnezzar *Trajan* is intended, and that Holofernes is but a fictitious personage designed to represent the cruel Quietus. In a time of general despondency and gloom, the beautiful and pious Judith, representing "Judaism in transfigured personification," emerges from the dark background to inspire the Israelites with hope and confidence, and nerve their hands for war.

Luther regarded the work as a sort of allegory, "a religious fiction or poem," in which Judith represents the Jewish people, Holofernes godless and persecuting heathenism, and Bethulia the virgin purity of the Jews of that period. The same general idea is also held by others, who, however, refer its origin to the Maccabean times. According to Wescott, "the value of the book is not lessened by its fictitious character. On the contrary, it becomes even more valuable as exhibiting an ideal type of heroism, which was outwardly embodied in the wars of independence."†

ADDITIONS TO ESTHER.

In the Septuagint version of the Book of Esther are found a number of apocryphal additions to the Hebrew narrative, which

* "Handbuch der Einleitung in die Apokryphen, Erste Abtheilung: Judith." Tübingen, 1860; p. 5.

† Smith's "Bible Dictionary," art. Judith.

have been translated and published in the Authorized Version of King James under the title, "The Rest of the Chapters of the Book of Esther, which are found neither in the Hebrew nor in the Chaldee." They can scarcely be regarded as pure inventions of the Greek translators, but their subject-matter probably consists of national traditions widely current among the Jewish people, which these translators gave definite shape and form in their version of the canonical Esther. Josephus cites them (*Ant.* xi, 6,) as historically true, though he must have known that they formed no part of the Hebrew Scriptures. Similar additions are found in the Chaldee Targum of Esther, as also in the Targums of other canonical books. We need not suppose that they are without any historical basis, though they are, doubtless, to be largely attributed to the inventive tendencies of the later Judaism to embellish and amplify the heroic narratives of sacred history. These additions to Esther aim to supply what, doubtless, many a pious Jew, like many devout Christians, deemed strangely wanting in the Hebrew book, namely, a noticeable religious and theocratic character. The name of God does not occur in the Hebrew book; these additions plentifully supply that defect.

ADDITIONS TO DANIEL.

The honored name of Daniel would naturally, like that of Esther, Ezra, and others, become associated with numerous traditions among the Oriental Jews. Three ancient documents, known as apocryphal additions to Daniel, have come down to us in connection with the Greek translations of the Old Testament. The English version gives them separately under the titles of "History of Susanna," "Song of the Three Holy Children," and "Bel and the Dragon." The first of these is found in the Septuagint at the beginning of the Book of Daniel, and is called in some copies "The Judgment of Daniel." Its design is to celebrate the womanly virtue of a pious Jewish matron of Babylon, and also to extol the wisdom of Daniel in proving her innocence, and in exposing the wickedness of two corrupt judges who sought her ruin. There may have been some basis of fact upon which the story rested, but in its present form it is evidently a highly embellished tradition of the later Judaism.

The song of the three holy Children is inserted in the Septuagint between the twenty-third and twenty-fourth verses of the third chapter of Daniel. In the Alexandrian Codex it is placed at the end of the Psalms, and designated as hymns nine and ten, with the titles "The Prayer of Azarias," and "The Hymn of our Fathers." This position was, doubtless, given it on account of its liturgical character. It consists properly of three distinct parts. 1. The prayer of Azarias. (Verses 1-22.) 2. The angel's smiting of the flame of the furnace. (23-28.) 3. The song of the three companions. The first and third of these parts are probably not from the same author, and are not in exact harmony with each other.

The History of the Destruction of Bel and the Dragon is found in the Septuagint appended to the Book of Daniel. The story belongs to the Ptolemaic period of Alexandrine Judaism, and was probably designed to fortify the Jews of Egypt against the prevailing superstitions of that land. The anachronisms and absurdities with which it abounds defy all serious claim for either genuineness or credibility. That Cyrus, the Persian, a Zoroastrian Monotheist, was a worshiper of the Babylonian Bel, is not to be supposed. That the temple of Bel was destroyed by Daniel is contrary to Herodotus and Strabo, who declare that Xerxes plundered and destroyed it. The worship of snakes and dragons, common in Egypt, was foreign to all we know of the Babylonian cultus. The Prophet Habakkuk flourished a century before the reign of Cyrus, and the story of his being carried by the hair of his head from Judea to Babylon, for the purpose of conveying a dinner to Daniel in the lion's den, is utterly preposterous. The work, like other similar productions, is chiefly valuable as illustrative of Jewish legendary lore.

THE PRAYER OF MANASSEH.

The captivity of the Jewish king Manasseh, recorded in 2 Chron. xxxiii, furnished the subject of numerous apocryphal legends. The Targum on Chronicles says that the Chaldeans made a brazen image, perforated all around with small holes, and shut Manasseh in it. Then they encompassed it with fire, and when the king began to suffer torture he prayed unto all the idols he had made, but they gave no answer. Then he

humbled himself and called upon the God of his fathers. As soon as he thus prayed all the angels that guard the gates of prayer, which are in heaven, closed those gates and all the windows of the sky, that his prayer might not be recognized. But immediately the tender compassion of the Lord was moved, and his right hand was stretched forth to help the penitent transgressor. He opened a window under the throne of his glory, listened to Manasseh's prayer, shook the world by his word, and cleft the brazen image, so that the captive king went free. Then Manasseh knew that Jehovah was God alone, who made the heavens and wrought these miracles.*

The apocryphal Prayer of Manasseh is evidently an attempt of some Jewish writer to supply the prayer referred to in 2 Chron. xxxiii, 18. There is a simplicity and directness about it which certainly speak in its favor, but we have no means of determining the place of its composition, its date, or its authorship. It is found in the Alexandrian Codex, and the Greek text was first published by Robert Stephens, at Paris, in 1540. It was also published in the Apostolical Constitutions in 1563,† and in the fourth volume of Walton's Polyglot, at the beginning of the apocryphal books. It also exists in a Latin version which is older than the times of St. Jerome.

THE WISDOM OF SOLOMON.

If the Proverbs of Solomon did not inaugurate, they certainly gave definite and permanent form to, the ethical philosophy of the Hebrews. It is beautifully observed by Stanley that Solomon was not only the Augustus, but the Aristotle of his age and nation. But the Israelite philosophy, discarding the rigid rules and speculative tendencies of Greek thought, followed a more simple and practical course. The Wisdom, celebrated in the Book of Proverbs, and extolled in all the later Jewish literature, has its deep foundations in religion, and aims directly to correct and exalt human life and character. "Her

* Fabricius, "Codex Pseud. Vet. Test.," p. 1100.

† In the Apostolical Constitutions the Prayer of Manasseh appears entire, and is followed by the statement: "There appeared a flame of fire about him, and all the iron shackles and chains, which were about him, fell off, and the Lord healed Manasseh from his affliction."—"Apos. Const.," book ii, 22. Eng. Trans. in vol. xvii of Clark's "Ante-Nicene Chr. Library."

seat is the bosom of God; her voice the harmony of the world." With God before the foundation of the world, and during the creation, Wisdom evermore endures, pointing out the paths of righteousness, and leading to happiness, honor, and immortality.

This doctrine of Wisdom, by reason of Jewish contrast with Oriental and Occidental modes of thought, received various modifications with the lapse of time. The founding of Alexandria, in Egypt, opened a field for the commingling and conflict of all the leading systems of philosophy. Here Egyptian sages, Asiatic transcendentalists, Greek philosophers, and Jewish rabbins, met and disputed with each other. Here, encouraged by the Ptolemies, they founded schools and taught their several systems. Under such circumstances the diverse systems would naturally modify each other, and produce not a few eclectics.

Among the first settlers of Alexandria the Jewish population was conspicuous. Alexander himself gave them an eligible part of the city for their quarter, and allowed them equal privileges with the Macedonians.* Ptolemy Lagus transported great numbers of Jews from various parts of Palestine into Egypt, and multitudes voluntarily emigrated thither, so that the Jewish population of Alexandria became a very important portion of the whole Jewish nation. At Alexandria the Septuagint version of the Old Testament was made. Notwithstanding occasional persecutions, some of them very bitter, the Alexandrian Jews maintained their influence and power, and by their worship and teachings largely affected the civilization of the East.

The author of the "Book of Wisdom"† is now generally believed to have been an Alexandrian Jew, who flourished about one hundred and fifty years before the Christian era. Luther and several others assigned the authorship to the distinguished Philo Judæus; but the writings of Philo and the doctrines of this book are too often in conflict to allow of this opinion. The religious and doctrinal value of the book places it among the highest of apocryphal productions. "It seems impossible to study the book dispassionately," says Westcott, "and not feel that it forms one of the last links in the chain of providential connection between the old and new covenants. Though

* Josephus, *Ant.*, xii, 1; *Apion*, ii, 4.

† This is its title in the Vulgate.

it falls short of Christian truth, or rather is completely silent on the essential doctrines of Christianity, yet Christianity offers the only complete solution of the problems which it raises on the immortality of man, on future judgment, on the catholicity of the divine Church, and the specialty of revelation. It would not be easy to find elsewhere any pre-Christian view of religion equally wide, sustained, and definite. The writer seems to have looked to the East and the West, to the philosophy of Persia and of Greece, and to have gathered from both what they contained of divine truth, and yet to have clung with no less zeal than his fathers to that central revelation which God made first to Moses, and then carried on by the Old Testament prophets." *

ECCLÉSIASTICUS.

This book was originally written in the Hebrew tongue, but has come down to us in a Greek translation, made professedly by the author's grandson. It is one of the most important apocryphal books extant, and the only one of which we have any account of the author. The common title in the Greek MSS., and in the printed editions of the Septuagint, is, "The Wisdom of Jesus, the son of Sirach," or simply, "Wisdom of Sirach." The name Ecclesiasticus is derived from the Old Latin version, adopted by Jerome, and has been the common title used by the Latin Church, and in most modern versions.

From the prologue to the book we learn that the author was an Israelite, who had given himself to a thorough study of the sacred writings of his people, and, having become deeply versed therein, he himself essayed to put in writing his own matured reflections upon discipline and wisdom. In chap. i, 27, he calls himself Jesus, [or Joshua,] the son of Sirach of Jerusalem, whence it appears that he was a Palestinian Jew. From other passages it also appears that he occasionally traveled abroad, observing men and things, and was frequently exposed to danger and death. The Greek translator, grandson of the author, informs us in the prologue that he came into Egypt in the thirty-eighth year of King Euergetes. Thus doubtless he came in contact with the Greek spirit and culture which had its chief seat at Alexandria, and he thought it important to trans-

* Smith's "Dictionary of the Bible." Art., Wisdom of Solomon.

late the learned work of his grandfather into the current language of the land. This translation has lived, and is the basis of other versions, but the Hebrew original is lost.

The great theme of the author is Wisdom. He endeavors to set forth its true nature, illustrate its practical value, and celebrate its praise. His work abounds in passages of the highest elegance and beauty, and not a few of its precepts have worked their way into the popular language of most modern nations. "It would be regarded by our modern wits," says Addison, "as one of the most shining tracts of morality that are extant, if it appeared under the name of a Confucius, or of any celebrated Grecian philosopher." We add two other extracts, to show the estimation in which the work is held :

In some respects the Book of the Son of Sirach is but a repetition of the ancient writings of Solomon. In some of its maxims it sinks below the dignity of those writings by the homeliness of its details for guidance of behavior at meals, of commercial speculation, of social advancement. But its general tone is worthy of that first contact between the two great civilizations of the ancient world, and breathes a spirit which an Isaiah would not have condemned, nor a Sophocles or a Theophrastus have despised. There is not a word in it to countenance the minute casuistries of the later rabbis, or the metaphysical subtleties of the later Alexandrians. It pours out its whole strength in discussing the conduct of human life, or the direction of the soul to noble aims.*

The ancients styled this book by the Greek name *πανάρητος*, signifying that it treats of and comprises all sorts of virtues. And, indeed, it is a system of morality so full and comprehensive that there is scarce any virtue which this excellent piece does not recommend, and lay down rules for obtaining; nor a vice or indecorum which it does not expose or discourage. It forms the manners of persons of all ages, sexes, and conditions, by an infinity almost of useful maxims and instructions. One learns from it all the duties of religion and civil life, both what piety commands and politeness and good manners expect. Every one may here discover, so full and obvious is it, what he owes to God, to his country, his neighborhood, his family, and to himself; how to behave in the different relations of life, either to superiors or inferiors, friends or enemies; and so it may be thought, as indeed some have represented it, to comprise all the duties of both tables of the law. For the precepts which it delivers, and the principal matters which it treats of, may be divided into four sorts : 1. Theological. 2. Political. 3. Economical. 4. Ethical. These

* Stanley, "History of Jewish Church." Third Series, p. 800.

four heads take in most, if not all, the maxims of this book, so that what lies dispersed in the great volumes of philosophers and moralists, is collected into a short compass, and to be found here, as it were, in miniature. In short, the author has given us at once a whole treasury of wisdom, and with great profusion has intermixed reflections, counsels, exhortations, reproofs, examples, prayers, praises, etc.; so that truth appears in different attitudes and forms, but beautiful and engaging under each, and shines with so complacent a luster as cannot but draw attention and command respect and admiration.*

BARUCH.

The apocryphal Book of Baruch contains, 1. An introduction, (chap. i, 1-14,) in which the writer, assuming to be Baruch, the son of Neriah, declares that he read his book to Jehoiachin, the nobles, and all the people who dwelt in Babylon, and sent it, together with money and other things, to Joachim, the high-priest, and all the people who were still at Jerusalem. 2. A penitential prayer, (i, 15-iii, 8,) in which the afflicted people of God are represented as confessing their sins, and greatly humbling themselves, and supplicating the divine compassion. 3. An address to Israel, (iii, 9-iv, 8,) in which the writer abruptly turns from prayer to exhortation, and calls upon the Israelites to heed the counsels of wisdom. 4. Jerusalem's lament, (iv, 9-29,) in which the Holy City is introduced as a forsaken widow, mourning over the sins and captivity of her children, yet hopeful, and urging her children to cry unto God that they may be saved. 5. Jerusalem comforted, (iv, 30-v, 9,) God himself addressing her, and giving assurance that the enemies shall be destroyed, and Israel shall be restored in great triumph and glory.

The language of the book is largely appropriated from the prophetic books of Holy Scripture, especially from Jeremiah and Daniel, but the chronological data are full of confusion and obscurity.

EPISTLE OF JEREMIAH.

In some editions of the Septuagint, and in the Latin and Syriac versions, this epistle appears as the sixth chapter of Baruch. Thus it stands in the English version of King James. But in the Codex Alexandrinus, and most editions of the Sep-

* Richard Arnald, "Commentary on the Apocrypha." Preface to *Ecclesiasticus*.

tuagint, it is placed immediately after the Lamentations of Jeremiah. It is entitled, "A Copy (*αντίγραφον*) of an epistle which Jeremiah sent unto them who were about to be led captives to Babylon, by the king of the Babylonians, to make known to them according as it was enjoined upon him by God." It admonishes the Jews that in Babylon they will come in contact with gross idolatry, and then proceeds at great length to expose the emptiness and folly of infidelity. Its form as an epistle is modeled after the twenty-ninth chapter of Jeremiah, and its exposure of idolatry is based chiefly on Jer. x, 1-16. Nothing is known of the author, and the time and place of his writing are uncertain. Fritzsche infers, from the purity of the writer's Hellenistic dialect, and his accurate acquaintance with idolatrous worship, that the epistle was written outside of Palestine, and probably in Egypt.

THE BOOKS OF THE MACCABEES.

Of the several ancient works which bear the name of the Maccabees that commonly known as the First is by far the most important and trustworthy. It contains a history of the Maccabean struggles for independence, and covers a period of about forty years, from 175 to 135 B. C. Its value as a historical document, pertaining to a most important and interesting period of Jewish history, cannot be easily overestimated. It furnishes a connecting link between the Old and New Testaments. "It almost equals," says Luther, "the sacred books of Scripture, and would not have been unworthy to be reckoned among them, because it is a very necessary and useful book for understanding the eleventh chapter of Daniel."

It is generally agreed among critics that the author was a Palestinian Jew. This is seen from the lively sympathy which he evinces for his Maccabean heroes, and his intimate acquaintance with the localities of Palestine. From the absence of any reference to a future life, or to the resurrection of the dead, it has been inferred that the author was a Sadducee. The book was probably written in the latter part of the reign of John Hyrcanus, somewhere between 120 and 107 B. C. Most critics believe that the closing words of the book (chap. xvi, 24) imply that John was still living. They speak of the beginning of his priesthood, but make no mention of its

close, a fact somewhat singular, if his entire reign had already passed into history.

According to Origen and Jerome the work was originally written in Hebrew, and their statement is corroborated by a critical study of the Septuagint version, in which occur numerous Hebraisms of such a character as to show that they are literal translations of Hebrew or Aramaic expressions. The Greek translator is unknown, but the version was probably made soon after the composition of the original. The wide prevalence of the Greek language gave general currency to this translation, so that it gradually superseded and displaced the Hebrew original.

The Second Book of Maccabees, though ancient and full of interest, is of far less historical value than the First. The religious and hortatory aim of the writer is noticeable in connection with a most glaring neglect of chronological order, and an unpardonable inaccuracy in details. The style of the writer is very uneven, and he uses many new and unusual words. Though showing a clever command of the Greek language, he sometimes epitomizes his narrative with a rough brevity, (e. g. chap. xiii, 19-26,) which presents a strange contrast with the rhetorical flow of other sections, (e. g., iii, 13-30.)

The author claims to furnish only an abridgment of a larger work in five books, by Jason of Cyrene, (chap. ii, 23.) The date of Jason's work, and of this epitome, cannot be very approximately fixed. The original work must have been written after Nicanor's death, (160 B. C.,) and probably some time after, and the abridgment, of course, still later. Opinions on this point range from 150 B. C. to 70 A. D.

The religious character of the book is one of its most important and interesting features. God is throughout recognized as ordaining even the most minute affairs of his people; the calamities which befell them are looked upon by the Jews as a temporary visitation for their sins; and the sufferings which come upon the righteous in this common visitation are regarded as atoning for the sins of the rest of the people, and staying the anger of God. What is, however, most striking, is that not only did the Jews then believe in the surviving of the soul after the death of the body, in the resurrection of the dead, and in their reunion with those near and dear to them, but that God does not irrevocably seal the eternal doom of man immediately after his departure, and that the decision of our heavenly Father may be

influenced by the prayers and sacrifices of the surviving friends of the departed. The striking distinction between the religious sentiments of this book and those of the former goes far to justify Geiger's conclusion that the two books are party productions; the author of the first was a Sadducee and a friend of the Maccabean dynasty, while the author or epitomizer of the second was a Pharisee, who looked upon the Maccabees with suspicion.*

What is commonly known as the Third Book of Maccabees is, strictly speaking, not about the Maccabees at all. It narrates the persecutions and marvelous deliverances of the Jews of Egypt during the reign of Ptolemy Philopator. After his victory over Antiochus the Great, Ptolemy visited Jerusalem, and offered sacrifices at the temple. But attempting to enter the holy of holies, he was smitten by a judgment-stroke from Heaven. Thus baffled, he returned to Egypt and attempted to wreak his vengeance on the Jews who were settled in that country. He had them arrested and sent to Alexandria, designing there to have them crushed to death by intoxicated elephants. But his purposes were miraculously frustrated, his anger was turned into pity, and the Jews in his dominions were advanced to greater authority and glory than ever before.

There is no good reason to doubt or dispute the historical character of the main parts of the narrative. Its form shows the plentiful embellishments and exaggerations of a writer anxious to color his story with all that will give effect. But, aside from this, there appears a demonstrable basis of truth. It was probably written in the Greek language, at Alexandria, by an Alexandrian Jew. Its date is probably as early as 100 B. C. English translations of the Greek text have been made by William Whiston, (1727,) by Henry Cotton,† and by an unnamed writer in Bagster's edition of the "Apocrypha," Greek and English, in parallel columns, (1871.)

The Fourth Book of Maccabees is a philosophical treatise. In this respect it noticeably differs from the other books of this name; for, while it records numerous events of Maccabean history, it makes all subservient to a philosophical argument. The incidents recorded are brought to illustrate and confirm

* Ginsburg, in Kitto's new "Cyc. of Bib. Literature." Art., Maccabees.

† The "Five Books of Maccabees," in English, with Notes and Illustrations. Oxford, 1832.

the fundamental proposition that religious principle is master of the passions. The book is usually printed in editions of Josephus' works, where it is entitled "Josephus' Treatise on the Maccabees, or on the Supremacy of Reason." But the Greek text of the Codex Alexandrinus is supposed to be the most ancient and preferable. Modern critics quite generally reject the opinion, once entertained, that Josephus was the author. It is rather believed to be the production of an Alexandrian Jew, and probably written about the beginning of the Christian era. It is chiefly valuable for illustrating the religious beliefs and moral philosophy of the Jewish people at that time. Like the Second Book of Maccabees, it teaches the doctrine of the resurrection, and that the death of the righteous is a vicarious atonement. English translations are given in Cotton's "Five Books of Maccabees," and Bagster's "Apocrypha," mentioned above.

In the Paris and London Polyglots appears still another Book of Maccabees. It is published in Arabic, with a Latin translation, under the title of "Second Maccabees;" but Cotton, who made an English translation from the Latin, entitled it, "The Fifth Book of Maccabees." It contains the Jewish history of 178 years, from the attempt of Heliodorus to plunder the temple, to the murder of the two Maccabean princes, Alexander and Aristobulus, (184 to 6 B. C.) Of its historical value and general trustworthiness there can be no doubt, but it can scarcely be classed with the Old Testament Apocrypha.

Differing from the above-named books in their literary history, but like them in general character and worth, is another class of ancient Jewish writings, which we may appropriately, and for the sake of distinction, call *Pseudepigrapha*. This word implies that the titles of such books are false, and that they were not really written by the persons whose names they bear. And this is equally true of some of the books called apocryphal. Under the Old Testament Pseudepigrapha we may name the following: The Book of Enoch, the Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs, The Revelation of Moses, The Assumption of Moses, The Book of Jubilees, The Psalms of Solomon, The Ascension of Isaiah, The Revelation of Baruch, and, perhaps, The Sibylline Oracles. These ancient works, however falsely named, are all of great importance in the department of

Sacred Literature; but they are rare and costly, some of them not extant in an English version, and consequently hardly known to many an intelligent Christian reader. Our space will not allow us to present their contents in the present article.

THE QUESTION OF CANONICITY.

Most of these apocryphal books were in existence and well known before the Christian era. That the New Testament writers were familiar with them is rendered probable by numerous coincidences of language.* They are frequently quoted as Scripture by the ancient Christian fathers, such as Clement of Rome and Clement of Alexandria, Irenæus, Origen, Hippolytus, and Athanasius. This honorable treatment of these books was, doubtless, largely owing to the general use, among the early Christians, of the Septuagint version of the Old Testament. "In proportion as the fathers were more or less absolutely dependent on that version for their knowledge of the Old Testament Scriptures, they gradually lost in common practice the sense of the difference between the books of the Hebrew Canon and the Apocrypha. The custom of individuals grew into the custom of the Church; and the public use of the apocryphal books obliterated in popular regard the characteristic marks of their origin and value, which could only be discovered by the scholar."† Augustine seems to have been the first who included the apocryphal books in the Canon of Holy Scripture. Yet in some parts of his writings he distinguishes between certain books, as the Maccabees, which were used in the Church, but not included in the Jewish Canon. Westcott observes that this great father of the Western Church "frequently uses passages from the apocryphal books as co-ordinate with Scripture, and practically disregards the rules of distinction between the various classes of sacred writings which he himself lays down. He stood on the extreme verge of the age of independent learning, and follows at one time the conclusions of criticism, at another the prescriptions of habit, which from his date grew more and more powerful." This enlargement upon the Jewish Canon received the sanction of

* Compare 1 Esdras iii, 12, with 2 Cor. xiii, 8; Tobit iv, 15, with Matt. vii, 12; Judith viii, 27, with 1 Cor. x, 10; Wisdom iv, 10, with Heb. xi, 5; Eccles. v, 11, with James i, 19; Baruch iv, 7, with 1 Cor. x, 20; 1 Macc. iv, 59, with John x, 22.

† Westcott, in Smith's "Dictionary of the Bible." Art., Canon.

one of the Councils of Carthage, and of several of the Popes of Rome. Finally, in 1546, the Council of Trent decreed: "If any one shall not receive these books entire, with all their parts, as they are wont to be read in the Catholic Church, and the old Latin Vulgate edition, for sacred and canonical, and shall knowingly and intentionally despise the traditions aforesaid, let him be accursed." In another decree the same Council declared, "that this same old Vulgate edition, which has stood the test of so many ages' use, in the Church, in public readings, disputings, preachings, and expoundings, be deemed authentic, and that no one, on any pretext, dare or presume to reject it." This, of course, settles the question with all such as accept the infallibility of Popes and Councils.

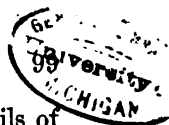
But the Protestant Churches have rejected the apocryphal books from the Sacred Canon. They have generally acknowledged their value for reading and study, and in some places sanctioned their public use in the Church services, but have denied their authority in matters of faith. The argument against their canonical authority is decisive, and may be outlined as follows:

1. These books were not among those which were received as sacred Scripture in the days of Jesus and the apostles. There can be no reasonable doubt that "the law of Moses, and the Prophets, and the Psalms," referred to in Luke xxiv, 44, were identical with the "only twenty-two books which contain the history of all past times, and are justly believed to be divine," mentioned by Josephus, (*Apion*, i, 8.) There is evidence that Josephus knew and used some of our apocryphal books, but he never treated them as Holy Scripture.

2. These books are not mentioned in the catalogue of Melito, Bishop of Sardis, (A.D. 175,) who made a special journey to the East to learn by careful inquiry the number and names of the sacred books of the Old Testament.

3. Origen, (A.D. 200,) who was very familiar with the apocryphal books, and frequently quoted them as Scripture, nevertheless affirms that the sacred books of the Hebrew canon were only twenty-two, according to the number of the letters of the Hebrew alphabet.

4. The same testimony is repeated in substance by Athanasius, (A.D. 330 ;) Hilary, (350 ;) Epiphanius, (360 ;) Gregory



Nazianzen, (390;) Amphilochius, (390;) and the Councils of Laodicea, (367;) and Chalcedon, (451.)

5. Then comes the weighty testimony of St. Jerome, (A.D. 400,) the author of the Latin Vulgate, who enumerates the twenty-two books of the Jewish Canon, and declares, (Prologus Galeatus,) that "whatever is beyond these must be put in the Apocrypha." He also expressly says in the same connection that the Wisdom of Solomon, Jesus son of Sirach, Judith, Tobit, and the Pastor, "are not in the canon." In another place he adds: "The Church indeed reads the books of Judith, and Tobit, and Maccabees, but does not receive them among the canonical Scriptures."

6. To all this add that, notwithstanding the decrees of Popes and Councils, a succession of the most learned writers of the Western Church, down to the period of the Reformation, maintained the position of Jerome in rejecting from the canon the so-called Apocrypha. And even after the decrees of the Council of Trent were published, there were Roman Catholic divines who thought it strange "that five cardinals and forty-eight bishops should take it upon themselves to decide so peremptorily in regard to points of religion of so much weight, declaring books to be canonical which had thus far been regarded as apocryphal, or at most uncertain, and making a translation authentic, which in numerous passages departs widely from the original text." *

DEUTERO-CANONICAL CHARACTER.

Although these books were never included in the Jewish Canon, and internal as well as external evidence shows that they have no authority as well-authenticated sacred books, their connection with the Septuagint and Vulgate versions, and their extensive use in the Christian Church, have given them a character and prominence which has been designated as *Deutero-Canonical*, that is, having a kind of secondary authority. We have noticed above how Augustine distinguished between canonical books, and books that might be used in the churches. This distinction seems to have been observed by the principal writers during the Middle Ages. The apocryphal books are

* See Stow's article on "The Apocryphal Books of the Old Testament, and the Reasons for their exclusion from the Canon of Scripture," in the "Bibliotheca Sacra," for April, 1854.

spoken of as "doubtful Scriptures," "excellent and useful, but not in the Canon," "not equaling the sublime dignity of the other books, yet deserving reception for their laudable instruction." When the first complete edition of Luther's Bible appeared, in 1534, these doubtful books were placed by themselves between the Old and New Testaments, with the title: "Apocrypha; that is, Books which are not to be considered as equal to Holy Scripture, and yet are useful and good to read." This same arrangement was followed in Coverdale's English translation, (which was printed in 1535,) and was adopted in the principal English translations down to and including that of King James in 1611. The Sixth Article of the Church of England, after enumerating the commonly received canonical books of the Old Testament, "of whose authority there never was any doubt in the Church," says: "And the other books the Church doth read for example of life and instruction of manners; but yet it doth not apply them to establish any doctrine;" and then follows a list of the apocryphal books according to their order in King James' version. In the Book of Homilies these deuterocanonical books are cited as Scripture, and treated with reverence; and in the Book of Common Prayer they are spoken of as being agreeable to the Holy Scriptures. The Confession of the Dutch Churches, (1566,) after naming the canonical books, "respecting which no controversy existed," has the following: "We make a distinction between these and such as are called apocryphal, which may indeed be read in the Church, and proofs adduced from them, so far as they agree with the canonical books; but their authority and force are by no means such that any article of faith may be certainly declared from their testimony alone; still less that they can impugn or detract from the authority of the others." The Helvetic Confession (1566) holds substantially the same position. The Westminster Confession declares that the "Apocrypha, not being of divine confirmation, are no part of the Canon of Scripture, and therefore of no authority in the Church of God, nor to be any otherwise approved or made use of than other human writings." From all this it will be seen that the apocryphal books have held a historical Church importance, even among those who denied their canonical authority.

PROFITABLE FOR HISTORY AND DOCTRINE.

From what we have observed above of the dates, contents, and character of these ancient books, it will be seen at once that they must be of great value in tracing, through a most important period of their history, the movements, customs, and opinions of the Jewish people. In some of these books appear the later Jewish notions of the Messiah who was to come; in others we read of their struggles against idolatry, and their attitude toward the Gentile nations around them. In one place we find encouragement to offer prayers for the dead; in another, prayer and fasting are extolled; in another, great stress is put upon the necessity and importance of almsgiving. The doctrines of the unity and holiness of God, of Providence and grace, and of the ministry of good and evil angels, appear in various connections. We may also discover, in several books, evidences of the great doctrinal variance between Pharisee and Sadducee, exhibiting itself unconsciously in the narratives of different authors. Thus in *First Maccabees* we find no allusion to a future life, or to the resurrection of the dead, although the narrative offered plenty of opportunity for such allusion, had these doctrines formed a part of the writer's creed; but in *Second Maccabees* we have accounts of tortured martyrs, expressing in the hour of death their confidence that in the resurrection they would receive again the very limbs which their persecutors mangled and severed from their bodies. Various other ideas of life, death, immortality, resurrection, and future judgment are to be found scattered here and there through the several books,* so that it is evident the Old Testament apocryphal literature must necessarily hold an important place in biblical and theological study, and is in some degree like the inspired Scriptures of God, "profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness." (2 Tim. iii, 16.)

CRITICISM AND LITERATURE.

Although these books are allowed on all hands to be very ancient and valuable, they have received from critics and scholars comparatively little attention. The most considerable attempt

* See Dr. Bissel on "Eschatology of the Old Testament Apocrypha," in "Bibliotheca Sacra," of April, 1879.

at an English commentary is the work of Richard Arnald, and is more than a hundred years old. It is entitled: "A Critical Commentary on such Books of the Apocrypha as are appointed to be read in the Churches, namely: Wisdom, Ecclesiasticus, Tobit, Judith, Baruch, History of Susanna, and Bel and the Dragon; with Two Dissertations on the Books of Maccabees and Esdras. Being a Continuation of Bishop Patrick and Mr. Lowth." (London, 1753.) But two German scholars, Fritzsche and Grimm, have furnished a complete and thorough commentary, entitled: "Kurzgefasstes Exegetisches Handbuch zu den Apokryphen des Alten Testaments." (Leipsic, 1851-1860.) This able and exhaustive work treats all the books commonly included in the Apocrypha, with the exception of Second Esdras. Notes, more or less full, on the apocryphal books, may be found in the fifth volume of the "Critici Sacri," and in Calmet's Commentary. A very thorough examination of these books is also given by Eichhorn in his "Einleitung in die Apokryphischen Schriften des Alten Testaments." (Leipsic, 1795.) Compare also the other leading works on Biblical Introduction, such as those of Horne, (Ed. Davidson,) De Wette, Keil, and Bleek, (German editions,) Gray's "Key to the Old Testament and Apocrypha," and Wilson's "Books of the Apocrypha, with Critical and Historical Observations."

There are numerous valuable treatises on separate books, such as Wolff on Judith, Reusch, Sengelmann, and Neubauer on Tobit; Van der Vlis, Volkmar, and Ewald on Second Esdras; and Cotton and Keil on the Books of Maccabees. See also Hilgenfeld's "Die Jüdische Apokalyptic," (Jena, 1857,) and numerous articles by the same author in the German periodical, "Zeitschrift für wissenschaftliche Theologie." Valuable suggestions and information may also be found in Prideaux's "Connection," Ewald's "History of Israel," (vol. v, Eng. trans.,) Stanley's "History of the Jewish Church," (vol. iii,) and Milman's and Graetz's "Histories of the Jews." And especially valuable and comprehensive are the articles touching these books, in Smith's "Dictionary of the Bible," (American ed., 4 vols.,) Kitto's "New Cyclopædia of Biblical Literature," M'Clintock and Strong's "Cyclopædia of Biblical, Theological, and Ecclesiastical Literature," and Herzog's "Real-Encyclopædie," (new edition, now issuing from the German press.)

The original texts and ancient versions are given in the fourth volume of Walton's "Polyglot." The Greek texts appear in the various editions of the Septuagint, and have been published separately by Fabricius, Augusti, Apel, and others. The latest and best is that of O. F. Fritzsche: "*Libri Apocryphi Veteris Testamenti Græce*," (Leipsic, 1871.) Bagster & Sons, of London, publish the Greek and English in parallel columns. The Latin texts are found in the editions of the Vulgate. The Syriac versions were separately published in 1861 by Lagarde. Wahl published, at Leipsic, in 1853, a special lexicon for the Apocrypha, entitled: "*Clavis Librorum Vet. Test. Apocryphorum philologica*."

Just as this article goes to press, (November, 1880,) the Scribners issue, as a supplemental volume of the American edition of Lange's Commentary, a large octavo of 680 pages, entitled: "*The Apocrypha of the Old Testament; with Historical Introductions, a Revised Translation, and Notes Critical and Explanatory*;" by E. C. Bissell, D.D. The author is said to have devoted several years, in Germany and in this country, to the special study of the Apocrypha, and his work, which seems in fullness and critical accuracy to surpass even that of Fritzsche and Grimm, will meet a *desideratum* in our biblical literature which has long been felt.

ART. VI.—BAIRD'S "RISE OF THE HUGUENOTS."

History of the Rise of the Huguenots of France. By HENRY M. BAIRD. Two volumes. 8vo. Charles Scribners' Sons.

WE have in these two handsomely printed volumes the latest and best results of scholarly research into the history of a period which, with the new hopes of Protestantism in France, has acquired a fresh interest. Several historians, French, German, and English, have treated the subject, and original materials are abundant; but the investigations of Professor Baird have included numerous documents brought to light in a recent period, and the solution of certain questions which conflicting statements had left in doubt. The manuscript collections preserved in Paris and Zurich have been carefully consulted for the latter purpose; while the mass of contemporary corre-

spondence, hitherto inedited memoirs and important State papers, now published and still in serial course of publication, have been drawn upon to enrich these pages. The author refers in his preface particularly to the Astor Library, in New York, which he has found surprisingly well furnished for the prosecution of his studies, and it is a credit to the Library that so exhaustive a treatment of this subject could be conducted chiefly by its aid. The more familiar chronicles and memoirs of the period in question, as well as the prominent historians, have evidently been well read and digested, and we have here a work quite unequaled on the subject for extensive research and copiousness of illustration, as exhibited both in the text and in the notes and dissertations.

Indeed, the present work is the product of special studies continued through nearly twenty years, and of an ardent interest in the theme, conceived, as we know, by the author in his youth, which has prompted him to a careful and faithful performance of his task. We have, therefore, the satisfaction of reading pages in which every statement has been well weighed. The style is characterized especially by sobriety, which is, nevertheless, quite devoid of dullness. The conception which the author has formed of the true historian's work is the presentation of a finished but plain record of facts which shall be attractive to the reader rather by its transparency than its brilliancy of expression. The most exciting events are narrated without passion, and yet with a clearness and force which brings them the more effectually under the eye of a calm judgment. These volumes will have a deserved place as the classic American history of the events to which they are devoted, side by side with the works of Prescott and Motley, though differing from them both in rhetorical qualities. One feels at once, in reviewing here the rise of French Protestantism, that he is treading on more carefully explored ground than when carried along by the somewhat ardent imagination of Dr. Merle d'Aubigné; though it would be, doubtless, unfair to bring the truly interesting and valuable, but professedly fragmentary, chapters of the latter,* which touch the same subject, into full comparison with the present systematic work.

* "*Histoire de la Réformation en Europe au temps de Calvin.*" 8 vols.

Though systematic and thorough, Professor Baird's history does not, indeed, comprehend all that we might wish to see treated in this connection. This was not to be expected. The development of Protestantism gave rise to civil strife in France under circumstances of absorbing interest. After the period of passive submission to persecution, the successive civil wars, of which there were no less than seven in the century, the remarkable characters they developed, the tragic scenes enacted in connection with them—the political relations of Protestantism—these are the matters of special prominence in this epoch in France, and such as chiefly engage the attention. A more precise and fuller presentation of the doctrinal and ecclesiastical system of the French Protestants, and a more extended history of the Synods in which it was perfected, would have been welcome. A fuller chronicle of facts concerning the methods and work of propagating the new faith would, of course, possess great interest: but the narrative must have some limit. The author has evidently not thought fit to extend the plan of his work very far beyond the external relations of the subject. Yet the historical student has certainly much to be thankful for in these two stately volumes of six hundred pages each. The general state of the kingdom, of society, and the Church, at the opening of the period, is exhibited in a clear and interesting manner, in those points more immediately related to the fortunes of the rising Reformed faith. The wide scope and intricate action of political influences, both internal and foreign, during this period in France have been well studied, and the different authorities carefully balanced to secure a just statement of fact. The author is specially to be commended for the evident impartiality which marks his judgment on events and characters. If the truth of history compels the restatement of facts in the conduct of the Catholic party toward their opponents which we can only abhor, so likewise does Professor Baird not shun to record corresponding acts, though far less in number and magnitude, on the part of the Protestants, as particularly in the course of the civil wars; while the erroneous conceptions concerning the rights of conscience every-where prevalent, and the partial barbarity of the times, are seen to be to a large extent the occasion of these painful events.

The period treated in the work before us embraces about

sixty years, extending from the beginning of the reign of Francis I., in 1515, to the death of Charles IX., in 1574. This was the period of the "Rise" of the Huguenots of France, at the close of which, having survived five sanguinary wars, "they stood before the world a well-defined body that had . . . proved itself entitled to consideration and respect." Our author lays before us at the outset valuable observations on the general condition of the kingdom, upon which the limits of this article will forbid any enlargement, although a consideration of such matters contributes much to a full understanding of the subject of this history. The constitution of the Parliaments, the university and municipal corporations, the condition of the clergy, and the relation of the Crown to all these bodies, are chief features in the case. The arbitrary institution by Francis I. of his Concordat with the Pope, the provisions of which continued to be recognized down to the Revolution, and which effectually nullified the Pragmatic Sanction of St. Louis and of Bourges, that palladium of Gallican liberties, and substituted for electoral rights in the Church the royal prerogative of appointment, is a point of marked importance. The spiritual indifference of the clergy, the non-residence of the chief officials, the incompetence and general negligence of others, and the dissolute manners of many, were noted in those times by the Catholic authorities as the principal causes of the spread of the Reformation.

If we attempt now a general survey of events in the period before us, which, it may be thought, present interest in the subject will warrant, we can do no more than touch upon certain portions of the narrative. The highly dramatic character of the period and its development of most important consequences for the interests of mankind will receive but imperfect illustration.

A genuine ray of the light about to rise upon Europe shone in the heart and scholarly mind of Jacques Lefèvre, of Etaples, in Picardy, who came to a professor's chair in the Sorbonne in the later years of Louis XII. Of humble origin, but pure morals and attractive spirit, his active mind and travel abroad made him a master in varied learning. He is credited with having "restored letters to France." In his commentaries on the Pauline Epistles, in 1512, he clearly enunciated the doctrine

of justification by faith. Further utterances of like purport occasioned his condemnation by the Sorbonne. Guillaume Farel of Dauphiny was his pupil. Both, like the Wesleys, were scrupulous observers of religious duties and ceremonies. "Together they frequented the churches and united in the pious work, as they regarded it, of decking out with flowers the pictures of the saints to whose shrines they made frequent pilgrimages." But the teacher saw the coming light, and more than once exclaimed to his pupil, "Guillaume, the world is going to be renewed, and you will behold it."

A conspicuous example of the more spiritual class of prelates was Guillaume Brignonnet, Bishop of Meaux. He was the envoy of both Louis XII. and Francis I. to the papal court, where he conceived, it is said, his desire for a reform of the Church. Lefèvre was invited to his diocese in 1521, and there made a translation of the Scriptures into French, which was freely read in the churches of the diocese, to the great joy of the people. Farel had accompanied his teacher, and Gérard Roussel and Mazurier, both eloquent speakers, followed. The bishop himself was zealous in pronouncing against abuses and in commending the new preachers. With all this activity Meaux seemed likely to be another Wittenberg. But, alas! the opposition of the monastic orders, and the power of the University and the Parliament, proved too strong for the bishop, who retracted his former utterances in favor of reform. The preachers were compelled to withdraw, which Farel did in 1523, going home to the Dauphiné, where he labored zealously, and thence to Switzerland; Lefèvre and Roussel, in 1528, retiring to Strasburg. Roussel's courage was inadequate to a course of decided activity in the new movement. Lefèvre also shrank from bold action, was patronized by the Queen of Navarre, and resided at last near her court at Nérac. His reputed confession of remorse at the close of his life, for having "basely avoided the martyr's crown," is confirmed by a memorandum in Farel's own handwriting, recently discovered in the Geneva library. Merle d'Aubigné gives a highly interesting account of the meeting at Nérac between Calvin and Lefèvre.* The latter also met Farel again at Strasburg. Farel was a man of the people who spoke in all places—in the field or by the road-

* "Hist. de la Réf. en Europe au temps de Calvin," iii, 82.

side—with a fiery eloquence “which penetrated the heart and swayed the masses.” He was not, however, to be the leader of the Reformation in France. No less a man than Calvin was fitted for that work.

But the Reform party had at the outset a warm friend at court. If Calvin came later to instruct by his writings, and sent letters of hearty encouragement to the martyrs from his stronghold in Geneva, the ardent sympathies of Margaret of Angoulême, the king’s sister, and later Queen of Navarre, cherished the movement of the new faith, and she remained ever a friend to the leaders and sufferers in the cause; although toward the last she gave, under certain circumstances, her countenance to persecution.* Her youth was devoted to study, and many of her verses evince a poetic talent equal to that of Marot. At court she exhibited great intelligence, and was consulted on every occasion. The Bishop of Meaux was her confessor, and an extended correspondence between them exists. She wrote encouragingly to him in the days of his efforts for reform. “I assure you,” she said, “that the king and madame are entirely decided to let it be understood that the truth of God is no heresy.” Her conception of reform, however, was such as could obtain within the Church. Her religion was of a mystical cast; she abhorred disputation, and would preserve external unity. But her personal devotion to evangelical work was very marked. “There was not in the sixteenth century,” says Merle d’Aubigné, “an evangelist, at least no woman, more active than she.” Her “Mirror of the Sinful Soul,” † issued in

* Baird, i, 226.

† Merle d’Aubigné observes: “These verses contain voices of the soul and aspirations toward heaven which had been for a long time unknown to the world.” For a specimen see “Les Marguerites de la Marguerite,” i, 68.

“Oh Jesus Christ! des âmes vrai pêcheur!
Mon avocat, mon unique sauveur!
Je ne crains plus d’être jamais défaite,
Car vous avez justice satisfaite.

“Unie à Christ je ne puis avoir peur,
Peine, travail, ennui, mal ni douleur,
Très faible suis en moi, en Dieu très forte,
Car je puis tout en Lui qui me conforte.

“Ni de ton ciel l’infinie hauteur,
Ni de l’enfer l’abîme et profondeur,
Ni le péché qui me fait tant de guerre,
Ne me peuve séparer un seul jour,
O père saint! de ton parfait amour.”

Paris in 1533, was condemned by the Sorbonne, which, with other indignities shown to his sister at the instigation of the theologians, greatly enraged the king. Margaret cherished an ardent love for her brother, as recorded in many of her writings, but it is not easy to measure the extent of her influence with him in religious matters.

There was much in the character of Francis I. to attract regard. He was tall, athletic, of fair complexion, and so distinguished for courteous manners as to be called "*Le roi des gentilshommes*." "No ruler of the day," says our author, "surpassed him in gravity and nobility of bearing." He was, however, addicted to sensuality, and was often guilty of duplicity. He had little affection for the pope, quite disliked the monks and the Sorbonne, but lacked earnestness in religious matters. Martin says: "More than once, indeed, the flame which had touched the Elector of Saxony appeared to glow upon the heart of Francis I.; but Louise of Savoy was too corrupt, and her son at least too volatile, too far removed from the sense of an interior life and a serious spirituality, to admit of any decision under the guidance of truly religious motives." *

But Francis was, after the dictates of his nature, in ardent sympathy with the Renaissance spirit of the times; and this made him friendly to the Reformers, for at the outset all the truly learned favored them. The king's cultivation of art could not, perhaps, directly contribute to incline him toward a more simple faith and a stricter rule of morals, yet it doubtless had no little influence in liberalizing his disposition. Francis rendered genuine aid to learning. He renewed the decree of Louis XII., which introduced the French language in place of Latin into the public documents. He established, (1530,) contrary to the will of the Sorbonne, the Collège de France, after the model of the Italian universities, with new systems and free lay instruction. Erasmus was called to the post of director, but declined. In the same spirit the king upheld Lefèvre against the Sorbonne, and favored the measures of Briçonnet at Meaux. He read the Bible freely with his sister, and in the earlier years evidently felt no hostility toward the Reformers.

Of the influences brought to bear upon Francis to change his mind in this regard, probably the most effective was the idea,

* "*Histoire de France*," viii, 149.

studiously urged upon him, that "*a change of religion necessarily involves a change of governments.*" He was also made to listen to slanders against the Protestants to the effect that they were one in spirit with the rebellious Anabaptists of Germany. The German ambassador in Paris declared to him that "the Protestants only wanted to rob the Church of its wealth, would have no ranks in society, no marriage, no rights of property, no king." Policy, moreover, at various times, and especially in furthering his designs upon Italy, required him to maintain friendship with the pope. On the other hand, with a view of strengthening himself against his rival, the Emperor Charles V., Francis, on different occasions, professed the most favorable sentiments toward the Protestant princes and leaders of Germany. He invited Melancthon to Paris, and proposed a very liberal plan for the pacification of the Church. His duplicity and purely political aims were, however, made apparent. Still, intense interest was every-where excited in the negotiations. The Teutonic nations might be said to have become Protestant. Italy and Spain were moved. What would be the course of the Romanic peoples? All eyes were turned to France as the predominant representative of the latter element. Moreover, at the papal court itself there were strong signs of a new spirit. From the time of Leo X. an "association" for the reformation of the Church existed at Rome. The party of Contarini labored for the general pacification of the Church; they obtained in the Conference of Ratisbon (1541) a very liberal scheme, which, however, was nullified by the curia. The French king proved unequal to the demands of this great crisis, and Professor Fisher* has very justly said: "Francis, by his undecided and vacillating attitude, brought upon his country incalculable miseries—civil wars, in which France became not the arbiter, but the prey of Europe."

It is uncertain whether Francis ever read the dedication to the king which Calvin published with his "Institutes," a work first issued in its unexpanded form in 1536. Calvin was born in 1509 at Noyon, a small city of Picardy; received a Church benefice at the age of twelve, but later studied law, though interested finally in a profound examination of the Scriptures, which resulted in his gradually embracing evangel-

* "History of the Reformation."

ical views. At Paris he was charged with being the author of Rector Cop's evangelical address, delivered in November, 1533, which compelled the flight of both from the city. Calvin went to Angoulême, where he decisively renounced the Romish Church. Professor Baird distrusts the account given by Merle d'Aubigné, and others, of Calvin's preaching at this period in the "caverns" of Poitiers, and earlier in Paris and Bourges.* At Basle, in 1535, he first conceived, according to our author, the idea of giving a practical direction to the great work which he had been composing, sending it out as a defense for the Protestants of France before the king. On his return from the Court of René, in Ferrara, he proposed to retire to Germany, where he might serve his Protestant fellow-countrymen by a course of quiet study; but in passing through Geneva (1536) he was detained there by Farel, with great urgency of entreaty, that his commanding energy might be made of service to the struggling Protestant Church in that city of exceedingly varied social influences, of intellectual activity, of gay and dissolute life. The difficulties encountered by Calvin, and the long reign of his influence at Geneva, the energetic impulses which went out thence through the thirty printing-presses, the missionaries, and letters of the leaders, into France, are well known. The year 1534, when violent placards against the Roman Catholic mass were posted on the walls of Paris, which provoked a cruel persecution, was a marked epoch for the French Protestants. The king thenceforth exhibited a decided aversion to them. Hope could no longer be fixed upon the Court, and the followers of the Reformed faith learned to look toward Geneva and its great ecclesiastical ruler for their encouragement. With Francis faithful to them they would have remained "Lutherans," as they were generally called; but henceforth they became Calvinists.

Professor Baird does not hesitate to acknowledge Calvin's participation in the illiberal views of the age concerning the rights of conscience, and leaves him chargeable with promoting the execution of Servetus. Calvin "did, indeed, desire and urge that Servetus should be punished capitally, . . . but the other principal Reformers of Germany and Switzerland—Melancthon, Haller, Peter Martyr, and Bullinger gave their

* Baird, i, 201, note.

hearty indorsement to the cruel act.”* The condemned Protestants themselves confessed that real heresy ought to be punished with death. Farel wrote of himself that he “was most worthy of any punishment imaginable, if he seduced any one from the doctrines and faith of Christ.” In further illustration of the subject of the persecutions, see the account given here and in other historians of the barbarous practices of the age in the forms of punishment used for different offenses. The origination of the course of persecutions in France is chargeable not upon the king, but upon the Sorbonne, the Parliament, the queen-mother, Louise of Savoy, and the chancellor, Duprat. We cannot here note the history of the severe measures adopted, nor trace the heroic record of the martyrs. Sometimes indiscreet and unjustifiable acts were the occasion of arrest, as in the instance of the iconoclastic rage which broke out in Paris, 1528–30. The king had, before the year of the placards, on certain occasions expressed a decided hostility to heresy; but from that year onward persecution became systematic in the kingdom, and the reign of Francis I. did not close (1547) till he became in a great degree responsible for the bloody deeds of the Baron d’Oppède in the Vaudois villages of Provence.

Henry II. is said to have had all the faults of his father with but one of his excellences—physical prowess. Dull of understanding, he was easily influenced by his surroundings. He had married Catherine de Medicis, the niece of Pope Clement VII., and the latter’s fatal gift to France in 1533. Diana of Poitiers was the avaricious mistress of the king; Anne de Montmorency, a valorous but rude soldier, the constable of the realm. The rivalries of noble houses and factions, and schemes of personal ambition, now became prominent at court. The house of Guise, sprung from the Duke of Lorraine, appears upon the scene. In 1538 James of Scotland married Mary of Lorraine. Their issue was Mary Stuart, married to the Dauphin, afterward Francis II., and the Guises thus rose to arrogate a regal dignity which they claimed to deduce from Charlemagne.

Francis, Duke of Guise, was a soldier of great ability, but ignorant, it is said, in all other matters, and in religious affairs

* Baird, i, 212.

led by his brother Charles, who, on the death of his uncle, John, succeeded him as Cardinal of Lorraine. The extravagance of the court during this reign, and the selfishness everywhere prevalent in grasping after offices of profit in Church and State, is generally attested by historians. "France," says our author, "became a scene of rapacity beyond precedent." The patronage was chiefly in the hands of the Guises and Montmorencies.

Neither Henry nor his advisers had any sympathy for the Reformed faith, and persecution raged. Nevertheless the new religion grew, was openly embraced by persons of high rank, and the Protestant party exhibited more and more that predominance of gentle blood and superior intelligence which characterized it in France. Antoine de Bourbon, titular King of Navarre, was the first prince of the blood. He had married Jeanne d'Albret, who, as daughter of the king, Henri d'Albret and Margaret, was Queen of Navarre. They resided at Pau, where their son, afterward the illustrious Henry IV., was born. After listening to the Protestant preachers in his southern home, Antoine joined their assemblies in Paris. His brother, Louis de Bourbon, Prince of Condé, also declared himself a Protestant, and likewise their cousin, François d'Andelot, son of the Marquis de Châtillon. D'Andelot sent Protestant books to his brother, the Admiral Coligny, while the latter was detained prisoner of war.

Notwithstanding the dread of the Inquisition, the first Protestant Church was organized at Paris, in 1555, after the model of the Geneva Churches, and others followed in different cities. On May 26, 1559, the first National Synod of the Reformed Church assembled secretly in the Faubourg St. Germain, and adopted a Calvinistic Confession of Faith and Presbyterian form of Discipline.* Strange to say, they recognized the principle that "God had placed the sword in the hand of the magistrate to repress the sins committed not only against the second table of God's commandments, but against the first." The treaty of Cateau-Cambrésis, so disastrous for France, as asserted by our author and most historians,† was made to terminate

* Professor Baird quotes, for the best account of the Synods, Aymou, "Tous les synodes nationaux des églises réformées de France." (La Haye, 1710.)

† Guizot takes a different view: "History of France," Eng. ed., iii, 268.

the war which Henry had been waging, partly in order that he might have opportunity to suppress heresy at home. His career was, however, suddenly cut short by the accidental thrust of a lance at a tournament, January 30, 1559.

With the brief reign of Francis II., who came to the throne at sixteen years of age, began the prominent activity of his mother, Catherine de Medicis; an activity which was rather that of management to render herself and her children secure in the seat of power than any course of bold scheming for more extravagant ends. Yet with so moderate an aim, she would evidently not be deterred by moral considerations from any means necessary to secure it. Though sufficiently capable of unjust and cruel designs, she had certainly much to do at the outset to protect herself and the king. A woman and a foreigner, of less than noble extraction, she needed the use of all her faculties amid the rivalries of the court. She had to draw strength from all parties, and keep her course between them, desiring neither the growth nor the destruction of either. There is good authority to believe that she was naturally averse to strife, and desired peace for herself, her own, and the kingdom. Such is, in substance, the view which Professor Baird is disposed to take of the stand-point of Catharine's policy, the view taken by other able writers in later years, and quite clearly presented by the judicious German historian, Soldan.* It is a more moderate and favorable conception of her character than has heretofore generally prevailed among Protestants.

The Guises were now supreme at court, and the opposition to this predominance of a foreign house centered itself in two families, the Bourbons (Antoine of Navarre and Louis, Prince of Condé) and the Châtillons, (the Cardinal Odet, D'Andelot, and Admiral Coligny.) These were all more or less attached to the Protestant faith. The King of Navarre was the natural head of the party, but, though a good soldier, proved himself in religious matters ever irresolute and worthless as a leader.

The Protestants had grown greatly in numbers during the last reign. There was a general popular discontent at the rule of the Guises and the continued persecutions. An open revolt was planned, from which Calvin earnestly dissuaded his followers, saying, "Let but a drop of blood be shed, and streams will

* "*Geschichte des Protestantismus in Frankreich*," ii, 385, 387.

flow that must inundate France." Coligny was not consulted, for he was known to be averse to violence. Condé stood, however, as the "*chef muet*," La Renaudie being the actual leader. The court, in alarm, shut itself up at Amboise. The "Edict of Forgiveness" was issued March, 1560, though its provisions were not faithfully kept. It marked an epoch in the history of French Protestantism. "It is the point whence begins the transition from the period of persecution to the *period of the civil wars*." The scheme of assault was again set on foot, but defeated: the leader was slain, and the Duke of Guise took terrible vengeance on the captured conspirators. Such was the "Tumult of Amboise." The name "Huguenots" was now first applied to the Protestants. "Not a week had passed after the conspiracy of Amboise before the word was in every body's mouth. Few knew or cared whence it arose." Its origin is a vexed question. Professor Baird prefers to attribute the name to "some trivial circumstance that has completely passed into oblivion."*

At an assembly of Notables, August, 1560, the new chancellor, Michel de l'Hospital, who, though brought into power by the Lorraines, proved to be of just and noble character and a wise statesman, made a liberal address. He had before said, "What need have we of these tortures and flames? Let our virtues and orderly life defend us against heresy." The Bishop of Valence and the Archbishop of Vienne heartily defended the Protestant petition offered by Coligny, and denounced the abuses in the Church. Calvin now urged the King of Navarre to gather a body of nobles together and by the *moral force* of the demonstration secure from the coming States-general suitable terms for the Protestants; but he was incapable of any bold action. So urgent, on the other hand, did the Catholic party become at the court that a general crusade against the Protestants was planned by Francis II.; but he suddenly died, December 5, 1560.

Charles IX. succeeded his brother at ten years of age. Catharine easily persuaded Navarre to yield her the regency. On the fifth day of the new reign the States-general was convened at Orleans, its first session since 1483. The address of the chancellor, L'Hospital, is remarkable, as showing how strong a hold the prejudice of the age could have even upon

* Baird, i, 397. See especially an Appendix in Soldan, i, 608-625.

a mind so liberal. Religious opinions must, in his view, find some common expression in order to peace. "It is folly," he said, "to hope for peace, rest, and friendship between persons of opposite creeds. A Frenchman and an Englishman, holding a common faith, will entertain stronger affection for each other than two citizens of the same city who disagree about their theological tenets." A universal council is the panacea. The assembly was prorogued till a later date. These were days of prosperity for the Huguenots. The curiosity to hear the preachers grew. "The records of the chapters of cathedrals during this period of universal spiritual agitation are little else, we are told, than a list of cases of ecclesiastical discipline instituted against chaplains, canons, and even higher dignitaries for having attended the Huguenot service." A further tolerant edict from the king, in April, gave great impulse to the movement, so that Calvin wrote to Bullinger, (May 24, 1561,) "The eagerness with which pastors are sought for on all hands from us is not less than that with which sacerdotal offices are wont to be solicited among the papists. . . . And on our part we desire to fulfill these earnest prayers to the extent of our ability, but we are thoroughly exhausted." Letters from different parts of France, written about this time to Calvin and other leaders, recently discovered in Paris and Geneva, "present a vivid picture of the condition of whole districts and provinces." But the hopes of the Huguenots were again struck down by the "Edict of July," which forbade "attendance, with or without arms, upon *conventicles* in which preaching was held or the holy sacraments administered."

In the States-general, again assembled at Pontoise, the most radical propositions were formally urged by the Tiers Etat, and a national council to settle religious difficulties was demanded. Catharine, however, who herself desired peace, had projected a conference which should be under her own control, and had assembled at Poissy all the bishops of France "to take into consideration the religious reformation which the times imperatively demanded." In this presence all Frenchmen, "who had any correction of religious affairs at heart," were invited to appear with perfect safety. This was the celebrated Colloquy of Poissy, the only national assembly convened for the special discussion of religious affairs, which opened September 9, 1561.

Catharine had addressed a remarkable letter to the pope, urging the necessity of ecclesiastical reform. Beza had been specially invited to the Colloquy, and arrived at Paris three weeks after the opening of the session. Without the privilege of seats, the Protestant ministers were obliged to address the assembly from behind a bar. When Beza entered he reverently knelt upon the floor, and pronounced a portion of the Genevan liturgy. "A deep solemnity fell upon the assembly. According to one account of the scene, even the Roman cardinals stood with uncovered heads while the Huguenot minister prayed." Though the conference lasted two months, the result was a nullity in view of the object proposed. Catharine cast the whole blame upon "the conceit of the Cardinal Lorraine." The historian rather attributes the failure to the intrigues of the papal legate. The "Edict of Restitution" was obtained by the prelates, (on promise of money for the Spanish war,) which required the Huguenots to surrender all the churches hitherto occupied by them. It was only with great difficulty, as might be supposed, that the Huguenots were persuaded to submit to the enforcement of this edict; for they had in those times occupied the churches "wherever they constituted the bulk of the population." They continued rapidly to increase. In Paris their assemblies often numbered as many as 6,000 persons. Marriages and baptisms took place at the court "after the fashion of Geneva." Such were the indications that the king himself would soon become Huguenot, that "the leading Protestants at court could not hide their delight."

It is difficult to determine the real number of Protestants in the country at this period. Some accounts, which pretended to an estimate, put them as high as one fourth or one third of the population. Professor Baird deems that one tenth is a figure nearer the sober truth. The Protestants were, at least, specially strong among the nobility. They had the artisan class in the cities, though generally not so prevalent in those places as in the rural districts. Protestantism made less progress in the north than in other parts of France.

A promised Assembly of Notables took place at St. Germain, in January, 1562, and on the seventeenth of the month the edict known as the "*Edict of January*" was signed, which, while it maintained the "Edict of Restitution," repealed the

"Edict of July," and allowed unarmed assemblies for worship by day outside city walls, though the building of churches anywhere was prohibited. Other clauses insured the protection and oversight of the government. "From the moment of the publication of this charter—imperfect and inadequate as it manifestly was—the Huguenots ceased to be outlaws. . . Unhappily for France, this solemn recognition of Protestant rights was scarcely conceded by representatives of the entire nation before an attempt was made by a desperate faction to annul and overthrow it by intrigue and violence. . . The contention thenceforth was, on the one part, for the overthrow of the moderate rights insured by the Edict of January, and, on the other, for their defense."

Antoine of Navarre now openly gave his adhesion to the Romanists. It was the opinion of Beza that had he remained firm the civil war might have been averted. His queen, the high-minded Jeanne d'Albret, one of the most illustrious characters among the Huguenots, would not be persuaded. "Sooner than go to the mass," she said, "had I my kingdom and my son in my hand, I would cast them both into the depth of the sea."

Throckmorton's letter to Queen Elizabeth exhibits in a vivid way the attitude of different parties in the court at St. Germain in this crisis. Catharine, careful for her own power, and not interested for either religion, through jealousy of the Constable Montmorency, removes him from court; whereupon the King of Navarre, attributing this step to the influence of the Châtillons, insists that they shall remove also. Catharine then sends for the Prince of Condé, who is sick in Paris, and quite favors the continuance of the Reformed preaching in St. Germain. So ready was she to turn to either party. The Guises were at Savern, seeking the favor of the German Protestant princes, but did not deceive them. The Duke of Guise, on his return, passed through Vassy; and the great struggle which was to arouse and desolate the whole country was now invoked by a wanton attack of the duke, or at least of his followers, upon a congregation of Huguenots quietly worshipping in that town. The duke pleaded in justification that the attack was not premeditated, but that he was provoked to it. Notwithstanding Catharine's prohibition, he entered Paris at the head of 2,000

horse, and there met, by chance, the Prince of Condé, riding with a company of noblemen, students, and citizens to a preaching place. There was no collision. Condé subsequently retired with his small force to Meaux. Catharine was in great perplexity from which side to seek protection for herself and the king. Sonbise and L'Hospital pressed her with arguments on the Protestant side. "Sometimes," says a recently discovered contemporary account, "they believed that they had gained every thing, and she was ready to set off for Condé's camp." Her letters to Condé appeal to him for aid. But the latter did not feel sufficiently strong to move. Guise, on the other hand, with a considerable force, proceeded to St. Germain and brought the king and his mother to Paris. "Weeping and sad, Charles is said to have repeatedly exclaimed against being led away contrary to his will." Thus it would seem that, by a mere turn of events, which a little stronger force with Condé at the moment would have prevented, the Catholic party, instead of the Huguenot, stood, at the outset, as protectors of the king. Catharine had no love for the Guises. Condé summoned Coligny to his side at Meaux. D'Andelot was also with him, and, at the head of 1,500 horse, "the flower of the French nobility," though "better armed with courage than with corselets," he moved upon Orleans, and was welcomed to the city, whence he issued to the world his justification for taking up arms.

We cannot here follow the course of events during the civil wars, but have rather sought to trace as clearly as brevity would permit the growth and circumstances of the Huguenot party, until the hour when it began to stand in armor for its rights. The Catholic party were, at the outset, amazed at the strength developed by their opponents. Of the marked incidents during the campaigns we only note that, on the one side, the Duke of Guise was assassinated in his camp before Orleans, (1563,) by a fanatical Spaniard, Poltrot, who accused Coligny and Beza of complicity in the deed. Both issued a full refutation of the charge. On the other side, the Prince of Condé was treacherously killed in cold blood, after the battle of Jarnac, (1569.) The same year D'Andelot, a valiant soldier, died of fever. The rumor of poisoning in this case is discredited. The young Henry of Navarre was now the nominal head of the

Huguenots, but the responsibility rested on Coligny. With indomitable spirit he rose from the dejection that followed the battle of Moncontour, and made his memorable march from the south toward Paris, more boldly conceived, because more hazardous, than Sherman's march to the sea. He arrived, superior to all opposition, at his own castle of Châtillon. Catharine "returned to the conviction she had expressed in former years, that the attempt to exterminate the Huguenots by force of arms was hopeless." The peace of St. Germain, the most favorable the Huguenots had yet attained, and, in our author's view, a sincere compact, was signed October 8, 1570, which closed the third war.

Now followed a brief period of quiet and hope for the Huguenots, yet big with a terrible fate which party jealousy and personal animosity, kindling the flames of religious fanaticism, were about to evoke. There was much talk of the marriage of Henry of Anjou, the king's brother, with Elizabeth of England. "Charles IX. and Catherine de Medicis both gave, just now, abundant evidence of their disposition to draw closer to England and the Huguenots of France and the Gueux of Holland, while suffering the breach between France and Spain to become more marked." Coligny was summoned to court to prepare an enterprise in aid of the Netherlands, and warmly welcomed both by Catharine and the king. The Guises and the Spanish ambassador retired in disgust. While Alva was besieging Mons, (May, 1572,) and the Prince of Orange ready to cross the Rhine to its relief with 25,000 troops, Catharine inclined to favor the admiral's cherished designs in behalf of the Netherlands; but, on the defeat of Genlis, who was sent with a small Huguenot force to relieve Mons in June, she decided for the Spanish party. "The fate of the Huguenots had been quivering in the balance," and fell now against them.

Such was the fickleness of Catharine; the most prominent trait in her character. Our author particularly urges this view. He quotes the Italian Barboro: "Her irresolution is extreme. She conceives new plans from hour to hour; within the compass of a single day, between morning and evening, she will change her mind three times." Professor Baird remarks that Catharine has been an enigma, "whose secret has escaped so many simply because they looked for something deep and re-

condite, where the solution lay almost upon the surface." The Duke of Alva, however, at the Bayonne Conference, admired her "circumspection," which he declared "he had never seen equaled." Professor Fisher, in like manner, concludes: "She was fully capable of weaving two schemes simultaneously, and of accommodating herself to either, as circumstances might dictate." As to her duplicity, Martin, who is sober in his judgments, and Michelet, use the strongest expressions for it. The same view, Professor Baird finds, as can be easily understood, not inconsistent with what he elsewhere says. "Her Machiavelian training, the enforced hypocrisy of her married life, the trimming policy she had thought herself compelled to pursue during the minority of the kings, her two sons, had eaten from her soul, even to its roots, truthfulness—that pure plant of heaven's sowing."

Coligny now more actively urged on the war in behalf of the Netherlands. He displayed before the king an undertaking "fitted to call forth the nobler faculties of his soul;" recalled to his mind the glory of former reigns; promised a large addition to the realm in the Low Countries, an expanded navy and marine, France influential in Europe, with religious peace at home. In his enthusiasm he went so far as to urge that the king should shake off the influence of his mother, as being prejudicial to the true interests of France, and find some occupation abroad for his brother, Henry of Anjou. Catharine, learning this, entreats her son with tears, and both are decided against the admiral's scheme by the false report that Elizabeth was about to withdraw her troops from Flanders. But Coligny again gains the ear of the king; and Catharine, fearing that even if France should prove victorious in the proposed war, "her own influence would fall into hopeless eclipse," now resolves to forestall such a result, and, for the purpose, "falls back upon a scheme which had been long floating dimly in her mind"—the destruction of the Huguenot leaders. The idea that any treacherous and bloody plot was definitely formed before this late day is discredited by Professor Baird. He argues that no such plan was concocted at the Bayonne Conference in June, 1565, whatever political league may have been there formed in the interest of Catholicism.* Most judicious histori

* See the full discussion in Baird, ii, 167-176.

ans of the present day, as Martin, Soldan, and Baum, take the same view, and they are supported by recently discovered documents. Martin concludes from Catharine's insistance that the proposed marriage of Henry of Navarre with Margaret, the king's sister, should take place in Paris, that there was in her mind, "if not a project, at least a sinister half-thought," (*arrière pensée*.) Guizot reasons that a massacre of the Huguenot leaders had been long premeditated, but at the time and in the form in which it took place it was a sudden event, and a surprise even to the conspirators.* Professor Baird says: "It is impossible that Catharine distinctly premeditated a treacherous blow at the Huguenots, simply because she rarely premeditated any thing very long. I am aware that this estimate of the queen is at variance with the views which have obtained the widest currency; but it is the estimate which history, carefully read, seems to require us to adopt." †

The above-mentioned marriage, which drew the Huguenot leaders to Paris, had been talked of from the childhood of the parties, was long favored by the king and opposed by the pope, being bitterly denounced by the Catholic clergy, and was not, in itself, designed as a trap for the Huguenots. The latter had acquired confidence, or sought to cultivate it, on either side. They gave up four cities to the king; among them La Rochelle. Coligny declared that continued suspicion was folly. He readily agreed to the introduction of troops into Paris. Indeed, he longed for permanent peace, and was willing to run any risk to secure it. He fully trusted the king, even after the first attempt at assassination. The brave course he took, notwithstanding its fatal issue, doubtless rendered, in the juncture of affairs abroad, a high service to the general cause of Protestantism in Europe.‡ The wedding took place on the 18th of August, the festivities continuing three days. The king had lately heard of Alva's cruelty to French prisoners, and his attempt to extract testimony from them by torture, which put him in a rage against the Spaniards. It was then that "Catharine and her favorite son, Henry of Anjou, (afterward Henry III.,) came to the definite determination to put the great Huguenot out of the way." We have, in the confession of Anjou himself,

* "History of France," Eng. ed., iii, 376.

† Baird, ii, 238.

‡ See an interesting passage in Michelet, "Hist. de France," ix, 404-406.

a partial history of the formation of the plot.* The genuineness of this document is accepted by our author; so likewise by Martin, though it is doubted by Ranke. According to this account, Anjou's fears were awakened by the angry air of the king after his interviews with Coligny, and he and his mother then consulted with the Duchess of Nemours, widow of the murdered Duke of Guise, who bitterly hated Coligny, being persuaded of his complicity in the crime. She, enlisting her son, Henry of Guise, and the Duke d'Aumale, "*herself arranged the details of the plan.*"† We can, perhaps, know nothing more certainly than this of its origination. Tavannes has charged it upon Catharine,‡ and that has been the common view. We know that Anjou was active in the scenes of the 24th, and see what reason he had for hating Coligny. The motives of the Duchess and the young Duke of Guise to a deed of blood are apparent. Personal hate was evidently the spark that kindled this destructive fire, and went far to feed the flame. That Catharine should at least have been predominantly active in these pressing moments, we can well believe from that peculiarity of her character so aptly expressed by Michelet. Being dexterously ready to join her talents to any cause which seemed about to prevail, "she thus, although at the last, exercised an immense influence," (*ainsi quoique à la suite elle influence infiniment.*)§ Salviati, the papal nuncio, whose report is credited by Professor Baird, wrote that "Madame, the regent, . . . having decided upon the step a few days before, caused the admiral to be fired upon," but that this was "without the knowledge of the king."

Upon the incidents of the massacre we do not dwell. The treacherous shot at the admiral, Friday morning, missed its purpose, and left him only wounded. Here was a frightful situation for the conspirators. Their plot would be revealed, and all would be over with them. The king was enraged and threatened vengeance. Catharine must, perforce, go with the

* "Discours du Roy Henry III." It may be found appended to the *Mémoires de Villeroi*, in the *Petitot "Collection de Mémoires,"* Sér. 1, vol. xlv.

† Baird, ii, 435.

‡ The discussion of the question as to who is chiefly chargeable with blame in the case has been naturally much affected by the national prejudices of the French and Italian chroniclers and historians.

§ "Hist. de France," ix, 363.

court to visit the bedside of Coligny. She there thought herself to have received new provocation. She took council again with those who had been already participants in crime, meeting them in the garden of the Tuilleries. Now it was, in the judgment of reliable authorities which we have already quoted, that the plan of a general slaughter was first or definitely developed. It is true there is some reason to believe that both in the city and the provinces the train had been already laid in view of such an occurrence; * but it has been more recently argued that Catharine, for her part, would never have fixed upon or consented to so bold an undertaking until driven to it by such an overmastering influence as the anxiety and terror of this unexpected hour. All the witnesses, of different nationalities and parties, testify to the natural timidity and irresoluteness of Catharine. Excessive fear now impelled her to a course of utterly unreasonable, unrestricted cruelty. She imagined there was no hope of escape from the existing peril but in the entire destruction of at least the leaders of the opposite party. The conspirators were of common mind from the same or other considerations.

But the king must be won over; and the plotters hastened to fill his mind with the falsehoods they had forged. They said they had intelligence that the Huguenots were rising; that they had already sent to the German princes for levies of troops; that their alliances were such as to make their military strength far superior to the king's; the Catholic party were determined, unless the king acted with them, to elect a captain-general, who would take the king's place. All that was needed now, they said, was an order for the death of Coligny. After some parleying, suddenly a change came over the king, and he went to the very extreme of violence, doubtless carried away by a sudden and terrible passion, through the working of his imagination upon the idea of the dangers which the conspirators said surrounded him. He eagerly asked if there was no other way of escape. By one account, his mother, as her last argument, whispered in his ear: "Perhaps, sire, you are afraid." He rose quickly from his chair, enjoining silence, and "told us," says Anjou, "*in anger and in fury*, swearing by God's death, that since we thought it good that the admiral should be killed,

* There is no pretense to a full treatment of the question in this article.

he would have it so; but that with him all the Huguenots of France must be killed, in order that not one might remain to reproach him hereafter." Thus the furies, brought by evil counselors, took possession of the poor young king;—he was but twenty-two years of age. That the fatal order was given by Charles in a violent storm of passion, in which he hardly knew what he did, (even notwithstanding his persistence in the same determination,) seems also in some degree probable from the account in Sully's "*Memoirs*," of his words to the physician Ambrose Paré, who was at his side during all the hours of the massacre: "I do not know," he said, "what ails me; for these two or three days past both body and mind have been quite upset. I burn with fever; all around me grin pale, blood-stained faces. Ah, Ambrose! if they had but spared the weak and the innocent." Of Charles it has been said: "His virtues were his own; his vices the faults of his training." One of his tutors taught him to blaspheme. His admirers praised him for his skill in deception.* He was capable of devoted affection. His natural eloquence and love of music and verse would remind one of Francis I. and Margaret; but he had a strange passion for wild sports and dealing blows upon beasts in the chase which alarmed people. Then a fit of somber melancholy would take him, and he shut himself up, or exhausted himself with exercise in a forest until overcome by a fever. A portrait of him at sixteen years of age shows an eye somewhat wild, with an oblique glance, but not devoid of intelligence. His character, according to all accounts, evinced a marked change for the worse after the massacre—an increased impatience and violence; his features lost their gentleness, and remorseful visions, such as troubled him in the fatal hours of the crime, haunted his death-bed two years later.

Concerning this dark and terrible event, the remembrance of which cannot be absent from an account of the "*Rise of the Huguenots*;" concerning the manner in which the treacherous scheme was carried out, including the slaughter of Coligny on Saturday night; the general bloodshed on the 24th; the massacre in the provinces; the satisfaction expressed by the perpetrators; the decided approval pronounced by the pope at

* So Claude Haton: "*Fut une grâce de Dieu comment le roi sut si bien dissimuler.*"

Rome, (after the deed,*) which cannot be explained away nor excused,† we can have no further words. We have only sought in this connection, by following the thread given us in Professor Baird's work, and the judgment of other late historians, to indicate the way to a somewhat clear understanding of the manner in which the event originated, believing that a better knowledge of the character of those engaged in bringing it about would also aid to a more just conception of the crime. The customs of the times, it may be remembered, as in the case of the earlier persecutions, go far, though we cannot say to palliate the deed, to soften our estimate of the extreme guilt of the perpetrators. They are conspicuous in their acts, and yet, if charity can reach the most dreadful offenses, should be somewhat screened from the glare of our condemnation in the shadow of their surroundings. "Massacre," says Guizot, "was an idea, a habit, we might almost say a practice, familiar to this age. . . . We have cited fifteen or twenty cases of massacre which, in the reign of Charles IX., from 1562 to 1572, grievously troubled and steeped in blood various parts of France without leaving any lasting traces in history."‡

The king, in a circular letter to the several courts on Sunday, charged the affair upon the Guises, as though it were but an *émeute* between two factions; but the Guises compelled him to assume the responsibility, which he did before Parliament on the 26th, charging Coligny with the guilt of conspiracy, for the support of which accusation not the slightest evidence has ever appeared. "Not a scrap of a letter could be found inculpating Coligny—not the slightest approach to a hint that it would be well to make way with the king or any of the royal family. The most private manuscripts of the admiral, unlike those of many courtiers even in our own day, contained not a disrespectful expression, nothing that could be twisted into a mark of disaffection or treason." The Admiral Coligny is the one supreme figure which stands in the memory as we retrace this history, and the eye is fixed with unsurpassed admiration upon his sublime sacrifice of himself at the last. We have no

* Professor Baird acquits Gregory XIII. of any previous "knowledge of the disaster impending over the admiral and the Huguenots," ii, 574.

† Notwithstanding Bishop Spaulding's attempt in the "Nation" of Feb. 5, 1880.

‡ "History of France," Eng. ed., iii, 375.

space here to depict that truly virtuous, grave, self-reliant, frank and trustful nature, great in thought and great in heart, as set forth so worthily in the work before us. Montesquieu says of him that he carried only the glory of France in his heart; and Bossuet ascribes to him a lofty courage and patriotic purpose. Pressensé has lately said: "Coligny shows us what depth and earnestness the brilliant French nature might acquire after receiving the stamp of the Protestant faith. He is the ideal Frenchman."* The new "Life of Coligny," by Count Jules Delabord, is a most welcome contribution to the history of French Protestantism and to the universal store of Christian biography.

It remains to indicate two or three lines of special study in connection with the work under review, for which its own pages furnish much interesting material. We refer to the character exhibited in its different phases and under different circumstances by the Huguenots; to the different causes and circumstances promotive of their progress; to the rapidity and manner of their growth at different periods, and to the conditions under which the origin and development of French Protestantism in the sixteenth century may be put in comparison with its development and prospects to-day. The claims of the narrative have filled the allotted space in this article.

The spirit of the Huguenots was not crushed by the massacre. A fourth and fifth civil war followed that event before the painful death of Charles IX., May 30, 1574. At a bold petition which the Huguenots presented from their two military kingdoms of Nismes and Montaubon, Catharine exclaimed, "Why, if your Condé himself were alive, and in the heart of the kingdom with 20,000 horse and 50,000 foot, and held the chief cities in his power, he would not make half so great demands!" At the end of the period our author concludes with these words: "A full half-century from the first promulgation of the reformed doctrines of Lefèvre d'Etaples found the friends of the purer faith more resolute than ever in its assertion, despite fire, massacre, and open warfare. No candid beholder could deny that the system of persecution had thus far proved an utter failure." Again we commend to the reader this admirable work of Professor Baird, the fruit of so much conscientious

* "*Etudes contemporaines.*"

tious and painstaking study, and so rich in the results of recent historical discoveries.

NOTE.—In view of some criticism from other quarters, we ought, perhaps, to observe that Professor Baird is not to be understood as "apologizing," in his extended notice of the subject, for Queen Margaret's *Decameron*.

In reference to the remark on page 105, about the means and methods of propagating the Reformed faith in France, we would call attention to the interesting passages in the work under review, vol. i, pp. 400-408.

ART. VII.—PHASES OF THE CONFLICT BETWEEN FAITH AND INFIDELITY IN GERMANY.

THREE hundred years ago Germany was convulsed by the great conflict of the Reformation. It was at that time, more than any other country, the battle-ground of the opposing forces. For centuries Rome had enslaved the mind of man. Germany did more than any other country to break those iron fetters, and to liberate not only the mind but also the conscience of man. Again Germany is engaged in a great conflict; it is grappling with a terrible foe, a foe entirely different from the one with which it was engaged at the time of the Reformation, (although we must confess that the question with regard to Rome is also not yet settled.) Not across the Alps nor across the Rhine have we to look for this great enemy, for it has its stronghold in the very heart of Germany—it is a foe in their own land. We are referring to the great conflict between faith and infidelity, between the religion of the Bible and rationalism, pantheism, and materialism, with all their consequences. This conflict, we think, is fiercer and of greater importance than any that Germany has ever had with Rome or France.

Germany is, more than any other, the land of philosophical thinking, of scientific and historic research, and of the most radical and bold criticism; and the conflict with regard to religion, in which Germany is at present engaged, is, therefore, in an eminent sense of the word, a conflict of mind with mind. Taking all this into consideration, and also the present religious condition of Germany, we say not too much in asserting, that Germany is, to-day, more than any other country, *the* battle-ground of the Christian faith, for nowhere else is the conflict

so bitter and so fierce. It is, therefore, with a deep interest that Christians of America and England are watching the religious, social, and philosophic movements in Germany; for the whole Protestant world seems to feel that the conflict between faith and infidelity must there come to a decision. Dr. Cremer, in the late assembly of the Evangelical Alliance, held at Basel, made the remark: "On all sides the conflict is raging. It is true, the contest with Christianity is as wide as the world, (Weltkampf,) in which every-where humanity stands before the question, What think ye of Christ? But in the German Evangelical Church this conflict is more violent than anywhere else. The turning away from God, the more than Julian hatred of the Church and Christianity, has nowhere found such a strong expression as in Germany."

Let us take a bird's-eye view of the religious condition of Germany and some of its causes and consequences.

Thirty-six per cent. of the population of Germany are Roman Catholic, meaning by Germany those States that form the so-called German Empire, of which Prussia is the head, which excludes the German provinces in Austria, which are almost entirely Roman Catholic. It is Protestant Germany with which we have mostly to do in speaking of the great conflict, for there it is most intense.

From a Christian point of view the religious condition of Germany looks deplorable enough. There is unquestionably a great "chasm" between religion, or the Church, and what is generally called culture. In Berlin and other great cities thousands never see the inside of a church, excepting at certain times; for instance, when a noted preacher is expected to occupy the pulpit, or at marriages, confirmation of the children, funerals, etc.

Dr. Christlieb says: "A glance into the churches shows us at once the rupture between the majority of the educated and the Christian faith. Education is concentrated within our great cities, and it is here where we find the emptiest churches, if we find such anywhere, for with rapid increase of the population the multiplication of the churches has not in the least kept pace. In former times one could say with Taust: 'The message do I hear; alas, I lack the faith!' but now very often not even the message is heard. In several parishes in Berlin and Hamburg

only one to two per cent. of the population are regular church-goers." * It is several years ago since this was written, but it is still true, for, if any thing, things have become worse in this respect.

How deep into worldliness and infidelity a great part of the population has fallen the following extracts, from men who are competent to judge, will show. Professor Cremer, speaking of the religious condition of Germany, in the late assembly of the Evangelical Alliance, held at Basle, says: "A gloomy aspect presents the mammonism of our people, the degeneration of the German youth, the pool of vileness and godlessness into which the social question has sunk." A German statesman writes: "Our commonalty has, with a few exceptions, lost its entire religious base, upon which its ideas of duty and morality rest. Upon a foundation that is so thoroughly destroyed, as the Christian convictions of our middle and working classes, it is impossible to build up anew. These people understand no appeal to their religious convictions." †

In the first month of the year 1878 the Socialists demanded of the people a general coming out from the State Church, (*Massenaustritt*.) "This demand," says a German writer, "was followed by a mass meeting on the evening of the 23d of January, in the great hall of the *Handmerkerverein*. The papers generally agreed to the fact that since 1872, that is, since the great strike of the machine builders and colossal mass meeting, Berlin never has seen such a mass of people gathered together in one place as at this time." But it would be a great mistake if we were to apply to the whole of Germany what we find in her capital in this respect. The church-going people number in the great cities, on an average, about eight to ten per cent. of the population, and in the smaller towns and villages a great deal more, while there are many districts where almost every one goes to church.

What may astonish the American or Englishman most, when he visits Germany, is the observance, or rather the non-observance, of the Sabbath. By law work is prohibited, especially such work as is annoying to others; but this law, like so many others, is in most places a dead letter. In some places there is

* "Moderne Zweifel am Christlichen Glauben," p. 24.

† "Deutscher Volksfreund," vol. ix, p. 316.

more business done on Sundays than on any other days of the week. "After the attack upon the life of the Emperor, the police regulations were made more strict, and during the principal services of the day, from nine to eleven A. M., and from two to three P. M., all shops every-where were ordered to be shut; but there are only a few States and towns where the shops are not allowed to be open at all. The postal service is limited to shorter hours; letters and parcels are not delivered so often as on other days, and there are similar restrictions on the telegraph service. On the other hand, the railway traffic is left quite free, and not only do the trains run as on other days, but by almost every line there are also extra trains for the convenience of the holiday-makers. For example, the Rhine railway runs every Sunday and holiday, from the 15th of May to October, three extra trains in the afternoon, and other lines do the same." (Fr. von Schulte.)

One of the darkest appearances in Germany is the so-called *Socialism*, the party of the Social-Democrats. This party forms the extremest infidelity, and is filled with more than a pagan hatred toward every thing that pertains to Christianity or the Church. Its watch-word, as Lange says, is: "Dominion of the masses over the educated classes of the nation; dominion of the fist over the head; dominion of the sensual enjoyments over the inner man; a new world, in which force takes the place of right, robbery the place of property, and free-love the place of marriage." The leaders of the French Revolution and of the Commune are extolled as heroes and martyrs of the people. The spirit that animated many of the leaders of Socialism can be seen in the fact that the "*Volksstaat*," one of their organs, in full earnestness, asked the question a short time ago: "Was it possible for Socialism to go to work with more prudence, moderation, and timidity than it did in Paris in the spring of 1871?"* That this party has gained considerable influence in the country, no one that is acquainted with the social and political condition of that country will deny. The government is doing its best to suppress it; but whether such a movement can be entirely overcome by laws and police forces we very much doubt. It can now be kept down, but if it keeps on increasing it will finally break forth more furious than a

* "*Der Socialismus*," by Heinrich Geffcken, p. 8.

stream that has broken the dam that held back its floods. The general hard times and the poverty of the working-classes help to strengthen this movement.

It is especially in the press that the great conflict between infidelity and Christianity is fought, and a glance at the periodicals shows us at once how intense this contest has become. The secular press, which is, especially in Berlin, almost exclusively in the hands of the Jews,* breathes a very bitter spirit toward every thing that pertains to the Church. An English correspondent of one of the American papers wrote from Germany that his language had no word so malicious as that with which the German papers love to designate Christians, the word *Mucker*. Dr. Mühlhaussner says:† "Not only a secular press has grown up, but an unreligious press has grown over our heads, and in it a deadly contest against Christianity is already beginning. The press is, above all other things, the means through which the attempt is made, and not without success, to draw our German people away from the Church and Christianity, and to offer a compensation in our modern culture. If our development goes on in this way much longer, the rent (*riss*) between Christians and non-Christians must become a yawning wound, through which our nation, in spite of its newly-gained political power and unity, will bleed itself to death."

In looking at these deplorable religious and social conditions of Germany, two questions present themselves to the mind: What is and has been the cause of all this? and, What will be the consequences of such a state of things? Interesting as the consideration of these questions might be, we have space for a very brief and incomplete answer only. Not a little of the blame for these deplorable conditions falls upon the Church itself. She, in a certain sense, reaps what she has been sowing for many years. It never would have come to this if she had always done her duty; but "if the salt have lost his savor, wherewith shall it be salted!" The dead orthodoxy of the last century prepared the way for rationalism, and this again, combined with the pantheism of German philosophy, more or less for the materialism of our time. Whereto should the poor

* Berlin alone numbers more than forty-five thousand Jews, more than the whole of England or France.

† "Christenthum und Presse," p. 4.

people go, when it found in the Church nothing but the dry religion of reason instead of the bread of life. Thousands remained nominal Christians, but knew not what religion was, and cared little, if any thing, for the Church; and thousands despaired of all religion, and fell into the open arms of infidelity. "Pantheism tried to dethrone God the Father, rationalism tried to dethrone God the Son, and now materialism is trying to take the crown off from the head of man."

And also for the evil of Sabbath-breaking the Church is more or less at fault; and also to a great degree the reformers and theologians of the sixteenth century. The continental theologians never laid stress upon the observance of the Sabbath as they should have done. In Luther's Catechism the third * commandment reads: "Thou shalt keep the *holiday*," (Du sollst den Feiertag heiligen,) instead: "Remember the *Sabbath day*, to keep it holy." Now, although Luther undoubtedly meant the Sabbath by *Feiertag*, yet it seems that the majority of the Germans does not so understand it. Therefore, we find that most German Christians attach greater importance to the keeping of the Feiertage, as Christmas and Good Friday, than upon the keeping of the Sabbath. German churches are generally crowded on holidays, for thousands go to church then that do not see the inside of a church the whole year around.

Calvin taught that to rest from labor on Sunday was no general duty. ("Inst.," ii, 8, 28-32.) And still further went the theologians, those of the Lutheran as well as the Reformed Church. They did not only admit—wherein they were right—that the fourth commandment does not bind us to the observance of the seventh day of the week, that is, Saturday, as Sabbath, but—and herein they were wrong—they claimed that it does not even bind us to the every seventh day; that is, if the Church had thought it best to change the length of the week from seven to ten days, observing every tenth day as Sabbath, she might have done so without violating the fourth command. So taught all the theologians of the continent; the English theologians making an honorable exception.† Now,

* In Luther's Catechism the first and second commandments are counted as one, which brings the fourth to be the third. To fill the number ten the last is divided into two.

† Compare "Ebrard's Dogmatik," vol. i, p. 548; also his "Kirchen und Dogmen. Geschichte," vol. iv, p. 92; also "Staat v. Sontag," by Rieger, p. 24.

if this was the teaching of the theologians, what can we expect of the people? But the German theologians do not now thus nullify the Christian Sabbath. Their eyes are being opened on this question; and it is high time. We must, however, not be astonished that so many Germans in this country find our Sabbath laws such a burden to them.

But we will consider the other question, What will be the harvest that will grow up from this seed? What have we to expect if the people become more and more estranged from God? Certainly nothing good. What the results of infidelity and godlessness are France has shown us plainly enough. Think of the horrors of the French Revolution and of the terrors of the Commune! Even philosophers are alarmed to see the masses of the people philosophical and make practical use of their godless theories. The threatenings of Socialists, the repeated attacks upon the life of the German Emperor, and upon other crowned heads of Europe, speak plainly enough. If the Churches are becoming empty, the prisons are the more filled. Facts are stubborn things, and to them we appeal. "Beside the empty churches," said Mr. Sarasin, at Basel, "you can see the overfilled State prisons and reform institutions. In 1878 Berlin held 60,642 prisoners for examination, (Untersuchungsgefangene,) while the number was only 31,882 in 1875." This gives an increase of almost a hundred per cent. in three years!

A writer in the "*Daheim*"* says: "That the crimes had increased in the last decennium at a fearful rate we knew well enough; but now we are in a situation to prove it by figures. Mr. Stursberg, of Dusseldorf, the agent of the Rhenish Westphalia Prison Association, has given us, in an interesting little pamphlet, '*Die Zunahme der Vergehen und Verbrechen und ihre Ursachen*,' more than abundant material as regards this matter." From his figures we obtain the following results: "In the seven years from 1871 to 1877 the number of crimes in the Prussian State has increased 100 per cent., while the population has increased only 4.4 per cent. from 1871 to 1875. But in the different categories of the crimes the increase was very unequal; for example, the crimes of immorality increased in the above-named space of time 294 per cent., murder,

* Vol. xv, p. 28.

138; fraud, 290; perjury, 77; arson, 77; infanticide, 76. In Würtemberg and Baden the crimes of immorality experienced a fearful increase; the same may be said of Saxony. The language of these figures can be understood only too plainly; and it becomes more impressive still when we hear that not only the crimes have had such an increase, but also the number of criminals; and among those again the criminals under eighteen years have had a larger increase than the older ones." To this it has come. "Whosoever will not hear must feel." This proverb can also be applied to Germany; and still more can we apply the words of Scripture: "They have sown the wind, and they shall reap the whirlwind." (Hos. viii, 7.)

But not only do these criminals come from the lower classes of the people, but the so-called cultured classes yield a considerable number of them. Nobeling, the would-be murderer of the German Emperor, was an educated man. We see that culture, that is, knowledge—for that is generally understood by culture in our day—does not make it alone. The heart needs education (*Bildung*) as well as the head.

But not only crimes increase at a fearful rate, but also suicides. In Switzerland there falls one suicide to every 4,450 of the inhabitants. Now what can be the cause of this? Nothing else but the despair of infidelity, the so-called *pessimism*. Pessimism is the last consequence of materialism and atheism, the darkest and most gloomy form of infidelity. Materialism teaches that there is no heaven on the other side of the grave—heaven is here. The philosophers of pessimism, Arthur Schopenhauer and Eduard von Hartmann, arise before the people, point to the unbounded misery and wretchedness of life, to sickness, death, and the grave, and say, with a clear, plain voice: The doctrine that heaven is on earth is an infernal lie; earth is no heaven but a hell, and not only a hell, but a hell without an end or an outlet. Pessimism is the philosophy of despair and of death. It shows us where man loses all faith in a living God and a divine providence, he despairs of life and of every thing else. While infidelity plunges the masses of the people into sensuality, it leads the more cultivated to despair: and it is true what Count de Maistre says: "The most cultivated and talented men feel, when they are given to infidelity, the misery of being more than any other. In vain

do they seek help in science and art; all their work is only toil without an end and without true satisfaction; their weariness of life increases with their age." It is well known how weary Alexander von Humboldt was of life; he thought it a great misfortune for any man to have a brilliant mind; the greatest blessing was to be born a blockhead.

Whereto pessimism leads a person, the following pessimistic confessions of several infidels will show. The poet Lenan says:

"Loveless and without God! the way is dreary,
The wind upon the streets is cold: and you?
The entire world is in despair and weary."

David Friedrich Strauss confessed: "The giving up of the faith in a divine providence is certainly one of the most sensitive losses that can befall man. You see yourself placed within the awful machine of the world, with its iron-teethed wheels, revolving with terrible rapidity, its heavy hammers falling stunningly to the ground—in this awful machinery man sees himself placed helpless and alone, not a moment safe, but that he may be crushed or torn to pieces within these roaring wheels and falling hammers with which he sees himself continually surrounded. This feeling of being abandoned is indeed terrible."

Prince Herman Pückler-Muskau wrote to Ludmilla Assing: "Do you know Schopenhauer and his philosophy, who could have used for his motto Dante's words written over the gates of hell? This is my man now!" And in another place he writes: "It is really not so absurd that Indian philosophers, and now also the German philosopher Schopenhauer, have come to the conclusion that true happiness exists only in absolute nothingness and extinction—only with the despair that it is impossible to be attained." Another writer complains: "It brings a disconsolate emptiness into life to know nothing else than to be eaten up by worms after you die."† Schopenhauer himself led a very unhappy life.

This pessimism is moving like a dark cloud over the firmament of German thought. "At first it was but a speck in the far-off horizon, scarcely visible in the brilliant day of the absolute philosophy. It has been gradually rising and increasing. It is overshadowing the popular mind. It threatens to descend

* Some of the foregoing extracts are taken from the excellent little work: "Die moderne Weltaanschauung und ihre Consequenzen," by Heinrich Guth.

and envelop a part of the national thought in its dark embrace." *

The consequences of such a view of life and its surroundings cannot be otherwise than deplorable. It seems to us the German mind is too deep to be satisfied with a superficial or shallow materialism; it will either turn back to a better philosophy and true religion, or it will follow it out to its last consequences and land in pessimism and despair. That such doctrines as those of Schopenhauer and Von Hartmann have found such acceptance with a large part of the German people, is, to say the least, a deplorable sign of our times in Germany. We will, therefore, notice another line of facts that are of a more delightful character, but nevertheless as true as the foregoing, and which must also weigh heavy in considering Germany's future.

What is the relation, to-day, of German Protestantism and theology, of German science and philosophy to infidelity, socialism, materialism, and pessimism? While the forces of infidelity are standing in battle array, what are the opposing forces doing? This question has so many sides, embraces so much, is so extensive and far-reaching, that it is impossible for us to give a complete answer without transgressing by far the bounds that we have allotted to this paper. Our answer, therefore, cannot but be incomplete.

As concerns German philosophy and science, it is not all, as some would make us believe, given over to materialism: It is more theistic to-day than several years ago, and with the prospect of becoming still more so; and from time to time heavy blows are struck at materialism, and not only by theologians, but by Germany's best philosophers, men of deep thought and vast learning, and of whom it cannot be said that they are biased by the Church. Materialism is not taught to-day in any of the philosophical chairs of the twenty German universities,† and this is saying a great deal. For universities exert an influence in Germany greater than in any other country. In the universities, more than anywhere else, the best thought of the nation is molded, and "it may also be said that,

* See "Princeton Review," 1878, March number, p. 494.

† In Germany the name university is given only to such institutions as have at least four faculties: a faculty jurisprudence, medicine, theology, and philosophy. Government officials of all ranks must complete their studies there.

with comparatively few exceptions, almost all the scientific works that are written owe their authorship to professors in these institutions." In general materialism has not so much influence in Germany upon the most highly educated classes as upon those classes of the half or would-be educated, of which class Germany, as every other civilized country, has many thousands. These are generally the persons that talk as if they knew every thing, had solved every riddle, had walked up and down through this wide universe of ours, and have found no God.

Even Darwinism, although not necessarily atheistic, for many theists believe in it, seems to loose its hold more and more on German scientists. It seems to have been the sign of a new departure when Professor Rudolf Virchow promulgated the view in his address, "The Freedom of Science in the State," (*Die Freiheit der Wissenschaft im Modernen Staate*), held before the association of German naturalists and physicians at München, September 22, 1877, that Darwinism should not be taught in the schools, because as yet it is but an unproved hypothesis. The only eminent naturalist of Germany that is an outspoken materialist and Darwinist is Professor Hæckel, of Jena. But it seems he has more influence upon the English scientists than upon the German, wherefore he thinks the English are intellectually a brighter people than the German; but he attributes this not so much to the fact that they have better minds naturally than the Germans, but to the fact that they eat more beefsteaks than the Germans. Whosoever, according to Hæckel, eats great quantities of beefsteaks will become wise, and will then be able to see the truths and beauties of Darwinism. Well, this is no new doctrine, for we have heard long before this, "Was der mensch isst, das ist er," (What a man eats, that he is.)

That Darwinism has lost much of its influence upon German scientists the bearing of the last assembly of the Association of German naturalists and physicians, held at Baden-Baden but a few months ago, has plainly shown. A professor from Leipsic attacked the works of Darwin, and no one arose to defend the English *savant*. And of still more importance is the following incident: "Professor Jäger, dissenting from his materialistic colleagues, who deny the existence of the soul altogether,

claims to have discovered the same to be something material, and not only to have *seen*, but also to have *smelled* it, tried to make his new discovery plausible before the assembled naturalists. But he was not allowed to finish the nonsense that he was displaying. He was just doing his best in trying to identify the different states of mind and the various emotions of the soul with certain evaporations and odors, when energetic calls from all parts of the room compelled him to leave the platform." * A few years ago these assemblies of German naturalists and physicians were the places where materialism and Darwinism held their feasts; but things have changed somewhat. German science is coming more and more to its senses, and it is high time, too, for it has led the masses of the people too far away from the living God already. The doctrines of materialism, that there is no God and no hereafter, that man has no soul, is not responsible for his acts, and that conscience is a delusion, have helped more than any thing else to undermine the morals of the nation, and we fear that these evils will still work on even when science has seen its mistakes and has turned back. For a people are easier led astray in this respect than back again. The faith and morals of a nation are more readily broken down than built up.

We would add, that of late such men as Professors Wigand, Ebrard, and others,† have given Darwinism such terrible blows, and have proved its untenableness scientifically so clearly, that it can be considered as overcome by German scientific research. We think, therefore, that it is unnecessary that theologians trouble themselves trying to bring the Bible into harmony with it. There is time enough for this work when Darwinism has been proven to be a fact. So far the most sober science has not gone beyond the first chapter of Genesis.

But also in the German Churches new life is making its appearance. She at least begins to open her eyes and sees the danger that is threatening her existence; and this we cannot

* Dr. Grundemann, in "*Deutscher Volksfreund*," vol. x, p. 28.

† Wigand: "*Der Darwinismus und die Naturforschung Newtens und Cnoliers*." "*Der Darwinismus ein Zeichen der Zeit*." Ebrard: "*Die Darwin'sche Deszendenztheorie*," in the first volume of his "*Apologetik*." Pfaff: "*Das Alter und der Ursprung des Menschengeschlechts*." Hertling: "*Der Darwinismus als geistige Epidemie*."

but regard as a good sign, for, first the danger must be seen before something can or will be done to avert it. Rationalism, which at the beginning of this century had almost supreme control over the German Churches, is almost overcome in theology. It is driven out of almost every theological chair of the German universities, and in the first General Synod of the Prussian State Church, held Oct., 1879, it had comparatively but a few representatives.

It is true, many of the greatest apologists of the Christian faith, men of deep piety and profound scholarship, have in the last few years stepped off from the platform of life. Among others we will mention only Thomasius, Landerer, v. Hofmann, Tholuck, J. Mueller, and Beck. "So one after the other sink into the grave the German teachers of theology. Will the young generation supply them? Just now, if ever, the German Church needs minds of the first class as teachers of theology." Some of these men, as young professors, dared to stand alone against the heavy assaults of Rationalism and infidelity; but they were well armed. They stood in the contest where it was raging most fiercely; they were faithful unto the end. They are no more, these giants upon the battle-ground of faith; but they have opened for us the hidden treasures of God's word; they have led us into the mysteries of revelation, and they have created an apologetical literature in which every argument against the Christian religion is fully answered. They are no more; their tongues and pens are resting, but their works are still living, and will live for many years to come. When we look upon the graves of these fallen heroes we cannot but ask the question, Who will step into the ranks and fill their places? But we will not be discouraged. "God buries his workmen, but he carries on his work." We cannot quite join in the lamentation that there will soon be a great scarcity of theologians in Germany. Mighty minds are still standing at the head of German theological science. Berlin has its Dorner, Leipsic its Delitzsch and Luthardt, Bonn its Lange and Christlieb, Griefswald its Zöckler, and Erlangen its Ebrard—men that have grown up in the midst of strife and conflict, and that are in every respect well prepared and qualified to meet infidelity upon any field of thought or argument. The last-named of these men, Dr. Ebrard, one of the

greatest of living scholars, is not only a theologian of marked ability, but can also be quoted as an authority in many branches of natural science.

The original minds in theological science may be somewhat rarer now than they were fifty years ago; but, on the other hand, we find that the more retired science of former times has stepped out of its seclusion into the midst of the people; and the theologians of to-day surpass by far the former in practical tact, readiness of word, and in the ability of comprehending the real needs of the Church and the people. It is true, that not so many young men are studying theology in Germany to-day as in former years, and that a scarcity of pastors may be felt in the near future, the sense of which can be found more or less in the present unsettled condition of the relation of the Church to the State. But it is our conviction, that those who are studying theology at present have more of the spirit of Christ within them than the theological students of forty or fifty years ago, and in this respect we prefer the quality to the quantity. Ten truly evangelical pastors will surely do more good than one hundred that are rationalistic.

Dr. Hurst, who visited Germany not long ago, said, in an address which he delivered in New York city, that he was astonished at the thorough change that he noticed everywhere in Germany since his last visit to that country a few years ago. He said that he had visited eight universities, and had found that the negation which finds only fault with the doctrines of the Church, without giving something new or better, has entirely fallen into disfavor. In Heidelberg, the only university in which rationalistic professors are teaching theology, four and a half theological students are counted to one professor, while those universities in which evangelical professors are teaching are crowded. Several publishers told him that they could not sell a rationalistic book. Dr. Hurst thinks when the present theological students will occupy the pulpits it will bring new life into the German churches.

One of the most interesting questions for the German Church is that concerning its relation to the State. The German Church, as is well known, is a State Church. The King or ruler of the land is at the same time head of the Church, so to say, its supreme Bishop. Now for some time the bonds that

bind the Church to the State are beginning to loosen more and more, and it seems to be only a question of time to liberate the Church entirely from the State.

As of great importance for the Prussian State Church, and in fact for the Protestant Church of all Germany, can be regarded the meeting of the first regular General Synod of that Church, which took place October 9, 1879. For a number of years such synods have been held in most of the smaller States of Germany, but in Prussia this movement found considerable opposition. A preparatory General Synod was held at Berlin in 1873, and there the way was prepared for a periodical General Synod, of which the one held October 9, 1879, was the first. "It was composed of one hundred and ninety-four members, of whom one hundred and forty-nine had been elected by the Provincial Synods, thirty had been appointed by the King, nine were superintendents-general, and six representatives of the theological faculties of the universities. . . . In 1873 the majority of the Extraordinary Synod belonged to the so-called *Vermittlungspartei*, or party of mediation, which prevailed at the Prussian universities, and, as its name indicates, tried to find a middle ground between the orthodoxy of the Churches of the sixteenth century and the rationalistic schools of the present age. At present this party is in a minority, and the two parties representing the theology of the sixteenth century are in a decisive majority. These two parties are: 1. That of the *Konfessionellen*, or the strict Lutherans; 2. That of the 'Friends of the Positive Union.' "* When we remember that the Prussian State Church numbers over twelve millions of Church members, being the second largest Protestant State Church in the world, we can see the importance that is attached to the holding of this first General Synod. And although this synod has not the power to make laws, still it is a great step forward in the organization and consolidation of the Church, and in its liberation from the State. Some of the measures that were taken there are very important, especially those concerning Church discipline. They will tend to cleanse the Church from infidel elements, and to strengthen it in its warfare against infidelity.

The cause of the sanctity of the Sabbath—which was also

* Compare this "Quarterly," January number, 1880, p. 175

deliberated upon in the General Synod—is also attracting the attention of the leading men in the German Churches more and more. Organizations to help on this cause are formed, and it seems to have met with considerable success so far. Dr. Cremer made the remark, at the assembly of the Evangelical Alliance: “Delightful is the fact that the Sabbath is being regained.” So is also the cause of temperance attracting the attention of the government, (and of the Churches,) and in the way of restrictive laws steps are being taken to arrest the fearful spread of drunkenness. These are encouraging signs, and, together with other movements, as the cause of home missions—which is in a prosperous condition in many places—plainly prove that the Protestant Churches of Germany are not altogether given over into rationalism and infidelity, as some seem to think, but that there is still considerable life and power manifested, with many signs of improvement as concerns the Church.

Whereunto point the “signs of the times” as concerns Germany’s future? This question is hard to be answered. One thing is certain, rest and peace, concerning the social and religious questions that are agitating the German people, are not to be expected in the near future, for the oppositions are too marked and bitter to allow any prospect of a near adjustment of these questions. Not peace and rest, therefore, but war and work, is written over the portals of Germany’s future. Dr. Cremer, whom we have already quoted, made the remark: “It is no bright and peaceful future that is awaiting us; we can expect nothing but still more conflict, and, it may be, persecution and suffering.” Will German Christianity be faithful in the conflict and trial? May God help her!

ART. VIII.—SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES AND OTHERS OF
THE HIGHER PERIODICALS.

American Reviews.

AMERICAN CATHOLIC QUARTERLY REVIEW, October, 1880. (Philadelphia.)—1. Free Thought in England; by Arthur F. Marshall. 2. Our Great Goddess and her Coming Idol; by John Gilmary Shea, LL.D. 3. How to Find the Truth; by Dr. Daniel Gans. 4. Notes on Spain; by St. Geo. Mivart, F.R.S., etc. 5. American Influence on the Democratic Movement in Europe; by John M'Carty. 6. Catholicity in Kentucky—The Elder Family; by Benedict J. Webb. 7. Bishop Stevens on Auricular Confession and Private Absolution; by Very Rev. J. A. Corcoran, D.D. 8. English Fiction; by John Gray. 9. Influence of the Sun on Terrestrial Magnetism; by Rev. J. M. Degni, S.J. 10. Beza as a Translator and Perverter of God's Word; by J. A. C. 11. Dante.

BAPTIST REVIEW, October, November, December, 1880. (Cincinnati.)—1. The Religious "Light of Asia." "Sangha;" or, The Buddhist Priesthood; by Rev. F. H. Eveleth. 2. Destruction of American Forests and the Consequences; by David D. Thomson. 3. Exegesis of 1 John iii, 9; by Rev. H. M. Hopkinson. 4. The Rational Grounds of Theism; by Rev. George B. Stevens. 5. The Will in Theology; by Augustus H. Strong, D.D. 6. The Denominational Work of President Manning; by Reuben A. Guild, LL.D. 7. The Dispensation of the Fullness of Times. Exegesis of Ephesians i, 9, 10; by Rev. G. W. Folwell. 8. Shall we have a Sabbath, and How? by G. W. Gardner, D.D. 9. The Kenosis, or Humiliation of Christ; by Henry C. Vedder.

BIBLIOTHECA SACRA, October, 1880. (Andover.)—1. History and the Concept of God; by Rev. George T. Ladd. 2. The New Testament Vocabulary: Native Words not Found in Classical Authors; by Prof. Lemuel S. Potwin. 3. The Sabbath: The Change of Observance from the Seventh to the Lord's Day: Testimony of the Fathers; by Rev. William De Loss Love, D.D. 4. Christian Doctrine of God; by President E. V. Gerhart. 5. History of Research Concerning the Structure of the Old Testament Historical Books; by Prof. Archibald Duff, M. A. 6. Relations of the Aryan and Semitic Languages; by Rev. J. F. M'Curdy, Ph.D.

CUMBERLAND PRESBYTERIAN QUARTERLY, October, 1880. (Lebanon, Tenn.)—1. Anastasis; by Rev. W. H. Black. 2. Causes of Atheism; by Rev. Erskine Brantley. 3. The American Lawyer; by Hon. R. C. Ewing. 4. Sanctification vs. Soul Purity; by J. W. Poindexter, D.D. 5. Language and Evolution; by Prof. W. D. M'Loughlin. 6. The First Sabbath; by Rev. J. L. Goodknight.

LUTHERAN QUARTERLY, October, 1880. (Gettysburgh.)—1. Martin Luther's Table Talk; by John G. Morris, D.D., LL.D. 2. God's Sovereignty; by Rev. L. A. Fox, A.M. 3. Catechisation; by Rev. Prof. E. F. Bartholomew, A.M. 4. The Lutheran Jubilee; by Rev. J. D. Severinghaus, A.M. 5. Life With a Purpose; by M. Valentine, D.D. 6. Bittle Memorial Address; by Prof. S. C. Wells, Ph.D. 7. Credibility of the Scriptures.

NEW ENGLANDER, November, 1880. (New Haven.)—1. The Light of Asia; by Rev. I. N. Tarbox, D.D. 2. Andersonville; by Prof. Rufus B. Richardson, Ph.D. 3. Western Colleges; Their Claims and Necessities; by Rev. M. M. G. Dana. 4. The Last Representation of the Ober-Ammergau Play—in the Summer of 1880; by a Lady. 5. Horace Bushnell; by Rev. H. M. Goodwin.

NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, October, 1880. (Boston.)—1. Memoir of Gen. Henry Knox; by Francis S. Drake, Esq. 2. Records of the Rev. Samuel Danforth of Roxbury; by William B. Trask, Esq. 3. Memoir of Col. Seth Warner; by Hon. Walter Harriman. 4. Taxes under Gov. Andros; by Walter Lloyd Jeffries, A.B. 5. Capt. Cogan's Expedition to Pig-wacket; by Horace Mann, Esq. 6. Letters of Sir William Pepperrell, Bart.;

by N. J. Herrick, Esq. 7. Fisher's Account of the First Settlers of Bluehill, Me.; by Hon. Joseph Williamson. 8. The Bell Family Record; by J. Gardner White, A.M. 9. Longmeadow Families; by Willard S. Allen, A.M. 10. Number of Births in Newbury, Mass., 1639 to 1715. 11. The Slocum Genealogy; by Charles E. Slocum, M.D., Ph.D. 12. Dedham and Stoughton; by Jeremiah Colburn, A.M. 13. Diaries of Samuel Thompson, Esq., of Woburn, Mass.; by William R. Cutter, Esq. 14. The Youngman Family; by David Youngman, M.D. 15. Census of Bristol, 1689; by George T. Paine, Esq. 16. Records of Dartmouth, Mass; by the late James B. Congdon.

UNIVERSALIST QUARTERLY, October, 1880. (Boston.) 1. Universalist Conventions and Creeds; by Rev. Richard Eddy. 2. Evolution and Materialism; by Rev. O. A. Rounds. 3. Historic Theism; by Rev. T. S. Lathrop. 4. Forgiveness of Sin: its Philosophy, Incidents, and Application; by Rev. R. O. Williams. 5. Universalism and the Heart; by Rev. A. J. Patterson, D.D. 6. The Relation of Myths to Science and Religion; by Prof. B. F. Tweed. 7. New Problems in our Church Work; by Rev. J. Coleman Adams. 8. "On the True Site of Nineveh;" by Rev. O. D. Miller. 9. The Commandments of God; by Rev. B. F. Bowles.

We are indebted to the "Universalist Quarterly" for the following summary of recently-developed facts in regard to the genuineness of the Book of Daniel:

The first attack upon the authorship and historical integrity of Daniel was made in the beginning of the fourth century by the celebrated Porphyry, a pagan philosopher, who wrote fifteen books against the Christians, the twelfth of which he devoted entirely to the Book of Daniel. He maintained that the author was a Jew of Palestine in the time of Antiochus Epiphanes; that it was originally written in Greek, and that the object was to give the form of previous prophecy to the events of his own time. Several replies by different writers were sent out, among others one by Eusebius of Cæsarea.

The arguments of Porphyry have been repeated in modern times by Spinoza and the English Deists, the foremost of whom, perhaps, was Collins, and by some of the German schools of criticism. Of late these attacks have been renewed, and, beginning with the rejection of the first six chapters as the work of Daniel, they have ended with pronouncing the entire book the work of an impostor who must have written in the time of Antiochus. Hitzig and Lücke fix the date in the period between B. C. 170-164, which opinion is generally indorsed by German critics. Hengstenberg, Havernack, Delitzsch, Keil, Stuart, and others maintain the authenticity of the book. And this position is growing into strength, and finding acceptance among those who have hesitated, but who, having no prejudices nor theories to maintain, have fairly weighed the new evidence brought in by recent discoveries among the tablets and monuments from the sites of Babylon and Nineveh.

It would not be an easy thing for a Jew of the time of Antiochus Epiphanes to write history involving Babylonian customs, traditions, dates, punishments, and superstitions in the time of Nebuchadnezzar or Darius, without falling into errors which would betray his ignorance. But in Daniel allusions to these

matters, which skeptical critics have called in question, have been proved to be in accord with time and facts as revealed by monumental inscriptions recently brought to light. Take, for example, the punishments inflicted on Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego by casting them alive into a fiery furnace, and Daniel and his accusers into a den of lions. George Smith's recovery of the cylinders of Assurbanipal, the grandson of Sennacherib, has let in a clear light upon these horrible practices of the Assyrian kings, so that we have now contemporary evidence in proof of the accuracy of Daniel's record, showing that both these punishments were in use at Babylon a few years before the reign of Nebuchadnezzar.

Saulmugina, brother of Assurbanipal, king of Assyria, was made by his relative king of Babylon, where he reigned prosperously for several years. Afterward, for some unknown reason, he ungratefully rebelled against his eldest brother, but after a severe contest was defeated and taken prisoner. The Assyrian monarchs appear to have been always animated with an implacable spirit of revenge. Hence we are not surprised at finding among the inscriptions containing the annals of Assurbanipal the following: "Saulmugina, my rebellious brother, who made war with me, in the fierce, burning fire they (that is, his generals, by his command) threw him, and destroyed his life. And the people who to Saulmugina, my rebellious brother, he had caused to join, and these evil things did, who death deserved. . . . One sinner did not escape from my hands, my hand held them. . . . Their tongues I pulled out, their overthrow I accomplished. The rest of the people alive among the stone (?) lions and bulls, which Sennacherib my grandfather in the midst had thrown; again I into that pit those men into the midst I threw."*

This passage illustrates the correctness of Daniel's mention of customs and punishments in the time of Nebuchadnezzar, and shows the strong probability of its dating in his reign, (B.C. 604-560,) which began but a short time after that of Assurbanipal ended. We may add in passing that the reign of this Assurbanipal has received a new and interesting illustration from the recent discoveries in Cyprus by Cesnola, whose rich collections of antiquities adorn the New York Art Museum: "An inscription on the gold armlets found at Kurion, in Cyprus, reveals the name of Ithyander, king of the island, who rendered homage to Assurbanipal B.C. 620, during his march against Egypt, and only a few years before the termination of the war in which the pious Josiah, king of Judah, lost his life, as the Book of Kings relates it: 'In his days Pharaoh-necho, king of Egypt, went up against the king of Assyria to the river Euphrates, and King Josiah went against him, and he slew him at Megiddo when he had seen him.' We have also some Babylonian cylinders inscribed with cuneiform characters in the Accadian tongue, though the proper names are all Semitic; some of these are supposed to be of the time of

* "Assyrian Discoveries," by George Smith, pp. 342, 343.

Esarhaddon's reign, the eighth century B.C., while others belong to the reign of Naram Sin, king of Babylon, son and successor of Sargon I., who flourished before the sixteenth century B.C.*

But we must return more directly to the Book of Daniel, and the confirmation it derives from some of these discoveries, and the closer study it has received in connection with Assyrian and Babylonian antiquities. It is found after all that Belshazzar is a historical personage and not a myth, or the creation of an apocryphal writer. Nabonidus is called by Berosus the *last* king of Babylon, in whose reign Cyrus captured the city, thus leaving no place for Belshazzar, say the skeptical critics. But the cylinders which Rawlinson dug out of the ruins of Um-Qeer (the Chaldean Ur) show that the eldest son of Nabonidus bore the name of Bel-shaz-ezar, and was associated with his father as co-regent in the government; much as the heirs or designated successors of the Roman emperors were sometimes taken by them into the administration of the political and military affairs of the empire. Belshazzar, it seems, had been appointed royal governor of Babylon by Nabonidus, who, while marching to the assistance of his son, was attacked and defeated by Cyrus, and shut up in Borsippus, until after the capture of the city. Thus what, until lately, seemed to tell strongly against the historical accuracy of Daniel, turns out to be a remarkable proof of his exactness of statement—only it has happened that this proof has been buried out of reach for some 2,500 years.

If the author of the Book of Daniel had not been contemporary with the events he could not have described them so accurately. If the book had been written in the Maccabean age by a forger, he would not have mentioned Belshazzar, for the inscriptions proving his existence had then been hidden in the ruins for ages, and have continued hidden there down to our own times.

Other coincidences of time and customs indicate the early date and historical integrity of the book. Daniel makes no mention, for example, of prostration before the king when entering his presence, or speaking to him. According to Arrian, Cyrus, the Persian conqueror, was the first king honored in this way. Now in the Maccabean age this custom of prostration before kings was an established custom. Is it likely that a writer of that age would have had such an exact knowledge of the matter, and made no allusion to what was so common in his own day! There is another very remarkable omission, if the book was written in the time of the Maccabees, which Dr. Harman points out in his "Introduction to the Scriptures," namely, "its freedom from

* The "London Record," from which we quote the above, says of one of these inscriptions: "It is interesting to remember that 1,000 years before this was enforced, when we are brought back to the time of Moses, the inhabitants of the Isle of Cyprus are represented on the famous historical tomb at Thebes as paying homage and tribute to Thothmes III., the builder of our recent arrival on the Thames embankment, which, two centuries ago, was known at Alexandria as 'Pharaoh's Obelisk,' but which latterly has borne the misleading title of 'Cleopatra's Needle.'"

prayers in the midst of narratives:" "Tobit, 1 Maccabees, Judith, and indeed all the apocryphal books, abound with prayers and ejaculations. The Book of Esther contains no prayers in the Hebrew, but there is no want of them in the Greek version, (265-135, the latter portion being in the time of the Maccabees.) In Daniel not a word of prayer is mentioned as having been uttered by the Hebrew children in the fiery furnace. In the Greek version, however, prayers are put into their mouths. No prayers are ascribed to Daniel in the lion's den.* Had Daniel been written in the age of the apocryphal writers, it would in all probability have abounded in prayers and pious ejaculations. It is difficult to explain how the book could have arisen in the age of such writers, at the time the Greek version was made, and yet be wanting in the very additions characteristic of the times. In several places, in chapter ix, Daniel uses the name *Jehovah*; but there can be no doubt that already, before the age of the Maccabees, the Jews had ceased to use that name, through a superstitious reverence."†

Within a few years past the attention of European scholars has been specially attracted to the Book of Daniel by the recent Assyrian and Chaldean discoveries, and the consequent more careful study of the customs, superstitions, and general history of these peoples. The result is that there has been a slowly-growing change of opinion among radical biblical critics regarding the date and authorship of the work. In some cases the change has been very marked. The "Independent" stated some time ago that "One of the most erudite and competent French students of those inscriptions has lately published his own conclusions on the subject. He does not discuss Daniel's visions included in the last part of the book, which he believes can be equally justified, but, after examining with the greatest care the first six chapters, which are full of local allusions, he declares that they could have been written only while the memory of the time with which they have to do was yet very fresh. He says that for a long time the views of these literary critics seemed to him unrefuted. He accepted them, and published them; but has lately been compelled, for reasons simply and exclusively scientific, to revise his opinion, and recur to the old Talmudic view, which referred the composition of Daniel to the time of Ezra and the Great Synagogue. Comparing Daniel with the Book of Judith, which is of the date which critics have tried to assign to Daniel, the contrast is remarkable. Every historical or social allusion in Daniel is borne out by the facts discovered. In Judith, however, we have a king of Assyria who never existed defeated on the territory of an unknown king of the Elamites when Elam had ceased to exist as a nation, in a plain which is at the

* The prayer in chapter ix is an exception to this statement.

† Harman's Introduction, "Daniel," p. 388. The entire chapter on this book is worth a careful reading.

same time near the Euphrates and the Indian Hydaspes. The Median king then sends on an expedition his general, Holophernes, with a Persian name, who crosses and conquers Syria, in a journey of fantastic geography, and comes to Palestine, which is under a king whose name is not given, whom he besieges in the mythical city of Bethulia. What a difference between this accumulation of impossibilities and the absolutely true picturing of Babylon given in Daniel.† Of course, archæology cannot be asked to confirm the supernatural of miracles or prophecies. All we ask of it is whether the books which contain the supernatural could have been written at the time they claim to have been written. The monuments buried for thousands of years in the soil of Egypt and Mesopotamia answer Yes, to the confusion of the critics who said No. The monuments cannot affirm every thing. They cannot fairly be asked for every detail of personal life. They cannot record the revelations of God to his prophets. They do not tell us how accurately the Sacred Books have been brought down to us, nor when or how they have been re-written or revised by Ezra or a later Synagogue. But they do tell us that the accordance, not of Genesis and Exodus and Daniel alone, but of the Kings, and Chronicles, and the prophets, and Ezra, and Esther, with the data given by the monuments, is such that it is impossible that they should not have been written at or near the time which has been claimed for them from the beginning."

Since the preceding was written, an article from the pen of Rev. Dr. Sayce, of Queen's College, Oxford, Eng., has appeared in "*The Oriental Journal*," which, if it correctly interprets the cuneiform text, puts a new face on the capture of Babylon by Cyrus, and compels a re-writing of this chapter of ancient history. It seems that two important discoveries have recently been made in Babylonia, one a clay cylinder which contains a proclamation of Cyrus describing his conquest of Babylonia, and the other a large clay tablet giving year by year the history of the reign of Nabonidus, father of Belshazzar, of the conquest of the Medes and Babylonians by Cyrus, and of the first year of his rule over Babylon. We give as much of the article as our limits will permit. According to the annals of the historical tablets, "The Persians first appear upon the scene in the sixth year of Nabonidus, when we find Cyrus engaged in fighting against Istungu, the classical Astyages, king of Ekbata, whose army revolted against him, and sent him in chains to Cyrus, B.C. 549. Meanwhile Nabonidus, instead of coming to the help of the Medians, remained inactive in the town of Tera, which was probably a suburb of Babylon, contenting himself with stationing his army,

† So in the first book of Maccabees there are similar gross historical errors. In chap. i a false statement is made respecting the death of Alexander the Great, and the division of his kingdom. In chap. viii the author says that the Romans captured Antiochus alive; but the fact is they never captured him at all. Again, in this same chapter, he says that the Romans deprived him of India, which he never possessed.

under the command of his eldest son, in Accad, or Northern Babylonia, so as to check the advance of Cyrus in that direction. Three years after Cyrus completed his conquest of the Medes by crossing the Tigris near Arbela, in order to proceed against the last cities in that part of the former empire of Media which still held out against him. He then attempted to enter Babylonia from the north, but the Babylonian army was apparently too strong for him, and it was not till the seventeenth year of Nabonidus (B.C. 538) that the conquest of Babylonia was effected. Cyrus had first tampered with the subjects of the Chaldean king, and when every thing was ready marched against Nabonidus from the south-east, where the Babylonians who lived on the coasts of the Persian Gulf had already revolted in favor of the invader.

"Nabonidus now endeavored to propitiate the neglected gods, but to no purpose. A battle was fought in the month Tammuz, or June, at Rubum, in the south of Babylonia, resulting in the defeat of Nabonidus, and the revolt of the people of Accad from him. Sippara was taken by the Persians, without fighting, on the 14th of Tammuz. Nabonidus fled, but was captured by the Persian general, Gobryas, on the 16th of Tammuz, *and Babylon was entered without any resistance and without a siege*, by Gobryas, almost immediately afterward. The only resistance experienced was at the end of the month, when some 'rebels of the land of Gutuim,' or Kurdistan, shut themselves up in the Temple of Belus, at Babylon; but as they had no weapons they could do nothing. It was not until the 3d of Marchesvan, or October, that Cyrus entered Babylon, apparently during the night, 'the roads being dark before him,' and appointed Gobryas and other officers to govern the city. On the 11th of the same month Nabonidus died, which disposes of the story of his appointment to the government of Caramania.

"Cyrus now commenced his policy of conciliation. The Babylonian gods were restored to their shrines with every mark of reverence, and on the 4th of Nisan, the first month of the new year, (B.C. 537,) Cambyzes, the son of Cyrus, took part in the religious ceremonies performed in honor of the various deities. As this is the last event recorded, the tablet must have been drawn up soon afterward, and deposited in the public library, where it could be read by all.

"It is not necessary to refer to the important bearing these two documents have upon biblical and profane history, and more especially upon the Book of Daniel. One more argument has been added to the case against Xenophon's 'Cyropædia,' which competent judges have long pronounced to be a romance; and the siege of Babylon, described by Herodotus, turns out never to have taken place. It is possible, however, that Herodotus has confounded Babylon with Sippara, where the relics of the army of Nabonidus took refuge."—Pp. 498–504.

The following candid notice of Dr. De Hass' Bible Lands, and rebuke of the slashing notice of the "Independent," does credit to the "Universalist Quarterly:"—

This ample title-page sufficiently notifies the reader of the aim and character of this beautiful volume; and the Preface states that the author has compiled the facts brought out by recent explorations in this concise form for the benefit of the general reader, to whom they would not otherwise be accessible. He states that he does not claim to have made these discoveries, but that, having visited and carefully examined the excavations made by Mariette Bey, in Egypt, Dr. Schliemann, at Troy, Dr. Wood, in Asia Minor, and General Cesnola, in Cyprus, and having been with Warren, Wilson, Drake, Ganneau, Conder, and others, in and around Jerusalem—also having traveled with Dr. Strong's party through Moab, and followed Dr. Porter through the Hauran—he writes from observations personally made, though relying in some instances for the correctness of his statements on the surveys and investigations of the eminent archæologists named.

After such a frank acknowledgment of his indebtedness, and of the probable source of some of the errors and over-statements of the book, we think the criticisms of the "Independent" unnecessarily severe and personal. The author does not profess to be fresh or original—his work is a "compilation;" and he makes no pretense of having verified all the statements which he copies, or of having seen even all the places which he describes. He has certainly overlooked some of the most recent results in Egyptian and Assyrian discoveries, and the consequent corrections of former interpretations and too hasty conclusions; and he may have too much confidence in the superlatives and hyperboles of some of his authorities, whose errors have been long ago exposed; and this is confessedly a drawback on a book just from the press. But after all the work is a valuable one, replete with useful and exceedingly interesting information concerning Bible Lands, and one every way calculated to illustrate the language of the sacred records, and strengthen faith in their authenticity and accuracy. It ought to find a place in our family and Sunday-school libraries. There are over one hundred and fifty illustrations, all helping to interpret the text.—P. 510.

THE CONTEMPORARY REVIEW, July, 1880. (New York.) 1. A Few Weeks upon the Continent; by the Duke of Argyll. 2. The Indian Dilemma; by Major H. Grey, C. S. I. 3. On the Sources of German Discontent; by Dr. Karl Hillebrand. 4. The Postulates of English Political Economy; by Walter Bagehot. 5. The Public Letters of John Ruskin, D.C.L.; by An Oxford Pupil. 6. How the Income Tax can be Abolished; by Lonsdale Bradley. 7. The Eleusinian Mysteries; by François Lenormant. 8. Postal Notes, Money Orders, and Bank Checks; by Prof. W. Stanley Jevons. 9. From Faust to Mr. Pickwick; by Matthew Browne.

The July number of the "Contemporary Review" contains an article by the Duke of Argyll, entitled: "A Few Weeks upon

the Continent." It narrates a tour into the South of Europe, made with a view, not to science or art, but to nature. The entire article suggests sad thoughts of the narrowness of our American "statesmen" in comparison with the broadly cultured Argyll and Gladstone.

At Verona, Italy, Argyll discerns that the pavement stones are made up of the ancient Ammonite, represented by the modern Nautilus. The ancient forms were splendid and massive, and were fossilized in the Oolite and Lias. This suggests a refutation of the Darwinian claim that geology would show a complete series of evolutionary forms, were not the succession immensely broken and shattered. But we have here an instance where

THE GEOLOGICAL RECORD IS UNBROKEN.

A complete and perfect series of certain of these forms may very easily be preserved in the deposits of any given age. The imperishable nature of shells generally, and especially of shells so solid as the Ammonites, together with the fact that all that lived in any given area of sea must have been preserved in its deposits, as we actually find them to have been—are circumstances which give us every reason to believe that we have a very complete record of the succession of these forms, and this, too, for periods of time so long that during them many new species did actually appear. In the deposits of the Lias, for example, we have in the South of England, and elsewhere, an immense series of deposits which appear to have been continuous and undisturbed during the time of their deposition, and are continuous and undisturbed still. They are crowded with millions of Ammonites of all forms and patterns, of all ages and sizes, and yet the method or the process by which new species have been introduced is as mysterious in respect to them as in respect to other forms of life in which no such perfect series anywhere exists. No less than two hundred species are known in this one geological formation, of which one hundred and six are confined to a particular division of it. All these appeared quite suddenly, and in the next division of the same deposit their places were taken by forms which are wholly new. Whence did these come, and how did they arise? No man can tell. The facts do not suggest gradual passages and insensible gradations. One particular species, for example, appears suddenly in one particular bed or stratum only a few inches thick—appears in this bed alone, and is absolutely wanting in every other, whether above or below it. True it is that the differences of pattern which distinguish these species from each other are often small. But whether they be large or small they are always constant. They appear suddenly, and as suddenly their place is supplied by some new variety which during another period remains as fixed

and constant as all the rest. It seems to me to be quite certain, from this history of the Genesis of Ammonites, that the origin of their specific distinctions has not been an origin due to minute and accidental variations, but an origin due to sudden changes effected under a law of birth or of evolution of which we know nothing, and to which nothing analogous has been ever seen since Man appeared, or at least since Man observed. The doctrine that Nature does nothing "*per saltum*" is a doctrine which, in so far as it is true at all, has been wonderfully misunderstood. The continuity of Nature is a continuity of causation, not a mere continuity of effects. New things may appear very suddenly in perfect consistency with being the result of long and gradual preparation. Leaps the most tremendous—transitions the most violent—may be the outcome of a perfect continuity. If all creatures have been born from pre-existing forms, the geological evidence is that they have been born suddenly—with deviations from the parent stock, which have been reached at once—and which have remained fixed and definite until a new variation has arisen.—Page 4.

Evolutionists have made great use of the fact of the preservation of species by natural concealment. The following passage describes a remarkable case of

SPECIAL PROVISIONS FOR SAFETY BY CONCEALMENT.

As regards the *Lophius*, or fishing-frog, although in one aspect it is among the most hideous and horrible objects in Nature, in another aspect it is one of the most "*beautiful*;" for nowhere is there a more conspicuous example of that kind of beauty which consists in a wonderful combination of curious and various adaptations. When seen cast up upon the shore, as it often is, its appearance is simply that of a great flattened bag, with a mouth stretching from one side to the other, and with those wide jaws armed with double rows of hideously sharp-pointed teeth. But when freshly taken from the water, and carefully examined, it is one of the marvels of creation. It is adapted for concealment at the bottom of the sea—for lying perfectly flat on the sand or among the weeds—with its cavernous jaws ready for a snap. For more perfect concealment, every bit of the creature is imitative both in form and coloring. The whole upper surface is mottled and tinted in such close resemblance to stones and gravels and seaweeds, that it becomes quite undistinguishable among them. In order to complete the method of concealment, the whole margins of the fish, and the very edges of the lips and jaws, have loose tags and fringes which wave and sway about amid the currents of water so as to look exactly like the smaller algæ which move around them and along with them. Even the very ventral fins of this Devouring Deception, which are thick, strong, and fleshy, almost like hands, and which evidently help in a sudden leap, are made like great clam shells, while the iris of the eyes is so colored in lines radiating from the pupil, as to look precisely like some

species of *Patella* or Limpet. But this is not all; not only is concealment perfectly in order to enable the *Lophius* to catch the unwary, but there is a bait provided to attract the hungry and the inexperienced. From the top of the head proceeds a pair, or two pair, of slender elastic rods, like the slender tops of a fishing-rod, ending in a little membrane or web, which glistens in the water and is attractive to other fish. When they come to bite, or even to look, they are suddenly engulfed, for portals open with a rush and close again—portals over which the inscription may well be written: "*Lasciate ogni speranza voi ch'entrate.*"

It is impossible to look at a machinery so special, so elaborate, and so ingenious as this, and to be satisfied with the stereotyped mechanical explanation of the Evolutionists. I do not mean to doubt that such creatures have been "developed," any more than to deny that they have been generated and have been born; all I mean is that the development, whatever may have been the stages through which it may have passed, has been guided by a "Law" which is cognizable and intelligible only as a Law of Mind. The end has been seen from the beginning, and organs have been shaped toward that end long before they could be of actual use in gaining it. Not by the mere killing off of accidental variations, but by the shaping of them to a foreseen conclusion, can particular variations such as these have been attained. Just as there are unmistakable marks which separate the conceptions of the imagination from narratives of fact, so are there marks, equally unmistakable, which separate the work of Mind from any of the results of blind physical causation; and although all nature is full of this distinction, there are occasional examples of it which, from their novelty, their complication, and their conspicuousness, bring it home to our recognition more vividly than others. Such an example is the *Lophius*.—Page 8.

CONTEMPORARY REVIEW, November, 1880. (New York.)—1. The Unity of Nature; by the Duke of Argyll. 2. How to Nationalize the Land; by Alfred R. Wallace. 3. The Relation of Christian Belief to National Life; by Rev. J. Baldwin Brown. 4. Party Politics in the United States; by an American Statesman. 5. The Procedure of Deliberative Bodies; by Alexander Bain, LL.D. 6. Home Rule in Ireland; by Alfred Frisby. 7. The Prospects of Land-Owners; by Prof. W. Steadman Aldis. 8. The Future of the Canadian Dominion; by William Clarke. 9. Old and New Japan; by Sir Rutherford Alcock, K.C.B.

The November Contemporary Review has an article by J. Baldwin Brown, on "The Relation of Christian Belief to National Life." We give the following extract on the professedly pious

ATHEISM OF THE DAY.

There is an Atheism abroad which has in it a tincture of almost pious devotion to the ideas and aims which Christianity has taught us as a nation to cherish and pursue. We need not trouble ourselves much to confute it; it will confute itself, and

soon. It is the fancy for the time of our over-cultured men and women—that is, men and women who are mastered by their culture instead of mastering it—that the world can be very blessedly Christian without Christianity. We may leave them calmly to spread their plaster over the sacred name which hal-lows every stone of the temple of Christian society, and to in-scribe on the bare surface any name they please, or none. The plaster will soon be dropping from their Pharos, and the name of the founder will shine out fresher and brighter than at first. But we do not affect to underrate the gravity of the danger which threatens us. We cannot hope to emerge, except through long strain and bitter sorrow, from the unbelief and indifference which have been largely bequeathed to us by a too selfish, self-satisfied, self-infolded, and dogmatic Church.

Sometimes one has a vision of what might befall if the creed or the no-creed of the Atheist were triumphant, and were ac-cepted as the truth in all cultivated society. Were it established as the orthodox creed of the intellectual rulers; were men trained from childhood to limit their interests, activities, and hopes to the bare and narrow world which alone it regards as real; were all the light which plays over life from the spiritual sphere extinguished, and all the comfort which men gather from the thought of the infinite wisdom and tenderness dead; were they doomed to toil and suffer through their weary days with no inspiration from perennial fountains, and with no hope beyond the darkling tomb; did they believe that the death which each moment dogs their steps would be utterly an end of them, and that the experience of their own sad lives was the only legacy which they would leave to their heirs, then how fiercely men would learn to hate this Atheism: with what bitter ridicule would they unmask its pretensions; with what scathing scorn would they dissect its arguments; and with what prophetic fury would they denounce the ruin which it must work in the nature, the endowment, and the destiny of our race. It would be worth enduring some deep sadness and darkness for a season to see humanity, in spiritual might, rise on a rampant Atheism, tear its flimsy sophisms to tatters, and banish it as a hideous nightmare from the earth.

Some such experience may be awaiting our Atheistic schools. Intellect has grown wanton of late. A dread discipline of an-guish may be appointed to it, in that bare desert of Atheistic negotiations into which it has led itself forth, and is seeking to lead forth the world. We seem to see, with eyes blinded with tears, the dark night of lonely despair in which our proud and contemptuous culture may be ordained to wander; until it hun-gers again for the Bread which cometh down from heaven, and seeks joyfully the light which, to a spirit's eye, floods over the celestial sphere. But what shall this poor man do, whose only comfort it has embittered, whose only hope it has blighted, and whose living fountain it has poisoned in the spring? The poor

have the Gospel preached unto them still, and many a cup of pure, bright pleasure does it lift to their lips. There was a service at a little conventicle on the Surrey hills, a few Sundays ago, a sample of thousands of peasants' services which are held each Sunday in our land. Poor laborers and humble tradesmen filled the place. Very hard were the lives of many of them; very long and weary their toil; very dull and sad their lot. But there they were for a time in another world. An evangelist preached to them sound, stirring, vital doctrine about righteousness; and they were made to feel that diligence, honesty, thrift, cheerfulness and charity were all within its pale. A peasant prayed with a dignity and a power of thought and expression which would have touched our prophets of culture, and which nothing but the Bible could have taught him, and he prayed for blessings which even an agnostic would recognize as good both for souls and States. They sang hymns which seemed for the time to uplift them, and they saw above their narrow and squalid lot a world in whose joys and glories they, too, had part. And then they went home to their poor hovels, their cabbage, their crust, and their dull monotonous tasks, feeling that life was not all a bare, dry desert; that toil and pain and sickness are not its only experiences; that it has passages of joy that might gladden an angel, and hopes which lift themselves to God and heaven. There are ten thousand of such churches, let us thank God, scattered about England. None but God knows the precious contribution which they offer to the stability and the fruitfulness of our industrial, social, and political life. I confess I am somewhat sceptical as to the extent of the so-called alienation of the "masses" from the Gospel. Their alienation from the Churches is all too manifest, but I think we quite underrate the hold which the truth and comfort of the Gospel have upon their hearts. It is wonderful how in times of great calamity, in colliery accidents and the like, abundant signs, not of a religion put on for the moment, but of a very noble Christian faith and patience, appear.

Let highly cultured men and women strip life, if they will, of all that makes it worth the living, and of the higher fellowships which lend to it dignity and grace; let them condemn, if they will, the hopes and the experiences which are the springs of its purest and most lasting joys; let them destroy for themselves, with the cruel weapons of their sophistry, the beliefs and the aspirations which in all ages have seemed to man to differentiate his life from the brutes; be it ours to guard for ourselves and these poor ones that vision of God, and that faith in the revelations and promises of his word, which has led the progress of Christendom hitherto, which is the stimulus and the strength of the noblest activity in men and in communities, and which, under the cares, burdens, and toils of our present experience, gladdens the heart unspeakably, fills the imagination, and beautifies and exalts the life.—P. 21.

NORTH AMERICAN REVIEW, December, 1880. (New York.)—1. The Future of the Republican Party; by George S. Boutwell. 2. Discoveries at Olympia; by Prof. Ernst Curtius. 3. Rational Sunday Observance; by Rev. Dr. James Freeman Clarke. 4. Southern Statesmen and their Policy; by John Jay. 5. The Ruins of Central America—Part IV; by Désiré Charnay. 6. The Distribution of Time; by Dr. Leonard Waldo. 7. The Public-School Failure; by Richard Grant White. The Validity of the Emancipation Edict; by Aaron A. Ferris.

Ex-Secretary Boutwell, in the first article, proposes what he considers an effective correction of the violation of the rights of "a free ballot and a fair count" in the Southern States. We give his method in the following paragraphs:

By section 4 of Article IV of the Constitution, it is provided that "the United States shall guarantee to every State in this Union a republican form of government, and shall protect each of them from invasion."

This guarantee to the States of a republican form of government is coupled with the highest pledge that can be made by one body-politic to another—protection against invasion. The two pledges considered together are a guarantee of the existence of the State and of its existence as a republic.

The Supreme Court has given an opinion that the guarantee is to the inhabitants of the respective States, and not to the governments of the States. In considering the varying meanings of the word "State" in our Constitution, the Court says: "There are instances in which the principal sense of the word seems to be that primary one to which we have adverted, of a people or political community, as distinguished from a government. In this latter sense the word seems to be used in the clause which provides that the United States shall guarantee to every State in the Union a republican form of government, and shall protect each of them against invasion. In this clause a plain distinction is made between a State and the government of a State." (*Texas vs. White*, 7 Wallace, 721.)

When we consider the nature of this obligation, its place in the Constitution, and its necessity as a means of protecting the Union itself from undermining and destroying processes, we can entertain only contempt for the doctrine that when the system in a State is republican there can be no further inquiry by the United States, and that the National Government must ever remain a silent spectator of the total subversion of that system in practice. If this be so, it is then only necessary for a body of usurpers in a State to retain a republican form of government, and then proceed to rob the people of every right appertaining to a republican system. And further, if this be so, then the guarantee is to the authorities of the State, and not to the people. The guarantee of a republican form or system of government is nothing to the people living under the system unless the administration of it is republican also. Indeed, the guarantee of a republican form of government, when that government has been

seized by usurpers, and the people are deprived alike of the rights and of the protection which a republican government is designed to secure, makes the guarantee itself the shield of the oppressor and the menace of the down-trodden.

The guarantee is, then, not of the *form* only, but of the *substance*, the *thing* itself, as well. The republican government guaranteed is a government existing and operating in harmony with the American idea as set forth in our Constitutions, both State and national, or accepted universally and by many successive generations.

Some of the essential features of a republican form of government are these : 1. All just powers are derived from the consent of the governed. 2. The exercise of those powers is by representative men selected by the people, either directly by election or indirectly by appointment. 3. The recognition in the Constitution of the existence of a body of men entitled to the elective franchise. 4. Efficient means for the general and equal enjoyment of the right by all of the class so recognized. 5. Obedience to the will of the majority when, agreeably to the Constitution, that will has been ascertained.

The Congress, including the President, is the United States, for the purpose of making good the guarantee contained in the Constitution ; and when in any State the essential qualities of a republican government are wanting, or the people are, generally and systematically, deprived of those rights and privileges which are elemental in our republican system, and when all milder means have failed to remedy the evils, it then becomes a duty to assert the power of the United States under the clause of the Constitution quoted, and, by such means as may be adequate, secure to the people a republican government as a practical, existing fact.

Although many years have passed since the outrages in the South assumed national importance, there is still ground for hope that order may be re-established, and the equal rights of citizens everywhere recognized ; but it is well in this exigency to assert the existence and unfold the nature of a power adequate to the evil we now confront.

The Republican party bears no hostility to the South as a section. If we are a sectional party—and in one sense we are a sectional party—the circumstance is due to the fact that, in the South, the Republican forces are in a state of duress, and their voice is nowhere heard, nor is their power anywhere felt.

When, however, there shall be freedom of speech, of the press, and of the ballot, the Republican party will exert every constitutional power for the renovation of the waste places in the South. Whatever can be done, under the Constitution, for the improvement of its rivers and its harbors, for the rebuilding of its levees, for the development of its agriculture, for the extension of its manufactures, for the enlargement of its educational facilities, will be done by the Republican party without delay and without

grudging. But all this can be done, and will be done, for those communities and States only where the equality of all men before the law is a living, practical fact.—P. 481.

In the concluding paragraph Mr. Boutwell expresses, undoubtedly, the real feeling of all parties at the North in behalf of every effort to promote the prosperity of the South. Demagogues here in the North, as well as in the South, are indeed maintaining, as their fundamental principle, the pretended axiom that "*the North hates the South.*" Such demagogues are the genuine enemies of both sections. That many things in the South are reprehended as injurious to the South, and unjust to other sections, is true. But those things are the real impediments to Southern prosperity, and their removal would promote the highest Southern interests, and their candid specification is an act of friendship. But Mr. Boutwell's proposal to use the national force against the South, as not possessing "a republican form of government," would be a stretch both of interpretation and of power which the Republican party will never adopt and the people of the North would never sustain. All the States are in possession of "a republican form of government," and the whole constitutional duty of Congress is, therefore, fulfilled. But for the central government to go farther and assume to decide whether all the specific acts, executive, legislative, or personal, under that "form" are consistent with the spirit of the "form," would be going beyond the record. It would be thereby unconstitutional, arbitrary, and leading to very dangerous complications. There are true "States' rights," and the fact that those "rights" have been illegitimately asserted should never induce us to consent to their obliteration. That the wrongs of which Mr. Boutwell complains exist there is no doubt. But there are other remedies than force, which will bring an earlier, safer, and more effective correction than any central force can accomplish.

THE PRINCETON REVIEW, November, 1880. (New York.) 1. The Ultimate Design of Man; by Prof. Frederic Godet, D.D. 2. How Congress and the Public Deal with a Great Revenue and Industrial Problem; by Hon. David A. Wells. 3. The Sabbath Question; by President Seelye. 4. Agnosticism in Kant; by Prof. Ormond. 5. The Antiquity of Man and the Origin of Species; by Principal Dawson. 6. The Historical Proofs of Christianity; by George P. Fisher. 7. Criteria of the Various Kinds of Truth; by President McCosh.

The following extract from Dr. Dawson's article, furnishes a notice of the profound researches of Barrande of Bohemia in

earliest paleontology. It will be seen that they are very conclusive against any theory of genetic derivation of species:

Barrande, like some other eminent paleontologists, has the misfortune to be an unbeliever in the modern gospel of evolution, but he has certainly labored to overcome his doubts with greater assiduity than even many of the apostles of the new doctrine; and if he is not convinced, the stubbornness of the facts he has had to deal with must bear the blame. In connection with his great and classical work on the Silurian fossils of Bohemia, it has been necessary for him to study the similar remains of every other country, and he has used this immense mass of material in preparing statistics of the population of the Paleozoic world more perfect than any other naturalist has been able to produce. In previous publications he has applied these statistical results to the elucidation of the history of the oldest group of crustaceans, the trilobites, and the highest group of the mollusks, the cephalopods. In his latest memoir of this kind he takes up the brachiopods, or lamp-shells, a group of bivalve shell-fishes, very ancient and very abundantly represented in all the older formations of every part of the world, and which thus affords the most ample material for tracing its evolution, with the least possible difficulty in the nature of "imperfection of the record."

Barrande, in the publication before us, discusses the brachiopods with reference, first, to the variations observed within the limits of the species, eliminating in this way mere synonyms and varieties mistaken for species. He also arrives at various important conclusions with reference to the origin of species and varietal forms, which apply to the cephalopods and trilobites as well as to the brachiopods, and some of which, as the writer has elsewhere shown, apply very generally to fossil animals and plants. One of these is that different contemporaneous species, living under the same conditions, exhibit very different degrees of vitality and variability. Another is the sudden appearance at certain horizons of a great number of species, each manifesting its complete specific characters. With very rare exceptions, also, varietal forms are contemporaneous with the normal form of their specific type, and occur in the same localities. Only in a very few cases do they survive it. This and the previous results, as well as the fact that parallel changes go on in groups having no direct reaction on each other, prove that variation is not a progressive influence, and that specific distinctions are not dependent on it, but on the "sovereign action of one and the same creative cause," as Barrande expresses it. These conclusions, it may be observed, are not arrived at by that slap-dash method of mere assertion so often followed on the other side of these questions; but by the most severe and painstaking induction, and with careful elaboration of a few apparent exceptions and doubtful cases.

His second heading relates to the distribution in time of the

genera and species of brachiopods. This he illustrates with a series of elaborate tables, accompanied by explanation. He then proceeds to consider the animal population of each formation, in so far as brachiopods, cephalopods, and trilobites are concerned, with reference to the following questions: 1. How many species are continued from the previous formation unchanged? 2. How many may be regarded as modifications of previous species? 3. How many are migrants from other regions where they have been known to exist previously? 4. How many are absolutely new species? These questions are applied to each of 14 successive formations included in the Silurian of Bohemia. The total number of species of brachiopods in these formations is 640, giving an average of 45.71 to each, and the results of accurate study of each species in its characters, its varieties, its geographical and geological range, are expressed in the following short statement, which should somewhat astonish those gentlemen who are so fond of asserting that derivation is "demonstrated" by geological facts:

1. Species continued unchanged.....	28 per cent.
2. Species migrated from abroad.....	7 "
3. Species continued with modification.....	0 "
4. New species without known ancestors...	65 "

100 per cent.

He shows that the same or very similar proportions hold with respect to the cephalopods and trilobites, and in fact that *the proportion of species in the successive Silurian faunae, which can be attributed to descent with modification is absolutely nil.* He may well remark that in the face of such facts the origin of species is not explained by what he terms "*les élans poétiques de l'imagination.*"

I have thought it well to direct attention to these memoirs of Barrande, because they form a specimen of conscientious work with the view of ascertaining if there is any basis in nature for the doctrine of spontaneous evolution of species, and, I am sorry to say, a striking contrast to the mixture of fact and fancy on this subject which too often passes current for science in England, America, and Germany. Barrande's studies are also well deserving the attention of our younger men of science, as they have before them, more especially in the widely spread Paleozoic formations of America, an admirable field for similar work. In an appendix to his first chapter, Barrande mentions that the three men who, in their respective countries, are the highest authorities on Paleozoic brachiopods, Hall, Davidson, and De Koninck, agree with him in the main in his conclusions, and he refers to an able memoir by D'Archaic, in the same sense, on the cretaceous brachiopods.—Pp. 396-398.

English Reviews.

BRITISH AND FOREIGN EVANGELICAL REVIEW, October, 1880. (London).—1. Professor Robertson Smith and the Pentateuch. 2. "Scotch Sermons, 1880." 3. Ten Days in Straasbourg. 4. Christ's Victory over Death. 5. Missions and Missionaries. 6. Spinozism and Old Testament Criticism. 7. On the Church Crisis in England. 8. The Faith of Islam. 9. The Moral Basis of Faith.

BRITISH QUARTERLY REVIEW, October, 1880. (London).—1. Tennyson's Poems. 2. The Lord's Supper Historically Considered. 3. The Art of Singing, Past and Present. 4. A Dutchman on South Africa. 5. Latham on Examinations. 6. Sir James Outram. 7. Exploration and Mission Work in Africa. 8. The Practice of an Architect. 9. Lord Northbrook and Lord Lytton.

WESTMINSTER REVIEW, October, 1880. (New York).—1. Paul and Seneca. 2. The Parliamentary Oath Question; Mr. Bradlaugh's Case. 3. Caroline Von Linsingen and King William IV. 4. Plato and his Times. 5. Chastity. 6. "The Religious Instinct" of the House of Commons. 7. East Indian Currency and Exchange. 8. India and our Colonial Empire. 9. The Colonies.

LONDON QUARTERLY REVIEW, October, 1880. (New York).—1. Recent Travels in Japan. 2. Cicero. 3. Art Collections. 4. Mr. Morley's Diderot. 5. The Camisards. 6. Olympia. 7. The Newspaper Press. 8. The Marshal Duke of Saldanha. 9. Six Months of Liberal Government.

LONDON QUARTERLY REVIEW, October. (London).—1. Herbert on the Lord's Supper. 2. Is Islam Progressive? 3. Theological Change in Scotland. 4. Dr. Rigg's Discourses. 5. Faust. 6. Devotion of Nehemiah. 7. The Methodist Conference.

The third article reviews Dr. Caird's "Introduction to the Philosophy of Religion," a volume of rather free *Scotch Sermons* by a number of bold young speculators, and other publications. The following opening paragraph describes the spread of

THE SCOTTISH RATIONALISTIC MOVEMENT.

The works whose titles we have placed at the head of this paper are among the "signs of the times." They add to the many palpable and abounding evidences that in Scotland the retreat from Calvinism has become a stampede. The defection began long ago, and uttered its voice in many a moan of "Moderatism;" but during the last half century the spread of science, the advance of wealth and culture, the disruption of Churches, the agency of Methodism, and the contact of Scotchmen with men in every part of the earth, have combined to weaken the theological system which once seemed so firm. Now its collapse seems so imminent that men literally overrun each other in their flight to other places of shelter. In the transition we fear that precious things may be lost, useful landmarks will be obliterated, and positions may be yielded in panic which could be easily sustained. But the operation which is progressing is full of instruction to men of all Churches; and a movement so fraught with importance to the most tremendous interests of belief and religion will be watched with intense concern by the eyes of all Christendom.—P. 72.

The following statement of Dr. Caird's denial that life can be explained by mechanism is excellent:

As we have already intimated, the chief end of Dr. Caird's cogitations is to reply to Materialism. He insists that this theory is totally inadequate to explain the phenomena of mind. It supposes mind to be a function of matter, yet cannot take its first step without employing categories of thought. The empiricist talks of Matter, Law, and Force, as if they were real entities, on the level of sensuous things. Though experience is more than sensation, yet his axiom, "All knowledge is from experience," assumes that experience and sensation are identical. Experience is One, and Sensations are Many; Sensation is diversified, but reason gives it Unity. The relation and co-ordination are from the self-conscious Ego. Mechanical causes can never explain the operations of mind. Vital, chemical, and physical relations are not to be resolved into one order. The purely chemical has never yet produced life; protoplasm analyzed is not living but dead, and when living it presents new phenomena which involve a new factor. Though matter should contain potencies of life, yet life contains a new and higher conception. It involves "a richer movement," (Hegelian momentum,) containing at least three ideas. These are—First, Systematic Unity. A stone has inorganic unity—is "a concourse of atoms;" but the organized being has order, proportion, diversity, and function applied to an end. Secondly, While the inorganic has artificial unity, the organic has a self-supporting development and unity; the parts are necessary to the whole, and the whole to the parts. The cause lies, indeed, in its effects—is, indeed, its own cause. . . . The third element in the conception of life which transcends the category of force is found in self-consciousness. Tindall and Huxley have imagined that the mechanical equivalent to thought may sometime be found. Dr. Caird thinks the mystery of the connection between matter and mind to be both greater and less than these writers suppose. It is less: for since material phenomena can be known to mind, there is no impassable gulf between them; yet it is greater, for physical causation cannot explain it. He asserts that the indivisible unity of consciousness transcends all differences. The whole consciousness is present in every thought. The analogy, therefore, between material forces and spiritual motives is fallacious. With this, of course, there collapses the differentialia of Calvinism as elaborated by Jonathan Edwards.—P. 78.

Of the *Scotch Sermons* we need give only the following specimen by Rev. W. M'Farlan:

He says: "Many religious teachers admit that the dogmas of scholastic theology must be abandoned or greatly modified. The sections of that theology which treat of sin and salvation they regard as specially untenable. These sections comprehend the following dogmas: (1) the descent of man from the Adam of

the Book of Genesis; (2) the fall of that Adam from a state of original righteousness by eating the forbidden fruit; the imputation of Adam's guilt to all posterity; (4) the consequent death of all men in sin; (5) the redemption in Christ of an election according to grace; (6) the quickening in the elect of a new life (*a*) at their baptism Catholics affirm, (*b*) at their conversion most Protestants allege; (7) the eternal punishment and perdition of those who remain unregenerate. These sections of the traditional theology of Christendom—originally elaborated by Augustine, amended and developed by the schoolmen of the Middle Ages, adopted wholesale by the Puritans—dominated the Christian intellect for centuries. They have ceased to dominate it.”—P. 220.

We will add to this what Dr. Macintosh says on the Atonement and on Forgiveness: “By his death on the cross Christ may be said, in a figurative sense indeed, to have expiated our sins, or to have purchased their remission; it being important to observe that the figures vary. But what he did, in the strict and literal sense, was to reveal to us the infinite placability of the divine Nature. . . . We define forgiveness to be the persistence of divine love in spite of our sins.”—Pp. 177, 181.

We need no further witness of the disintegration and dissolution of Calvinism. That it was among “the things which should not be shaken,” we never believed. But, unfortunately, in its dissolution, the Gospel also is in danger of being lost. These writers seem to have no idea of an evangelical system without the forms in which their fathers have so firmly trusted. These sermons reveal an utter weariness with mere orthodoxy, with the bald evangelicalism which despises good works, with the theory of human nature which denies that a saving Spirit is given to every man. They insist that justification is nothing without regeneration, that election is nothing without holiness, and protest in the name of morality against a doctrine of “salvation” which gives a bad man the hope of heaven because he is “elected,” and shuts out the man who diligently pursues the path of moral goodness. But these protestations are made now as if for the first time; as if no one had been qualified to denounce these theological absurdities before the “science” and “biblical criticism” of the latter days made it imperative. We are afraid that these writers have never read the works of John Fletcher, which no less an authority than Dr. Döllinger declares to be “the most important theological productions which issued from Protestantism in the latter part of the eighteenth century.” They do not recognize the fact that Methodism is escaping the shock of modern Rationalism, to a very large extent, because it separated from Calvinism a century since. They have not permitted themselves to be sufficiently unprejudiced to learn from Wesley and his followers that “good works” are an essential part of the Gospel as well as “faith;” and to vindicate the one they repudiate the other.—Pp. 92, 93.

German Reviews.

THEOLOGISCHE STUDIEN UND KRITIKEN. (Theological Essays and Reviews.) 1881. First Number—*Essays*: 1. DORNER, Hartmann's Pessimistic Philology. 2. ERHARDT, The Views of the Reformers on National Economy, (Second Article.) *Thoughts and Remarks*: 1. WAITZ, Exegetical Remarks on John vii, 22-24. 2. KAWERAU, Five Letters Written in the Days of Luther's Death. *Reviews*: 1. GOEBEL, The Parables of Jesus, reviewed by ACHELIS. 2. HERRLINGER, Melancthon's Theology, reviewed by TSCHAKERT. 3. RYSEL, Gregorius Thaumaturgus, reviewed by SCHULTZE.

In the opinion of Dr. Dorner, the modern system of Pessimism, which has of late spread so extensively, has gained a special claim to attentive consideration by the fact that it does not confine itself to criticising the present condition of our civilization, but that it attempts to set forth a complete cosmic view, which, though inconsistent in many respects, may be taken as an indication how earnestly a large portion of our contemporaries have embraced it. Dr. Dorner was induced by this consideration to examine critically the scientific character which Pessimism has assumed in the philosophy of Edward von Hartmann, who, he says, considerably distances all the pessimistic writers of the present age by attempting to set forth a philosophical system embracing all parts of philosophy.

The name of Edward von Hartmann has repeatedly been mentioned in the former volumes of the Methodist Quarterly Review. He holds a high rank among the first writers of philosophical literature, even in the opinion of those who, like Dr. Dorner, believe that his system is radically false and injurious to the best interests of mankind. It may, therefore, not be out of place if we give a brief account of his life and his works before we extract a few passages from Dr. Dorner's very interesting article. Edward von Hartmann is the son of the Prussian general Robert von Hartmann, and was born in 1842. He received the excellent scientific education which is imparted in the military schools of Prussia, and at the early age of eighteen became an officer of the Prussian army. A nervous disease of the knee, which began in 1861 and gradually grew worse, compelled him, in 1865, to ask for his discharge from the standing army. Even while in the army he had earnestly devoted himself to philosophical studies, the results of which he published, in 1869, in his work, *Die Philosophie des Unbewussten*, (The Philosophy of the Unconscious.) The

publication of this book produced a sensation in the philosophical world. It gave to its author, at the age of only twenty-seven, a world-wide celebrity. It had a circulation probably exceeding that of any previous work of the same character. The success appeared all the more remarkable in view of the fact that the author had been brought up for the military career, and not for that of philosopher. The first edition of the work was published in 1869, the seventh in 1875. The publication of this work was rapidly followed by a large number of smaller works on philosophy, religion, education, and a great variety of other subjects. In fact, Hartmann belongs to the most prolific writers of the present age. A collection of his essays was published under the title, *Gesammelte philosophische Abhandlungen zur Philosophie des Unbewussten*, (Collection of Philosophical Treatises on the Philosophy of the Unconscious. Berlin, 1872.) A little work on "The Decay of Christianity and the Religion of the Future," (1874,) attracted considerable attention, and called forth a great many replies. The second great work of Hartmann was published in 1879, under the title "Phenomenology of the Ethical Consciousness," (*Phaenomenologie des sittlichen Bewusstseins*.) Hartmann's wife, Agnes, has written, under her maiden name, A. Taubert, a work under the title, "Pessimism and its Opponents." (Berlin, 1873.) Works in defense of the new philosophy have also been written by Du Prel, Venetianer, Mainländer, and others. The number of books written against Hartmann's system in particular, and against the pessimistic philosophy in general, is very extensive. Dr. Dorner, in the article from which we give some extracts, quotes the following works and articles: Rehmke, "Remarks on Hartmann's Phenomenology," in the *Zeitschrift für Philosophie und philosophische Kritik*, (1879;) Michelis, (Old Catholic,) "Philosophy of the Unconscious;" Ebrard, (one of the most prominent theologians of the German Protestant Church,) "Hartmann's Philosophy of the Unconscious," (1876;) Golther, (State Minister of Würtemberg,) "Modern Pessimism;" Pfeiderer, "Modern Pessimism;" Weygoldt, "Critique of Modern Pessimism." The German Cyclopædias mention, moreover, works against Hartmann by Tobias, Haym, Weis, B. Meyer, Knauer, Volkelt, and J. C. Fisher. A full account of Hart

mann's Philosophy, and of its influence in the philosophical world, may be found in Vaihinger, "Hartmann, Düring, and Lange, Contributions to the History of German Philosophy in the Nineteenth Century," (1876;) and Oscar Schmidt, "The Physical Bases of the Philosophy of the Unconscious," (1876.) Hartmann's autobiography has been published in the German periodical, *Die Gegenwart*, 1875.

Hartmann designated his stand-point as a Monism, conciliating Hegel's logical idea and Schopenhauer's blind will in the unity of the Unconscious, which in his system occupies the same place as Spinoza's substance, Fichte's absolute I, (Ego,) Schelling's absolute subject-object. The Unconscious, according to Hartmann, is both will and idea, both real and ideal, both unlogical and logical, and the development of the world is nothing but the continuous conflict of these two elements which ends in the triumph of the logical, or the idea, over the unlogical, or the will. Since the unlogical, or will, constitutes the foundation and essence of the world, the world itself is anti-rational in its existence and essence; and it is the task of reason to reduce the anti-rational will to non-will, and to the painlessness of nothing, (the Nirvāna of Buddhism and of Schopenhauer,) as the redemption from the torment of existence, not of individual men, (by suicide, etc.,) but of mankind. Therefore the pessimistic view of the unhappiness in the world does not lead to quietism, to cowardly personal resignation and retirement, to a denial of the world, (as in Schopenhauer's system,) but it rather produces a full devotion of the personality to the development of the world for the sake of its aim—the universal redemption of mankind—and thus it leads to a positive affirmation of the will for life, to a reconciliation with life.

Dr. Dorner's article on Hartmann's system fills 106 pages in the "Studien und Kritiken." It treats of it in the following sections: 1. His Relation to Schopenhauer; 2. His Theory of Cognition, (Erkenntnisstheorie;) 3. Metaphysics; 4. Physics; 5. Teleology, (Zweckbegriff;) 6. Critique of his Metaphysics; 7. Presuppositions of Ethics; 8. Ethical Principle; 9. Ethics, considered in their different aspects; 10. Relation to Religion; 11. Conclusion.

As regards Hartmann's views on religion, we learn from Dr. Dorner's essay that Hartmann, like Schopenhauer, respects

religion in general as the people's metaphysics. "The nude bestiality of the social democracy," he says, "as exhibited in its cosmopolitan exultation over the horrors of the Paris Commune, shows to what degree of brutality a people may attain when it loses with religion the only shape in which idealism is accessible to it. Yea, religion contains not only the mere metaphysical ideas of the people, but also the means to give, upon the basis of these metaphysics, an impulse as vigorous and lasting as possible to the religious feelings, namely, religious worship and religious ethics. . . . All ideals and the devotion of the mind to the ideal are embodied, according to the people's view in religion. It is only religion which continually admonishes him that there is something higher than eating, drinking, and wedding; that this temporal world of the senses is not for him something final, but only the appearance of the eternal, supersensual and ideal, the shadows of which we see here as in a mist." Therefore, religion must always remain the living source for the emotional element in religious worship, and for the ethical emotion of the will. It is the only means to preserve the people from the terrible excesses of subjectivism. Philosophy may rise above these popular metaphysics; it also may gradually elevate the people to higher stages of consciousness. While thus paying some kind of respect to religion he donounces theology as a false and spurious science, and charges it with doing nothing but to reduce the ideas of popular imagination to a scientific form, without, in fact, rising above this low stand-point. He assumes an impassable gap to exist between science and religion. Therefore he thinks that it cannot be the mission of the men of science to transform religion, except it be by producing ideas which others may clothe for popular use into more popular forms. It is a matter of course that in his opinion religion and philosophy coincide for the philosopher. The development of religion proceeds from Polytheism through the contrast of the popular mind of the Aryans and Semites. Both try, in different ways, to overcome Polytheism. The former, especially the Indians, obtain this unity of an impersonal deity, but are unable to carry it through in the consciousness of the people, where Polytheism maintains itself, even among the Buddhists. The Semites, on the other hand, while overcoming Polytheism, only reach an anthropomorphised

personal God. The true religion would lie in the union of the Aryan and the Semitic ideas; the Semites must furnish the Monotheistic, the Indians the Pantheistic element. Christianity is regarded as the first unsuccessful attempt to effect this union. In its ideas of God, Hartmann says it knows only one God, and him it conceives as a personal God; besides, in the doctrine of the Trinity a relapse into Polytheism is not avoided. Hartmann especially censures the theism of Christianity as requiring "heteronomous" ethics. He attempts to trace the "heteronomous" character of the Christian ethics both in the Roman Catholic and the Protestant systems. His views on Protestantism, however, have considerably changed. While in the work on the decay of Christianity he calls Protestantism "the grave-digger of Christianity," he makes it in his "Phenomenology" the "preparatory grade in the school of humanity," without the passage of which no people can reach an ethical autonomy as a safe possession.

In the final chapter of his essay Dr. Dorner reviews the principal points of Hartmann's philosophy. He especially endeavors to show up its inconsistency. "It hovers," says Dr. Dorner, "between heaven and earth. Too lame to reach heaven, it is yet unable to feel at home upon earth. Thus Pessimism, and particularly Hartmann's philosophy, will maintain its significance in the history of German philosophy as a stage of transition from the rule of empiricism and eudemonism to a new positive-ideal progress."

ZEITSCHRIFT FÜR KIRCHENGESCHICHTE. (Journal for Church History.) Edited by Brieger. *Treatises and Essays*: 1. RITSCHL, The Books entitled "On Spiritual Poverty." 2. VÖLTER, The Sect of Swäbisch-Hall and the Origin of the German "Kaisersage." *Critical Reviews*: BENRATH, History of the Reformation in Italy. The Literature of the Years 1876 to 1879. *Analecta*: 1. ERICHSON, Hedios Itinerarium. 2. KAWERAT, Letters and Documents Relating to the History of the Antinomistic Controversy. 3. Miscellaneous Remarks, by SAUERBREI and BENRATH.

We have called attention in former numbers of the Methodist Quarterly Review to the excellent department headed "Critical Reviews." In it distinguished Church historians review from time to time all the new works published in the course of a few years on some section of Church history. A review in the present number, by Dr. Benrath, of new works treating of the Reformation in Italy, is equal to the best articles of this kind which have appeared in this periodical. Dr. Benrath is

a young lecturer in the faculty of Protestant theology of Bonn, who has made the study of the Italian Reformation a specialty, and has already acquired the reputation of being one of the highest living authorities on the subject. In his present article he enumerates eighteen new works, and briefly gives the chief contents of each. He had previously contributed an article of the same kind to the volume of this periodical for 1875, and in 1876 had published a small work, entitled, "On the Sources of the History of the Italian Reformation." The author expresses, in his present article, great joy at the activity which is now exhibited by the Italians themselves to bring to light the hidden treasures of the Italian libraries relating to the conflicts between the Papacy and the Liberal governments of a number of Italian States in the sixteenth century. He quotes, as a document of special importance, a circular issued in 1876 by the Minister of Justice, Mancini, to the Directors of the State Archives, in which he says: "Among the most glorious leaves of the annals of Italy we must count those which report examples of civil courage and firmness of individuals and governments who dared bravely to resist a power which had become terrible to the existence and independence of the nation. But the documents which give testimony of such manifestations of national life are for the most part yet unknown. I believe I render an important service to the interests of the nation if I should succeed in compiling and in publishing from the various archives of the principal cities a collection of hitherto unedited and little-known documents of this class." The minister recommends especially search for documents bearing upon the relations between the House of Savoy and the Curia, the conflicts between Venice and Paul V.; the opposition of Naples against the introduction of the Inquisition, etc.

A very valuable library of books relating to the history of the Reformation of Italy has been collected by Count Piero Guicciardini, and has been since 1877 in possession of the city of Florence. Count Guicciardini, the venerable patriarch among the native converts to Protestantism, had at first conceived the plan of collecting all the Italian translations of the Bible from the fifteenth century to the present time. While he examined for this purpose the libraries of Switzerland,

France, and England, the plan was gradually enlarged so as to include all works relating to the history of the Reformation. For eighteen years Count Guicciardini devoted his time and a large portion of his property to collecting works on this subject, and he succeeded in forming a library of more than three thousand volumes. The library has been put in order and catalogued by T. P. Rossetti, who has given a description of it in the "Vedetta Christiana," May 1, 1877.

French Reviews.

REVUE CHRETIENNE, (Christian Review.) September, 1880.—1. ALONE, Amelia de Lassaulx. 2. BRUSTON, On the Morality of the Song of Songs. 3. CRAZALET, Frederic Mistral. 4. DUCROS, Vinet's Individualism. 5. PRESSENSE, Reply to the Preceding Article.

October.—1. ALONE, Amelia de Lassaulx. 2. CUNNING, Dante Alighieri. 3. BOUSCASSE, On the Religious Instruction of Children.

November.—1. BRIANQUI, Sermon on the Reformation. 2. CUNNING, Dante Alighieri, (Second Article.) 3. JACOT, Some Words of Professor Beck. 4. NYEGAARD, Assistant Pastors. 5. LORIOR, A Great Man and a Great Nature.

Among the most distinguished persons who joined the Old Catholic movement of Germany was the Superior of the Convent of the Sisters of Charity, at Bonn, Amelia de Lassaulx. She was the descendant of a distinguished family at Coblenz, on the Rhine, which, as the name indicates, was of French origin. She was one of six children, all of whom made their mark in the world, the most distinguished being her brother, Ernest de Lassaulx, who became Professor at the University of Munich, and was regarded, with Döllinger, as one of the pillars of the Catholic interests at that important institution. Like her father and all her brothers and sisters, Amelia was early noted for a strong, unconquerable will. Her parents wished to marry her against her will, but she successfully resisted, because a mysterious love, in regard to which her biographers observe an absolute silence, prevented her from accepting the propositions made to her. She subsequently gave her entire affections to a young man whom for a time she thought to be the model of all perfections. When she found out that in her estimation of her lover she had been sadly mistaken, she broke not only

with him, but, as many Catholic girls do in similar circumstances, with the world, and resolved to become a nun. At the beginning of the present century there was a remarkable revival of the spirit of charity in Germany, both among Protestants and Catholics. Among the former Amelia Sieveking gained immortal laurels by her efforts in behalf of the poor. Among Catholics the young women flocked in large numbers to the religious orders which specially devote their labors to the care of the sick and poor. Amelia's elder sister had previously taken the veil as a "Gray Sister" at Nancy, France. Amelia concluded to follow her example; and she did follow it in spite of the remonstrances of her relations and friends; who, on account of her strong individualism, believed her unsuited for monastic life. At this time a mild type of Roman Catholicism prevailed in Germany and in many other countries. That system of ultramontaniam which was dogmatized in 1870 by the Vatican Council had but few zealous defenders. The Christian doctrines which Catholics hold in common with Evangelical Protestants were thought of greater moment than those which separate the large divisions of Christianity. Amelia de Lassaulx fully entered into this spirit, and when gradually the spiritual atmosphere in the Church began to change, and a rigid ultramontane Churchism began to claim an unconditional and a foremost recognition, Sister Amelia felt as though a new religion, full of childish practices and of superstitions, had been grafted upon the religion in which she had grown up. Her diary shows in many places that the consciousness of this difference caused her great pain, and her conscience revolted against much which she considered as being at variance with the teachings of Christ and the Christianity of the Bible. She had by this time risen to a prominent position in her order. At the age of only thirty-two years she was appointed Superior of a new house of her order which was established at Bonn. In this position she developed an extraordinary talent of organization, which was subsequently exhibited on a much larger scale when she was called upon, in the campaigns of Schleswig and Bohemia, to organize or reorganize the service of ambulances. Her eminent success in the management of the affairs of the convent was recognized by the Superiors of the order, who sent her from different houses many novices for education,

especially such about whose fitness or abilities serious doubts were entertained.

To many young women she thus became a guide to the attainment of an inner religious life, which found greater consolation in a strong Christian faith, in an ardent love of God and the poor, than in the strict observation of the many ceremonies of the Church. She weaned herself more and more from the narrow views which are so often met with in pious Catholic women, who are justly admired for their heroic devotion to works of Christian charity. She sought and appreciated the friendship of distinguished men and women; and among her best friends at Bonn she even counted a number of Protestants, as Professor Mendelssohn and his wife, the wife of Professor Sulpice Boisséré, and especially Professor Perthes. Her spiritual adviser was Professor Hilgers, of the theological faculty of Bonn, who preached every Sunday in her chapel, in the place of the Jesuits, of whom she had a great horror. In the campaign of Schleswig she at one time assisted a Lutheran pastor in giving to a sick soldier the Lord's Supper, an act which was never forgiven by the zealous ultramontanes. From 1855 to 1868 she lost her mother, her brothers Ernest and Hermann, her sister Nannette, and her friend Professor Perthes. The only member of her family who survived was her sister Clementine, Superior of the Convent of Luxemburgh, who was of an entirely different character, and had but little sympathy with her. The severe trial through which she had thus to pass was interrupted by the great crisis in her Church which began with the Vatican Council in 1870, and the dogmatization of papal infallibility. She felt the warmest sympathy with the eighty-eight bishops who voted against the new dogma, and felt all the more aggrieved when these bishops in rapid succession gave in their submission to the Pope, until at last only one remained, Bishop Strossmeyer. Even for him she trembled, and justly, for he, too, finally yielded to the demands of Rome. She felt some consolation in the fact that a man like Döllinger remained firm in his opposition. "Let us praise God," she said; "as long as such an apostle of truth and justice lives, I do not want to lose courage." She was at first opposed to the organization of the Old Catholic Church, which appeared to her like a schism, but after a time she perceived the necessity of the

movement, and approved of it. She was determined not to conceal her view; at the same time she did not deem it necessary to proclaim it before she was asked. This time soon came. She was denounced to the Superior of her order by a person whom, several years before, she had charitably received into her convent. The mistress of novices was sent from Nancy to Bonn to ascertain her belief concerning Papal Infallibility. She frankly and promptly acknowledged it. "And as to the Immaculate Conception," she was asked, "do you not believe in it, either?" "As a dogma," she said, "I do not believe in it either," and added, "I wish to keep until death the Catholic faith in which I was born, in which I was raised, which I have faithfully observed all my life. I shall not allow new doctrines to be imposed upon me." A few days later the Mother Superior arrived herself from Nancy, and when the above declaration was repeated, Amelia de Lassaulx, after having twenty-five years presided over the Community of Bonn, was deposed from her office. She was told that she could not remain in Bonn, and though her health was so feeble that her physician forbade an immediate departure, she was removed to a little hospital of the order at Vallendaar, near Coblenz. Her friends in Bonn invited her to leave the order and reside with them, but she considered herself bound by her vows, and concluded to remain and die in the order. Death soon relieved her from further suffering. She arrived at Vallendaar December 14, 1871, and died January 28, 1872. All who surrounded her death-bed united in asking her to submit, but she finally refused. Her dying words were two verses from a Protestant hymn,

"Lord Jesus, in Thee I live,
Lord Jesus, in Thee I die,"

and several times she ejaculated the words, "Come, Lord Jesus." By order of the Superior the body was deprived of the monastic dress, and it was even forbidden to place a crucifix in her hands. In accordance with her wish, the body was interred in the Catholic cemetery of Coblenz, in the vault of the Lassaulx family. Permission was obtained only with great difficulty to carry the corpse through the large gate of the cemetery. Orders had been given that no priest be present or officiate at the funeral. The Old Catholic Professor Reusch, of the Uni-

versity of Bonn, was only allowed to recite the Lord's Prayer. Several excellent biographies related the story of her holy, devoted life to the German people. At the head of the article from which the foregoing remarks are taken we find the titles of two French works, "Courte Notice sur Amélie de Lassaulx," by H. Leconte, with an introduction of M. Hyacinthe Loyson, priest, Paris, 1879; and "Amélie de Lassaulx, en religion sœur Augustine." The latter work contains an authorized translation of her "Reminiscences." Lausanne, 1880. Among the innumerable articles which the leading papers of Germany and France have devoted to her life, the admirable article which E. de Pressensé has contributed to the "Journal des Debats," deserves to be prominently mentioned. He calls Amelia de Lassaulx the Saint of the Catholic Reformation.

ART. IX.—FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.

THE OLD CATHOLIC CHURCH.

WHILE in 1879 three Old Catholic synods met in Germany, Switzerland, and Austria, only one assembled in 1880, that of Switzerland. The Swiss synod began its sessions at Geneva on May 20. From the annual report of Bishop Herzog it appears that the Christian Catholic Church in Switzerland has suffered since the synod of 1879 the loss of twelve parishes and ten priests. This loss was due to the recurrence of the six years' period of popular election of priests. In the parishes where the Roman Catholic party had a majority it elected the priest and retook possession of the church property. Most of the parishes which were lost had been but nominally held, the number of Old Catholics being very small; but in three, at least, there is a very strong body of Christian-Catholics who demand the services of a priest and the use of a church. In these three the reformers having lost the income of the parish, which goes with the election, have to support their priests out of their own resources. In two cases of a contested election the Old Catholics were in a majority and held the parish. Other losses were in prospect for the current year. To support their services in the places which the Old Catholics lose the government grant, the bishop has appealed to the generosity of the Anglican Churches, and in his report he acknowledges the receipt of 5,000 francs from the secretary of the Anglo-Continental Society of London. The bishop reports fifty-nine priests as being at work in Switzerland, as against seventy-two of 1879; and five students of the Berne University were awaiting ordination. Among the losses of ecclesiastics since the synod of 1879 only two were cases of secession to

Rome. There was no diminution in any canton but Berne and Geneva. The number of established parishes in the possession of Old Catholics was forty-eight. A Christian-Catholic Prayer Book which had been prepared by Bishop Herzog, after the model of the Anglican manual, was adopted by the synod as the official manual of the Christian-Catholic Church, and it was ordered that the office of the mass contained therein should be used universally. A committee of five, consisting of the bishop and the two German-speaking and two French-speaking members, was appointed for the completion of the rubrics and for the preparation of an edition suitable for theological use. Among those attending the synod as visitors were Dr. Riley, Bishop of the Valley of Mexico; Lord Plunket, Bishop of Meath; and M. Hyacinthe Loysen, rector of the Gallican Church in Paris. In September and October, Bishop Herzog, in response to friendly invitations, paid a visit to the United States, and attended, in particular, the General Convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church. He repeatedly performed in Episcopal churches liturgical acts in his own clerical garments, and expressed himself strongly in favor of establishing a closer intercommunion between the Anglican and the Old Catholic Churches.

The Old Catholic Church of Germany has now settled into a round of synod and congress to be held in alternate years. The former is the authoritative legislative body, the latter, like the Church congresses in the Anglican Church of England and the United States, a popular, tone-giving assembly. As the synod had been held in 1879, a congress met again in 1880. It took place at Baden-Baden from Sept. 13 to 14, and was the seventh since the rise of the Old Catholic movement, the former having been held at Munich, Cologne, Constance, Freiburg, Breslau, and Mainz. The congress in 1880 was well attended by delegates from the congregations, over 150 being present. The Berne and Munich professors still hold aloof from the meetings of the Church. Among the prominent men of the Church who attended were Bishop Reinkens, and the Professors Schulte, Michelis, and Knoodt. Among the visitors from abroad were an Old Catholic priest of Austria and five Anglican clergymen. Letters of friendly greeting were sent by six Anglican bishops and the Old Catholic or Jansenist Archbishop of Holland. Professor Michelis made an interesting report of a visit he had just paid to the neighboring city of Constance, where an ultramontane congress had been in session. He had preached there, and had publicly challenged the bishops attending the congress to discuss with him the following thesis: "The personal infallibility of the Pope is either a Catholic dogma or a terrible imposture; it is not a Catholic dogma, because it is not contained in Scripture, is not handed down in tradition, and has not been decreed by an ecumenical council; therefore it is a fearful imposture." Bishop Reinkens reported favorably on the progress of the Church in Germany. The progress was not large, but it could be tabulated. The figures of the present year gave a slight advance all along the line over those of the last year; but then it must be remem-

bered that in 1876-78 a somewhat serious falling off had been observable. The number of Old Catholics of Germany is still somewhat under the 50,000 returned a few years ago, and the number of priests is also proportionately less; the announcement, therefore, that at last there was a turn in the tide was received with great satisfaction. The congress adopted the following resolutions as expressive of the present stand-point of the Old Catholic party in relation to the papacy: 1. An actual and effective contradiction between faith in the fundamental truths of Christianity founded upon the testamentary proof of history, and science grounded upon the immediate facts of nature and mind, is not possible. Each protects, carries on, and completes the other. 2. The independent character of national Churches is just as much in accordance with the universal character of the Church as are national peculiarities in the State, art, and science, with the general object of culture. 3. It is a mischievous error of many Protestants to regard the Church which the adherents of the Vatican are bound to recognize as the only rightful one, as the shield of faith, a rallying point for authority in civil and social affairs, and a protection against destructive socialistic tendencies, and therefore to adopt it as a conservative ally. 4. History, the task and duty of self-preservation, compels the German empire to oppose the Vatican system. 5. Negotiations with the infallible Pope or his organs upon all matters which concern the promulgation of laws and the authority of the State are objectionable. Transactions of this kind lead to the dissolution of the national State. The Prussian government seems no longer to take the same interest in the progress of the movement as in former years; but when, in the beginning of the year, objection was made in the Prussian House of Deputies to that item of the budget which makes provision for the Old Catholic bishop, the minister, Herr von Puttkammer, stated, in the name of the government, that this arrangement was a part of the law of the land, and that the government intended to carry out the ecclesiastical laws as long as they remained on the statute books.

In Austria the Old Catholics appear to have made no progress. An application to the government, made by the synodal council which was elected in June, 1879, for recognition by the State, was denied by the minister of religion, who said that the State could not afford to grant it.

In France the congregation of M. Hyacinthe Loyson reported in June, 1880, a membership of about 1,000. It did not yet own a church building, and was about \$1,000 in debt. It had three priests. On August 27 M. Loyson solemnized the marriage of a regular priest, Abbe Laine.

In Russia, the province of Volhynia has several communities of Bohemians who have attached themselves to the Old Catholic movement. They have three priests who are recognized and supported by the State. In reply to a memorial addressed to the Minister of the Interior, the priests even requested to hold a conference with some of the most influential of the Bohemian laymen to formulate a statement of their fundamental doctrines and organic constitution. This conference was to serve as a permanent organization and constitute a synodal council.

ART. IX.—QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE.

Religion, Theology, and Biblical Literature.

The Authorship of the Fourth Gospel. By EZRA ABBOT, D.D., LL.D. 8vo. 1880.

The Gospel of John, as our readers well know, has been one of the main battle-fields of Christian evidences, and the volumes published on the subject by our German cousins form an extensive library. One of the latest and most persistent assaults upon the genuineness of this gospel has been furnished by the author of "Supernatural Religion," a work which has passed through a number of editions. A royal service was done in behalf of its genuineness by a former distinguished professor in Harvard College, Andrews Norton; and it is refreshing to receive from Harvard even this brief posting of the subject down to the present hour from so thorough a scholar as Prof. Abbot.

The professor first counts the posts that have been won in the long war. *First.* The Tübingen theory, which imagined the Apostolic Church to be divided into two hostile camps—a Gentile, with Paul at its head, and a Judaic, under Peter and John; and that, therefore, John could not be the author of so anti-Jewish a gospel, is about abolished and extinct. We confess that we have never wasted our time in going into the depths of this theory, for it bore on its face an artificiality condemning it, *a priori*, as a German fandango. *Second.* The argument against the gospel derived from the paschal controversies is at an end. *Third.* The late dating the appearance of this gospel is now generally agreed to be untenable. Adverse criticism is compelled to admit so early a date that Church tradition, placing it at the close of the first century, is perfectly credible. The grounds thus cleared, the professor discusses the four main arguments for the authenticity: 1. The universal acceptance of the gospels as supreme authority in the latter half of the second century, necessitating the concession of their authority from the start. 2. The testimony of Justin Martyr. 3. The early Gnostic testimony to their authority. 4. The closing testimony of the gospel itself.

Justin Martyr justly figures as a very important witness in this trial. He gives us this classic passage: "On the day called Sunday all who live in cities, or in the country, gather together in one place, and the Memoirs by the Apostles, or the writings of the prophets, are read as long as time permits. When the reader

has finished, the president admonishes and exhorts to the imitation of these good things." Eight times he mentions these "Memoirs by the Apostles," once "Memoirs made by the Apostles, which are called Gospels," and once, in apparently quoting Luke, "Memoirs composed by the Gospel of Christ, and those who followed with them." The question is raised, Could these "Memoirs" be any other than our four gospels, John included?

The passage is of prime importance: 1. From the early position of Justin, whose life covered the immediate post-apostolic age so as to join on to the Canon itself. 2. From the permanence and universality of the practice of a liturgical reading of the gospels in the Christian Churches at this early date. 3. From the high rank thereby assigned to these "Memoirs," namely, a priority to the Old Testament prophets, liturgically read, in the churches as in the Jewish synagogues. We see thus how the canon came into spontaneous existence. And we may here note that the word *gospel*, *εὐαγγέλιον*, (good message,) was beautifully used by the primitive Church, as at the present day, to designate either of the four gospels as a book, then the common substance of the four as *the Gospel*, and, finally, the entire Christian doctrine.

Now, inasmuch as the next information on the subject finds the four evangelists thus read in supreme authority in all the Churches of the world, it is not easy to doubt that these were the so-called "gospels" of Justin. It is not easy to see how any one of these "gospels" could jump out of the hands of the churches, be supplanted by another, and never be heard of afterward.

But the opponents of the fourth gospel are competent to treat it with heroic practice. They maintain that the quotations of Justin are made, not from the present evangelists, but from some of the many spurious gospels extant in Justin's time. They show variations in language from our received gospel text. They even insinuate that the present gospel is later than Justin, and that Justin's quotations are really embodied into it from him. It is a wonderful world of research that has been brought to bear from all sides by the learned contributors to this part of the discussion. Our interest in it is less intense, from the fact that Baur & Co. have very little affected the mind of the American Church, and the noise of the battle has but faintly rumbled hither from another continent. This is all the better, from the fact that the heat of the fight is over, and men are beginning to wonder why the forced constructions of the firm aforesaid were ever thought worthy of so much racket. Prof. Abbot shows very clearly that there

were no such numerous spurious gospels in Justin's time as that his quotations could be attributed to them; that Justin's free quotations from memory are just such as he makes from the Old Testament, and such as are made by the fathers of the Church, and even by modern Christian writers very plentifully; and the priority of Justin to John's Gospel is essentially abandoned even by the opponents of the genuineness of the latter.

The fairness, clearness, and conclusiveness of Dr. Abbot's argument entitle him to the thanks of biblical scholars.

The Wesley Memorial Volume; or, Wesley and the Methodist Movement Judged by nearly One Hundred and Fifty Writers, Living and Dead. Edited by Rev. J. O. A. CLARK, D.D., LL.D. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. Macon: J. W. Burke. Nashville: J. B. M'Ferrin. St. Louis: L. D. Dameron & Co. 1880. 8vo., pp. 744.

The enterprising editor of this elegant MEMORIAL VOLUME has unwittingly furnished an ecumenical Methodist book preparatory to our Ecumenical Methodist Council. His aim was to bring within its pages a representative writer from every Methodist organization of every country or color. Whatever of differences have existed, all could unite upon Wesley, his doctrines and his work, as their common center. Signally happy is the father of the great Wesleyan family, in that his name is for all a note of harmony and oneness.

The Memorial Church, whose interests gave existence to this volume, is well entitled to this honor from its being erected "in the only city in America in which Mr. Wesley had a home and a parish." The beautiful city of SAVANNAH has this singular pre-eminence in our South—a section rich in memorial spots of our Methodist primitive history. Our John-street Church in New York, where Embury inaugurated American Methodism, and Boston's beautiful Common, where Lee discharged the first gun for New England Methodism, are spots of memorial interest for every reflective Methodist in every section of our great country. Under Dr. Clark's suggestion and skillful guidance, Savannah now asserts her claim on unique grounds to being the most primitive memorial spot for Methodism in America.

The editor was singularly successful in obtaining ready contributions from a large corps of able pens in both England and America, both within and without the communion of Methodism. Such writers as Punshon, Rigg, Pope, and Tyerman, represent English Methodism. Men like Bishops Simpson, E. O.

Haven, Foss, Dr. Newman, and Dr. Abel Stevens, represent our Methodist Episcopal Church. Of the lights of our Church South, there are Bishops M'Tyeire, G. F. Pierce, Wightman, Drs. Lipscomb and Summers, with several contributions from the prolific mind of the editor. From the colored American Churches are Bishop Holsey and Rev. B. F. Lee. From the other continent outside of Methodism are Dean Stanley, Mr. Gladstone, and de Presensé. These are brilliant names, and the volume should be welcomed to the hands and hearts of universal Methodism as an ecumenical book. It will furnish an admirable prelude to the meeting of that approaching Council by which Catholic Methodism will stand out in her unity with a fresh distinctness both in her own view and before the eyes of the world.

Messianic Prophecies. Lectures by Franz Delitzsch, Professor of Theology, Leipzig. Translated from the Manuscript by SAMUEL IVES CURTISS, Professor in Chicago Theological Seminary. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1880. 8vo., pp. 124. [Special edition, imported by Scribner & Welford. New York. Price, \$3.]

This tall and thin octavo contains a full report of Delitzsch's extemporaneous lectures to his classes, made by one of his students, and with the learned author's consent translated by Professor Curtiss for the benefit of his pupils in the Chicago Seminary. Though an outline only, they are, of course, sketched by the hand of a master; and though there are some concessions made under pressure of German rationalism which we regret to notice, yet there are choice suggestions scattered all along the pathway; and the very brevity of the outline both brings the whole prophetic structure more clearly within the grasp of the mind, and furnishes a programme for the student's filling out in the prosecution of his studies in this interesting department of biblical theology.

The work is divided into two parts, entitled "The Foundation," and "The History." The Foundation is the peculiar nature of the prophetic office, a unique phenomenon in human history. As God and man are generically one as mind, so God may communicate to man, and of this communication the prophet is a mediator. Even a particular people, as Israel, may be the appointed prophetic mediator for the human race; so that the apparent contradiction of Jehovah being at once God of Israel and yet God of all the earth is solved. In Israel it was the office of prophecy to infuse spirituality into the ritual, and to stand as the inspiring conscience of the people; fulfilling, as John Stuart Mill remarks, the highest duty of the modern periodical press. Delitzsch seems

to recognize that there is a natural "fullness of powers slumbering in the soul," really existing, yet limited by the material inclosure, which form the basis of prophetic action. Hereby we understand the difference between true prophecy and heathen soothsaying. The former is the soul's presentimental power more or less liberated and inspired by divine agency; the latter is the faculty of prevision in specially susceptible persons, roused by artificial means to preternatural and usually delusive excitement. Hence, the latter was marked, externally, by the frenzy of the soothsayers, while in true prophecy the rational powers were in clear and normal action. We doubt, however, whether this absence of ecstasy in true prophecy as a uniform, distinctive characteristic is not overstated by Delitzsch and others.

The history traces, analytically and synthetically, the serial stages of Messianic prophecy through the Old Testament. From the very first promise in Eden of the woman's seed to closing Malachi, there are perpetually occurring bright spots of promise, passages of anticipation of a future blessed time on earth, a future *comer* who is a more than human deliverer, sufferer, teacher, ruler, who is to make all right in the world. Other nations have slight shadows of a similar deliverer, but with Israel it was the dominant Idea. From this Idea it is that Israel drew his earlier and later historic life.

The successive stages through which this Idea is traced (varying from Delitzsch somewhat) are: the pre-Mosaic, the Mosaic, the royal Davidic, the divided kingdom to the exile, the exilic, and post-exilic. During the pre-Mosaic period we have the Edenic promise, the Abrahamic and other theophanies, the blessings of the dying patriarchs, of Isaac upon Jacob, and of Jacob upon Judah. Then came the unparalleled endowment of Moses, sole parallel to the prophetic Christ. Thence Messianic prophecy, though not wholly silent, is not ringingly vocal until David. In Delitzsch's view David supposed himself the Messiah of the promise, until his sad criminalities taught him to look for a better in the future.

But, as above intimated, there are surrenders made by Delitzsch in which we can scarce concur. We do not believe in yielding, contrary to all the authority of the ancient Jewish writers, the application of Shiloh to the personal Messiah. We scarce accept an Isaiah sawn asunder, or the mutilation of a Daniel authenticated by Jesus Christ himself. The defense of the Book of Daniel by Pusey we as yet believe unanswerable.

A Popular Commentary on the New Testament. By English and American Scholars of various Evangelical Denominations. With Illustrations and Maps. Edited by PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D., LL.D. Vol. II. The Gospel of John and the Acts. 8vo., pp. 577. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1880. Price, \$6.

This is so rich and stately a volume as to be rather an aristocratic than "popular" production. It is furnished with a large number of authentic, fresh, and graphic illustrations and maps. The authors of the notes on John are, Professor Milligan, of Aberdeen University; and Professor Moulton, of De Lees College, Cambridge; on Acts, Dean Howson and Canon Spence. The Introductions are full; the notes not very copious, but done in the highest style of scholarship.

Philosophy, Metaphysics, and General Science.

The Chain of Life in Geological Time. A Sketch of the Origin and Succession of Animals and Plants. By J. W. DAWSON, LL.D. With numerous Illustrations. 12mo. Pp. 272. London: Religious Tract Society. 1880.

The source whence this volume is issued indicates that it is intended to present such a view of paleontology as might well be taken by the hearty believer in the Bible. It is written in a lucid style, with an effort, tolerably successful, at intelligibility to the popular reader. Yet something of scientific stiffness remains. Nor does Dr. Dawson usually display the *vis viva* and pictorial power which leads the popular reader onward by its fascination in Professor Winchell's admirable "Sketches of Creation." With its plentiful engravings, and its clear methods, it is, nevertheless, perhaps the best brief work extant for the unscientific reader who desires to obtain a view of the state of the question as it exists at the present hour; a state, however, still liable to be materially varied at any time by advancing investigation.

In nine successive chapters the author discusses the beginnings of life on earth; the age of invertebrates of the sea; the origin of plant life on earth; the appearance of vertebrates; the first air-breathers; the empire of the great reptiles; the first modern forests; the reign of mammals; the advent of man; the review of the history of life.

A survey of the whole course of life shows progress, specific and generic advancements, culminating at last in man. It equally reveals that life had a beginning. There was a practical anterior eternity where no phenomenal life had ever been. We may add that in Hume's sense of the phrase life was "contrary to experi-

ence ;" and so its commencement was *miraculous*. Probably the most conclusive argument for genetic derivation of all species is drawn from the fact that we know generation by experience, and so have an experimental solution of the problem of the chain of life through ages. But then we have also virtual experience of a *commencement* of the chain which is original and not genetically *derived*. And if there be one commencement experienced there may be thousands and millions. Mr. Darwin suggests that the Creator may have breathed life into two or three primordial forms; but if he performs such an act once he may do so any number of times. Mr. Darwin herein avows belief both in a Creator, and in that bugbear at which so many scientists turn "doughface"—a "special creation." Now all that Dr. Dawson maintains is the reasonableness of the claim, sustained as it is by stupendous facts, that such repeated creations in series indicating an order of law, have truly taken place. And such he holds is the probable solution of that continuity of typical forms, within due limits of variation, actually visible in the extended chart of life. There is serial derivation, genetic to a wonderful extent, yet subordinate to a great plan of intellectual derivations, whose programme exists in the divine Mind.

How truly this derivation may be intellectual, rather than genetic, is remarkably illustrated by one peculiar fact. Far back in geologic time, at the very beginning of the age of great reptiles, long before the appearance of the first mammal, we are struck by the apparition of the skeleton of a *human arm*. There it is with the hand and its five digits, presenting that significant peculiarity which distinguishes man from the ape—a thumb opposed to the fingers! It is the unquestionable form, the *idea*, of a human arm. This arm man has inherited; but how? Not generatively, but ideally, through a law, not of matter, but of mind. For this arm belonged to a lizard-like reptile, some three or four feet long, at the beginning of the "reptilian empire," an empire swept away by repeated revolutions since. That arm was lost through geologic ages. By numerous instances of this kind we seem to be cautioned against too confident an assumption, that identity of form demonstrates hereditary derivation.

In point of continuity there is a great difference in species. Some of the humblest forms beginning at the beginning of earthly life, have survived through all the revolutions, and are found unchanged to-day. Other species spring up with higher organization without any apparent predecessors or parents, and

suddenly overspread the geologic world. Their ancestors could not have been destroyed, for their sudden apparition takes place in quiet times. Other species, as the horse, appear through several periods in somewhat varied forms, and present the most favorable aspect for inferring, in their case, genetic derivation. Yet even the supposed ancestors of the horse, so confidently traced by Mr. Huxley, are doubtful. "Gaudry and other orthodox evolutionists in Europe deduce the horse, not from *Eohippus*, but from the *Paleotherium*"—a very different pedigree; that is, so questionable is the derivation of the horse from the *eohippus*, that other scientists than Mr. Huxley reject it, and look for other ancestors for *equus*. But even admit the Huxleyan equine pedigree, what then? We have simply a case of a species continuing through successive periods under somewhat varying forms. But that is very far short of proving the universality of genetic derivation.

British Thoughts and Thinkers. By GEORGE S. MORRIS. Chicago: S. C. Griggs & Co. 1880.

Professor Morris' work deals less with British thoughts than with British thinkers, and is mainly biographical. The thinkers selected comprise the early English scholastics, Spenser and Shakespeare of the poets, Hooker of the theologians, and Bacon, Hobbes, Locke, Berkely, Hume, Hamilton, Mill, and Spenser of the philosophers. The biographical sketches are very interesting and readable. Professor Morris' involved and Germanized style does not appear in this part so prominently as in his speculative discussions. In the latter we miss completeness of exposition. These essays are said to be "introductory studies;" and yet they are scarcely intelligible except to one already familiar with philosophy. So much is taken for granted, and so much more is stated without proof, that a beginner would find himself at the end of the work with a series of dogmatic statements in his mind, but without any appreciation of their ground or of the problems to which they relate. This is always the result when the history of philosophy is studied as an introduction to philosophy. The procedure is as inverted and confusing as it would be to begin a course in mathematics by a history of mathematics. We agree entirely with Professor Morris' conclusions and principles, and are sure that he could give the reasons which are lacking; but his unfortunate method has produced a work which, while valuable for the initiated, would be very unsatisfactory for beginners.

One must know what the problems are before their history can have any value. Of course the biographical part is intelligible on its own account.

Christian Sociology. By J. H. W. STUCKENBERG, Professor in the Theological Department of Wittenberg College. New York: I. K. Funk & Co. 1880.

The author believes that Christianity is not meant for the individual alone, but for society also. He holds, therefore, that Christianity contains implicitly a theory of society and laws for its government. To illustrate this thought is the aim of this book. Without doubt the conceptions of Christianity current among English and American Christians are too individualistic and atomistic; and its social significance is overlooked. The author has done well in calling attention to this fact, and to the need of a larger and more organic view. We can hardly estimate his claims to be a pioneer in this realm as highly as the author himself; for we see no essential difference between his aim and that of Christian ethics, except that the latter is the more comprehensive. The author aims to deduce social duties from the standpoint of Christian life and doctrine, while Christian ethics aim to deduce the law of the entire life from the same source. The work might also be called somewhat rambling in plan and execution. Nevertheless, it is genial and suggestive, and very well worth reading. It is all the more valuable to the American ministry because of our grievous errors on the side of an exclusive individualism.

History, Biography, and Topography.

A Year of Wreck. A True Story. By A. VIOTIN. 12mo., pp. 472. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

This book is a narrative of facts, yet it is as fascinating as a work of fiction. It is a story of Mississippi cotton planting by two Northern gentlemen, a druggist and a physician, who, charmed by the fortune on paper which their figures most convincingly assured them, emigrated thither in 1866, in the days when Andrew Johnson occupied the presidential chair. The promised short road to wealth was very alluring, but the expected nine hundred bales dwindled in the outcome to sixty-five, and the figured income of a hundred and eight thousand to six thousand five hundred. It was, indeed, "a year of wreck." Numbers emigrated southward at the close of the war, and after a like experience returned to

the North. Our author intimates that the philosophy of the general wreckage is the same. If so, their failure is not to be wondered at. It would seem that any average business man would, before investing, take certain precautions, make certain inquiries, and ascertain certain particulars and facts; but the principle of leaping before looking is the chief one of this year's work. As a picture of Southern life, in 1866, the book is worth reading. It shows us both white and black, the latter just emancipated, and with all the habits and vices engendered by the slave system, and the former expecting to recover through Andy Johnson all they had lost by the war. The then existing intense hate and persecution of Northern men appear in the narrative.

A supplementary chapter shows our planters in 1880 in high prosperity, and attests a great change in many respects among the people of the South. Free negro labor is a success. Manufactories are springing up, and railroads are in construction; business methods are improving; and the South is gaining in many important respects. We rejoice in this prosperity, in the full belief that that section may become the garden of the country. But it must be by education—compulsory education for black and white—industry, temperance, and freedom of speech and vote, and an unfettered and correctly-counted ballot. The great need of the South to-day is emancipation from its "mischievous boys," its bull-dozers and tissue ballots, and its barbarian crowd of ignorant, whiskey-drinking ruffians. When the good and true men of that section shall assert themselves, as they can and ought, we verily believe the South will enter upon a career of prosperity as yet unknown. Its political intolerance, now its ineffable disgrace, will then be likely to disappear, and a firm hand will maintain the equal rights of all men before the law. w.

A History of Christian Doctrines. By the late Dr. K. R. HAGENBACH. With an Introduction by E. H. Plumptre, D.D. Vol. I. 8vo., pp. 438. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1880. [Scribner & Welford's imported edition. Price \$3.]

This is a new translation from the author's fifth and last edition. The present volume covers his first two periods of Christian doctrine; namely, Period First, extending from A.D. 70 to A.D. 254, by him entitled "The Age of Apologetics," and Period Second, extending to A.D. 730, "The Age of Polemics." We need not again commend this standard work. The present volume is especially valuable as giving us the earliest phenomena of Christian defense and Christian doctrine.

Old Times in the Colonies. By CHARLES CARLTON COFFIN, author of "The Boys of '76," "The Story of Liberty," etc. Illustrated. 8vo., tinted paper, cloth and gilt. Pp. 460. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Mr. Coffin's book essays to shed a fresh interest upon those beginnings of our continental existence which our historians have generally found unattractive ground for the general reader. He dedicates his work to the "boys and girls of America," and aims to suit their taste by a popular, sketchy, colloquial, and sometimes incoherent and slightly ungrammatical style, aided by a rich abundance of illustrative cuts. The history and the cuts contrive to present a rich variety of events, characters, and scenes, extending from the seas and seals of our arctic to the palms on the banks of the St. John's and the exuberant foliage of Florida. The lessons of enterprise, freedom, and religion involved in the history are faithfully presented. It is a very acceptable present to the "boys and girls," young and old.

The History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire. By EDWARD GIBBON, Esq. Family Edition. With a complete Index of the whole Work. Abridged and Edited by JAMES A. DEAN, D.D. In two volumes, 12mo. Vol. I., pp. 570. New York: Published for the Editor by Phillips & Hunt. 1880.

Dr. Dean has here endeavored to furnish a Gibbon free from the prolixity, skepticism, and pruriencies of the original work. He aims to give it a fullness sufficient to furnish an ample survey of the course of the history without making it too ponderous for the general reader. He appears to have executed the work with judgment and skill, and the popular reader may assume that he takes in hand an unobjectionable and attractive Gibbon.

Literature and Fiction.

Studies of the Greek Poets. By JOHN ADDINGTON SYMONDS, author of "Sketches and Studies in Southern Europe," etc. Two vols., small 12mo., pp. 488, 419. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

Mr. Symonds has splendid qualifications for giving us unsurpassable dissertations on Greek poetry. He is an elegant pagan. He is an idolater of ideal beauty. He has ranged through the elegant literature of various languages, and the Greek appears to be his specialty. He has a rich appreciation of that wonderful development of genius, which awakened without a parallel in previous human history in the little spot of Greece, speaking such thoughts of beauty and wisdom in the most wonderful of human languages, as to render Greece the esthetic teacher of the

most cultured peoples of the world through subsequent ages. His volumes present us a series of disquisitions, exhibiting a rich mastery of the subject in a style of great brilliancy. By a most wonderful reversal of the laws of gradual development, Greek poetry opens with a morning brighter than midnoon in the poems of Homer. Then comes the drama, truly beginning with the sublimest genius of classic antiquity, Æschylus, in equal defiance of developmental themes. Meanwhile the lyric poets are flinging up their witching strains; and then after Euripides, Greek poetry draws out her long anti-climax in almost uninterrupted deterioration.

When we said Mr. Symonds was a pagan, understand us not as intimating that he is a literal worshiper of any thing. His Agnosticism hangs like a gloom over his volumes, as the sense of coming nothingness hung over the thought and productions of some of the best minds of Greek antiquity. His sole remedy for the darkness of pessimism which godlessness lets in upon the soul is that which he recognizes as accepted by the best Greek mind—a desperate but resolutely cheerful manliness.

Miscellaneous Works of Lord Macaulay. Edited by his Sister, LADY TREVELYAN. In five volumes, 8vo. Vol. I, pp. 628; Vol. II, pp. 654; Vol. III, pp. 670; Vol. IV, pp. 669; Vol. V, pp. 570. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

This magnificent set of volumes, neatly boxed, is another of those literary presents to the scholar's and gentleman's library with which the Harper press has been so prolific. We need not say that Macaulay is supremely a *classic* in English literature, and that these essays, with the closing volume of parliamentary speeches, stand without a rival in their class. As to the supposed *dogmatism* pervading Macaulay's writings, which prompted the keen *bonmot* of Lord Melbourne, "I would be glad to be as sure of any thing as Macaulay is of every thing," we may say that we prefer the positiveness of Macaulay to the slack Pyrrhonism of Melbourne. Give us the man of positive conviction and explicit expression.

Periodicals.

The President's Message.

President Hayes closes his series of annual messages in a justly cheerful, if not triumphant, tone. His candid opposers admit that no purer administration has ever honored our national history. As to the charge of *fraud* in his election the question may

be fairly raised whether the apparent popular majority of his opponent was not truly *the fraud*. After passion has subsided, calm history may decide that had there been what General Hancock so neatly calls "a free ballot and a fair count," Mr. Hayes was the real choice of a majority of the legal voters of our country. General Garfield, if duly counted in as well as elected, will be, we trust, not a partisan but a patriotic President. He was in full sympathy with the conciliatory policy by which Mr. Hayes for a while endeavored to unite the heart of the nation. He, indeed, then declared that the time for a sectional platform was past; little anticipating that he would be forced by the South herself to be elected on a necessary antithetical sectional platform to save the country from being seized by a Southern sectional *coup d'état*. We doubt not that under President Garfield's administration a practicable civil service reform, advocated, indeed, by the best men of both parties, will complete a work which Mr. Hayes has, with all the efficiency in his day possible, successfully begun. This reform will expel from our politics a large share of the selfish violence arising from the array of two stupendous armies of office-holders and office-seekers against each other, and thereby diminish the danger of our national elections.

It was by two concurrent causes that Mr. Garfield's election was gained, namely, the *solid South* and the *business interests*. Both these causes were well stated by a Southern Democratic business man, (of course not by a Southern politician,)* Dr. Si-

* How some Southern politicians deliver themselves may appear from the following extract from the "Solid South," recently established in Memphis, and it may be Memphis' response to the sympathies she received from the North in her late distress:

The Democratic masses in both the confederate and federal sections of these virtually dis-United States are sick, *sick*, sick of the putrid, peccant, and pusillanimous marches, counter-marches and surrenders that have characterized the pestilential policy of the cowardly and crawl-about conservatives in our party household since the surrender. The shams, sneakbys, and snakes-in-the-grass who have only too frequently exercised a controlling influence in making our party platforms, nominating our party tickets, and managing our party campaign since the dastardly new departure of 1871, have deserted the last living, breathing, throbbing principle of Democracy, and are moving heaven, earth, and the other place to make the world believe they are better radicals than the radicals themselves. . . . They think that they can thus befool and bejuggle the bloody-shirters of blue-bellydom into the fond belief that we are a reconstructed people, when the fact is that we are not reconstructed; when the fact is that we hate a Union that is cemented by the blood of our fellow-partisans; when the fact is that we loathe the star-spangled rag that reminds us of the crimes of our conquerors; when the fact is that we spit upon federal legislation that seeks to limits the powers and prerogatives of our sovereign Commonwealths.

In presenting the initial issue of the "Solid South" to the public we want it un-

monds, president of a Charleston bank. He said just after the election:

A few days before the election a gentleman came into my office and began talking about the State of South Carolina consols. He said that he was satisfied that if Hancock was elected the bonds would appreciate, and if Garfield was elected they would depreciate in value. I told him then that my opinions were *just the reverse*, and that I believed that if Garfield was elected *our securities would be improved*. To-day he called to see me again, and said: "You were right; South Carolina bonds have gone up from one to one and a half per centum, and there is an increased demand for them from the North." He asked me to give him my opinion as to the reason for this, and I told him that it was because *Garfield was the candidate of the great party which represented the wealth and intelligence of the North*, which was opposed to every thing that smacked of repudiation, and the reflection of that policy upon the South would strengthen the opposition to repudiation in the Southern States. Of course it is not Garfield himself, but it is the party he represents, that has this influence. I think that the policy of the incoming administration toward the South will necessarily be to *develop all her resources*. The South is the best customer the North has, and the people of the North have too much intelligence to do any thing to cripple us. But as the result of the election has shown, *they are equally determined that we shall not rule them*. It was, in my opinion, the conviction that the Solid South and the success of the Democratic party would destroy them that made the people of the North so solid against us. The very men who gave hundreds of thousands of dollars to insure the success of the Republican party are the very men who will throw their whole influence to prevent any action on the part of the government which would injure the South. It is to *their interest* that they should see us a prosperous people. The South cannot afford to remain solid any longer. They have made nothing by it, and the varied interests of the States is bound to create a division in sentiment. I have not the slightest idea that the Republican party will lend its power to uphold governments in the Southern States which would be detrimental to the interests of the South. But of one thing I am sure, and that is that they will fight for fair and free elections; and the sooner this state of things is reached the better it will be for us. For instance, I don't think that it would be to the benefit of this bank that one of my tellers should cheat my customers out of money that goes into the vaults of the bank. It would be all very well for a while, but it would ruin the bank in the long run. I am associated in business with both Republicans and Democrats at the North, and I find no difference between them upon the great financial interests of the country. When people talk about Garfield ruining the South, the simple question is, whether he

derstood that we wash white our hands of the doings and misdoings of the conservative tricksters, toad-eaters, and thimble-riggers in our party ranks. They may crawl on their bellies and lick the bare feet of their Yankee masters, but we will defy the devil dogs of Puritan power, and tell them to their teeth that they can never ram their black, besotted, and beastly heresies down our throats or down the throats of the Democratic masses. . . . We will speak our sentiments in words as hot and hard as musket balls on the wing; we will champion State sovereignty—including the incidents of secession and nullification; we will favor the repeal of all the legislation that the radical party has spewed upon the statute books; we will advocate free trade; we will oppose national banks, ship bounties, railroad subsidies, and every thing that has the smack and flavor of a moneyed monopoly. In brief, we propose to publish a paper that will commend itself to the Democratic masses by . . . its defiant devotion to the prerogatives and principles that thundered from the guns, pealed from trumpets, and hung like a glory over the battle banner of the confederate cause.

We trust that such drunken ravings will exert by reaction the same effect on sensible Southern people that the similar ravings of the drunken Helots did upon the young Spartans—that of making them sober.

will paralyze the material interests of the South because of its solid opposition to him. He is a man of too much sense, and he is the representative of a party that depends too largely upon the South for its business prosperity, to commit any such suicidal act. Every thing points to a continuance of prosperity. It cannot be otherwise. The country can't help prospering.—*Charleston (S. C.) News and Courier.*

The adoption and announcement by the Southern leaders of a bold plan, by a concentrated spring, to pounce upon the government of the country, was a specific act at a certain date, taking the country unawares. We well remember the earnest note of remonstrance and warning of Dr. Fuller, of the "Atlanta Advocate," when the ominous phrase "a Solid South" first broke upon the public ear. He foretold to the South with the clearness of prophecy the disaster that would follow that fatal aggression. There was no call, and no excuse, for this solidification. President Hayes had done his best for the obliteration of sectional political lines. Had the Southern leaders, like patriotic statesmen, been content with their fair share in the government of the country, the antithesis of North and South would have soon become as little significant as the antithesis of East and West, which is just what should be. But Dr. Simonds most truly said of Northern voters "they are determined that we shall not rule them." The South had Congress; they must also have the Executive and the Supreme Court. Now, had the relations of South to North been as harmonious as those of West to East, such a concurrence would have been no way alarming. A spontaneous preponderance of the West would waken no revolt in the East. But here it is not spontaneous; it is a complotment for the very purpose of a sectional supremacy. Nor was this sectionalism at all diminished by their selecting a Northern candidate for the presidency. The North very well knew that to elect General Hancock, whatever his personal excellences, was to elect the "Solid South" in supremacy over us; a supremacy not the less objectionable because she thereby rules us through a Northern proconsul. In all the qualifications for governing the whole nation every candid Southerner will admit the South is illy equipped. In population, in wealth, in intelligence, in enterprise, in political wisdom, in all the elements that constitute prosperity and national greatness, she is in a sad minority.

This unpreparedness for rule is especially emphasized by the second decisive cause of General Hancock's defeat—the business interests of the country, not only North, but, as President Simonds indicates, as truly at the South. When Democracy apparently won in Maine, business confidence perceptibly fell; when it was

defeated in Indiana, it rose, and the pulse beat alike in North and South; and not with the city millionaires alone, but with the humblest dealers in all the sections of the country. It was the secret consciousness of the whole people that the rule of the Democratic leaders would be a rule of recklessness. The result of their rule in the South is slight encouragement for other sections to accept its blessings.

For "The future policy of the South" in view of her defeat we will quote another Southern authority, this time a politician of the extremest school, editor of the "Savannah News." He thinks that in spite of the fact that the South showed her non-sectionalism by nominating a northern Union General for President, and that "she has striven to secure the blessings [?] of honest, impartial, Democratic government to the whole country," yet "the more embittered has become the majority of the voters of the North against her." "The sentiment . . . that the wealthy and intelligent North should control the poverty-stricken South has been generally accepted." He infers, truly, that "so long as the South remains under the ban of poverty," [and he should have added, under that thriftlessness and disorder that made her "poverty,"] and in the "minority," she will be overruled; and he should have added *ought to be*. What right has a "minority," "poverty-stricken" through improvidence, to claim rule over enterprise, intelligence, wealth, and majority? That majority, most rightly, does not desire to be ruled by the statesmanship that has secured itself a minority by its intolerance of immigration, and brought on its "poverty" by recklessness. He proceeds to enumerate most eloquently and truly the unlimited resources of the South for wealth, omitting to tell us why these resources have for centuries been allowed to lie idle; and he concludes with one stroke of wisdom, namely, that the duty of the South is to go to work and "get rich." But this getting "rich" is to be done in the most exclusive way. Yet an ideal Chinese wall must still divide the South even in business from the North. We, the South, must get rich all alone; and by "ourselves;" "wrapt in the solitude of our own originality." Contrast these narrow utterances with the broad commercialism of President Simonds, and note the difference between a statesman and a—courtesy forbids our saying what.

"Get rich," that is the true maxim. In the name of all that is pure and peaceable let the South "get rich." So say we all; for wealth is not only a great element of national prosperity and power, but its acquirement, in the general, presupposes those qualities of peace,

order, industry, enterprise, and broad commercial liberality, which constitute character. In the process of getting "rich" the South would necessarily put off those habits which have made her poor and isolated, and would put on those qualities which would render her homogeneous with the North, and in that process sectionalism would disappear. President Simonds would calmly assure the editor that the commercial spirit regards the prosperity of each section as most desirable to the other, and just as fast as that spirit grows in the South, his sectional mad-dog virus would dry up. We, therefore, second the editor's motion, let the South "get rich." Her political demagogues would then grow sober, her political trouble would cease, and she would become a much more comfortable neighbor to her sister sections.

On the other hand, there is one point which the North, and all parties, are bound, calmly and candidly, to consider—the Negro problem. Underlying all the political violences and frauds in the South is the genuine grievance of "negro predominance." If the South is unfit to govern the country, is the negro, by race or education, fit to govern the South? There are Counties and States where the negroes are a strong majority; must the majority not only be enfranchised voters but also installed rulers? Here is the pinch. It may be easy for a Massachusetts Republican to say, Let the majority in South Carolina rule; but would he be willing, under that maxim, to enthrone a negro upper crust over Massachusetts? When a Northern Republican goes into a Southern Republican political meeting, say in Florida, what does he see? A crowd of black humanity with a few white leaders as their officers and spokesmen. Can he wonder that the proud white community look upon those leaders as aiming to overslaugh them with a servile domination? A very intense philanthropist or a northern Stalwart, fit counterpart to the southern Bourbon, may say, Let absolute right prevail; but most practical men will say that this is no case for absolute extremes. It is laying a most crushing weight upon the Southern negro to base the structure of a great national party upon him. He is unequal to the mission, and there is reason to believe that laws and penalties laid upon his opponents will fail to give him solidity. We acknowledge that the South is largely responsible for the severe conditions of this problem. The national administration, before enfranchising the negro, did offer her a constitutional amendment by which every State should have a representation in the national government proportioned to its number of voters, thereby leav-

ing the white South supreme in each State, with an inducement to enfranchise the negro just as fast as the white South could prepare him for safe citizenship. This most fair and equitable arrangement, which would have harmonized the elements, leaving the whole control in the hands of the more civilized South, was promptly *by the South rejected*. So that for the present sad condition of things the South herself is largely responsible. Rejecting a legal and constitutional arrangement of interests, she has chosen to right matters by unconstitutional repressive and fraudulent methods; methods that barbarize her population, unsettle her society, and drive out immigration and capital from her borders. But the past cannot be recalled, and the candid inquiry remains: What remedy for the present and future?

We claim no extra wisdom on this subject, but we imagine that, concurrently with the process of getting rich, the white Southerners have in their hands two or three peaceful and natural remedies. The first is *immigration*. Let the South organize a system for calling in a Northern and European population, as well as invite Northern capital. Both have tried to go in, and have been repelled both by Southern purpose and by the apparent unquietness of Southern society. This immigration would reduce the colored majorities, and tend to so divide the negro vote that no man would be elected because he is a negro, but because, though a negro, he has the highest qualifications. The South, in solidifying herself on the sectional line, perpetuates the color line, and prompts the aspiration of the colored majorities to rule by the color line. Let the South divide on special questions, and the negro vote will be divided, and the danger of negro domination be diminished. The second is *education*, for both races, by national aid. The intellectual culture line will thus be in time greatly obliterated, rendering more easy a forgetfulness of the color line in public matters. The third, *emigration*. Even the late "exodus," attended though it has been by charges of oppression on one side, and of political colonization on the other, has had its benefits.* Cannot the

* The leading paper of our colored people, the Philadelphia "Christian Recorder" speaks thus of this "exodus:" "That it will continue we have no doubt. And that it ought to continue we are of the same mind. There are altogether too many of us at the South. Labor is too plentiful. Capital too domineering. Scattering should be the word. Not to Kansas alone, but all over the North, save its great cities. Agricultural in their capacities, let our brethren seek the farming regions of the great North and the greater West, and all will be well.

American Colonization Society be aided in her work of beneficence alike for America and Africa? Or can there not be a "reservation" for our African as well as for our Indian people, where a new State may be organized of colored population?

But the above invitation to immigration must forego all inquisition into the religious or political opinions of the immigrant. How incapable the extreme Southern Democrat at present is of such tolerance, how little he yet knows what such tolerance is, is illustrated by a Florida paper lying before us. The editor is zealous for immigration; he repels indignantly the imputation that he is not a perfectly liberal advocate for a perfectly free incoming population. But then the incomer must not be a "carpet-bagger;" reserving to himself, of course, to decide what the very expansive term, "carpet-bagger," shall include; he must not encourage negroes to vote "against us;" that is, he must not be a Republican leader where the voters are colored men; and he predicts, since the last election, that in a brief period all the radical leaders in Florida will leave the State. Banishment of political opponents from the State is thus his ready thought. Not long since he advised Mr. Bisbee to leave the State; said Bisbee's only crime being, we believe, that he was elected to Congress from an eastern district of Florida, and deprived of his seat by a Democratic governor and a Democratic Congress. Now this editor intends to be, thinks he is, and on most points doubtless is, a truly liberal gentleman. Yet take the sum total of his utterances, and they amount to about the claim that every active Republican ought to be banished from Florida. He seems to imagine that he and his associate thinkers have the right to prescribe the terms of admission into Florida; and to dictate exclusion from the State even to those who are already in it, unless they fulfill the conditions. He forgets that by the American Constitution, *The citizens of each State shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of citizens in the several States.* He and his extreme brethren have yet to learn, that as a Floridian has the same rights in New York as a New Yorker, so the New Yorker has the same rights in Florida as a Floridian. And we may add, that as this editor complains very bitterly of the injury done to Florida by radical slanders, so we can assure him that no slander is so injurious to Florida as the political intolerance of which he is so unconscious, yet so genuine, a specimen. The fact is, that slavery has so ingrained political proscription into the Southern mind, that the true Bourbon but slowly learns what tolerance is. A Northern man never imagines that he has

a right, beyond the statutory provisions, to say who may or may not come into the State. But the Southern Bourbon imagines that it is his right to sit imperially, and admit just the man he pleases to certificate. At present his permit allows all Democrats, and also all Republicans who consent to disfranchise themselves of their rights of free action in politics. We are glad to say that there is less of this proscriptiveness in Florida than elsewhere; especially in eastern Florida, where an annual rush of Northern visitors, three fourths of whom are doubtless Republican, brings a volume of greenbacks and bank checks, that are acceptable even to a Democratic pocket, and soothing to the paroxysms of the most frantic Bourbon. We said once to a typical Floridian, boasting of the glorious future of Florida, "But all that arises from the abolition of slavery." "That is so," replied he. "But you sustained slavery." "Yes, I was as big a fool as any of 'em."

It would be a dishonor, at the present time, for any evangelical Church to be outdone by the commercial interests in the work of peace. There is no moral or religious excuse at the present hour for churchly cherishing of the spirit of sectional strife. The religious and the commercial community should harmonize in opposition to the war of the politicians. The time should be hastened when it would be a matter of as much indifference whether North or South has a spontaneous preponderance as East or West. The cordial spirit of our late General Conference, we believe, convinced our many Southern visitors that we are sincere in our aspirations for Christian and national harmony. In this spirit we united, North and South, in heartily urging the ecumenical movement for a union of all the Methodisms of the world. On that movement we believe the divine blessing rests; and we hail it as not only tightening the cords of our national Union, but as increasing the ties that bind the world together in the bonds of truth and peace.

Foreign Theological Publications.

Die Darwin'schen Theorien und ihre Stellung zur Philosophie, Religion, und Moral.
Von RUD. SCHMID. Stuttgart, 1878: Moser.

The Darwinian excitement is beyond its crisis. The heads on both sides are become much cooler. It is begun to be felt that it is very unwise for scientists to theologize so hastily from such

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—13

hypothetical premises, and equally unwise for theologians to be so overzealous in steadying the "ark" before it is in any real danger. Schmid's book (pp. 426) is very cool, and clear, and Christian. It gives, first, a candid statement of the various Darwinian and Darwinistic theories; then it considers the bearing of these theories on the many questions of philosophy, ethics, and religion. The style is pleasing, the temper admirable, the results pacifying. What if some of the main points of Darwinism were true? Christianity would remain undisturbed. But they are not yet proved. Conclusion: Let physics continue on, undisturbed, its valuable investigations in one sphere of truth; let theology still work on, unjealously, in its grand sphere of ALL truth. The points at which Darwinistic specialists have violated the laws of true science are: 1. They have indulged too much in hypotheses, and ignored the laws of logic. Their conclusions are largely colored with enthusiasm and imagination. 2. They exaggerate the influence of *selection*. The influence of climate and of other physical conditions are more potent than that of selection: instead of coming to the aid of selection they generally tend to counteract it. Sexual selection is not mainly governed by beauty and force. It is largely influenced by the law of opposites, the one party instinctively mating with another whose advantages contrast with his defects, or conversely—which tends on the whole not to the improvement of the race, but simply to the conservation of the original type. 3. They exaggerate the influence of heredity. When heredity is not artificially directed, it tends rather to the degeneration of the species than to the survival of the fittest. Very marked traits are observed to appear utterly unexpectedly, and then suddenly to vanish for a generation or a whole epoch. The noblest qualities are the lot of the fewest individuals, and are not generally transmitted. It is not infrequent that an ideally beautiful individual springs from uncomely parents, and the converse. 5. They press unwarrantably the analogy between *artificial* and *natural* selection. The finest products of artificial selection are, in a certain degree, abnormal and monstrous. They serve only the special purpose of the artful producer; they do not profit the individual produced. The "improved" kinds of animals, birds, and plants are uniformly less hardy and less capable of self-assertion than were the "common" individuals from which they sprang. So soon as left to themselves, they speedily revert to the common type, or become extinct. Which proves that artificial selection is limited in its effects to mere individuals,

but does not affect or in any way benefit the race. 5. The most serious error of the Darwinists is their obscuring of the *idea of species*. This is a matter of radical importance; for this idea is the pole-star of natural science. An essential element in the notion of species is that of *filiation*. This they generally ignore. And their indistinct idea of species leads to equally obscure notions of race and variety. They perpetually confound *species*, *races*, and *varieties*. And this vagueness leads them to overlook the radical difference between *hybridization* and *metissage*. The *hybrid* comes from the crossing of different species; the *metis* from the crossing of races or varieties of the *same* species. Now the former can be effected only with the utmost difficulty, and the individuals resulting are uniformly feeble, and usually sterile. In any case, they speedily perish, or revert to the type of a single one of their producing species. They never permanently retain the traits of both. On the contrary, the *metis* is produced spontaneously without the least artificial constraint. And it has no defect of vigor or of reproductive power. Here there is no violation of the integrity of the species; the races or varieties uniting are of the *same* species. 6. There is, therefore, no warrant whatever for the immense Darwinistic inference of a *transformation of species*. It is utterly contradicted by the only two things which could prove it: the results of experiments, and the historical evidence of the geological records. The records of the rocks show not transformation, but only permanent persistence of type. And when refuge is taken to imaginary millions of ages, the well ascertained laws of physics and chemistry put in their *caveat*: such fabulous millions of millions of years have not existed. The remains of species found in the most remote geological ages are like those of species now existing, and all the artificial variations which man has been able to effect are but as a momentary ripple on a narrow surface; they soon disappear, and the great level stream of the species moves on as from of old.

Encyclopédie des Sciences Religieuses. Publiée Sous la Direction de F. Lichtenberger, Doyen de la Faculté de Théologie Protestante de Paris. Paris: Sandoz et Fischbacher.

The four stout volumes which have already appeared of this master-work of French Protestant erudition fully meet the high expectations awakened by the prospectus of the work in 1877. It is to embrace the whole scope of subjects falling under the head of "religious sciences." Each article of importance is the produc-

tion of a recognized expert on the subject discussed. The spirit of the whole is purely scientific. The tone of the work is evangelically catholic. Contributors to the work are eminent men from all folds of the Church. M. Lichtenberger, the editor-in-chief, is a fine representative of French orthodoxy, and enjoys the esteem and confidence of all the Churches. He exercises the right of striking out from the articles of his contributors every thing of a polemical or otherwise offensive character. . . . Each subject is, therefore, presented simply on its own footing; and the whole work bears largely the character of compact scientific summary or of direct historical statement. From a careful examination of a wide range of test articles, we are highly pleased with the tone of the work. We mention a few points. The work is *not* Calvinistic. Nor is it sacramentarian; the Anglican ritualist will find in it no crumb of comfort. It is just to Arminianism, and to all schools of Methodism. And in general its treatment of the history of every evangelical sect is candid and sympathetic. As a whole the work ought to find its way to all our college and theological libraries. And we cordially advise all preachers who read French to procure it for their personal enjoyment. It is a pleasure to read it. When we take down our "Herzog" we expect a little tug of war, and a positive exertion of attention intermingled with an occasional yawn. But our "Lichtenberger" is an esthetic delight; it keeps us awake even of a hot summer afternoon. The work is finely printed, and, we may add, cheaply. It appears in installments of 160 octavo pages, at seventy cents per part. The whole work is to consist of twelve volumes of 800 pages each, every five installments making a volume. It can be had by mail, or through any foreign bookseller. We close by citing a passage of statistics from an article on Egypt. It is by E. Vaucher: "The wars of 1874-75 nearly trebled the dominions of the Khedive. He now rules over at least 17,000,000 souls. Among his new subjects there are 1,000,000 Nubians, 5,000,000 Ethiopians, and nearly 6,000,000 of Africans, (in his southern borders.) To Egypt proper the official census gives 5,252,000. The religion of the vast majority of the whole population is that of Islam. But contact with Christian nations has rendered Islamism more tolerant here than in any other country. The venerable Christian community of the Copts have asserted their existence without interruption for eleven centuries of Mohammedan subjugation. In the eighth century they numbered some 600,000 communicants; they still number about 200,000. The head of their hierarchy is a patriarch. The Khedive invests him with his office after his con-

secration. But this is a mere formality, paid for by a compliment in money. Under the patriarch there are at present twelve bishops.

The other orders of the priesthood are arch-priests, priests, deacons, and readers. The monastic life is largely prevalent, there being among them at least threescore of convents. The other Christians of Egypt number some 80,000. They are mostly foreigners. The Roman Church has long tried in vain to win the Copts into submission to the Pope. There is a bishop at Cairo, with some score of missionary outposts. The whole Catholic population numbers 40,000. Of these some 10,000 are Copts. The original Catholic Church of Egypt, the Orthodox Greek, still numbers some 35,000 souls. Of Protestants of all denominations the number is certainly below 10,000. Few countries have proved more unfruitful as missionary ground. The hope once entertained of reviving the spirituality of the Copts is not likely to be realized. The Missionary Society of Basle made extensive efforts between 1861 and 1872. Their unsuccess seems to have discouraged them. As yet, therefore, it must be confessed, a solid, reliable nucleus of a Protestant Church in Egypt has not been formed."

Miscellaneous.

Analysis and Formation of Latin Words. With Table for Analysis, List of Books, etc. By FRANK SMALLEY, A.M. 12mo. Pp. 87. Syracuse, N. Y.: John T. Roberts, 1879.

Our Syracuse Latin professor has here furnished a unique class-book, original, we believe, in its character, and arising from the needs of his pupils. It consists of a presentation of the principles, with exercises, of verbal analysis by distinguishing the roots and tracing the modifications through which they pass in the formation of words. A number of ruled blank pages are added for the student's practice. This is one of the results of comparative philology, by which new interest is given to the study of language and new benefits attained in its acquirement.

Sabbath Home Readings. A Series of Meditations for the Lord's Day; Upon Vital Themes of Spiritual Thought, Experience, and Duty. By J. W. CORNELIUS. 12mo., pp. 582. Baltimore: D. H. Carroll. 1879.

The writer informs us that his volume is prepared for those who look in vain for just the right book for Sunday reading. He has no conception that the Sunday newspaper satisfies all demands. His plan is to furnish a consecutive series of reading for every Sunday in the year. These are written in a pure style, a devout

and reflective spirit, with a due depth of both Christian doctrine and Christian experience. It is very admirable for consecrating the Sabbath to the work of growing in Christian life.

Pastoral Days; or, *Memories of a New England Year*. By W. HAMILTON GIBSON. Illustrated. 8vo., gilt. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

This is a book of beauty, an annual for this or any other year. Mr. Gibson's descriptions of the New England season are written in the style of a most minute observer and graphic delineator of nature; and the illustrations, designed by his own hand, are singularly delicate and truthful.

Conquests by the Sea. Eleventh Annual Report of the President of the Ocean Grove Camp-Meeting Association of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Paper covers, 8vo., pp. 48. Published by order of the Association, Ocean Grove, N. J. 1880.

A very interesting survey of one of the most successful efforts to raise a Christian community by the sea-side.

THE STANDARD SERIES. 4to., paper. *Pulpit Table-Talk*. By EDWARD B. RAMSAY, LL.D. *The Bible and the Newspaper*. By CHARLES H. SPURGEON. *Lacon*; or, *Many Things in Few Words*. Addressed to Those who Think. By REV. C. C. COLTON, A.M. New York: I. K. Funk & Co.

History of the English People. By JOHN RICHARD GREEN, M.A. Vol. IV. The Revolution, 1683-1760. Modern England, 1760-1815. 8vo., pp. 519. New York: Harper & Brothers.

History of Our Own Times. From the accession of Queen Victoria to the General Election of 1880. By JUSTIN M'CARTHY. Vol. II. Small 8vo., pp. 682. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

The Doctrines and Discipline of the Methodist Episcopal Church, 1880. With an Appendix. Edited by BISHOP HARRIS. 32mo., pp. 460. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe.

New Colorado and the Santa Fe Trail. By A. A. HAYES, JUN., A. M. Illustrated. 8vo., pp. 200. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

Duty, with Illustrations of Courage, Patience, and Endurance. By SAMUEL SMILES LL.D. 12mo., pp. 412. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The Illustrated Catholic Family Annual for 1881. Paper covers, 12mo., pp. 144. New York: The Catholic Publication Society Co.

Report of the Commissioner of Education for the year 1878. 8vo., pp. 780. Washington: Government Printing-office. 1880.

The Phæacians of Homer. The Phæacian Episode of the Odyssey, as comprised in the Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, Eleventh, and Thirteenth Books. With Introduction, Notes, and Appendix. By AUGUSTUS C. MERRIAM, Ph.D. Illustrated, 12mo., pp. 286. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

English Men of Letters. Edited by John Morley. *John Locke*, by THOMAS FOWLER. 12mo., pp. 200. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

The Class-Meeting. In Twenty Short Chapters. By O. P. FITZGERALD, D.D. 16mo., pp. 104. Nashville, Tenn.: Southern Publishing House. 1880.

American Manual of Parliamentary Law; or, *The Common Law of Deliberative Assemblies*. Systematically arranged for the Use of the Parliamentarian and the Novice. By GEORGE T. FISH. 16mo., pp. 140. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

Genesis I-II: An Essay on the Bible Narrative of Creation. By AUGUSTUS R. GROTE, A.M. 12mo., paper. Pp. 82. New York: Asa K. Butts. 1880.

FRANKLIN SQUARE LIBRARY. 4to., paper: *The Life of James A. Garfield*. By EDMUND KIRKE. Pp. 64. Three volumes of the English Men of Letters. Edited by JOHN MORLEY: 1. *Robert Burns*. By PRINCIPAL SHAIRP. 2. *Oliver Goldsmith*. By WILLIAM BLACK. 3. *John Bunyan*. By JAMES FROUDE. Pp. 81. Three volumes of the English Men of Letters: 1. *Samuel Johnson*. By LESLIE STEPHEN. 2. *Sir Walter Scott*. By RICHARD H. HUTTON. 3. *William M. Thackeray*. By ANTHONY TROLLOPE. Pp. 88. *The Early History of Charles James Foz*. By GEORGE OTTO TREVELYAN, M.P. Pp. 84. *A Sailor's Sweetheart*, etc. By W. CLARK RUSSELL. Pp. 81. *Three Recruits, and the Girls They Left Behind Them*. By JOSEPH HATTON. Pp. 58. *Horace M'Lean: A Story of a Search in a Strange Place*. By ALICE O'HANLON. Pp. 66. *From The Wings*. By B. H. BUXTON. Pp. 52. *He That Will Not When He May*. By MRS. OLIPHANT. Pp. 86. *Endymion*. By the RIGHT HON. BENJAMIN DISRAELI. Pp. 84. *Duty, with Illustrations of Courage, Patience, and Endurance*. By SAMUEL SMILES, LL.D. Pp. 68. New York: Harper & Brothers.

HARPER'S HALF-HOUR SERIES. 32mo, paper. *Life Sketches of Macaulay*. By CHARLES ADAMS, D.D. Pp. 140. *A Primer of French Literature*. By GEORGE SAINTSBURY. Pp. 216. New York: Harper & Brothers.

The Western Farmer of America. By AUGUSTUS MONGREDIEN. In paper., 12mo. Pp. 30. Cassell, Petter, Galpin & Co., London, Paris, and New York.

Shakespeare's Tragedy of King Lear. Edited, with Notes, by WILLIAM J. ROLFE, A.M. With Engravings. 16mo., pp. 267. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

Good Government. Appeal of Peter Cooper, now in the 91st Year of his Age, to all Legislators, Editors, Religious Teachers, and Lovers of Our Country. By PETER COOPER. Paper covers. 8vo., pp. 48. New York: J. J. Little & Co., *Printers. 1880.

Higher Education of Medical Men, and its Influence on the Profession and the Public. Being the Address delivered before the American Academy of Medicine, at its Fifth Annual Meeting. By F. D. LENTZ, A.M., M.D. Paper. 8vo., pp. 16. New York: Charles L. Birmingham & Co. 1880.

The American Conflict. A Household Story. By MARY S. ROBINSON. Three Volumes. 16mo. Illustrated. Vol. I, pp. 278; Vol. II, pp. 291; Vol. III, pp. 194. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.

The Early History of Charles James Foz. By GEORGE OTTO TREVELYAN, M.P. 8vo., pp. 470. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

The Senior Lesson Book. (Berean Series, No. 1.) *On the International Lessons for 1881*. 16mo., pp. 182. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe.

The Berean Question Book. (Berean Series, No. 2.) *On the International Lessons for 1881*. 16mo., pp. 179. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe.

The Berean Beginner's Book. (Berean Series, No. 3.) 16mo., pp. 208. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe.

The Italian Principia. Part I. A First Italian Course. Containing a Grammar, Delectus, and Exercise Book, with Vocabularies on the Plan of Dr. William Smith's "Principia Latina." 12mo., pp. 221. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

A Graded Spelling-Book. Being a Complete Course in Spelling for Primary and Grammar Schools. Two Parts in One Volume. By H. F. HARRINGTON. 16mo. Part I, pp. 78; Part II, pp. 92. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The Lesson Commentary on The International Sunday-School Lessons for 1881. By JOHN H. VINCENT, D.D., and Rev. J. L. HURLBUT, M.A. 8vo., pp. 342. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.

Four Centuries of English Letters. Selections from the Correspondence of One Hundred and Fifty Writers, from the Period of the Parton Letters to the Present Day. Edited and Arranged by W. BAPTISTE SCOONES. 12mo., pp. 578. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.

- Drifting and Anchored.* By MRS. E. J. RICHMOND, Author of "The M'Alisters," "The Jeweled Serpent," "Zoa Rodman," "The Fatal Dower," "Adopted," "Hope Raymond," etc. Three Illustrations. 16mo., pp. 253. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.
- Amy's Probation; or, Six Months at a Convent School. An Answer to the Question, Shall Protestant Girls be sent to Roman Catholic Schools?* By the Author of "Glaucia," "Flavia," "Ayesha," etc. Two Illustrations. 16mo., pp. 251. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.
- Sazby.* A Tale of Old and New England. By EMMA LESLIE, Author of "Ayesha," "Margarethe," "Walter," etc. Four Illustrations. 12mo., pp. 315. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.
- Walter.* A Tale of the Times of Wesley. By EMMA LESLIE, Author of "Leofwine the Saxon," "Conrad," etc. Four Illustrations. 12mo., pp. 364. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.
- Far Clad Adventurers; or Travels in Skin-canoes, on Dog-sledges, on Reindeer and on Snow-shoes, through Alaska, Kamchatka, and Eastern Siberia.* By Z. A. MUDGE, Author of "Arctic Heroes," "North-Pole Voyages," etc. Four Illustrations. 16mo., pp. 342. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.
- Elizabeth Christine, Wife of Frederick the Great.* By CATHERINE E. HURST. Five Illustrations. 16mo., pp. 253. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.
- Thirty-Eighth Annual Report of the Board of Education of the City and County of New York, for the Official Year Ending December 31, 1879.* 8vo., pp. 385. New York: Hall of the Board of Education. 1880.
- William Cullen Bryant.* A Biographical Sketch, with Selections from his Poems and other Writings. By ANDREW JAMES SYMINGTON, F.R.S.N.A. 12mo., pp. 256. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.
- The Origin of the Homeric Poems.* A Lecture by DR. HERMANN BONITZ. Translated from the Fourth German Edition, by LEWIS R. PACKARD. 16mo., pp. 119. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.
- The Boy Travelers in the Far East.* Part Second. Adventures of two Youths in a Journey to Siam and Java, with descriptions of Cochín-China, Cambodia, Sumatra, and the Malay Archipelago. By THOMAS W. KNOX, author of "Camp-Fire and Cotton Field," "Overland Through Asia," "Under Ground," "John," etc. Illustrated. 8vo., pp. 446. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.
- The End of a Coil.* By the Author of "The Wide, Wide World." 12mo., pp. 718. New York: Robert Carter & Brothers. 1880.
- Washington Square.* By HENRY JAMES, Jun., Author of "Daisy Miller," "An International Episode," etc. Illustrated by George Du Maurier. 12mo., pp. 266. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.
- George Bailey.* A Tale of New York Mercantile Life. By OLIVER OLDBOY. 12mo., pp. 288. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.
- Mary Anerly.* A Yorkshire Tale. By R. D. BLACKMORE, Author of "Alice Lorraine," "Lorna Doone," etc. 12mo., pp. 516. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.
- Friends Worth Knowing.* Glimpses of American Natural History. By Ernest Ingersoll. Illustrated. 12mo., pp. 255. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.
- Ben-Hur.* A Tale of the Christ. By LEW. WALLACE, Author of the "Fair-God." 12mo., pp. 552. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1880.
- The Moral Pirates.* By W. L. ALDEN. Illustrated. 12mo., pp. 148. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.
- American Newspaper Directory.* 8vo., pp. 1044. New York: George P. Rowell & Co. 1880.

METHODIST QUARTERLY REVIEW.

APRIL, 1881.

ART. I.—MAN'S PLACE IN TIME.

Preadamites; or, A Demonstration of the Existence of Man before Adam. By ALEXANDER WINCHELL, LL.D. Chicago: S. C. Griggs & Co. London: Trübner & Co. 1880.

Early Man in Britain and His Place in the Tertiary Period. By W. BOYD DAWKINS, M.A., F.R.S., F.G.S., F.S.A. London: Macmillan & Co. 1880.

The Auriferous Gravels of the Sierra Nevada of California. By J. D. WHITNEY. Cambridge: Printed by the University Press. 1879.

It is now nearly forty years since M. Boucher de Perthes and the Danish archæologists laid the foundation of the science of prehistoric archæology. The former, in 1844, announced his discoveries of implements of human workmanship in the drift of the Somme Valley, and earlier than that Thomsen, Worsaae, and others had unearthed "the primeval antiquities of Denmark," and formulated their theory of the Stone, Bronze, and Iron Ages, as based on the discoveries made in the Danish peat-bogs, stone-graves, and shell-mounds. Some ten or fifteen years later Dr. Keller brought to light the relics of man which had slept for so many years beneath the waves of the Swiss lakes; and contemporaneously with these explorations Bateman and Thurnam commenced their diggings into the ancient British barrows. The results of all these investigations were first collected and laid before the British public in 1863 by Sir Charles Lyell in his famous work on "The Antiquity of Man," and in 1865 by Sir John Lubbock in his "Prehistoric Times." After it rained it soon began to pour, and the evidences of the

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—14

antiquity of man seemed to multiply in every direction. Egyptian pottery was found at the depth of sixty feet in the mud of the Nile; human bones were reported from the coral rock of Florida; a human skeleton was found near New Orleans, whose age was estimated at nearly 60,000 years; a number of primitive canoes were found buried in the earth at a depth of from five to twenty-five feet from the surface, some of them twenty feet above high-water mark, near the city of Glasgow; stone axes were found in the river gravels of India associated with the bones of extinct animals; tombs, assigned to the Bronze Age, were found intact under the peperino, or volcanic tufa, in the neighborhood of Rome; arrowheads and pottery were found in association with the bones of the mastodon and mammoth in the United States; human bones were found with those of the elephant in the volcanic breccia of Puy de Dôme, in Central France; perforated sharks' teeth were found in the Pliocene beds of the east coasts of England; strange stories were told before scientific associations of human skulls found in the heart of Table Mountain, California. There were so many converging lines of evidence, and the authority on which the facts were given, or vouched for, was so high—men like Lyell, Wallace, Owen, Lubbock, Huxley, De Quatrefages, De Mortillet, Broca, Virchow, Dana, Cope—that the received Mosaic chronology was almost dropped by general consent, and the enemies of Christianity congratulated themselves that a ball at last had been driven through the sacred roll of the Hebrew books.

The age of the "artisans of the drift"—the men of the river gravels—was variously estimated at from 100,000 to 500,000 years. Mr. Alfred Russel Wallace calculated that the worked flints found beneath the stalagmitic floors in Kent's Cavern at Torquay had lain there 500,000 years, and another scientist expressed the opinion that they were even 1,000,000 years old. Sir Charles Lyell referred the gravels of the Somme Valley to the close of the Glacial Epoch, whose date he fixed at 800,000 years ago.

But in 1863 M. Desnoyers reported to the French Academy of Sciences that he had discovered far older traces of man than most of these in the upper Pliocene beds of St. Prest, and about the same time a similar discovery in Italy was reported to the

Italian Society of Natural Sciences by Professor Ramorino. Nor did the discoveries stop here. M. Bourgeois, in 1869, claimed that he had found flints chipped into cutting implements by man in the Calcaire de Beauce, near Pontlevoy, in France,* some of which had been subjected to the action of fire. It was this same year that Professor J. D. Whitney submitted to the American Association for the Advancement of Science the famous Calaveras skull found in the heart of Table Mountain, California, under 130 feet of volcanic and other deposits.

In 1874 Professor James Geikie, F.R.S.E., F.G.S., of the Geological Survey of Scotland, published his well-known work, "The Great Ice Age, and its Relation to the Antiquity of Man." At the close of the volume he placed the following *addendum*:

POSTSCRIPT. A remarkable discovery has just been announced. Mr. Tiddeman writes to "Nature," Nov. 6, 1873, that among a number of bones obtained during the exploration of the Victoria Cave, near Settle, Yorkshire, there is one which Mr. Busk has identified as *human*. Mr. Busk says: "The bone is, I have no doubt, human; a portion of an unusually clumsy fibula, and in that respect not unlike the same bone in the Mentone skeleton! The interest of this discovery consists in the fact that the deposit from which the bone was obtained is overlaid, as Mr. Tiddeman has shown, by a bed of stiff glacial clay containing ice-scratched boulders." Here, then, is direct proof that man lived *prior to the last inter-glacial period*. I have said above (p. 472) that it is highly likely that man may have occupied Britain in early inter-glacial or pre-glacial times; but I hardly looked for so early and complete a confirmation of views which I first published in the beginning of 1872.

The same year that Mr. Geikie's work appeared, Professor W. Boyd Dawkins, M.A., F.R.S., F.G.S., F.S.A., Curator of the Museum and Lecturer in Geology to the Owens College, Manchester, published his work on "Cave-Hunting," and in

* Just here we want to say, that if (as alleged) these flints found in the Miocene strata are (as they are) pronounced artificial by archaeological experts in France, then a very grave doubt is thrown over the artificial character of the quaternary flints from the Somme Valley. It is certain that no flints were chipped by man in the middle tertiary period, and if the flints of Thenay, which have deceived De Mortillet, Cartailhac, and others who profess to understand the subject, are really only natural forms, (like those found by Professor Hayden on the buttes at the base of the Uintah Mountains,) then it is very probable that the discoveries of M. Boucher de Perthes are all a delusion.

this he also referred to the discovery of the human fibula under the glacial clay in the Victoria Cave, and stated that it established the pre-glacial age of man.

In 1875 Professor Rüttimeyer, of Switzerland, announced in "*Archiv für Anthropologie*" that traces of basket-work and certain sharpened sticks had been found in a glacial bed at Dürnten, in the canton of Zurich.

Certain cut bones have also been reported recently from the Pliocene of Italy by Professor Capellini. It is on these numerous announcements—beginning with the Danish archæologists and M. Boucher de Perthes—that the opinion has grown up with regard to man's immense antiquity.

Two notable works on the subject have appeared within the past year; one by a well-known English geologist, and the other by a well-known American geologist—Professor Dawkins' "*Early Man in Britain*," and Professor Alexander Winchell's "*Preadamites*." Professor Dawkins is, perhaps, the best-informed man on the subject in Europe—at once geologist, palæontologist, and archæologist. Professor Winchell fills the chair of geology and palæontology in the University of Michigan, is the author of several well-known scientific works, and has made a study of anthropology for many years.

The evidence for the antiquity of man has been very much impaired in the past ten years; in fact, most of it has fairly broken down, as will appear in the course of this article.

The works by Professors Dawkins and Winchell which we have mentioned appeared about the same time last year; and it is a remarkable fact, that while both are written to establish the remote antiquity of the human race, the one is an answer to the other, and that they mutually destroy each other. Professor Dawkins undertakes to prove that man appeared on the earth in what he calls the Middle Pleistocene Period—after the glaciation and submergence of the land during the Great Ice Age—but argues that all the evidences for the existence of man in the Tertiary Era are unreliable and worthless; and not only so, but that, from a palæontological point of view, tertiary man is an improbability, if not an impossibility.

Professor Winchell, on the other hand, points out that the "middle pleistocene" or "palæolithic" man of Professor Dawkins is not older than "from 6,000 to 10,000 years," but argues

at the same time for the existence of man as far back in geological time as the Middle Tertiary—so that one argument devours the other. If Professor Dawkins' book is a trustworthy book, Professor Winchell's is entirely fanciful; and if Professor Winchell's work is trustworthy, that of Professor Dawkins is all wrong.

Professor Dawkins rests his opinion on the discovery of the relics of man in the bone-caves and river-gravels under conditions implying great changes since in the physical geography of the country, and in association with the remains of great pachyderms and carnivores now extinct. To this Professor Winchell replies:

When we come now to investigate the antiquity of the Stone Folk in Europe, it becomes simply an investigation of the remoteness of the last glaciation of the Northern Hemisphere. Many geologists have expressed the opinion that this is measured by tens, if not by hundreds, of thousands of years. I propose to explain concisely the grounds on which such estimates have been based, and to show that they are far from conclusive.

He then considers, 1. The astronomical hypothesis of glacial periods, and rejects it. 2. The contemporaneousness of man with animals now extinct. He points out in this connection that geologists have been mistaken in the opinion that animal extinctions date back to a remote period. Extinctions of species, he affirms, have taken place within the scope of human memory and tradition. He cites the gigantic birds of New Zealand, of Madagascar, and of Mauritius. He refers to the great auk of Newfoundland, and the Labrador duck; also to the capercaillie of Denmark, the aurochs, the great trees of California, etc. He states that he himself has exhumed the remains of the mammoth in Michigan from a deposit of peat not over eighteen inches deep; that a pipe has been obtained from the mounds near Davenport, Iowa, carved in the form of an elephant; that the Irish elk has left its bones in the bogs of Ireland, and that this species, in fact, is known to have survived till the fourteenth century. 3. The magnitude of the geological changes since man's advent. These, he thinks, need not imply a great lapse of time. He says:

We are in the midst of great changes, and are scarcely conscious of it. We have seen worlds in flames, and have felt a

comet strike the earth. We have seen the whole coast of South America lifted up bodily ten or fifteen feet and let down again in an hour. We have seen the Andes sink 220 feet in 70 years. . . . Vast transportations have also taken place in the coast-line of China. . . . We have seen the glaciers make progress in their retreat and disappearance. An ice-peak in the Tyrolese Alps has lowered eighteen feet in a few years. The Mer de Glace is a hundred feet lower or thinner than it was thirty years ago. . . . The Indians saw Lake Michigan spread its waters over Illinois. . . . The land at New Orleans grows seaward 338 feet annually. . . . Dr. Lanoye makes the delta of the Nile but 6,350 years old. . . . The Greeks retained a tradition of great hydrographic changes about the Black Sea. The Symplegades, or floating islands, were only landmarks which changed their position relatively to the changing shore-line. There was a time when the rocky barriers of the Thracian Bosphorus gave way and the Black Sea subsided. . . . During its former high level it was confluent with the Caspian and Aral seas, and thus another Mediterranean stretched eastward beyond the Dardanelles.

He concludes his review of these points as follows:

Whether, then, we consider the magnitude of the geological changes since the advent of European man, or his contemporaneity with animals now extinct, or his succession upon the continental glacier, we *do not* discover valid grounds for assuming him removed by a distance exceeding six to ten thousand years.—Pp. 431–441.

If we may trust these conclusions of Professor Winchell, "Early Man in Britain" has been written in vain—it is a mass of misdirected learning. Professor Winchell might have said even more than he has done on the points in question—we presume he merely meant to touch them. He might have cited, in connection with the extinction of animals, the disappearance of the reindeer from Central and Western Europe since the beginning of the Christian era. It was one of the capital points urged by Lyell and Lubbock, that in the days of the "Cave-men" the climate of France must have been intensely cold, because the reindeer ranged to the foot of the Pyrenees; but Professor Dawkins now admits that it was still in Germany in the time of Cæsar, ("Cave-Hunting," p. 79,) and we know that in the north of Scotland it survived to the twelfth century. Our learned author might have referred also to the disappearance of the elephant, rhinoceros, and lion from Northern India within a few centuries; to the condition of the carcasses of the

mammoth and rhinoceros found in the frozen sands of Siberia; to the presence of the lion in the mountains of Thrace in the time of Pausanias; to the existence of the hippopotamus in India in the time of Alexander the Great; to the existence of the elephant on the banks of the Tigris, probably as late as 800 B. C.

He might have added to his citations of geographical changes the elevation of the land at Lînde, in Sweden, 230 feet since the date of the neolithic shell-heaps in Denmark; to the elevation of the coasts of Norway 600 feet since the adjacent seas were characterized by their present temperature; to the elevation of 200 feet at Uddevalla, in Sweden; to the elevation of the island of San Lorenzo, (near Callao;) to the discovery of pottery in a marine deposit 150 feet above the sea on the coast of South America.

It abundantly appears, however, that the American professor does not believe in the antiquity of the relics found in the river-gravels and bone-caves of Europe. What, then, is his theory? It is this: That primeval man appeared, perhaps, in the Miocene Period (middle tertiary) on an ancient continent, now submerged, which lay in the Indian Ocean between Africa and South-eastern Asia—a continent called by Milne-Edwards the *Mascarene Continent*, and by others *Lemuria*. Professor Winchell does not produce any evidence to sustain this opinion, for neither the continent nor the human remains have ever been traced. It is confessedly a mere conjecture, framed to account for the absence of all traces of tertiary man on the existing continents, when, according to Professor Winchell, man must have existed *somewhere* at that time. His principal reason for believing that man has been on the earth during all these long ages is, that it is necessary to hold this opinion in order to account for the differentiation of the white, brown, and black races of men, and their dispersion over the widely-separated continents and islands of the globe—a differentiation which already existed, as seen on the monuments, at a very early period of the Egyptian monarchy.

But it is here that the British professor comes forward with equal learning to show that this view is improbable, if not impossible. Professor Dawkins believes in evolution, and would be glad, no doubt, to draw upon the long ages of the Miocene

and Pliocene Periods to obtain the requisite time for the development of man; but, despite this bias, he is compelled by the palæontological facts and the absence of all unequivocal traces of man in the tertiary beds, to refuse his assent to the conclusion reached by Professor Winchell:

Was man [he asks] an inhabitant of Europe in the Miocene Age? The climate [he says] was favorable, and the food, animal and vegetable, was most abundant. . . . Miocene Europe was fitted to be the birthplace of man, in the warm climate and in the abundance of food. There is, however, one most important consideration which renders it highly improbable that man was then living in any part of the world. No living species of land mammal has been met with in the Miocene fauna. Man, the most highly specialized of all creatures, had no place in a fauna which is conspicuous by the absence of all the mammalia associated with him.

There is no answer to be made to this; none has ever been attempted. He goes on:

Were any man-like animal living in the Miocene Age, he might reasonably be expected to be not man, but intermediate between man and something else, to bear the same relation to ourselves as the Miocene apes, such as the *Mesopithecus*, bear to those now living, such as the *Semnopithecus*. If, however, we accept the evidence advanced in favor of Miocene man, it is incredible that he alone of all the mammalia living in those times in Europe should not have perished, or have changed into some other form in the long lapse of ages during which many Miocene genera and all the Miocene species have become extinct. Those who believe in the doctrine of evolution will see the full force of this argument against the presence of man in the Miocene fauna, not merely of Europe but of the whole world.

He then refers to the splinters of flint found by the Abbé Bourgeois (and attributed to man) in the mid-Miocene strata at Thenay, and to the notched rib of the *Halitherium* found by M. Delaunay at Pouancé, and remarks that if these marks be artificial, then he would suggest that "they were made by one of the higher apes." "As the evidence stands at present," he concludes, "we have no satisfactory proof either of the existence of man in the Miocene, or of any creature nearer akin to him than the anthropomorphous apes."—Page 68.

In the chapter which follows Professor Dawkins proceeds to ask further, Whether man may not have appeared in the

Pliocene Age? He notices the human skull found by Professor Cocchi in a railway cutting at Olmo, near Arezzò, at a depth of nearly fifty feet from the surface. Unfortunately it was found with a Neolithic flint implement, which is fatal to its pretensions. He then refers to the notched bones described by Professor Capellini from the Pliocene of Tuscany, and finds the evidence here also unsatisfactory. They were found with pottery which, he says, was unknown in Europe even in the Pleistocene or Palæolithic Age. He concludes:

There is one argument against the probability of man having lived in Europe in Pliocene times which seems to me unanswerable. Twenty-one fossil mammalia have been recently proved by Dr. Forsyth Major to have inhabited Tuscany in the Pliocene Age; of these there is only one species—the hippopotamus—now alive on the earth. It is to my mind to the last degree improbable that man, the most highly specialized of the animal kingdom, should have been present in such a fauna as this, composed of so many extinct species. They belong to one stage of evolution, and man to another and a later stage. . . . As the evidence stands at present the geological record is silent as to man's appearance in Europe in the Pliocene Age. It is very improbable that he will ever be proved to have lived in this quarter of the world at that remote time, since of all the European mammalia then alive only one has survived to our own day.—Pp. 90-93.

This opinion with regard to the existence of tertiary man is not confined to Professor Dawkins. The same conclusion was formally enunciated a few years since by the Anthropological Society of London, and in an address before the Department of Anthropology, in the Biological Section of the British Association, in 1878, Professor Huxley said:

That we can get back as far as the epoch of the Drift is, I think, beyond any rational question or doubt; . . . but when it comes to a question as to the evidence of tracing back man further than that—and recollect drift is only the scum of the earth's surface—I must confess that to my mind the evidence is of a very dubious character.

It abundantly appears, therefore, from the quotations we have made, that the science of Prehistoric Archæology is in a fair way to be devoured by its own advocates—like Actæon by his own dogs; and we might, perhaps, leave the subject in their hands, confident that, like the "Destructive Criticism" of the German biblical scholars, it will end in the illustration

and the confirmation of the historical accuracy of the biblical records.

The history of this science is full of instruction as to the danger of generalizing too rapidly in scientific matters on imperfectly understood facts. It would seem almost incredible that, ten years ago, men like Lyell, Lubbock, Owen, Busk, Geikie, De Quatrefages, Broca, Morlot, De Mortillet, Lartet, Agassiz, should have blindly accepted all the wild theories of enthusiastic antiquaries with regard to the ages of stone, bronze, and iron, and the antiquity of the races whose implements or bones were found in the barrows, the lake-beds, the refuse piles, the peat, and the caves of Europe. In nearly all these cases, once so confidently relied on to prove the antiquity of man, the evidence, as previously remarked, has broken down. We hear little or nothing now about the stone circles, the cromlechs, the cairns, the tumuli, which exercised so powerfully the imagination of Thurnam, Greenwell, Rolleston, and Lubbock in connection with the primitive inhabitants of Britain. So many discoveries have been made establishing the fact that many of these graves are even later than the advance of the Romans into Northern Europe, and that none of them carry evidence of any very remarkable antiquity, that this branch of the evidence seems silently to have dropped out of archæological literature. The same remark is true of the speculations which were based on the relics found in the peat-bogs, in the lake-dwellings, and in the shell-heaps. More careful inquiries showed that peat frequently formed with great rapidity, and objects were found in the lowest layers of the French, Danish, and Irish bogs, which belonged to the Roman or even more recent periods; as the boat freighted with Roman bricks at the bottom of the Abbeville peat, the Roman axes and coins in Hatfield Moss, etc. With regard to the antiquity of the lake-dwellers, Professor Winchell informs us "that, in many instances, the *débris* from lacustrine villages have yielded Roman coins and other works of Roman art;" and that "the latest pile habitations come down to the sixth century." He might have stated that at the Stockholm meeting of the Anthropological Society in 1874, Professor Virchow presented evidence to show that these settlements were in existence in Sweden and Pomerania as late as the tenth century.

Sir John Lubbock was so impressed with the primitive character of the flint implements obtained from the Danish shell-heaps, and with the circumstances under which they were found, that he assigned to them, in his work on "*Prehistoric Times*," a very high antiquity. He considered them pre-Neolithic, while Professor Worsaae, of Denmark, assigned them to the Palæolithic Age. The Rev. Dunbar Heath, F.R.S.L., made them still older; he referred them to a race of mutes at the close of the Tertiary Era. It turned out that they had no very special antiquity; that similar refuse heaps of Roman date occur in the Channel Islands; that the extreme rudeness of the implements was due to the rude condition of the wretched fishermen who formerly inhabited the Danish islands; and, finally, in one of them, where the objects were more primitive in their form and workmanship than in most of the others, to wit, at Samsingerbanken, M. Valdemar Smith reports that objects of bronze have been met with.

The stalagmitic floors were in the beginning greatly relied on as evidences of the great lapse of time since the bone-caves were inhabited by man. Mr. Alfred Russel Wallace was so impressed with the facts in this connection at Kent's Hole, that, as we have previously noticed, he calculated the antiquity of the bone and stone objects found below the stalagmite to be as great as 500,000 years. But in "*Early Man in Britain*" Professor Dawkins observes: "This, (the stalagmite,) however, offers no measure of the interval, . . . because the rate of accumulation depends upon the currents of air in the caves and the amount of water passing through the limestone, both of which are variables." "In the Ingleborough Cave," he says, "it has been so swift that, between 1845 and 1873, a stalagmitic boss, known as the Jockey Cap, has grown at the rate of .2,941 inch per annum," and, as he remarks elsewhere, "from this instance of rapid accumulation, the value of a layer of stalagmite in measuring the antiquity of deposits below it is comparatively little."

Equal discredit has been thrown upon "the fossil man of Denise," "the fossil man of Guadaloupe," "the fossil man of Florida," "the fossil man of New Orleans," "the fossil man of Natchez," Dr. Horner's Egyptian pottery, the cone of the Tinière, the canoes buried in the silt at Glasgow, the tombs of

the Bronze Age under the peperino in Italy, the perforated sharks' teeth from the English crag, etc.

The human fibula discovered under the glacial clay in the Victoria Cave, which was so formally and seriously indorsed by Professors Geikie and Dawkins, it is now ascertained belonged to a bear; and the basket-work and sharpened sticks described by Professor Rüttimeyer from the glacial beds of Switzerland, are also given up by Professor Dawkins in his work now before us.

The evidence has, in fact, given way all along the line, except at one point, and this is the implements, so-called, found in the gravel-beds. We consider that nothing else remains to prehistoric archæology but this point; no room is left, we mean, for any contention except just here. Professor Dawkins presses this point with great learning and ability. But we have already explained that Professor Winchell, in view of all the evidence, reaches the conclusion that a very exaggerated importance has been given to the physical changes and other phenomena relied on in this connection. It all, as he says, depends on the date of the Glacial Age, and the close of this epoch he fixes at some 6,000 or 10,000 years ago. There is one fact that has always seemed to us decisive in this matter of the approximate date of the Glacial Age—one which has never been replied to by the advocates of the remote date of that period. That fact is this: no palæolithic implements have ever been found north of a certain line; none have been found in Denmark, Sweden, Norway, Scotland, or the north of England. The explanation given of this by Lyell is, that the ice had not retired from these northerly regions when the men of the First Stone Age lived in the Valley of the Somme. Nor have the remains of the great extinct animals been found in Scandinavia. The Glacial Age still lingered in these regions: when did the ice retreat? The first trace of man in Scotland, the north of England, Denmark, Sweden, Norway, Ireland, is in connection with the implements of the Polished Stone Age. This will fix the date of the retreat of the glaciers, or, more strictly, perhaps, of the glacial seas, if we can fix the date of the Polished Stone Age. It was certainly not more than 5,500 years, probably not over 3,500 years, ago. It is the date of the older lake-dwellings.

The conceit of Professor Winchell about the lost continent in the Indian Ocean is not only unsupported by facts, but it is—we say it most respectfully—unscientific. Dana lays it down as a fundamental principle, in his “Manual of Geology,” (the greatest, we believe, that has ever been published,) that the continents were outlined as we now know them from the beginning, and that the continents and oceans have never changed places. The continents have often, in geological time, been submerged to a greater or less degree, but they lay at comparatively shallow depths under the invading oceans. Referring to the relations of the North American Archæan areas to the continent, he says :

The evolution of the grand structure-lines of the continent was hence early commenced, and the system thus initiated was the system to the end. Here is one strong reason for concluding that the continents have always been continents ; that, while portions may at times have been submerged some thousands of feet, the continents have never changed places with the oceans. —*Manual*, sec. edit., p. 160.

Le Conte teaches the same doctrine :

The outlines [he says] of the present continents have been sketched in the earliest geological times, and have been gradually developed and perfected in the course of the history of the earth.—*Elements*, p. 169.

Professor Winchell has followed the theory of Lyell and the English geologists who have taught (see Lyell's “Principles,” chap. xii) that the ocean floors and the continental platforms have from time to time exchanged places. Recent investigations seem to prove decisively that Lyell is wrong, and Dana right. In an article contributed last year to the “Nineteenth Century” by Dr. William B. Carpenter on “The Deep Sea and its Contents,” he states that nothing struck the “Challenger” surveyors more than the extraordinary *flatness* (except near shore) of the ocean floor. They ascertained by their soundings (corresponding with those in the Pacific by the United States Ship “Tuscarora”) that “the form of the depressed area which lodges the water of the deep ocean is rather, indeed, to be likened to that of a flat waiter or tea-tray, surrounded by an elevated and steeply-sloping rim, than to that of the ‘basin’ with which it is commonly compared.” A

belt of shallow water runs along the coast-line of the continent, and then the sea-bed abruptly descends to a great depth. This interior trough (whose average depth is two and a half miles) has never been above the waves. Says Dr. Carpenter:

Now these facts remarkably confirm the doctrine long since propounded by the distinguished American geologist, Professor Dana, . . . that these elevated areas now forming the continental platforms, and the depressed areas that constitute the existing ocean floors, *were formed as such in the first instance*, and have remained unchanged.

These results were presented by Professor Geikie in his able lecture before the Geographical Society on "Geographical Evolution." He announces as a settled fact that "from the earliest geological times the great area of deposit has been, as it still is, *the marginal belt of sea-floor skirting the land.*" And again:

From all this evidence we may legitimately conclude that the present land of the globe, though composed in great measure of marine formations, has never lain under the deep sea, but that site must always have been near land. . . . The present continental ridges have probably always existed in some form; and as a corollary we may infer that *the present deep ocean basins likewise date from the remotest geological antiquity.*

What, then, becomes of Professor Winchell's Lost Lemuria? His conjecture (for, as we have stated, it is only this) falls to the ground; and rejecting, as he does, all trace of Tertiary man on the existing continents, and at the same time the antiquity of the European cave-men, he seems shut up to the old-fashioned opinion that man is about 6,000 (or, perhaps, 7,000) years old, and no more. We see no alternative, and Professor Winchell is thoroughly candid, and will not seek to escape from facts which he regards as established.

The absence of all traces of man in the tertiary strata, now so widely explored by geologists in most parts of the world, is a very pregnant fact in its bearing on modern anthropological theories. Recognizing its significance, Sir Charles Lyell was led to remark, that if man existed at this remote period, we must rather expect to find him in the countries of the anthropomorphous apes—the tropical regions of Africa, and the islands of Borneo and Sumatra, which, he says, "have not yet been explored." ("Antiquity of Man," p. 538.)

Within the past year or two, however, acting on this hint, and with the aid of funds obtained for the purpose in England, the ossiferous caves of Borneo have been explored, and still the missing links have not been found. In these caves, where it was hoped to find traces of early anthropoid forms, the only human remains met with were found in association with objects indicating a high civilization. "No light," says a writer in "Nature," "has been thrown on the origin of the human race."

It has also been well replied to this, (by Alfred Russel Wallace,) that in Miocene times the climate of the south of Europe was almost tropical, and even in Pliocene times England enjoyed a climate as warm as that of Italy at present. And the remains of apes have, accordingly, been found in Miocene strata in India, Greece, Germany, and France, and in the Pliocene beds of France, Italy, and England.

But it is not true that the apes are not adapted to a temperate climate. They range at present as far north as Gibraltar and Japan, and Dr. Hooker saw monkeys in the Himalayas at the height of 8,000 feet, while *Semnopithecus thibetensis* and *Macacus thibetensis* were found by Father David inhabiting the Snowy Mountains of Moupin, in Thibet, at the height of 3,000 metres. They are believed to exist in Northern China. Southward they approach the Cape of Good Hope, in Africa, and are found in Brazil and Paraguay as far as 30 degrees.

The difficulty with Professor Winchell is the Negro, a difficulty which we appreciate. The Negro, like the unspeakable Turk in politics, offers to the ethnologist a perpetual puzzle. We know very well that he appears very early on the Egyptian monuments. The differentiation of the languages of mankind offers a similar difficulty in connection with the orthodox opinion as to man's age in the world. They are difficulties of long standing. But when the archaeological evidence has broken down, shall we set aside the biblical chronology on the sole ground that we cannot explain the divergence of human types and human languages in so short a time?

It is impossible, within the brief limits of this article, to go over the ground already so often traversed. Nearly thirty years ago Nott and Gliddon urged this objection to the received chronology in their famous "Types of Mankind," pointing to the delineations on the Egyptian monuments.

The allusions in Genesis to Cain's fears lest "every one finding him should slay him," and to his "building a city," have also been urged in "The Genesis of the Earth and of Man," (1857,) and in M'Causland's "Adam and the Adamite," not to go back to the treatise of Peyrerius, published in 1655. Professor Winchell cites these authors at length, and makes no claim to originality in this part of his work. It has often been suggested that, in these references with regard to Cain, it is implied that other populations than the Adamic must have been in existence. But we must bear in mind that Cain (according to the Bible) probably lived near a thousand years, and that a very considerable population would have gathered on the earth from Adam in that time. The "city," we presume, was, moreover, a mere acropolis, or fort, like the original Troy or Mycenæ, or, yet more likely, a mere village containing a few huts. A similar remark will apply to the cities said to have been built by Nimrod: he *founded* them, and, living possibly some four hundred years, he saw them develop into considerable places for that age of the world.

More time is, perhaps, needed between Noah and Abraham than is allowed by the received Hebrew chronology, but not a great deal—five hundred or a thousand years is sufficient. This may be obtained by supposing (as is very probably the fact) gaps in the genealogy. There were ten names from Adam to Noah; ten from Noah to Abraham. So there were ten antediluvian kings from Alorus to Xisithrus in the Chaldean tradition. In the same manner the sacred books of the Iranians reckon nine heroes of a character entirely mythical, who succeeded Gayômaretan, the typical man. And again, we meet in the cosmogenic traditions of the Indians with the nine Brahmâdikas, making, with Brahmâ, their author, ten, who are called the ten Pitris, or "fathers." The Chinese, too, reckon ten emperors, partaking of the divine nature, between Foo-hi and the sovereign who inaugurated the historical period, Hoang-ti. The Arabs, also, had their ten mythical kings of 'Ad, the primordial people of their peninsula. There was among these primitive races some reason connected with their manner of constructing their genealogical tables, for their selecting the number *ten*, just as we see in St. Matthew the genealogy of our Lord arrayed in three divisions of fourteen generations

each, while St. Luke from Abraham to Christ reckons fifty-six. It is obvious that names have been dropped out by Matthew to preserve the number *fourteen*. It was a common practice with the Jews to distribute genealogies into divisions, each containing some typical number, and, in order to effect this, generations were either repeated or left out. In a Samaritan poem the generations from Adam to Moses are divided into two decades, six of the least important names being omitted.

It is evident, again, that the figures given in Genesis in this connection have been tampered with, for the Hebrew, the Samaritan, and the Septuagint texts all differ. We do not purpose, however, as we have said, to go into these points; our object at present is to consider the volumes before us from an archaeological rather than a biblical stand-point, and these and similar points made by Professor Winchell, and presented with great learning and force, are familiar to theologians, and fall more naturally in their province.

We cannot omit altogether to notice the discussion given to the Negro in Professor Winchell's work, one half of which is devoted to developing the point that "the actual portraitures on the Egyptian monuments (as far back as 2000 B.C.) exhibit the Negro in all his characteristics, as broadly differentiated from the Noachite as he is to-day upon the banks of the Congo." "As early as the twelfth dynasty the Egyptians recognized four races—the red, the yellow, the black, and the white."

The attack upon the biblical chronology comes in our day from geology and prehistoric archæology. If these are disposed of, we do not think that many Christians, at least, would be willing to give up the received chronology and the received theology (whereby Adam is regarded as the federal head and representative of the human race in the Garden of Eden) on the mere ground that we cannot explain with entire clearness the early divergence of races and languages. There is no more difficulty, as already remarked by us, about the early differentiation of the yellow race than there is about the early differentiation of the Chinese language. The Egyptian language was differentiated from the very beginning of the monarchy. So of the Accadian language in Babylonia. How shall we explain these facts in consistency with a short chronology? Professor Winchell is not one of those scientists after the order of Haeckel or Huxley;

he is a reverent student evidently of the Bible, and a devout believer in its inspiration and its authority. How, then, will he explain the divergence of languages? We refer him to the eleventh chapter of Genesis.

And, now, why may it not be that the divergence of human types occurred in the same way? It were natural that the immediate descendants of Noah should have marked peculiarities of character stamped on them in the beginning as the *origines gentium*—from whom all the varieties of the human family were to proceed. We see such a fact distinctly pointed out in God's dealings with Abraham. Abraham had two descendants—Jacob and Ishmael. Now all the race-traits which we see to-day in the Jew were foreshadowed in the prophecies regarding them in the books of Moses, and may be even, to a considerable extent, recognized in the character of their great progenitor. So Ishmael was to be “a wild man, and his hand against every man, and every man's hand against him”—a fit type and source of his Bedouin descendants. Now we can see nothing more strange, if Cush in like manner should have been marked as the progenitor of a strongly differentiated race. We have a most decided intimation that such was the fact, in the curse associated with his family. Professor Winchell observes on this, that the curse was against *Canaan*, and that the descendants of Canaan did not even settle in Africa. The truth is, that it was Ham who committed the sin, and in the biblical narrative it is his son (Canaan) who is cursed. The explanation is this: When the Mosaic books were written the Israelites were marching against the Canaanites, to destroy them as an accursed race; they constituted the most prominent object before them; therefore Moses singles out Canaan, saying nothing about the other sons of Ham, with whom the Israelites had no concern, and (so far as the Cushites were concerned) had no contact. The writer shows what was in his mind, commencing his account (ver. 22) of the matter with “And Ham, *the father of Canaan*”—it was Canaan's connection with the matter that he had in view. It was the posterity (including Canaan) of Ham who were marked by some mental peculiarity, resulting, perhaps, in some physical distinction.

If these hints be well-grounded, we pass, then, out of the domain of science in considering such questions as the divers-

ity of languages and the diversity of races. Scientific men persist in bringing down every transaction in the Bible to the level of science; thus they cannot understand the creation of man, nor the Flood. But if there be a God, and if he communicates with men, and interposes in human affairs, may there not be, as represented in the Bible, supernatural occurrences? What has Science to say to the career of Jesus Christ on the earth eighteen hundred years ago? If Science cannot take cognizance of the Resurrection, then why must the Flood, the Creation of Man, the Confusion of Tongues, be all arraigned in the forum of Science?

But, after all, is it certain that it would take, necessarily, a very long time to produce a black race? The guinea-pig, which in its native country is of a gray color, during its limited sojourn in Europe has changed into a variety marked with brown, black, and white spots. Now, why should not one insist that this differentiation—equal as regards color to the differences between the human races—must have required long ages? The American wolf and the European wolf are the same; but on this continent, in the far north it is white; in temperate latitudes it is gray; in Florida and Georgia it is black; in Missouri it is clouded; in Texas it is red. It is a well-known fact that birds of the finch tribe, if fed on hemp, will soon turn black. "The color of the skin," says De Quatrefages, "depends upon a simple secretion which is subject to modification under a number of circumstances. . . . There is, therefore, nothing strange that some human groups, differing widely in other respects, should resemble each other in the matter of color. This is the reason why the Hindu, (Aryan,) and the Bisharee, and the Moor, (Semitic,) although belonging to the *white race*, assume the same, and even a darker, hue than the *true negro*."

Here is a peculiar case referred to by Professor Huxley. He says:

In the woods of Florida there are a great many pigs; and it is a curious thing that they are all black, every one of them. Professor Wyman was there some years ago, and on noticing no pigs but these black ones, he asked some of the people how it was that they had no white pigs. The reply was, that in the woods of Florida there was a root which they called the Paint Root; and that if the white pigs were to eat any of it, it had the effect

of making their hoofs crack, and they died; but if the black pigs eat any of it, it did not hurt them at all.

Now the malaria, it has been suggested, may have done for the primitive human settlers in Africa what the Paint Root has done for the white and black pigs in Florida.

The hair of animals, also, changes with equal facility under certain conditions. According to Darwin, in the West Indies, about three generations will produce a very marked change in the fleece of sheep. In Africa their fleece degenerates into a coarse hair. The mastiff and the goat from Thibet, when brought down from the Himalaya Mountains to Kashmir, lose their fine wool. At Angora, not only goats, but shepherd dogs, and even cats, have fine fleecy hair. Karakool sheep lose their black curled fleeces when removed into any other country.

Equal changes occur in form. The domestic cat did not appear in Northern Europe earlier than the Christian era; how, then, shall we account for the tailless cat of the Isle of Man? Swine with solid hoofs, like horses, were known to the ancients. Yet, according to the theory of evolution, it took the whole of the tertiary period to consolidate the four toes of the eohippus into the compact hoof of our present horse. The European hogs carried to the Island of Cubagua by the Spaniards in 1509 have degenerated into a monstrous race, with toes half a span in length. Dr. Bachman states that the cattle in Opelousas, Western Louisiana, in thirty years, without a change of stock, produced a variety of immense size, with a peculiar form and enormous horns, like the cattle of Abyssinia. De Quatrefages mentions the *niata* cattle of Buenos Ayres, which is descended (of course) from a European stock. It now bears the same relation to other oxen that the bull-dog does to other dogs. All the forms are shortened and thickened, the head especially being enlarged and concentrated.

The inferior maxillary bone . . . so far exceeds the superior in length that the animal is unable to browse on trees. The cranium is as much deformed as the face; not only are the forms of the bones modified, but also their relations, not one of which, according to Professor Owen, has been strictly preserved.

But, if we understand Professor Winchell, changes like these require time stretching back to the Middle Tertiary.

Now, in view of the facts cited, we ask the question: If some distinguishing physical peculiarity should, at a very early period, have been impressed upon some of the descendants of Ham, and, put under the ban and ruled out by the other tribes, they should have become isolated in some miasmatic, marshy district of Africa, is it incredible that they should have formed a new breed of men?

We merely add, that it may very well be that the differentiation of the races took place before the Flood. There may have been more colors than one in the ark.

The third work on our list is that of Professor Whitney on the Auriferous Gravels of the Sierra Nevada of California. The name of this eminent geologist has for many years been associated with the Calaveras skull, which was found in a shaft 130 feet deep, under five beds of lava and volcanic tufa, and four beds of auriferous gravel. The discovery was so astounding that it was not fully credited, although it is cited and accepted by Dr. Foster in his "Pre-historic Races of the United States," published in 1873. Bancroft, also, in his "Native Races of the Pacific States," cites a large number of cases in which stone mortars, weapons, etc., have been found in California, in Table Mountain, Tuolumne County, and elsewhere, at great depths.

This subject has, however, been now more authoritatively brought to the attention of scientific men by the publication of the present volumes from the types of the University Press at Cambridge, in which Professor Whitney discusses these discoveries at length, and formally reaches the conclusion that they establish the existence of man on the Pacific Coast of North America in the Tertiary age. He reports, among a number of others, the following cases in which human remains and works of art have been found in the auriferous gravels.

1. Stone mortars and platters, at the depth of 90 feet, in 1863, at Gold Springs, by Mr. Lot Cannell, a miner. These objects were found in the same stratum with bones and teeth of the mastodon.

2. Stone dishes and mortars, and stone weapons, on Woods' Creek, Tuolumne County, in 1862-65, with bones of elephant and mastodon, at a depth of 20 to 40 feet.

3. Fragment of a human skull in Museum of Natural His-

tory Society of Boston, taken from a shaft in Table Mountain, 180 feet from surface, in gold drift, near mastodon bones. It was overlaid by hard basaltic strata.

4. A stone mortar, found in gravel, at a depth of 200 feet, under Table Mountain, overlaid by 60 feet of basalt, and at a distance of 1,800 feet from mouth of tunnel. This mortar is two feet seven and a half inches in circumference.

5. The Calaveras skull, found in 1866, near Altaville, in Calaveras County, 130 feet from the surface. Near it, in the shaft, the miners found a small snail-shell, (*Helix mormonum*, now existing in the Sierra Nevada,) several pieces of charcoal, etc.

Professor Whitney says there is no doubt of the authenticity of this relic. The skull, he says, "presents no signs of having belonged to an inferior race. In its breadth it agrees with the other crania from California, except those of the Diggers, but surpasses them in the other particulars in which comparisons have been made."

6. Stone mortars and other stone relics, near San Andreas, Calaveras County, at the depth of 150 feet.

7. A stone hatchet, perforated for a handle, at from 60 to 75 feet from surface, in gravel, under basalt, and 300 feet from mouth of tunnel. "At about the same time and place were also found stone mortars and fossil bones." This was in Table Mountain, Tuolumne County, opposite O'Byrn's Ferry, on Stanislaus River.

Many other cases are cited, and in many instances the depth at which the mortars and other objects were found is not greater than from 10 to 20 feet, but always in the auriferous gravel.

From these facts Professor Whitney draws the following conclusions:

1. The clear and unequivocal proof, beyond any possibility of doubt or cavil, of the contemporaneous existence of man with the mastodon, fossil elephant, and other extinct species, at a very remote epoch as compared with any thing recorded in history.

2. That man, thus proved to be contemporaneous with a group of animals now extinct, did not essentially differ from what he now is in the same region and over the whole North American continent.

3. That there is a large body of evidence, the strength of which it is impossible to deny, which seems to prove that man existed in California previous to the cessation of volcanic activity in the Sierra Nevada, to the epoch of the greatest extension of

the glaciers in that region, and to the erosion of the present river cañons and valleys, at a time when the animal and vegetable creations differed entirely from what they now are, and when the topographical features of the State were extremely unlike those exhibited by the present surface.

4. That man existing even at that remote epoch, which goes back at least as far as the Pliocene, was still the same as we now find him to be in that region, and the same that he was in the intermediate period after the cessation of volcanic activity, and while the erosion of the present river cañons was going on.

5. That the discoveries in California, and those in other parts of the world, notably in Portugal and India, present a strong body of evidence going to prove the existence, during an immensely long period, of the human race in its primitive condition—that is to say, in the simplest and rudest condition in which man could exist and be man.

6. That, so far as we know, there is no evidence of the existence of any primordial stock from which man may have been derived as far back at least as the Pliocene. **MAN, THUS, IS NOTHING BUT MAN, WHETHER FOUND IN PLIOCENE, POST-PLIOCENE, OR RECENT FORMATIONS.—P. 288.** [The capitals are ours.]

It should be added to the above that the plants as well as the animals found in the lower gravels are of Miocene age, and the older gravels found under the basalt may be referred to the close of the Miocene, rather than to the Pliocene.

Referring to these discoveries in his address before the American Association, at Saratoga, in 1879, Professor Marsh fully indorsed them, and said: "At present, the known facts indicate that the American beds containing human remains and works of man are as old as the Pliocene of Europe. The existence of man in the Tertiary period seems now fairly established."

The gravity of the situation is increased by the circumstance that Professor Dana, one of the most cautious of geologists, has incorporated the California discoveries in the recent edition of his "Manual of Geology," with no words of criticism or dissent; and Professor Le Conte, though in a more guarded manner, has done the same thing in his "Elements of Geology."

What is the result? We not only have man in the early Pliocene or the Miocene, but we have man at this remote epoch "still the same as we now find him," "nothing but man;" man fabricating with the skill of a modern lapidary heavy granite dishes and mortars, using polished stone weapons

and perforated stone hammers. The mortars and pestles are some of them delineated in Bancroft's "Native Races of the Pacific States," vol. iv, pp. 697-709, and in "The Epoch of the Mammoth," pp. 395-397, by the present writer. They are specimens of superb workmanship in the hardest stone. Bancroft also mentions other objects, as perforated disks and "skillets with a spout and three legs." This Pliocene man of America is far in advance of the Palæolithic man of the European river-gravels; he must indeed have been superior to the lake-dwellers of the Second Stone Age. And now, if these conclusions are sound, what becomes of the doctrine of EVOLUTION? Man not only appeared on the earth earlier than any other mammalian form now living on the land, but he was as perfect at that time as he is to-day; he has not changed. Professor Dawkins, clinging to the theory of Evolution, tells us that this was impossible. How could the highest appear first? It is as if some zealous antiquary should introduce the vertebrate before the invertebrate life. If through the countless ages of the whole Pliocene and Quaternary eras man has not changed, how are we to accept the statement that the camel, the horse, and other mammalian forms, have been undergoing modifications and developing during all this time?

And then, again, does any well-balanced mind *believe* what these scientific gentlemen tell us to be true? Can any one who knows what is meant by geological time, give his consent to the fabrication of granite and diorite dishes and mortars, of large dimensions, in the early Pliocene epoch?

Perhaps there is some other explanation; though, even should this fail us, we cannot accept such monstrous conclusions, even if advanced by our most eminent scientific authorities. Let us scrutinize the facts: 1. The prevailing objects discovered in these California gravels are the *mortars and pestles*. 2. They are invariably, we believe, *found in gold-bearing gravels*. 3. They have been almost invariably found by the miners in their search for *gold*.

Nothing impressed the Spaniards more in the sixteenth century in Mexico than the abundance and lavish employment of the precious metals. The chroniclers of that period give extravagant accounts of palaces and temples resplendent with gold. Where did the civilized races of ancient Mexico pro-

cure their gold? The question is answered by Dr. Daniel Wilson, in his learned work on the archæology of America :

The metallurgic arts [he tells us] were carried in some respects further by the Mexicans than the Peruvians. Silver, lead, and tin were obtained from the mines of Tasco, and copper was wrought in the mountains of Zacotollan by means of galleries and shafts opened with persevering toil where the metallic veins were imbedded in the solid rock.

Mr. Bancroft, in the "Native Races of the Pacific States," gives similar testimony. Both gold and copper, we are told, were mined in Mexico from veins in the solid rock, extensive galleries being opened for the purpose. (Vol. ii, 274.) They carried their excavations, says this laborious author, to the depth of two hundred feet or more, to procure the chalchinite, so much prized as an ornament. Obsidian they obtained in the same way, the mines at the Cerro de las Navajas, near Monte Jacal, being described as opening three or four feet in diameter, and penetrating one hundred and ten to one hundred and forty feet horizontally, with side drifts as occasion might require.

We cannot doubt, therefore, that the ancient population of the Pacific coasts were seekers after gold, and that they possessed the ability to procure it even several hundred feet deep in the bowels of the earth. The ruder races of the East and North have left behind them traces of their mining operations in the mica mines of North Carolina and the copper mines of Lake Superior. We are not, however, left to conjecture on this subject. Here is a specific statement published years ago without reference to this controversy in Schoolcraft's "Archæology," vol. i, p. 105 :

It was late in the month of August, in 1849, that the gold-diggers at one of the mountain diggings, called Murphy's, [this is in Table Mountain, where the Calaveras skull was found,] were surprised, in examining a high barren district of mountain, to find the abandoned site of an old mine.

"It is evidently," says a writer, "the work of ancient times." The shaft discovered is two hundred and ten feet deep. Its mouth is situated on a high mountain. It was several days before preparations could be completed to descend and explore it. The bones of a human skeleton were found at the bottom. There were also found an altar for worship and other evidences of ancient labor. No evidence has been discovered to denote the era

of this ancient work. There has been nothing to determine whether it is to be regarded as the remains of the explorations of the first Spanish adventurers, or of a still earlier period. The occurrence of the remains of an altar looks like the period of Indian worship.

Bearing on the same subject, the following item, cut from a western newspaper in November last, is a pertinent illustration :

An old mine, supposed to have been worked by the ancients, was discovered last week by a prospecting party in the Sangre de Cristo range of mountains, Colorado. In the mine are two large chambers from ten to twenty feet high, and double that number of feet in breadth. Stones, bones, skulls, and gold were found, the value of the latter being about nine hundred dollars. A further investigation will be made.

There are the facts, and whether Professors Whitney, Marsh, Dana, and Le Conte are excusable in publishing to the world that man lived in California in the Pliocene epoch, we leave to the readers of the *Methodist Quarterly Review*.

It is corroborative of the views above presented that Professor Whitney states in his Report, (p. 280,) that no finds similar in character to those occurring in the Sierra Nevada have ever been made in the Coast Range. No instance of the sort, he remarks, so far as he is informed, has ever been heard of. He states :

The soil and detritus of the region about the bay of San Francisco have been excavated for all sorts of purposes, and in a great many localities bones and teeth of extinct animals have been found in abundance. Never, so far as known, have any human bones or works of human hands been met with in connection with these remains, while they are common enough on the surface.

This is, indeed, very remarkable, if man was living in the neighboring region of the Sierra Nevada all through the Pliocene and Quaternary ages. The simple explanation is, that there was no *gold* in the Coast Range. No mining was carried on there by the primitive inhabitants of the Pacific Coast. "By far the larger portion of the Coast Range gravels may, without hesitation, be set down as nearly or quite destitute of gold."—P. 299. It is only in the gold country

that the mortars are found; it is only in the auriferous gravels that they are found; and they are found by miners seeking for gold.

NOTE.—Since this article was in type we have seen Mr. Alfred Russel Wallace's new book entitled, "Island Life; or, The Phenomena and Causes of Insular Faunas and Floras." In this work Mr. Wallace takes precisely the same position as Dana and Carpenter with regard to the permanency of the continents and ocean basins, and, referring in a special discussion to the supposed Lemurian continent, rejects it as contradicted by all the facts of geology.

"Our actual continents," he says, page 92, "have been in continuous existence under variously modified forms during the whole period of known geological history," and, in support of this opinion, he quotes from Darwin ("Origin of Species," sixth edition, p. 288) as follows: "If, then, we may infer any thing from these facts, we may infer that where our oceans now extend, oceans have extended from the remotest period of which we have any record."

As to "Lemuria," he says, p. 388, "The supposed 'Lemuria' must have existed, if at all, at so remote a period that the higher animals did not then inhabit either Africa or Southern Asia, and it must have been partially submerged before they reached those countries." But he assigns a number of reasons why the supposed continent could never have existed at all, and says that the hypothesis was only "provisional," and has been proved to be untenable. He thinks that certain shoals and coral reefs indicate that there were several large islands between Madagascar and India, but these reefs and shoals, he remarks, are all separated by a very deep sea—two thousand five hundred fathoms.

ART. II.—THE OLD BIBLES. THE HEBREW BIBLE DISTINGUISHED AMONG THEM.

"AND I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head." Gen. iii, 15.

"And in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed." Gen. xii, 3.

—"Let the nations be glad and sing for joy." Psal. lxxvii, 4.

"Sing, O barren, thou that didst not bear; . . . for more are the children of the desolate than the children of the married wife, saith the Lord. . . . For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel." Isa. liv, 1-5.

"There came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him." Matt. ii, 1, 2.

"God that made the world . . . will judge the world . . . by that man whom he hath ordained." Acts xvii, 24, 31.

"Of a truth I perceive that . . . in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him." Acts x, 34, 35.

"Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God; . . . and changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image." Rom. i, 21-23.

"Other sheep I have, which are not of this fold." John x, 16.

"Many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven." Matt. viii, 11.

These are remarkable scriptures. They are the openings of the windows of heaven toward the Gentiles.

Isaiah, in the chapter preceding that from which we quote, expresses so clearly the Jewish anticipation of a Redeemer that there can be no mistaking it; and in this (liv) he addresses the Gentiles in such a way as implies a similar anticipation cherished among them, with a comforting assurance that it shall not be disappointed. It is calculated, we should think, to abate very materially the conceit of the Jews that they are the only people for whom God has any regard—for the "children of the desolate," it is said, "are more than the children of the married wife." The "married wife" was the Hebrew nation—taken into a specially intimate relation; the "desolate" was the Gentile world cast off by God. David is praying for the enlargement of God's kingdom. He casts his eye beyond the boundaries of Israel, taking in *all the nations*, and inviting them to praise God by his name JAH, or JEHOVAH. (Psa. lxviii.) The promise to Abraham included *all the families of the earth*. We find, as a matter of fact which is not usually given the prominence it deserves, that when the Redeemer of the world was born his star appeared and was recognized in the far east, at Persia, by devout souls who were looking for the "consolation of Israel" as definitely as was Simeon—and Simeon recognized the Child he held in his arms as "a light to lighten the Gentiles." Luke ii, 32. It dawned on Peter's mind, at length, that "in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him." But the fact that there *were some such* was more startling. Paul, in his address to the Greeks, intro-

duces the "unknown God" as the "Lord of heaven and earth;" the Father of men—one of their own poets had said, "For we also are his offspring;" and the Judge of the world by "**THAT MAN whom he hath ordained**"—the basis of the allusion to **THAT MAN** being their anticipation of **ONE**.

With reference to the anticipation of the Jews and their recognition of a like anticipation among other peoples, these scriptures are clear. But this latter idea was not known to be in the Hebrew Scriptures until research from other directions established the fact that in all the great Gentile religious systems, in the Zend-Avesta, the Vedas, the Tripitaka, the oldest Chinese books, and in all the old mythologies, the Messianic idea was one of the fundamental ideas.

We do not deem it necessary in this place to fortify the statement that the anticipation of a Redeemer is found as a prominent feature in all religions. It is implied in sacrifice, which is universal. As George Smith says, ("Patriarchal Age," p. 156,) after a survey of the whole field, "In these mythologic traditions all the external circumstances of the subject of this promise stand out in bold relief; a son of a God is born of a woman, and is, therefore, mortal; he is engaged in some desperate warfare with a malignant spiritual power, which generally assumes the form of a serpent; the God-man suffers, sometimes dies; yet is finally victorious, and great good accrues to others (in the ethnic religions this good is limited) through his triumph." Let this suffice.

We have, then, first, the universal anticipation of a Redeemer; second, the recognition of this anticipation by the earliest as well as latest prophets of the Hebrews, and by Jesus and his apostles. There is common ground between these, on the one hand, and the Gentiles on the other; in fact, the burden of the Old Testament prophecy and New Testament preaching addressed to the Gentiles is the identification of the "Holy One of Israel" as "He that should come."

It is further established by comparison, and assumed here, that these religions and the Hebrew have the same historic basis. The stories of creation, the garden, the flood, and the dispersion are in substantial agreement, so close as to preclude any accounting for except on the ground of identical facts. This circumstance of agreement on these several points be-

tween these religions as found in the old ethnic Bibles is dwelt on by a certain class of writers with the purpose of shaking our faith in the Hebrew Bible. They put it with the others in a catalogue in which all are of equal value. They tell us that these traditions, and the God idea, and the Messianic idea, came into the Hebrew religion from these other older religions, and that, therefore, their claims to original inspiration (if, indeed, there be any such thing) are the stronger and clearer.

We hold, however, that to make this out they invert and falsify history, and overlook the most striking characteristic of the Hebrew Bible. By way of reply to their allegation we shall, in the first place, determine, as nearly as may be possible, the chronology of these religions, and the fundamental ideas of each. It may turn out as the result of our investigation that the religion of the Hebrews and these other religions are branches from an original stalk, or that this is the topping of the stalk from which the others are branches. If so, one part of the allegation, namely, that the Hebrew idea is derived from them, will have been answered. Then, if we can point out a distinguishing feature of the Hebrew Bible that will justify us in taking it out of the catalogue, we shall have answered the other part. To these points we direct our efforts.

When Abraham left Haran he traveled westward, separating himself from his own family and kindred. He was of the family of Shem. He went out with a monotheistic idea and the promise of a Redeemer in the line of *his* seed. While his descendants tarried in Canaan, afterward in Egypt, and still later in Babylon, they did not imbibe to any extent the religious ideas of their neighbors and masters, but remained peculiar, and were hated on account of their peculiarity. They neither absorbed nor were absorbed. During all the course of Jewish history they remained peculiar and separate. Occasionally, before the captivity, going after Baal or Moloch, their ancestral religion still distinguishes them, and they are brought back to it by one or another means. Jewish history, in fact, is the history of the maintenance and development of the religious ideas with which Abraham started—the unity of God, and the promise of a Redeemer in the line of his posterity. It tells how these people came in contact with others without being denationalized, and how their peculiar religious ideas came in con-

tact with others without being eclipsed or essentially modified in the contact.

But we must go backward beyond Abraham. We must go backward to the time when the whole earth was of one speech and one language. (Gen. xi, 1.) We must find that then, when they had a common religion, one God, and one hope of a Redeemer, were its fundamental ideas. We must trace these ideas that are common and fundamental to the religions of the world back to this time and place as their starting. Criticism has well established that the Book of Job is the oldest of the Semitic books. Let us examine it first. It contains these ideas clearly, the unity of God and the anticipation of a Redeemer. It contains some other things that fix its date. Job mentions four constellations as in their oppositions, (xxxviii, 31-33,) and President Gouget (*"Origin of Laws,"* Edinburgh, 1761) makes a calculation by the processional cycle which fixes the date at 2136 B. C. Dr. Brinkley, of Dublin, repeats the calculation and brings it out six years later. Hales repeats Brinkley's calculation, and mentions another by Decoutant, which makes it forty-two years later still, or 2088 B. C. Job was of the family of Shem, of the offshoot of Joktan, and not in the Messianic line. See Gen. xxvi, 29, where Job-ab is Job with the title of dignity, *ab*. Kolreiff (*"Chronologia Sacra,"* Hamburg, 1724, cited by Wolfius) identifies Job with Melchizedek, King of Salem; Shuckford (*"Sacred and Profane History,"* vol. i, pp. 263, 264) makes Job contemporary with Serug, preceding Abraham in birth by perhaps one hundred and thirty years. He also identifies Job with Cheops, the builder of the great Pyramid in Egypt. Joktan resided in Arabia. Thence came the prince who "conquered Egypt without a battle" and built the Pyramid. It may be, and there are strong internal evidences in Job's book in support of the suggestion, that Job was that prince. In Egypt he may have endured his affliction, after which he lived one hundred and forty years, and thence emigrated to Canaan, where he founded Salem.

Dr. Owen (*"Theologumen"*) assigns the book to a period immediately preceding Abraham. Ewald (*"History of Israel,"* vol. i, p. 231) says, "It is clear that these people, who had very largely displaced the old Canaanites in Palestine, were of the Semitic race." Wilkins observes that Abraham, "on his arrival,

found the population consisting at least in large measure of tribes with which he would have close affinities of blood and language. . . . We find him conversing with Melchizedek, negotiating with the children of Heth, and making a treaty with Abimelech without any reference to an interpreter," ("Phœnicia and Israel," pp. 3-10.) "Probably the movement from the country about the Persian Gulf, of which the history of Abraham furnishes an instance, had been going on for some time before he quitted Ur, and an influx of emigrants from that quarter had made Shemitism already predominant in Syria and Palestine at the date of his arrival." (Rawlinson's "Herodotus," vol. i, p. 537.) The biblical account of Abraham's visit to Melchizedek, the king and priest of Salem, is familiar. (Gen. xiv, 18; Heb. vii, 1.) If these probabilities be worth any thing we can account for the preservation of this book of Job's experience in the family of Abraham, and its introduction into the Sacred Canon, as well as for the otherwise unaccountable digression of the historian in mentioning the family of Joktan in Genesis x.

Abraham had but just located himself in Canaan when Chedorlaomer, King of Elam, and his confederates, made their expedition of war. They were driven back by him with the loss of their captives and booty. (Gen. xiv.) "The monumental records of Babylonia bear marks of an interruption in the line of native kings about the date which from Scripture we should assign to Chedorlaomer, and point to Elymais (or Elam) as the country from whence the interruption came. We have mention of a king whose name is on good grounds identified with Chedorlaomer as paramount in Babylonia at this time, a king apparently of Elamitic origin, and he bears in the inscriptions the unusual and significant title of "Ravager of the West." Our fragments of Berosus give us no names at this period; but his dynasties exhibit a transition at about the date required, which is in accordance with the breaks indicated by the monuments. We thus obtain a double witness to the remarkable fact of an interruption of pure Babylonian supremacy at this time, and from the monuments we are able to pronounce that the supremacy was transferred to Elam, and that under a king, the Semitic form of whose name would be Chedorlaomer, a great expedition was organized, which proceeded to the distant,

and then almost unknown, west, and returned after "ravaging," but not conquering, those regions. (See George Rawlinson's "Evidences," pp. 73, 74, and notes.) Sir H. Rawlinson ("Monarchies," vol. i, p. 160) says:

A king whose court was held at Susa led, in the year B. C. 2286, (or a little earlier,) an expedition against the cities of Chaldea, succeeded in carrying all before him, ravaged the country, took the towns, plundered the temples, and bore off into his own country, as the most striking evidence of victory, the deities which the Babylonians especially revered. This king's name, which was Kudur-Nakhunta, is thought to be the exact equivalent of one which has a world-wide celebrity, to wit, ZOROASTER. Now, according to Polyhistor, (who here certainly repeats Berosus,) Zoroaster was the first of the eight Median kings who composed the second dynasty in Chaldea, and occupied the throne from about B. C. 2286 to 2052 . . . after which we hear no more of the Medes, the sovereignty, it would seem, being recovered by the natives. The coincidences of the conquest, the date, the foreign dynasty, and the name Zoroaster, tend to identify the Median dynasty of Berosus with a period of Susanian supremacy which the monuments show to have been established in Chaldea at a date not long subsequent to the reigns of Urukh and Ilgi, and to have lasted for a considerable period.

Without adducing any thing further, we have these points: 1. Zoroaster, from Elam, overran and subdued Chaldea; 2. Between one hundred and two hundred years afterward Abraham got out from Haran into the land which God had promised him; 3. Chedorlaomer, probably the last successor of Zoroaster, in attempting to extend his borders westward, encountered and was repulsed by Abraham; and, 4. After about two hundred and thirty-four years of usurpation the Elamitic supremacy in Chaldea was overcome by the natives, the usurpers driven eastward, and perhaps thence southeastward down the east coast of the Persian Gulf into Persia. Here we find the religion of Zoroaster. We should have guessed from the contempt with which he treated the gods of the Babylonians that he was a monotheist. We might infer the same from the removal of Terah, Abraham's father, who could not enjoy his household gods under the usurper. But we shall determine from a glance at the direct testimonies.

Zoroaster, in person, did not lead the migration into Persia. It appears upon laying together facts that are as well authenticated as any of this time can be, that this movement followed

soon upon the overthrow of Elamitic (Medo-Bactrian) supremacy in Chaldea. Then his religion was not introduced there by himself, but by his followers. Duncker gives at length (*"Geschichte des Alterthums,"* book ii) the reasons which prove Zoroaster and the Zend-Avesta to have originated in Bactria. Haug maintains that the language of the Zend-Avesta is Bactrian. Thalheimer (*"Ancient History,"* p. 61) says:

The Persians held the reformed religion taught by Zoroaster, a great lawgiver and prophet who appeared in the Medo-Bactrian kingdom long before the birth of Cyrus. (In his time) in every part of the East the belief in one God and the pure and simple worship which the human family had learned in its original home had become overlaid with false mythologies and superstitious rites. The teachings of Zoroaster divided the Aryan family into its two Asiatic branches, which have since remained distinct. The Hindus retained their sensuous nature-worship, of which Indra, Mithra, Vá-yu Agni, Armata, and Soma, were chief objects. . . . Zoroaster taught the supremacy of a living Creator, a person and not merely a power, whom he called Ormazd. . . . No image of any kind was seen in Persian temples, [after this reformation.]

Dr. Martin Haug, the most competent linguistic critic, suggests the fifteenth century B. C. as the date of the most primitive Iranic compositions, which form the chief if not the sole evidence of an Iranic cultivation; but by this we think he means that then the Vedic and Zoroastrian, and perhaps other, fragments were first collated, as were the fragments of Semitic tradition and literature by Moses, for the Vedic hymns are certainly older. They began to be written possibly three hundred years before the settlement of Zoroaster's followers in Persia.

This brings us very near the time we seek, and in these, probably the oldest compositions, we find strongest support of our position. In the Vedas the principal deity is INDRA, which name expresses the idea that God alone exists as the source of all being. It is of precisely the import of the name Jehovah gives himself in the burning bush—I AM THE I AM. Indra is called upon as the "God of the fathers." Colbrooke says, "The ancient Hindu religion recognizes but one God, not yet sufficiently discriminating the creature from the Creator." In one hymn of the Rig Veda it is said, "They call Him Indra, Metra, Varuna, Agni. . . . That which is ONE,

the wise call it many ways." In another, "In the beginning there arose the source of the golden light. He was the only born Lord of all that is. He established the earth and the sky." Dr. Gogerly, regarded as the best living Pali scholar, and other trustworthy critics, are agreed that the ground of the Brahminic religion is monotheistic. It is a protest against nature worship, a reformation, asserting the existence of a single source of being and a single object of worship. It is an attempt to return to the religion of the Vedic and Zoroastrian age, in the face of Buddhism, which was itself a revolt against pantheism. The former became mystic, the latter ritualistic. Neither of these is older than 600 B. C.

Referring now to Confucius, authorities fix the date of his living at 550-480 B.C. He was simply a moral and political reformer, who superadded to the traditions and literature of the fathers his own maxims. (See "Life of Confucius," by Legge.) With this mention we dismiss him, and go backward to find that the earliest religion of the Chinese has in it the same fundamental ideas as the others. Dr. Legge tells us that in the "Five King" and "Four Shoo," the oldest religious books, the name of God is "Te," or "Shang-te," and that it represents a personal, moral governor. But the best authorities do not date these books earlier than 2000 B.C. Hoang-te was the first emperor. His reign succeeded the period of the dispersion, and may be dated possibly 2600-2700 B.C. Foo-he and Shing-nong were probably patriarchs of the tribe which first migrated from Central Asia eastward—possibly 3000 B.C. Between this date and the other is the heroic age of the Chinese. It is a period of wandering, in which most likely the second, or third, or even fourth, generation was involved. (See "Patriarchal Age," p. 441, *et seq.*) They carried with them the learning and traditions of the ancestral home; and these are the basis of the religious system found in their oldest books. But they were settled in China perhaps five hundred years before Zoroaster lived, and seven hundred before Abraham. Getting nearer the time of "one speech and one language," we do not get farther away from the monotheistic idea.

Turning to Egypt, we find in the coffins of the mummies rolls of papyrus, fragments of the "Book of the Dead," prob-

ably of 1900 B.C. Translated, they read: "I am the Most Holy, the Creator of all that replenishes the earth, and of the earth itself, the habitation of mortals. I am the Prince of the infinite ages. I am the great and mighty God; the Most High, shining in the midst of the careering stars, and of the armies which praise me above thy head," etc. Rawlinson ("Ancient Monarchies," vol. ii, p. 244) says: "The Egyptians adopted a pantheism, according to which (while the belief in one supreme God was taught to the initiated) the attributes of the Deity were separated under various heads, as 'the Creator,' 'Divine Wisdom,' the 'Generative,' and other principles; and even created things, which were thought to partake of the *divine essence*, were permitted to receive divine worship." But this pantheism is not the oldest religion of the Egyptians. Professor Grimm, of Berlin, one of the best-accredited mythologists of our time, writes: "The monotheistic form appears most ancient, and that out of which antiquity formed polytheism. . . . All mythologies lead to this conclusion." M. Adolphe Pictet says: "To sum up: Primitive monotheism, of a character more or less vague, generally passing into a polytheism, still simple—such appears to have been the religion of the ancient Aryans."* This last remark holds equally good of the Turanians, under which name are included the Chaldeans and Egyptians, and of the tribe of Assur in the Semitic stock. Polytheism, wherever we find it, is an attempt to represent and explain the diversity of manifestation of the ONE SUPREME, as Aristotle says: "God, though he is one, has many names, because he is called according to the states in which he enters." Really it appears, as we glance over the field, that Abraham and his posterity are the real conservators of monotheism—the "topping of the original stalk," which has its roots in the place whence the families dispersed.

Now, Sir H. Rawlinson says, in the "Journal of the Asiatic Society," speaking of the different races of Western Asia: "It is a pleasing remark, that if we were to be guided by the mere intersection of linguistic paths, and, independently of all reference to the scriptural record, *we should be led to fix on the plains of Shinar as the focus from which the various*

* Both these authorities are cited from the Quarterly Review, January, 1876, page 48.

lines had radiated." And we say, that, standing on the western, southern, or eastern shore of Asia, under the shade of the Pyramids, or on Mount Zion, and running our eye along the lines of religious development, we should fix upon the same point as that of *their* intersection. From this point the families of the sons of Noah diverge, each carrying the traditions and memories of the old home, and embodying them in sacred books, where we find them—covered deep with the fancies of vain imaginations and the conceits of unclean lust, to be sure; but there they are, these same original ideas of God and a Redeemer to come, like gems in a mine, glittering in the light thrown down upon them by recent research.

What shall we say, then? "Shall we," asks a recent writer, "push aside all the other sacred books of the world: the Hindu and Persian Bibles, both older than our own; the Buddhist Bible, held sacred by more people than hold to the Christian (Jewish) Bible; the Chinese Bibles, ancient and venerable books; . . . shall we push all these aside, and say, There is no voice of God in them? For one I dare not do that!" We say, also, We dare not do that. Nevertheless, we do not hold these venerable books and the Jewish Bible on the same ground—we observe a difference. We find in them the same substratum of divine revelation and historic fact as in it. We find truth in them, and we

"Seize upon truth wherever found,
On Christian or on heathen ground.
* * * * *
The plant's divine where'er it grows."

We can account for the truth we find in them—as we have done—and we are supported by plain allusions in our Hebrew and Christian Bible to the existence of this truth among the Gentiles. Isaiah says, in chapter liv, last verse, "This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their righteousness is of me, saith the Lord." Paul and Barnabas, in their speech to the enthusiastic people of Lystra, said, "God . . . who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways . . . left not himself without witness." We recall, also, the striking remark of Jesus, "And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold." He said that before the Gospel had been preached to the Gentiles, in fact, before there was any Gospel

to preach, for he had not yet accomplished his mission to Jerusalem. If we think we are giving a wide extension to our charity when we include other Christian denominations in the fold, we must extend it still more to include these "other sheep."

We have said that the basal ideas of the pre-Abramic religion were the unity of God and the anticipation of a Redeemer. In so far as these ideas are retained in the religions that have grown from that stalk they are true and divine religions. We do not know where to draw the line of distinction until polytheism creeps in, and the "host of heaven" begin to be worshipped. But in Abraham's time polytheism had already grown somewhat; Zoroaster had shown his contempt for the *deities* of the Babylonians by carrying them off. He himself was a monotheist.

Terah, Abraham's father, was an idolater, but appears to have fallen into idolatry after having been a monotheist. At any rate neither Abraham nor his cousin Lot, who was a member of Terah's household, were tinged with the heresy. In fact, their going West was a protest against the polytheistic tendency of the times and country. It was just the fidelity and tenacity with which Abraham held this cardinal idea—the unity of God—that fitted him for the call he received. The other idea—the anticipation of a Redeemer—was held by all in the midst of their polytheism, and has not since been lost. But Abraham received with his call a promise that it should be in *his seed* that all the nations of the earth should be blessed, that is, in the line of his posterity the Redeemer should come. This idea *he held alone*, and it became, with the others, a fundamental idea in *his* religious system. These three ideas, then, are to be found embodied in the sacred books of Abraham's posterity: 1. The unity of God; 2. The promise of a Redeemer; and, 3. The *fixedness* of the Redeemer in their line of descent. The first two may be found in other sacred books; *the third cannot.*

From the very nature of the case God must have selected some one family from which the promised Redeemer should come, and in which the world's common hope should be realized, or the world's common hope must have been disappointed. Why he selected Abraham is apparent. The correct-

ness of Abraham's ideas and his tested fidelity constituted his special fitness. It was a case of "electing love," based on reasons. God loved him and elected him *because he was true*, and because, *from the nature of the case, an election must be made*. It was not an election of exclusion on any other ground than *untruthfulness*. It was an election in the benefits of which *all* were to participate, and in which *all* were *equally* interested.

From this time forward this idea distinguishes Abraham and his posterity, and, as might be expected, they *lived* to it. It develops and determines them; they are what they are because of it. Their history, as we have it in the Old Testament, is the history of the molding and unfolding of an idea—not the idea of God the Creator, nor of the unity of God, nor of a Redeemer to come, for the Hebrew Scriptures are not solitary in either of these ideas—but the idea of a Redeemer *fixed* in their own line of descent. In this they are solitary. As distinct conceptions of God the Creator, (though not so abundant and unvaried,) of God the ONE, of a promised Redeemer, and as high moral precept, may be found in the Zend, the Tripitaka, the Five King, or the old mythologies, as in the Hebrew Bible. We concede this point, but we assert this difference: that *in none of them is the line of the Redeemer FIXED as it is in the Hebrew tradition and Scripture*. The Chinese Scriptures, we are told, contain prophecies of a Chinese Messiah, and the Hindu Scriptures contain like prophecies of a Hindu Messiah. But these prophecies are not so specific as to give precise direction to the anticipation; they are not so specific as to bar the claims of one coming from any other than a given direction. The point of divergence of the Hebrew Scriptures from these others, is the point where the former begin to be specific—when Abraham received that promise. As we follow this promise on down we observe that it becomes more specific as it is frequently reiterated. It is fixed in Isaac, then in Jacob, then in Judah, then in David, in Bethlehem, and in Nazareth—in a point of time, and other conditions so precise, and the conjunction of which is so singular, that while they may have been miscalculated beforehand there can be no difficulty in determining them *after* the event. But so precise were these conditions in the promise that we actually find the wise and pious among the Jews, and those of the far East who had kept

abreast the unfolding of the idea in the Hebrew literature, all looking in one direction at the same time. In passing, we observe that the separations of Judah and of David and of Mary were not more exclusive of the other tribes and families and individuals of the descendants of Abraham than was the separation of Abraham exclusive of other nations—the coming Redeemer was *for the world*.

Now, with all the unsettling of the criticism of the times, one fact has been left untouched—that Jesus of Nazareth was in the line of this promise, of the house and lineage of David, born in Bethlehem of Judea, at a point of time when the prophetic dates of the Hebrew people were running out. The scepter was not to depart from Judah “till Shiloh (the Sent) come.”

There may be a discrepancy in the genealogical *table*, but not in the *line*, and the descent of Jesus in the *line* cannot be gotten over; and, make just what we please of it, it still remains unchallenged, that Jesus was born at Bethlehem. But it is foreign to our present purpose to follow out the conditions of the promise, and show how they are precisely met in the incidents of the birth of Jesus. All we mean to say is, that, think what we may of the pretensions of Jesus to divinity, or of his philosophy, if the Jewish anticipation of a Redeemer, the anticipation raised first by the promise in the garden, fixed in the line of Abraham’s posterity, and defined more precisely by the later prophets—if this anticipation be not met in Jesus of Nazareth, it is not met at all in Jewish history. Jewish history is sealed with all these definite promises in it, and to-day none stands before the world claiming to have met them, except Jesus of Nazareth.

Another fact must be looked in the face, namely, neither the Hindus, nor Chinese, nor any other religionists, save the Christians, have a New Testament,—we mean a book filling the place in their system that the New Testament fills in ours,—a literature that is the outgrowth of the idea that the promise of a Redeemer *has been met*, and that has for its basis the story, and for its central idea the unfolding of his life. Furthermore, they *cannot* have a New Testament. Why? Their Bibles are closed without any such precisely defined and limited promises concerning the Redeemer as are found in the Hebrew Bible.

The anticipation is so vague that it would be impossible for any character to meet it and establish his claim. Hence, no character among them pretends to meet it. Their idea does not grow into a Jesus of Nazareth, and they have no Jesus of Nazareth, and no niche fitted for the reception of such a character. In their traditions and literature their anticipation must have been more precisely defined, and it must have run until one arose to answer to it, in order to make a New Testament literature possible. The significance of these facts is that, if the world-wide anticipation of a Redeemer do not issue in the Hebrew line, it has no issue *elsewhere*, and if, in this line, it do not issue in Jesus of Nazareth, it has no issue *anywhere*. *There is no Redeemer unless in Israel, and none in Israel unless Jesus of Nazareth.*

What a shallow analysis of these several Bibles, that does not discover in the Hebrew Bible this idea developing and issuing that does not develop and issue in the others! If we take it out we have perhaps only what the Hindus and Chinese have. But this one, beginning where they did, with the undefined promise of a Redeemer, has become definite and developed into Christianity, while those have no development at all. This promise *fixed* is the central idea of the Hebrew literature; it is the idea around which all else of incident in the history of that people stands, as the scaffolding stands around the cathedral tower at Cologne. When it issues complete in a character the scaffolding is removed out of sight, and *all the world* directed to look to Jesus of Nazareth as the fulfillment of its hope. "Thy Redeemer is the Holy One of Israel."

We draw hence a practical suggestion with reference to missionary work. The Old Bibles we find are only incomplete; our New Testament is supplemental to them. *Our* Jesus is the Redeemer *they* anticipate. We shall not dethrone their conceptions, but enthrone Jesus of Nazareth. Assuming redemption anticipated, it is to be declared a *fact*. Their religion is not *all wrong*. It will be righted, as is the imperfect religion of the Hebrews, by the story of the Cross.

"Waft, waft, ye winds, the story,
And you, ye waters, roll,
Till, like a sea of glory,
It spreads from pole to pole."

We understand now, as we never did before, "the mystery which has been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made known to his saints, to whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles;" and we gather somewhat of the meaning and force of the promises to *bring back the nations*, and to gather together in one all things in Christ. We begin to have a more distinct idea of the extent of Christ's fold; and yet we shall doubtless be surprised when he brings those "other sheep" in, to see them coming up from every nation under the sun, "bringing their glory and honor into it." But they will come, more of them than of the children of Abraham, for "more are the children of the desolate than the children of the married wife." Cut off! Excluded by the election! No, no! "In a little wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer."

Finally, let the truth stand out clearly, that God has kept his word, and, of the richness of his grace, provided for the redemption, not only of Israel, but of the whole world, through Jesus of Nazareth, his Christ!

ART. III. — SOME CHARACTERISTICS OF ENGLISH THOUGHT IN THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

A History of England in the Eighteenth Century. By EDWARD HARTPOLE LECKY. Two volumes. London. 1878.

Religion in England under Queen Anne and the Georges. By JOHN STOUGHTON, D.D. Two volumes. London. 1878.

History of English Thought in the Eighteenth Century. By LESLIE STEPHEN. Two volumes. London. 1877.

Voltaire, Rousseau, Diderot. By JOHN MORLEY. London. 1872-78.

English Men of Letters, 1877-80: Hume, by PROFESSOR HUXLEY; Defoe, by ARTHUR MINTO; Johnson, by LESLIE STEPHEN.

Religious Thought in England. By REV. JOHN HUNT. Three volumes. London. 1871.

"THE withered, unbelieving, second-hand eighteenth century." So Mr. Carlyle calls it, and repeats the estimate with infinite variety of emphatic epithet through all his writings. Some such opinion has been, until lately, the common one. The last century, we have been told, was not an age of faith, of virtue,

or of heroism. Coleridge has taught us that its philosophy was shallow and materialistic. Wordsworth and De Quincy have pronounced its literature cold and artificial, and, with something of contempt, have denied to Pope and his school the name of poet. Men differing as widely in creed as Newman, Maurice, and Martineau have alike confessed that its religion was faithless and lifeless. And yet, depreciate the last century as we may, it is certain that no period seems to be of greater interest to all students of English thought. Even Mr. Carlyle, though he has never ceased to berate it, has never ceased to study it. Such recent works as those mentioned at the head of this article attest the present attractiveness of the century to eminent men of widely different schools of thought. Nor can any careful reader have failed to notice that, during the last fifteen years, the popular estimate of the character and value of eighteenth-century thought has greatly changed. The period of reaction which began with Wesley in religion, with Coleridge in philosophy, and with Cowper and Burns in poetry, seems to be nearly at an end. The spirit of the last century is again returning upon us; and we may notice in all quarters an increasing sympathy with its temper and its methods. It may be of interest, therefore, to inquire, What were some of the characteristic features of the century? It will be the purpose of this paper to point out two or three of them, so far as they may be discovered by a rapid glance at English philosophy and literature of the period.

It should be said, however, at the outset, that most of the tendencies in thought commonly ascribed to the eighteenth century were in operation somewhat before its opening, and culminated somewhat before its close. Great movements in human thought are not sudden, but gradual, and cannot be sharply divided into periods; least of all will the dividing-lines of the centuries fitly mark such periods. In reality, what is to be said of the eighteenth century applies with more exactness to a period extending from about 1690 to about 1790.

No reader of eighteenth-century literature can fail to discern, as a first characteristic of the thought of the age, a tendency to exalt the logical reason at the expense of the intuitions, the imagination, and the emotions. There was a universal passion for clearness and plausibility, a disposition to narrow the range

of knowledge in order to obtain within that limited field greater clearness of vision. The sphere of exercise for the faculties once thus sharply defined, the thought of the age decided, with convenient assurance, that outside those limits there is nothing to be known. In the familiar opening passage of his treatise, (which, by the way, although "*On the Human Understanding*," pretends to cover the whole of our knowledge,) Locke says: "I thought it well to know the range of our own powers, that we might be cautious in meddling with things beyond our apprehension, and sit down in quiet ignorance of those things beyond our capacities." The writers of the time of Anne and the early Georges are constantly gratulating themselves upon the good sense of their own day. "Sense and wit," are Pope's cardinal virtues. "I have great respect for Paul," said Anthony Collins; "he was a man of sense and a gentleman." This tyranny of the understanding is evident in every department of thought. In theology all parties were content to assume the supremacy of reason; no questions were discussed or even entertained save on the supposition that they were to be appreciated and adjudged by the unwarmed reason alone. All literature was measured, not by its insight, its emotional warmth, or imaginative elevation, but by its conformity to those rules which the unaided understanding is competent to impose. In practical life, likewise, it is curious to notice the same ambition for a reasoned moderation, for philosophical regulation of life, for conduct that could not be charged with "folly." There was, in short, a universal impatience of any thing like transcendentalism in philosophy, mysticism in theology, enthusiasm in practical religion. The two texts, it is said,* on which most sermons were preached in England, during the first two thirds of the eighteenth century, were, "Let your moderation be known unto all men," and "Be not righteous over much."

A second characteristic, and one naturally growing out of that just mentioned, is a certain superficiality and thinness in much of the thinking of the century. Discussion upon all subjects was popular, very much more popular than ever before. The philosophy of the age, such as it was, descended into the street. Every question that was thought of interest at all was

* Hunt's "*History of Religious Thought in England*," vol. iii, p. 291.

debated at the club, in the coffee-house, in the drawing-room. But the tone of discussion was such as befitted those places. There was, indeed, not merely a general mental activity, but on some matters a fruitful activity. Physical science saw some of its noblest triumphs during the century. History began to be studied and written in a more intelligent way. Something like a school of political economy was founded. In short, wherever the activity of the age could exert itself on concrete facts and phenomena, in the realm of science as opposed to philosophy, it was fruitful. But the profound and ever-recurring questions of philosophy which demand depth as well as clearness of vision, were either given over as useless and perplexing, or, more commonly, received easy and plausible but not satisfactory answers. This disposition to give shallow and—if I may borrow a word of that time more expressive than elegant—"cock-sure" solutions to the deepest problems, shows itself perhaps most frequently in ethical and theological discussion. Readers of Butler will remember the natural impatience with which he speaks of the "loose kind of deism common among men of pretended learning and wit." In Berkeley's "*Alciphron*," Lycicles, the young freethinker, is made to say:

Our philosophers are of a very different kind from those awkward students who think to come at knowledge by poring on dead languages and old authors, or by sequestering themselves from the cares of the world to meditate in solitude and retirement. . . . I will undertake a lad of fourteen, bred in the modern way, shall make a better figure, and be more considered in any drawing-room, or any assembly of polite people, than one at four and twenty who hath lain by a long time at school or college. He shall say better things in a better manner, and be more liked by good judges. Where doth he pick up this improvement? Where our grave ancestors would never have looked for it—in a drawing-room, a coffee-house, a chocolate-house, at the tavern or groom-porter's. In these and the like fashionable places of resort, it is the custom for polite people to speak freely on all subjects, religious, moral, or political; so that a young gentleman who frequents them is in the way of hearing many instructive lectures, seasoned with wit and railery, and uttered with spirit.*

A similar disposition shows itself in political discussion. The old high traditional notions as to the nature of government had been pretty much overturned by the revolutions of

* "*Alciphron*," Dialogue i.

the previous century. By the unprecedented changes culminating in the Revolution of 1688 the whole question of the nature of the monarchy and the relation of the different branches of the government to each other had been brought into popular and reasoned discussion. The divinity that doth hedge a king was unknown in England after 1688. An immense increase in the deference paid to private judgment had rendered political traditions, as well as all other traditions, of little weight, and had incited a freedom of speech that often passed into license. Never was political discussion so rife in England as in the first half of the last century; and never before or since was it so rancorous, so shallow, and so confident. England was filled with pamphlets; but it would be difficult to point to any one of them written between 1700 and 1750 that shows any real wisdom.

It is to be further noticed, that the thought of the age was, for the most part, practical rather than speculative. It was controlled by prudential considerations, and aimed at immediate material results. This disposition shows itself in many ways: in the constant intrusion of the didactic element into polite literature, in the growth of a utilitarian ethics, and, perhaps more strikingly than anywhere else, in the universal tendency to enforce sound belief on low prudential grounds. "It's *safer* to believe there is a God," argued the timid orthodoxy of that day, "because at all events there *may* be one; and if there is, he will damn you if you don't."* In all departments of thought, among men of all shades of belief, the century shows, as Mr. Pattison says, "human attainment leveled to the lowest secular model of prudence. Practical life as it was, was the theme of the pulpit, the press, the drawing-room."† Such a spirit in no wise loses its reward. Measured by its material prosperity only, the period was certainly a most fortunate one. Hallam says that the forty years following the peace of Utrecht (1714) were the happiest in English history. It is, indeed, just this practical tendency which a certain school of modern thinkers most admire. "Intellectually," says Mr. Morley, in his "Life of Diderot," "it was the substitution of things for

* See this motive elaborated, for instance, in some of South's sermons, notably in one entitled "The Practice of Religion Enforced by Reason."

† "Tendencies of Religious Thought in England," "Essays and Reviews," p. 328.

words." But it seems hardly possible for any one to read the history of the last century without discovering that such an interest in "things" leads to a subordination of all higher matters to lower, to selfishness, narrowness of vision, and meagerness of life.

As a fourth characteristic, we may notice that the thought of the century, so far as it was speculative at all, was critical and destructive rather than constructive. It seems to be an inevitable law of human progress that the advance of thought shall not be constant but intermittent. To a period of enthusiasm, of faith, of philosophic insight, is sure to succeed a longer period during which mental activity is chiefly directed to the criticism of accepted beliefs. The acquisitions of the one period are subjected to the sifting scrutiny of the next. An age of faith is followed by an age of skepticism. Now, the first three fourths of the last century afford, perhaps, the best example in modern times of a typical age of skepticism. Its work was to prove all things, in the narrowest logical sense of that phrase, and it held fast nothing, however good, that would not submit itself to this process. Such activity, though important, must always be partial and one-sided, and its results only corrective. The eighteenth century affords no exception to this rule. Whatever permanent results of the thought of the time remain will be found to be almost entirely in the form of negations or limitations.

The tendencies thus mentioned may be illustrated by a rapid survey of some of the most important forms of English thought. And, first, of philosophy. The main line of English philosophic thought during the century is easily traced. It begins with Locke, who is the father of modern English philosophy, as indeed of English politics, and—it is hardly too much to say—of English theology also. Two more names only make up the succession. Berkeley follows Locke, and Hume follows Berkeley, each adopting the premises of his predecessor, and urging them to further and very different conclusions. The "Essay on the Human Understanding," the "Principles of Human Knowledge," and "Dialogues of Hylas and Philonous," with the "Treatise on Human Nature," contain all that is most representative and influential in English philosophical writing for a hundred years. What it is especially to our pur-

pose to notice here, is the common tendency in all three writers to simplicity, to a purely rational method, and to a destructive criticism.

This is seen at the outset in Locke. He will get rid of fruitless discussion over words, and bring philosophy to the test of plain facts which every man may investigate for himself. His attempt was thought in his own time singularly successful. He is spoken of with general admiration throughout the century, as having given an account of our knowledge which is simple and intelligible. Locke's theory, as has been so often shown, if consistently carried out, makes a clean sweep of intuitive ideas. If all the elements of our knowledge be reducible at last to sensations, it is evident that there is no room left for time, space, cause, or self. Locke, however, is not entirely consistent. The knowledge of self he bases on an "intuitive belief;" the knowledge of God, on an irresistible inference, which inference seems itself to rest on the principle of causation.* For the principle of causation there is, of course, no place in Locke's system, though of this inconsistency he does not seem to have been aware. But once admit it, and a further question inevitably follows. Our knowledge is derived from sensations; but what causes the sensations? Do they attest a substance? Locke vacillates somewhat in his answer, but we learn, at last, that our sensations are caused by *body* or *matter*. Of this matter he affirms not only independent existence, but two kinds of qualities, primary and secondary.† Our conscious existence, then, is made up of a series of states reducible in the last analysis to sensations, and these sensations are themselves caused by an "external somewhat," unconscious, solid, extended.

Now it is just at this point that Berkeley joins issue. Locke's philosophy, in this phase, it was evident, led direct to materialism and atheism. It was eagerly accepted, not only in England, but with even greater avidity in France. Fostered by many contemporary tendencies, notably by the attention given to physical science, it was leading men to believe that the unconscious somewhat was the cause of all thought, and, hence, of all conscious mind in the universe. If it caused sensations,

* Book iv, chaps. ix, x.

† Essay, book ii, chaps. viii, xxi, xxiii, xxiv; also book iv, chaps. ii, iii.

and sensations summed up knowledge, the conclusion was short and easy, and to a lazy or immoral philosophizing satisfactory enough. It was to such reasonings that Berkeley put his great question, What do you mean by the *existence* of this external unconscious somewhat? In what sense can you call it *real*? When you apply it to such terms as power, force, cause, what can these words mean? We know Berkeley's answer. Material substance, as commonly understood, he denied. When he searched his own consciousness for evidences of it, he found none; sensations he found, but no substratum.* He was, indeed, careful to reiterate that he believed in body as truly as any one else could, in the only intelligible sense in which the word "body" can be used; but body meant to him only an assemblage of sensations in consciousness. The idea of externality, which is always a part of our conception of body, he explains by the potential sensations; for example, the possible sensations of touch inevitably brought to mind by sight of a tree yonder, and by the permanence in the relations of our sensations, which, as it evidently does not depend upon *us*, gives an idea of otherness. These two elements, according to Berkeley, really constitute our idea of externality. So far Berkeley's philosophy is destructive, and so far it has been accepted by skeptical schools of thought since. But it has a constructive side as well. In fact, the whole purpose of Berkeley's work, as I have hinted, was to counteract the materialistic tendencies of his own times, and to furnish a philosophic basis for theism, though, as might be expected from the temper of his time, this part of his work received much less attention than the destructive part.

His theistic conclusion rests on two arguments. In the first place, it would seem that, as the essence of things consists in their being perceived—*esse is percipi*, as Berkeley puts it—when not perceived by any mind the things must cease to exist; that the chair I saw five minutes ago, but which is not now seen by me or by any other conscious mind, must have ceased to exist just as truly as the toothache I had a year ago. And so it must, Berkeley admits. And yet he insists we do know (though on what warrant he does not clearly show) that bodies

* Berkeley's "Principles," sections 2-33. See also Prof. Fraser's excellent notes and illustrations in his edition of "Berkeley," and in the "Selections" of the Clarendon Press Series.

have a real and continuous existence; hence, they must exist in the thought of a divine and omniscient Mind, having there that *percipi* which is their real *esse*. Thus, we come direct to a refutation of atheism.* And, secondly, we come to the same goal by another road. Berkeley admits direct knowledge of self. We know ourselves, too, as having power, but we see that a large part of our sensations are not caused by *our* power, while yet they must be caused by some power. We have no idea of power save mind; they must, therefore, be produced by a mind, and their infinite complexity and unvarying order demand a divine Mind.†

This argument evidently postulates the principle of causation, and the knowledge of self and cause. Drop these postulates out, deny or doubt them, and the coherency of the system is lost. Now this was the point at which Hume took up Berkeley's conclusions. He claimed that the assumption of a personal self and of a principle of cause are equally without warrant. The same considerations which had induced Berkeley's denial of a material substance he urged against its subjective antithesis, a mental substance, while he found in the principle of causation nothing but a customary association between impressions and ideas. The result was, of course, entire and thorough-going philosophical skepticism. It need not be said that this philosophy, modified somewhat by the Hartleian doctrine of the association of ideas, is consistently carried out in our own century by the teaching of the two Mills. This hasty retrospect of its most familiar forms is given only as illustrating those tendencies of thought above mentioned as characteristic of the century, the desire of simplicity and clearness, the disposition to exclude from discussions all insoluble problems, and the habit of destructive criticism. Very much the same might be said of the side schools of thought—of the common-sense philosophy, for instance. It is not until the time of Coleridge that we get a form of thought essentially in opposition to the temper of the century.

But still more significant of the practical temper of the age is the wide-spread indifference to the really able philosophy of

* See the "Principles of Human Knowledge," sections 45, 48; also the "Hylas and Philonous," and the *Siris, passim*.

† "Principles of Human Knowledge," sections 145-156.

the day. Berkeley and Hume seem to have had no wide following. Locke was, indeed, studied and quoted with approbation throughout the century, but principally because of his apparent simplicity and his opposition to abstruseness. The truth is, the whole period was singularly averse to profound speculation. Its typical men are not deep thinkers like Locke and Berkeley and Hume; but, on the one side such club-room philosophers as Shaftesbury and Bolingbroke, masters of light, superficial discussion, and, on the other side, minds of tougher fiber, but of conservative temper, like Swift and Johnson, who refused to discuss the deeper questions of philosophy, or to scrutinize very closely the rational basis of the beliefs to which they held so obstinately. Swift argues against Collins by showing, in a masterly piece of irony, the inconveniences that would result if the Christian religion were abolished. Johnson, as is well known, bluntly said that any clown might refute all Berkeley by running his head against a post; of Hume he always spoke with undisguised contempt, and Hume's fruitless philosophical speculations he termed, with more force than elegance, an attempt "to milk the bull;" in the most masterly of all his essays, he brushes away, as with a contemptuous gesture, the flimsy conjectures of Soame Jenyns on the "Origin of Evil;" but he has no solution of his own for the problem, and is manifestly irritated by the foolish efforts after one.

The same tendencies may be seen, in their most pronounced form, in those theological discussions with which the thought of the century was so largely concerned. It is, indeed, common nowadays to speak of the deistic controversy of the early part of the century as a matter of little interest or importance. Long before the close of the century Burke could exclaim contemptuously, in the well-known passage in the "Reflections on the French Revolution," "Who, born within the last forty years, has read a word of Collins, or Toland, or Tindal, or Morgan, or the whole race of freethinkers? Who now reads Bolingbroke? Who ever read him through?" No one, very likely. And yet the deistic controversy, though the noise of it soon died away, was very significant in its time, and its results were really lasting. It illustrates throughout the characteristics of the age which have been mentioned. The English theology of the previous century—the seventeenth—had,

in all its greatest specimens, been growing more and more rational. The Reformation in England, though perhaps at first a civil and moral rather than an intellectual revolt, had been, in reality, there as every-where else, an appeal to reason as against authority. Discarding tradition, religious faith and practice must base themselves on the authority of reason and on the authority of the Bible. So argues Hooker at the outset. Increasingly through that century do we find growing among the ablest thinkers a principle of toleration based on a free exercise of the individual reason. This may be seen in Milton's "Areopagitica," in Jeremy Taylor's "Liberty of Prophesying," in Chillingworth's "Religion of Protestants," and in Stillingfleet's "Irenicum." * But an appeal to reason and the Bible is virtually an appeal to reason, since the claims of Scripture itself are to be adjudged by reason. So says Chillingworth. "The Bible is to be accepted as authority in all questions save questions where its authority is concerned." This is the position of Locke, whose treatise on "The Reasonableness of Christianity" may almost be said to have been the text for all theological discussion for seventy-five years, on both the orthodox and the deist side. Grant the joint authority of reason and Scripture when they do not conflict, with the assumption that Scripture must submit to the arbitration of reason when they do; this was the stand-point of all religious controversy at the beginning of the century. *Do they conflict?* was a question then inevitable. And this necessitates the further question, *What does reason sanction? What are those reasoned beliefs conformity to which must be the test of Scripture?* Men differ hopelessly on many points; let us take what they agree on. We shall then have a reasonable, a natural religion.† In this your natural religion you must take, said the deists, only axioms common to all men. Whatever in revelation conforms to this can be admitted; whatever exceeds or transcends it must be supported by very strong external evidence; and whatever contradicts it cannot be received at all. The deists professed themselves Christians—whether sincerely or not has been questioned, though there seems no good reason to doubt it—and

* For an interesting treatment of the growth of this principle, see Principal Tulloch's "Rational Theology in the Seventeenth Century."

† Leslie Stephen's "History of English Thought," vol. i, p. 85.

their object was not widely different from Locke's. The titles of the two best known books, Toland's "Christianity not Mystical," and Tindal's "Christianity as Old as Creation," indicate the range and purpose of their work. They made Christianity substantially a republication of natural religion, and rejected whatever of revelation would not square with that account.

The deist controversy seems, at this distance, a very unequal one. All the speculative ability, all the social and literary prominence, were on the orthodox side. On that side were Locke, Clarke, and Warburton; Bentley, the most learned and acute of critics, Berkeley, the profoundest English thinker of the century, and Butler, whose "Analogy" may be said to have closed the controversy. Among professed men of letters the orthodox party could claim Addison, who had written in his youth a treatise on the Evidences—and it must be confessed, as Pepys would say, a "mighty weak one"—and who, later in life, systematically wrote down the deists in the "Spectator," and even in his comedies;* Dick Steele, who contributed to the controversy "Christian Hero;" Swift, who in one of the very finest of his satirical papers covered with ridicule the deist Collins; and other names only a little less eminent than these. On the deist side the writers were men now forgotten, and, it would seem, not deemed of very great ability or learning in their own day. Some of them confessed, even in their criticisms of Scripture, that they had no language but their mother tongue. Socially they were, with one or two exceptions, unknown men. Their little, shriveled books are now almost unattainable; and the general reader is forced to study them, if indeed he care to study them at all, in some such full abstract as that given by Mr. Hunt in his "History of Religious Thought."† From such antagonists it may seem that the defenders of orthodox theology should have had little to fear; and we are apt to be surprised that they were so apprehensive. A little study, however, suffices to show that the importance of the attack cannot be measured by the ability manifest in the printed works of those deists who came to the front, nor even by the ability of these men themselves. The danger lay in the universal diffusion of such views. They were in the air. They

* In "The Drummer," for instance.

† Vol. ii, chaps. ix, xi.

gained, perhaps, no very able defenders, but they were on every body's lips. Every body understood the deist questions; every body asked them. Accordingly, we find the ablest apologists concerned not so much to answer any particular book as to check, if possible, the tide of fashionable unbelief and indifference. It is the "loose deism now current in fashionable circles" that frightens Butler. "It has come to be taken for granted by many persons," he says, "that Christianity is not so much as a subject of inquiry, but that it has at last been discovered to be false." And the objections of the deists, it should be said, were real ones, and, in such an age, all the more dangerous; because they were not begotten of any profound thought or critical scholarship, but were rather the suggestions of men of very mediocre ability, and were level to the apprehension of the meanest capacity. In a word, they were precisely in harmony with the practical, reasoning, destructive temper of the time. The increasing geographical and astronomical knowledge, for instance, which had begun to filter down among the middle classes, suggested a series of plausible questions, so often since repeated. Christendom is a fragment of the world, and the world a fragment of the universe. Is it, then, conceivable that God should place such supreme importance on the Christian revelation?* What of that 300,000,000 of Chinese—who turn up in all the deist writings from Toland to Tom Paine—who never could have heard of Christianity? Are they damned? And if they are not, can the Christian revelation be the one absolutely necessary thing in this world or the next? The first chapters of Genesis were beginning to provoke dissent even before the birth of modern geology. How shall we explain the discrepancies of the gospels, the fulfillment of prophecy, the vindictive psalms? It was precisely because these detached objections were so simple—so puerile the orthodoxy of to-day may perhaps call them—that they were readily caught up and diffused. They were at all the dinner-tables. It is odd to read, for instance, in the "Memoirs of the Countess of Huntingdon," that "My Lord Bolingbroke was seldom in her ladyship's company without *discussing* some topic beneficial to his eternal interests." Manners are, fortunately, now changed in this particular.

* See Leslie Stephen's "History of English Thought," vol. i, chap. ii.

Doubtless such objections as these can be readily answered, but they are not essentially frivolous. They are *real* objections, and—which is the consideration here to be specially noted—they are precisely of a nature to commend themselves readily to the homely common sense of the middle class. Some matters—transubstantiation, for instance—it may be held that this homely common sense is unable to comprehend; but the question of the literal fulfillment of prophecy in the Gospels, or the question whether there was one beggar or two at the gate of Jericho, common sense feels itself quite competent to ask. The great difficulty was, as Butler saw, to get common sense to look at a system as a whole, with arguments *pro* and *con*, and not content itself with desultory attack and reply. It must be remembered that the whole deistic controversy was not so much a speculative as a practical one. It was an effort on both sides professedly, and one side in reality, to preserve to society and morals the support of religion. Nor is it easy to overestimate the value of the results flowing from the controversy. To the deist attack it may be said that we owe the work of Butler, Paley, and Lardner. A whole series of plausible questions were answered once for all. And, what was of perhaps even more importance, the grounds and limits of a rational defense of Christianity were made clear. Apologists learned not to waste their efforts in the defense of what is unessential.

But all through the century it is assumed that the reason is arbiter. As some one has said, "It would seem that Christianity existed only to be proved." The credibility of revelation is the constant topic. The mode of defense changed somewhat, indeed, after the middle of the century. As the deistic controversy subsided the work of the apologist was directed not so much to the internal evidences as to the external. The reason of the change is obvious. After it had been proved satisfactorily that there is no inherent improbability in the Scripture narratives, it remained to prove that they were genuine and authentic, to "put the apostles on trial once a week for forgery," as Johnson has it. The *a posteriori* argument naturally followed the *a priori*. Paley occupies some such position in summing up this work as Butler does in the other. But the tone and the methods of the discussion remain the

same throughout, so that the revolt against the evangelical pretensions at the close of the century was inevitable and very characteristic. Believers and unbelievers cried out together, "Enthusiasm!" And consistently. For both parties had been drawing Christianity before the bar of reason, and agreed that all its pretensions should be settled by argument; but here were men who professed to have a belief, or knowledge, or whatever you choose to call it, that was independent of reasoning or argument of any kind. They had *experienced* the Christian religion. Such pretensions were equally fatal to both parties. "They were," said Bishop Butler to Wesley, "a horrid thing, sir, a very horrid thing!" *

It may be remarked in passing that there was a wide difference between the skepticism of the last century and that of our own, and a difference which itself indicates the wider range and deeper insight of modern doubt as well as of modern belief. The deists of the last century refused to receive revelation because they found it contradictory of nature. This antagonism between nature and revelation, they said, necessitated the conclusion that revelation is false. When they attempted to explain the origin of revelation they usually had recourse to the ready hypothesis of imposture. The work of the apologist, therefore, was to reconcile nature and revelation, to find a meeting-place between them, and to show that the objections good against the latter were equally good against the former. But the skepticism of to-day, so far from finding any contradiction between nature and revelation, finds that revelation is only an outgrowth of nature, an item in the intellectual and emotional development of the race. The result is, of course, to dissipate all its *supernatural* pretensions. So that the apologist of to-day has to reverse the work of the apologist of the last century. He has to show that there is a point of divergence between the natural and the revealed. The apologist of the last century labored to show that they are consistent and harmonious; the apologist of to-day must show that they are distinct, and that the one cannot be a mere

* His precise language was: "Sir, the pretending to extraordinary revelations and gifts of the Holy Ghost is a horrid thing, a *very* horrid thing!" Wesley's "Works," xxii, 270. See also Hunt's "History of Religious Thought," iii, 289. It should be said that the good Bishop's opinion of Wesley was somewhat modified in after years.

development of the other. The last century apologist argued against deists, but deists there are now few or none. Butler's "Analogy" was the book for that day; the book for our day has not yet been written, and when it is its course of argument will be the opposite of Butler's. This difference has, of course, often been stated of late; it is neatly pointed out in a recent number of the "Contemporary Review." *

The characteristics of English thought during the century find clear exemplification also in the *ethical* discussions. In looking at that most interesting of questions, the bearing of the philosophic and religious thought of the ages upon its practical life, one is struck first by the rather singular fact that all the skeptical and deistic thought of the early part of the century took a clearly optimistic direction. It assumed as a part of its natural religion, a moral sense and a moral Governor of the universe. That done, all the rest was easy enough. This complacent philosophy is seen in its most familiar form in Pope's "Essay on Man," the philosophy of which—so far as such a fragmentary and inconsistent thing can be said to have any philosophy—must be said, in spite of Warburton's bullying defense, to be deistic. It was inspired by Shaftesbury and Bolingbroke, especially by the latter. And here, too, the skeptical thought of the last century was sharply in contrast with that of our own time. The skepticism of the previous age did not, indeed, realize to the full the meaning of the profoundest questions of life, and it gave them no satisfactory solution, but it did not despair of any. The skeptics had a firm faith in the efficacy of reason, and most of them persuaded themselves into an optimism which, if not logically defensible from their position, had at least some cheer in it. The thoroughly practical character of their thinking made it almost necessary that they should do so. It seemed necessary to find some support for the struggle of life. But the prevailing form of nineteenth-century skepticism is of the Positivist type. It has quite given up all attempts to solve any questions of Why and Whence and Whither. These it dismisses to the realm of the unknowable, where, unfortunately, are nearly all those things we most want to know. Discarding faith altogether, it leaves to reason

* "The Originality of the Character of Christ," by George Matheson, "Contemporary Review," for November, 1878.

only the field of positive scientific fact. The result, of course, is pessimism. It is seen clearly enough in any of the writings of our most popular scientists—Huxley, or Tyndall, or Leslie Stephen, or Kingdon Clifford. But here, too, it is easy to see that modern skepticism is the more logical and consistent. In truth, it is evident that the optimism of Pope and Shaftesbury and Bolingbroke is a very shallow thing. It was seen to be such by the ablest thinkers, even of that age. "Gentlemen," said Voltaire to a circle of friends in England after Pope's "Essay on Man" had appeared, "I beg of you to explain to me how it is that 'all is for the best,' for I cannot understand it." Two striking works of fiction near the close of the century, though written by men who cordially hated each other, are really both protests against the easy-going optimism of the early part of the century. We mean Voltaire's "Candide" and Johnson's "Rasselas." Pangloss and Candide, who travel around the world, get shipwrecked at Lisbon just before the earthquake, one of them hung by the Inquisition and the other driven an outcast over the earth, and Rasselas, who leaves his Happy Valley to find happiness, but cannot find it nor discover any one who has, are alike protests against the ready assurance that finds every thing for the best in such a world as this.

The fundamental mistake of the deists at this point lay in their assumption that if there be a Supreme Being he *must* be good. For this assumption it seems more than doubtful whether natural religion can ever find any sufficient warrant. Our philosophy, if it be consistent, *must*, indeed, drive us to a belief in a God. We need a First Cause, and we can form no conception of its nature save by adopting the idea of a personal Will; but of the moral nature of the Cause it is doubtful whether reasoning upon the phenomena of life can teach us any thing. Those phenomena, alas! afford fully as much warrant for supposing that the Cause at the spring of things is indifferent or malevolent. Hence the very curious and ineffectual reasoning upon such things in the "Essay on Man." Natural religion *ought* to be pessimistic, and, when it has the courage to be really independent of revelation, it is. The deists claimed that, in this "best possible of all worlds," whatever is, is right, and urged that all ought, therefore, to be happy; but they were confronted with the spectacle of universal dis-

order, unrest, calamity. The facts of life were too much for their philosophy, and all Mr. Pope's fine verses never could make Mr. Pope a happy man.

The main drift of ethical speculation throughout the century was clearly toward utilitarianism. Ethical doctrines were not sharply defined until about the end of the period, so that the writers are not always perfectly consistent with themselves, but the general tendency is plain enough. In a century that drew its philosophy mainly from the head-waters of Locke, it could not be otherwise. Locke, indeed, does not put any thing in the place of these moral intuitions which he sets aside, and seems inclined to make morality dependent upon the arbitrary command of a Ruler. He had, however, done the destructive work. It soon became evident that no ethics but the ethics of pure utility can consist with his philosophy. For there are but three answers, one of which, in some form or other, must be given to the question, Why should I do right? You may reply, Because it is for my interests to do so, either for my own individual interests directly, or for those of the race, in which mine are involved; and this is utilitarianism. Or you may say that to do right is the bidding of an impulse, conscience, moral sense, or whatever you choose to call it, an impulse which defies analysis, but which carries in itself its own authority—and there an end; and this is intuitionism. Or you may say that the impulse of duty is to be obeyed because it is the voice of God. The moralists of the last century almost universally gave to the question the first or the third of these answers. But, it is to be noticed, the third answer really resolves itself into the other two, for it at once suggests the further query, Why the voice of God is to be obeyed; and the final answer to this question must be either an intuitional or a prudential one. With the writers of the last century it was almost uniformly a prudential one. This may be seen, for instance, in the constant tone of pulpit discussion, in the numerous sermons in which it was argued that the *moral* unbeliever is a fool, since he sacrifices his happiness both in this world and in the next—in this world because he is moral, and in the next because he is an unbeliever.*

Near the close of the century these two phases of utili-

* This is the drift of one of Bishop Atterbury's best-known sermons.

tarianism toward which the thought of the age had been so clearly tending found embodiment in the famous work of Bentham, on the one hand, for the purely secular utilitarianism, and of Paley on the other, for the theological utilitarianism. It is plain that this utilitarian tendency, this laudation of a "rational self-love," as the phrase went, is eminently illustrative of that clearness and practicality on which we have insisted as characteristic of the temper of the age. Whatever be the nature of virtue and vice, men said, one thing is certain: men wish to be happy here, and hereafter, too, if there is any hereafter; a certain line of conduct tends to make you happy here, and probably will have the same results anywhere else. That seemed clear and practical.

It is a little curious to find that while many of the orthodox writers held to a substantially utilitarian theory of ethics, many of the deists held in a loose way to an intuitional theory. In the early part of the century the most emphatic statements of an original unreasoned moral impulse came from that side. Exalting reason, discarding revelation, the deists needed a basis for their doctrines in something, and they found such a basis in the moral intuitions. The very phrase, "moral sense," originated with Shaftesbury. This rather ill-considered form of intuitional ethics, with the flimsy optimism built upon it, is best seen in Shaftesbury's "Characteristics," or in Pope's "Essay on Man," which is only a rambling comment on Shaftesbury. The moral sense of Shaftesbury is a kind of sentiment which naturally inclines us to right as the æsthetic sense inclines to beauty. A sound theism, he claims, can follow only from a sound morality; since to believe in God is well or ill according as the God believed in is a good or a bad one. Morality is thus always prior to religion, and the basis of all religion. The theologians, indeed, often debase morality by making it dependent on reward, since the moment an action is performed from motives of interest it is virtuous no longer. As to the questions arising out of the conflict between virtue and interest, Shaftesbury meets them by roundly declaring that there is no such conflict. At this point he approaches utilitarianism. "If any one should ask me," he says, "*why* I should avoid a nasty act when no one saw me, I should think him a nasty man for asking the question; but if he insisted, *why*, I should say,

'Because I have a nose.' 'But if you can't smell?' 'Why, I would see myself nasty.' 'But if it is in the dark?' 'Why, then I should *know* it; my sense of the matter would still be the same.'"*

Similarly, he argues, we have a moral sense which revolts against a wrong action, whether the action have any consequences or not, and whether it is known to any one else or not. Of course, on this theory virtue ought to be very easy; the stubborn fact is, it is not. The theory is pleasing, but we must shut our eyes to believe it. Shaftesbury, like Bolingbroke fits a graceful, optimistic, natural religion upon his ethics by assuming that, of possible systems,

"Wisdom infinite must form the best,"

and deifying universal law, to which he seems to find no difficulty in sacrificing the individual.

When it is said that the orthodox theologians of the century taught a utilitarian ethics, an exception to the statement must be made in the case of Bishop Butler. Butler's three "Sermons upon Human Nature" are perhaps the most important contribution of the century to ethical discussion. Indeed, it is doubtful whether the intuitional theory has ever received a more clear and forcible statement. Butler takes up the "moral sense" of Shaftesbury; but it now becomes, not a sentiment nor an impulse, but an authority. In his well-known words, "Had it power, as it has authority, it would govern the world." Shaftesbury had given it a supremacy *de facto*, and had thereby brought his doctrine sharply into conflict with the facts of experience. Butler gives it a supremacy *de jure*, which is a very different thing. As a result, Butler shows nothing of the flippant optimism of Shaftesbury; he has rather profound seriousness and melancholy.

The polite literature of the century, as a mere glance may show, exemplifies, both in its matter and its manner, that supremacy of the reason and that practical temper so characteristic of the age. At the beginning of the reign of Anne, for the first time, English writers had a really large and varied audience. There had grown up a trading middle-class of fair intelligence, whose influence in society and in politics was every

* "Wit and Humor," part iii, section 4; quoted by Stephen.

day increasing. It was evident that the government was to pass under their control. Both political parties were bidding for their support, and both parties had found that this support could be gained more surely by the press than by any other means. Men of letters gained a political influence such as they had never exerted before and have never exerted since. Then, too, the enormous growth of London had drawn together an immense number of this class of people within easy reach of the writer. In the days of Swift and Pope one tenth of the whole population of England and Wales lived within three miles of St. Paul's. And the population was more nearly homogeneous then than now; social extremes were at a less distance from each other. It is probable that the average intelligence of London was higher, and the proportion of readers to the whole population greater, during the first half of the last century, than it has ever been since. When a large portion of the reading public, and that the most intelligent portion, is thus gathered immediately around the center of government and of society, we have the most favorable condition for the growth of a literature which shall deal in brief, rapid, and effective fashion with the passing events of the day. The pamphlet of Defoe or of Swift, or the "Spectator" of Mr. Addison, would be well nigh a week old before it could reach Chester or York; but it could be laid damp from the press on a hundred coffee-house tables in London, and be read before night by a hundred thousand people. This great public was not a learned public. It knew not much of any thing; but it knew a little of every thing. It was shrewd, busy, curious. It had no imagination whatever, but it had a deal of hard common sense. To discuss all matters in a brief, lively manner, and on a level not above the understanding of such a public—this was the demand made of the man of letters. Under such a demand good prose was produced. For the first time we have a racy, idiomatic, flexible prose style, not varying too much from the easy grace of conversation. It was a new development of the powers of the language; it was an immense gain. In prose, indeed, so far as manner goes, the writing of such men as Addison and Swift leaves little to be desired.

With poetry the case was very different. Without imagination, and without any real depth of feeling, the poetry of the

age has left to it only the field of argument and reason. Hence, in the first place, its matter is hardly the matter of poetry at all, but only a metrical version of current political or philosophical discussion. In its manner, too, the tyranny of the understanding is evident. Milton or Spenser might clothe a philosophical conception in glowing imagery; but the cool intellectual criticism of this age made all such imagery seem incongruous. There was really no imagination to inform or inspire it. To the unwarmed understanding any pure work of the imagination presents, of course, incongruities enough. The "*Faerie Queen*," for instance, was a standing offense to the criticism of the eighteenth century. Addison says of it complacently:

"But now the mystic tale that pleased of yore
Can charm *our understanding* age no more."

The same temper which excluded so carefully every thing like mysticism from philosophy, or enthusiasm from religion, excluded also from poetry all irregularity of form and intemperance of sentiment. Neither the poet's eye nor the believer's must roll in any fine frenzy.

There are, however, certain literary virtues which the understanding alone can appreciate. They may be called the geometrical excellences of style—symmetry of parts, order, arrangement, clearness, careful excision of all irrelevant matter. By virtue of such qualities as these one man, and only one, attained lasting and deserved reputation as a poet. Alexander Pope had no imagination, he had neither depth nor delicacy of feeling, he had not even originality or breadth of view; but he had, in lieu of these, a pretty fancy, a severe taste, an unerring sense of literary proportion, marvelous felicity of expression, a quick eye for the weak points of an adversary, a wit as cold and keen as steel, and a clearness in the perception of detached truths hardly ever equaled—of detached truths, we say, for Pope had absolutely no logic at all. For the life of him he never could put two premises together. He secreted thought as an oyster secretes pearls. Indeed, it is evident that any considerable logical power would have been fatal to his literary skill. For it is only when truths are drawn from their connections and set up in isolation that they can be stated with the epigrammatic vigor we so much admire in Pope's couplets. The couplet

itself, as Professor Lowell has somewhere said, is a kind of thought-coop. Pope has given us more proverbs than any other English poet; but proverbs are always half-truths. It must be admitted, however, that all which it was possible to do with his themes, and in the limitations of genius under which he worked, Pope has done. One may, if he choose, deny to his verses the name of poetry, as Coleridge was fain to do; but one cannot deny that they have a perennial interest. They are the highest proof our literature affords of the supreme value of the pure art of expression. But Pope stands alone. When men of equal emotional coldness, but not of equal intellectual keenness, attempted to poetize, the result was inexpressibly dreary. Most of the poetry of his contemporaries is simply inflated prose, galvanized into a kind of life by the free use of capital letters. Their muse was Prosopopœia. Pope was right in putting them into the "Dunciad."

The criticism of the age is of a piece with its poetry. It is evident that the excellences of such poetry as Pope's are matters that can be reduced to rule and neatly expressed in maxims. Accordingly, we find the critics of the time judging their own poetry by such rules, and laboriously trying to do the same thing with that of a previous age. Addison, who had succeeded in writing a "correct" drama which nobody can read, criticises the "Paradise Lost" with infinity of platitude about plot, machinery, and such jargon, as if a poem were a piece of mechanism. Of one of the wisest and most tender of Shakespeare's plays, Samuel Johnson can only say: "The play (*Cymbeline*) has many just sentiments, some natural dialogues, and some pleasing scenes; but they are obtained at the expense of much incongruity. To remark the folly of the fiction, the absurdity of the conduct, the confusion of the names and manners of different times, and the impossibility of the events in any system of life, were to waste criticism upon unresisting imbecility, upon faults too evident for detection, and too gross for aggravation." Such criticism as this, it is clear, can never disclose the truth or power of poetry. As well try to measure the warmth and brightness of broad sunlight with a two-foot rule.

It may be remarked that the tendencies to the reaction which, at the close of the century, worked such a revolution in

all departments of thought, made their appearance in literature earlier than anywhere else. Two marks of this reaction may be mentioned in closing this paper. Alongside of the hard, practical sense of Pope, Swift, and Addison, this sound but narrow judgment expressing itself in vigorous English without emotion and without imagination, we may discern, quite early in the century, a tendency to sentimentalism, an affectation of sentiment and emotion to take the place of the real; and this in all kinds of literature and in various ways. It may be seen, for instance, in Young's poetry, where, without a ripple of real emotion, there is a constant tumid swell and roll of mere declamation, bigness instead of greatness, pompous reflections that are utterly dreary. The "Night Thoughts" is at once the hollowest and the most resonant of poems. The same manner may be seen a little later in the frigid academic raptures of Dr. Blair's sermons. The most popular religious book of the century—one of the most popular religious books ever written—was Hervey's "Meditations Among the Tombs." * Any young readers of this generation who have chanced to look into it have probably been surprised to find it one of the most florid of books, full of sophomoric declamation of the very worst sort, and written in a tone of unctuous pathos very unedifying. In fiction a similar manner may be seen. Fielding fairly represents the sturdy common sense of the age, but Richardson is morbidly sentimental, and Sterne is sentimentalism incarnate. The same tendency in fiction, as the century drew toward its close, produced, on the one hand, the now forgotten "Rosa Matilda" school of novels, and, on the other, joined to a rather *dilettante* antiquarianism, the bugaboo stories of Horace Walpole and Mistress Anne Radcliffe. With the more healthy taste of our century the one was replaced by such novels as those of Miss Austin, and the other by the Scott romances.

The other mark of reaction referred to above is a growing dislike for the stifling air and the cramping conventionalities of city life. In the first quarter of the century one may already

* Lecky's "England in the Eighteenth Century," vol. ii, p. 600. No less than seventeen editions were published in seventeen years. See also Tyerman's "Oxford Methodists." Coleridge says the book was vastly popular in Germany also. Young's "Night Thoughts" and Richardson's "Clarissa Harlowe" were significantly its rivals for popular favor there.

hear some first words of that new gospel of nature so soon to be preached by Rousseau. It is odd to find in the most artificial poetry of the time a fanciful admiration for that ideal age of nature and of freedom "when wild in woods the noble savage ran," as Pope has it. Even in philosophy the same sentiment often shows itself. Those who have read Dugald Stewart's "Philosophy of the Active and Moral Powers" will remember his *naïve* allusions to the savage state. "The social affections," he thinks, are now not so warm "as when the species were wandering wild in their native forests." Pope, who succeeded in writing the very worst nature-poetry in the world, was only prevented by some merciful special providence from attempting "Indian Pastorals." The growth of this sentiment is attested by the popularity of Thomson's "Seasons," and by the really wide-spread interest excited by the wretched fustian of the Pseudo-Ossian. At the close of the century it finds full expression in the poetry of Cowper, of Burns, and of that greatest of all poets of nature—greatest English poet since Milton—William Wordsworth.

ART. IV.—THE RELATIONS OF THE CHURCHES AND MR. GARRISON TO THE AMERICAN ANTISLAVERY MOVEMENT.

[ARTICLE FIRST.]

SEVERAL misapprehensions in regard to the great American antislavery movement, floating more or less indefinitely in the public mind, deserve correction. By many it is supposed to have been almost entirely a humanitarian evolution, deriving its inception, organization, leadership, and best support from humanitarian sources; and that its progress and final triumph were gained, not only without the aid of the Churches, but in spite of their opposition. In this false light Mr. William Lloyd Garrison's name is made to eclipse all others, as the founder of the antislavery movement, "the central and supreme figure in its group of giants,"* President Lincoln being "but the pen in Mr. Garrison's hand to write the Proclamation of Emancipa-

* Rev. William J. Potter, of New Bedford, in Parker Memorial Hall, Boston.

tion," while Garrison is "a lofty monolith," towering above Washington and Lincoln, "engraved with titles of the oldest, the highest, and the eternal." * Nothing is more absurd than such eulogies. They are unsustained by any definite bases of facts.

Without undervaluing the services of American philanthropists and statesmen, the object of this paper is to do justice to American Christianity in its relations to the antislavery movement. To no single champion are exclusive honors due. Detracting not a single iota from Mr. Garrison's merits, he will be introduced in his own time, amid his surroundings, as conspicuous among many, whose uncompromising spirit gave a sterner type to the struggle, while the services of wiser and broader leaders and different measures determined the ultimate result.

A broad survey and an intelligent analysis of the field, through the entire history of the American antislavery movement, will prepare us for a discriminating verdict. This history comprises nearly one hundred and ninety years, and is divisible into three periods: 1. *The period of irregular, unorganized agitation*, from 1675-1774; 2. *The period of organized effort, on the basis of gradual emancipation*, 1774-1832; 3. *The period of radical organized agitation*, 1832-1863.

We shall see that while the complex ecclesiastical relations of the Churches sometimes embarrassed their organic action, and exposed it to criticism, nevertheless the whole movement sprang out of the religious sentiment of the people, under the individual leadership largely of the clergy and laity, often from the formal action of the Churches, and, throughout all its phases, was sustained by the religious life of the Churches.

I. In searching through the first period of irregular and unorganized agitation (1675-1774) we find the earliest Protestant apostle to the Indians, Rev. John Eliot, in the year 1675, memorializing the Governor and Council of Massachusetts against selling captured Indians into slavery, because "the selling of souls is dangerous merchandise;" and also, "with a bleeding and burning passion," says Cotton. Mather, remonstrating against "the abject condition of the enslaved Africans." We find a body of German Quakers, in Germantown, Pa., as early as

* Rev. C. A. Bartol, D.D., Boston, "Discourse on the Death of Mr. Garrison."

1688, presenting a protest to their Yearly Meeting against "buying, selling, and holding men in slavery;" and, three years later, Mr. George Keith, also a Pennsylvania Quaker, denouncing slavery as "contrary to the religion of Christ, the rights of man," etc.; and, three years later still, the Yearly Meeting taking formal action against the introduction of slaves. We discover, in the year 1700, Samuel Sewell, Esq., subsequently Chief-Justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts, and a deeply religious man, publishing a pamphlet entitled, "The Selling of Joseph," characterizing, with singular boldness, the system of slavery, and enunciating "the primal truths of human equality and obligation." In 1716 we notice the Quakers, in Dartmouth, Mass., memorializing the Rhode Island Quarterly Meeting on the evil of slavery; and the Nantucket Society of Friends declaring that it is not agreeable to the truth to purchase and hold slaves; and, in 1729, the same Society sending a serious address on this subject to the Philadelphia Yearly Meeting. The same year we recognize William Burling, in the Yearly Meeting on Long Island, bearing faithful testimony against slavery; and Elihu Coleman and Ralph Standiford publishing pamphlets condemning the institution as "iniquitous and antichristian;" and, eight years after, Benjamin Lay, another Quaker, pleading the cause of the bondmen, in a volume published from the press of Benjamin Franklin, in Philadelphia.

In 1736 we find Rev. John Wesley, in Georgia, protesting against slavery, and in 1739 Rev. George Whitefield addressing a letter to the Southern Colonies, sharply denouncing the system and its barbarities—a testimony frequently repeated in subsequent tours in America during thirty years. In the years 1755, 1756, and 1757 we notice Rev. John Wesley, and Rev. Samuel Davis, an able Presbyterian minister in Virginia, subsequently President of Princeton College, conducting a correspondence on the subject of slavery, Mr. Wesley donating to the latter books for the benefit of the colored people.

From 1746 to 1767 we trace Mr. John Woolson, a distinguished Friend in New Jersey, traveling extensively through the Middle and Southern Colonies, preaching against the practice of holding men in bondage. In the latter part of this period, Anthony Benezet, a man of practical piety, a son of

Huguenot parents, appears in the field, toiling for the enlightenment of the oppressed.

During the ten years preceding the Revolution, a desire for emancipation and the extinction of the slave-trade became very general, and found frequent utterance in pulpits and pamphlets. Nor were these efforts without apparent fruit. Many towns passed resolutions praying the colonial legislatures to take action at once in the interests of humanity; and many slave-masters, who subsequently aided in inaugurating the Revolution and in fighting its battles, became hostile to the slave-trade, and even to the existence of slavery itself. The general agitation of questions relating to the rights of man, and particularly the colonial rights, aided this movement, and made the sinfulness and wrong of slavery more apparent.

II. The period of organized effort—1774–1832—on the basis of gradual emancipation—the fruitage of the abundant seed-sowing of the previous period—commenced just prior to the Revolution.

The “Pennsylvania Abolition Society”—the first ever formed in America—entered the field in 1774, and, after a suspension for several years, during the war, reappeared in 1784. Then followed “Abolition” Societies, in New York, in 1785; in Rhode Island, in 1789; in Connecticut, in 1790; in New Jersey, in 1792; and, soon after, in Delaware, Maryland, and Virginia. Annual National “Abolition” Conventions, comprising delegates from eight States, focalized public sentiment from 1794 to 1804, and contributed largely to the abolition of slavery in the Northern States. Washington, Patrick Henry, Jefferson, and Mason, in Virginia; Franklin and Dr. Rush, in Pennsylvania; Hamilton and Jay, in New York; Roger Sherman, in Connecticut; and many others of the strongest statesmen, the ripest scholars, and purest philanthropists in the closing quarter of the last century, were pronounced emancipationists, participating actively in abolition movements. The Pennsylvania “Abolition” Society continued in active operation down to the time when emancipation was accomplished under the Proclamation of President Lincoln. Some of the other Societies disappeared early in this century, and for fifteen years the National Conventions were suspended, but subsequently were resumed in 1824, 1826, 1828, and 1829.

With no other exhibit of this period, it might be supposed that these early organizations, and the results achieved, were due to the influence of statesmen and philanthropists, and were purely humanitarian in their character. But such a view would seriously mistake the facts and overlook the prime impulse of the movement. Christian laymen and divines constituted its best leaders and also its rank and file, furnishing its pabulum and its inspiration.

In the six years from 1770 to 1776, in the midst of which the period now under consideration opened, the antislavery efforts of several Christian gentlemen attract particular attention. In Pennsylvania, that sterling Christian nobleman, Anthony Benezet, is still in the midst of his indefatigable labors, "few men," according to Dr. Rush, "ever living a more disinterested life"—the supreme objects of his enthusiastic philanthropy, the abolition of the slave-trade and the emancipation and instruction of the negroes. He conducts evening schools in Philadelphia for their benefit, and writes, publishes, and distributes throughout the Colonies, at his own expense, tracts against slavery. He holds correspondence on this subject with Wesley, and sends letters to the queens of England and Portugal to enlist their influence against the slave-trade. His volume on "Guinea and the Slave-trade" enlightens and quickens the youthful mind of the great English antislavery reformer, Clarkson, imparting an impulse to his great life-work. Assisted by George Bryam, Esq., in 1780, the Legislature of Pennsylvania is persuaded to pass an act of emancipation—the fitting culmination of Benezet's Christian labors. Dying soon after, his valuable estate is bequeathed for the benefit of the negroes, and his example remains a beautiful illustration of the Huguenot spirit he had inherited.

In 1773 another eminent Philadelphian, Dr. Benjamin Rush, conspicuous as a Christian, a philanthropist, and a statesman, in whose house Asbury and other early Wesleyan evangelists often found a hospitable home, publishes an address on the injustice and inhumanity of slavery. The following year the first Continental Congress, while laying the foundations of the new nation, solemnly pledges that the United Colonies shall "neither import nor purchase any slaves, and will wholly discontinue the slave-trade." Soon after the North Carolina, Virginia, and

Georgia Conventions pledge their "utmost endeavors for the manumission of the slaves in their Colonies." On April 6, 1776, Congress resolves, without opposition, that "no slave be imported into any of the thirteen United Colonies." All these movements are largely credited to the influence of Dr. Rush.

But one of the most decided and resolute champions of anti-slavery, at the opening of this period, appears in Newport, R. I.—Rev. Samuel Hopkins, D.D., famous for the school of theology that bore his name. A frequent witness of the landing of slaves from Africa, near his church and home, he becomes deeply stirred with the abominations of the system. As early as 1770 he boldly attacks the infamous trade in his own congregation, (deeply involved in the guilt of slave-trading and slave-holding,) sharply rebuking the sin, and pleading the cause of its victims. Through his efforts, in 1774 the further importation of negroes is prohibited in Rhode Island. In 1776 he publishes his famous pamphlet against slavery—the ablest document that had then appeared on the subject—dedicated to the Continental Congress, urging "the duty and interest of the American States to emancipate all their African slaves." Extensively circulated among the statesmen of that day, and subsequently republished and widely scattered by the New York Abolition Society, after its organization in 1785, its influence appears, as a most potential factor in molding the public sentiment of the times. As further fruits of Dr. Hopkins' labors, we find Rhode Island enacting that all children born in slavery after March, 1784, shall be free, and the Rhode Island Abolition Society formed in his house in the same year.

Three other eminent Congregationalists, two of whom, Rev. Ezra Styles, D.D., President of Yale College, and Judge Baldwin—a divine and a layman—were leading officers in the first Connecticut Abolition Society, and the other, Rev. Jonathan Edwards, D.D., one of the most vigorous preachers of the time, enter this arena of conflict for human rights, the latter boldly proclaiming the most radical antislavery doctrines, actively participating in the State and National Abolition Conventions, and, in 1795, writing the address of the National Convention to South Carolina, Georgia, and other Southern States.

Nor have the Friends, the early advocates and devoted pioneers of abolition, lost any of their antislavery zeal with the

lapse of years; but at their Yearly Meeting in Philadelphia, in 1774, they enact regulations against slavery more stringent than any that had preceded; and, in 1776, resolve that "owners of slaves, who refuse to execute proper instruments for giving them their freedom, shall be disowned." A few years later they drive all slave-owners from their communion—the first religious body to purge itself wholly from this great iniquity. Then they closely follow Congress with memorials, the most prominent of which were in 1783, 1790, and 1797, the latter provoking from Mr. Macon, of North Carolina, the petulant retort, that "the Quakers instead of being peace-makers are war-makers," for "they continually stir up insurrection among the negroes." The Moravians co-operated with the Friends in these early movements.

In 1774 Rev. John Wesley's celebrated tract, "Thoughts on Slavery," subsequently sown broadcast throughout England, Scotland, and Ireland, during the great English emancipation movement, was published and circulated among his Societies in America. His first American itinerants were active disseminators of his antislavery views, suffering much persecution on account of them. In 1780 the Baltimore Conference declared slavery to be "contrary to the law of God, man, and nature, and hurtful to society," required the traveling preachers holding slaves to promise to set them free, and advised their people to do the same. The disciplinary lines were drawn more closely by the Conferences in 1783 and 1784; and in the celebrated "Christmas Conference," in 1784, by which the Methodist Societies in America were formally organized into one Church, very stringent regulations were adopted requiring every Methodist holding slaves to execute an instrument of emancipation, or to leave the Church within one year, and allowing no slave-holder to be admitted into the Church, or to the Lord's supper, until he had complied with this requirement of emancipation, if the laws of the State admitted of freedom. The buying, selling, or giving away of slaves, except to free them, was forbidden on pain of expulsion.*

* These rules awakened great opposition, but Dr. Coke went through the South with characteristic boldness, expounding and defending them in the largest gatherings. Mobs were aroused, and on one occasion "a high-headed lady" offered to pay the rioters fifty pounds "if they would give the little doctor one hundred lashes."

Under Asbury and Coke petitions were drawn up asking the Legislatures of Virginia and North Carolina to provide for immediate or gradual emancipation. The Methodist preachers, with few exceptions, were decided emancipationists. Asbury, Coke, O'Kelley, M'Kendree, and others, preached flamingly against slavery. Emancipations became frequent where they were allowed, and mobs multiplied. Asbury and Coke shrank before the legal difficulties of the question in some of the States, and consented to the suspension of the stringent rules which had been adopted. Subsequent Conferences, in 1786, 1792, and 1796, modified the rules, but retained the emphatic declaration against the slave system. The rule adopted in 1800 was somewhat stronger, and provision was made for memorializing the State Legislatures on the subject of gradual emancipation. In carrying out this action some of the preachers incurred persecution, one of whom, Rev. George Dougharty, of South Carolina, died from injuries received from a mob. The Quarterly and Annual Conferences, in Kentucky and Tennessee, from 1806 to 1816, took decided action, and many emancipations were effected.

Each successive General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, from 1800 to 1824, took some action in regard to slavery, sometimes modifying and sometimes strengthening previous action. The section adopted in 1824, which remained unchanged for thirty-six years, declared that no slave-holder should be eligible to any official station in the Church, where the laws of the State in which he lived admitted of emancipation and permitted the liberated slave to enjoy freedom; and that when any traveling preacher became owner of slave property he should forfeit his ministerial character in the Church, unless he executed, if practicable, a legal emancipation of his slaves conformably to the laws of the State in which he lived. The General Rule of the Church, from 1792 to the present day, has prohibited "the buying and selling of men, women, and children with the intention to enslave them." At a later date, as we shall see, the holding of persons in slavery was also prohibited.

Simultaneously with other ecclesiastical utterances at the opening of this period, was the declaration of antislavery sentiments, in 1774, by the Presbyterian Synod of New York and

Philadelphia. Similar action was taken in 1780, and a fuller expression, though more cautiously phrased than those of other religious bodies, was proclaimed in 1787, recommending their people "to use the most prudent measures consistent with the interest and state of civil society, to procure, eventually, the final abolition of slavery in America." This subject came before the General Assembly in 1793, 1795, and 1815, when the expression of 1787 was re-affirmed.

In Kentucky, from an early period, a decided antislavery sentiment manifested itself in the Presbyterian Church. Rev. David Rice, a member of the convention that framed the State Constitution in 1791, labored hard to secure in that instrument a provision for the emancipation of the slaves, and published a pamphlet containing the views he had advocated. The Presbytery of Transylvania, in 1794, urged its people to prepare their slaves for freedom. Through several successive years these views were reiterated. In 1805 two young ministers, graduates from Dickinson College, Robert G. Wilson and James Gilliland, found it necessary to leave the Carolinas on account of their pronounced opinions in favor of emancipation. They settled in Ohio, whither others from Kentucky and Tennessee subsequently fled, and became promoters of positive antislavery sentiments.

In 1818 the sale of a slave, a member of the Presbyterian Church, was brought to the notice of the General Assembly, and a committee, of which Dr. Ashbel Green was chairman, reported an elaborate preamble containing a strong indictment against slavery, and recommending all Christians "to use their honest, earnest, unwearied endeavors to correct the errors of former times, and, as speedily as possible, to efface this blot from our holy religion, and to obtain the complete abolition of slavery throughout Christendom, and, if possible, throughout the world." They also warned their people against making any unavoidable delay in accomplishing this end "a cover for the love or practice of slavery, or a pretense for not using efforts that are lawful and practicable to extinguish this evil." In 1825 the Assembly say, "No more honored name can be conferred upon a minister of Jesus Christ than that of Apostle to the American slaves." In 1826 the Presbyterian Synod of Ohio, by a large majority, strongly condemned slavery—an

utterance subsequently quoted by Mr. Garrison, in the first volume of the "Liberator."

In the first part of this century, the invention and general introduction of the cotton-gin into the South, the rapid increase of cotton manufacturing and the growing mercantile and commercial interests connected with Southern products, all combined to make slave labor more profitable than formerly, and to deteriorate the moral sentiment in regard to the institution. Under such circumstances a determined purpose was formed to retain slavery where it already existed and to extend its domain in the territories. Hence laws prohibiting emancipation, the Missouri Compromise, and the intense excitement attending its adoption. After this the fires of agitation declined, a general condition of stupor followed, the public conscience was clouded, and Southern Legislatures repealed the more humane provisions of the slave-codes. Large numbers of all classes bowed in supple subserviency to the slave power, and treated the discussion of slavery as dangerous to the perpetuity of the Union. During this period the radical pro-slavery theories, for the advocacy of which Hon. John C. Calhoun was noted, were echoed by many divines and statesmen, and became a common sentiment in the South, and even with some at the North. It was contended that slavery was a divine institution, defensible from the Bible, and "the corner-stone of all enduring political institutions." From about 1805 to 1830 the general tendency of sentiment in regard to slavery, in the country and in the Churches, deteriorated. The disciplinary regulations against slavery became more or less a dead-letter, seldom enforced, and perhaps never in large sections; and the advocacy of antislavery principles was often severely denounced. In the North many sympathized with the South, and co-operated with them in every possible way in the legislative councils of the States and of the Churches.

But, even in this period of decadence, strong antislavery sentiments burned in many hearts. Among the Quakers, in 1814, Elias Hicks published a volume on slavery, containing the most radical principles of abolition. About 1820, in Kentucky and Tennessee, some ministers proclaimed with great clearness and force the distinctive doctrines of abolition. Dwelling in the midst of pro-slavery communities, increasingly intolerant

toward emancipation, the residence of these ministers became uncomfortable and unsafe. Accordingly, such men as Rev. John Rankin, a Presbyterian minister, and others, removed with their flocks to Ohio. It was no uncommon thing for the Methodist itinerants to speak freely, in public and in private, against slavery. Rev. Jacob Gruber, of the Baltimore Conference, was especially outspoken; and, while presiding elder, in 1818, at a camp-meeting, preached plainly against the slave system, for which he was arrested and tried for felony. He was defended by Roger B. Taney, Esq., subsequently Chief-Justice of the U. S. Supreme Court, and acquitted. In his eloquent plea, Mr. Taney affirmed that "the Methodist Church had steadily in view the abolition of slavery," that "no slaveholder was allowed to be a minister in it," and that "its preachers were accustomed to speak of the injustice and oppression of slavery."

Several other active antislavery workers appeared between 1815 and 1832. Near Wheeling, Va., resided a man of stanch New Jersey Quaker stock, who had deep convictions of the wrong of slavery, and clear views of duty in regard to the great evil. Benjamin Lundy seized the trailing banner of antislavery, and, for about a score of years, was a conspicuous standard-bearer. From 1815 to 1830 his labors were immense, involving great personal hardship and sacrifice, placing him in advance of all contemporaneous abolitionists. From him Mr. Garrison derived his first positive antislavery convictions.

Residing in Wheeling, a great thoroughfare of the interstate slave-trade, Mr. Lundy was powerfully stirred by the atrocities of the slave system, and could obtain no peace of mind until he espoused the cause of the oppressed. In his own house, in 1815, he organized "The Union Humane Society," which soon numbered five hundred members in that region. Auxiliaries were formed in Kentucky, Tennessee, etc., and appeals were widely scattered. Charles Osborne, Esq., soon became his fellow laborer, the two publishing "The Philanthropist," at Mt. Pleasant, Ohio, in 1821. Visiting Illinois and Missouri, Mr. Lundy portrayed the evils of the slave system. Returning, he started the "Genius of Universal Emancipation," at Steubenville, Ohio — destined to a marked and stormy career—for about ten years the only distinctive antislavery journal in the

country. In 1822 he boldly removed his paper to Greenville, Tenn., the center of slavery. In midwinter, early in 1824, he traveled on horseback, at his own expense, to Philadelphia to attend the National Abolition Convention. Returning, he removed his paper to Baltimore. Traveling on foot in the summer, and carrying his own knapsack, he lectured on slavery through North Carolina and Virginia, and organized antislavery societies, which, in the course of three years, comprised three thousand members. He was received in Baltimore "civilly, but coolly," even by antislavery men, with only words of discouragement for his paper. In 1825 a series of articles on the domestic slave-trade enraged the slave-dealers, who assaulted him in the streets and compelled the removal of his paper to Washington. He visited Hayti and Texas in the interest of the slaves. In 1826 a National Abolition Convention was held in Baltimore, attended by delegates from eighty of the one hundred and forty Abolition societies in the country, nearly all of which traced their origin to Mr. Lundy's efforts.

In the meantime antislavery sentiment was developing in minds destined to become standard-bearers in the great reform. In 1816 Alvan Stewart, subsequently an able lawyer and orator, in New York, and one of the leaders in the antislavery agitation from 1830-1850, visited the South, witnessed the abominations of slavery, and became an ardent abolitionist. From that time he was accustomed to portray the horrors of slavery in fervid language, and rendered effective service to the cause of antislavery in the days of its weakness. In 1822 to 1824 Mr. Theodore D. Weld, a candidate for the Congregational ministry, visited the South, traveling extensively, and witnessing the terrible aspects of slavery. Some years later he said, "On this tour I saw slavery at home, and became a radical abolitionist." Before Mr. Garrison published the "*Liberator*," we find him exerting his influence positively against slavery; and, in 1831, in Huntsville, Alabama, discussing the subject of slavery with Rev. Dr. Allen, a Presbyterian minister, who, unable to answer his cogent arguments, appealed to Mr. James G. Birney, an elder in his Church. Several interviews followed, in which Mr. Birney was convinced of the wrong of slavery, and entered upon the work, first of colonization, and afterward of reform.

Rev. James Dickey, of Kentucky, in 1824, became deeply

impressed with the wrong of slavery, and published his views in an able volume; and in the same year, Rev. John Rankin, to whom reference has been made, published a series of letters, addressed to a Virginia slave-holder, denouncing slavery as "a never-failing fountain of grossest immoralities, and one of the deepest sources of human misery." From this volume, Rev. Samuel J. May, in 1824, received his first antislavery impressions. It took strong ground in favor of "immediate emancipation." * Mr. Rankin was untiring in his antislavery efforts, organizing societies in Kentucky, and in the vicinity of Ripley, Ohio, developing around him a strong antislavery sentiment. He was among the first movers in the antislavery societies formed under Mr. Garrison's leadership, always declaring, says Mr. Wilson, that "he himself, and the antislavery societies he had organized, believed and avowed the doctrine of immediate emancipation." †

In the spring of 1828 Mr. Lundy visited New York city and the New England States, enlisting new laborers in the field. The Tappans, in New York city, were interested. Then we find him visiting Rev. Samuel J. May, at Brooklyn, Conn., and deeply impressing his already awakened mind. Thence he went to Providence, and found William Goodell, of whom he said, "I endeavored to arouse him, but he was slow of speech on the subject." His labors, however, were not in vain. Mr. Goodell's mind moved surely and strongly, and his paper, "The Weekly Investigator," started the previous year, devoted to moral and political discussion, thenceforth gave increasing prominence to temperance and slavery. We find Mr. Goodell, hand in hand with Mr. Garrison, ‡ in 1829, calling upon prominent Boston ministers to secure their co-operation in the cause of antislavery, and, for more than thirty years, a sturdy champion of abolition.

Mr. Lundy moved on to Boston, § where he could find no

* See "Slavery and Antislavery," by William Goodell, p. 490.

† "Rise and Fall of the Slave Power," vol. i, p. 178.

‡ "Slavery and Antislavery," by William Goodell, p. 401, note.

§ The following is an extract from Lundy's private journal, and justifies the above statement: "At Boston I could hear of no abolitionist resident of the place. At the house where I stayed I became acquainted with William L. Garrison, who was a boarder there. He had not then turned his attention particularly to the slavery question. I visited the Boston clergy, and finally got together eight of

abolitionists; but, "in the same house where he boarded," he met Mr. William Lloyd Garrison, then editing "The Philanthropist," a temperance paper, not having particularly turned his attention to the subject of slavery. Mr. Lundy's conversations awakened Mr. Garrison's mind,* and became the connecting-link between the earlier and later antislavery movements. After visiting Maine, New Hampshire, Connecticut, and New York, Mr. Lundy returned to Washington, where the last of the Abolition Conventions, originated in 1794, was held in 1829.

The English antislavery movement, directed first against the slave-trade, then for the amelioration of the condition of the slaves, and, later still, for gradual emancipation, rapidly assumed a more radical type, and the reform literature abounded in appeals for immediate emancipation. In 1825 Miss Elizabeth Herrick, a member of the Society of Friends, published a pamphlet entitled, "Immediate, not Gradual, Emancipation," which soon became the watch-word of the reform.

This doctrine had been urged by Rev. Dr. Hopkins and the younger Edwards in the last century. The latter, in 1791, proclaimed that "every man who cannot show that his negro hath, by his voluntary conduct, forfeited his liberty, is obligated *immediately to manumit him.*" We have seen Rev. John Rankin advocating this doctrine in 1824, and Rev. Samuel J. May imbibing it from Mr. Rankin's book. When Mr. May heard Mr. Garrison's lecture, in Boston, October, 1830, advocating immediate emancipation, he was fully with him in his views, for he declared that Mr. Garrison's ideas "satisfied

them, belonging to various sects. Such an occurrence, it was said, was seldom, if ever, before known in that town. The eight clergymen all cordially approved of my object, and each of them cheerfully subscribed to my paper, in order to encourage by their example, members of their several congregations to take it. William L. Garrison, who sat in the room and witnessed our proceedings, also expressed his approbation of my doctrines. A few days afterward we had a large meeting. After I had finished my lecture several clergymen spoke. William L. Garrison shortly afterward wrote an article on the subject for one of the daily papers."

* At the Anniversary of the American Antislavery Society in New York city, in 1863, Mr. Garrison said: "Had it not been for him, I know not where I should have been at the present time. My eyes might have been sealed for my whole life; and possibly, though I trust in God I should not have been, I might have been led in some direction or other so far as even to care nothing for slavery in my country."

his mind and heart." Mr. William Goodell,* also, is supposed to have antedated Mr. Garrison in adopting this radical principle, and in early conversations to have led him to adopt it.

Another name deserves honorable mention as a pioneer in antislavery movements. Rev. George Bourne, of the Presbyterian Church, was one of the most noteworthy antislavery men of this period, and one of the most radical and uncompromising in his utterances, far in advance of his times. While editing a paper in Baltimore (1805-1809) he wrote freely against the slave-trade and the slave-system. As pastor of Churches in Virginia (1809-1816) he delivered powerful antislavery utterances, and published (Harrisonburgh, Va., 1812, subsequently republished, in Philadelphia, 1816,) a volume, "The Book and Slavery Irreconcilable," containing the doctrine of immediate emancipation. Driven from Virginia by the slave-holders, in 1816, he maintained the same testimony, as pastor, at Germantown, Pa. In the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church, in 1818, he took a decided part in the great debate on slavery. In 1830 he edited "The Protestant," (New York city;) in 1834 the "Protestant Vindicator;" and, later, the "Christian Intelligencer." His name appears as an active participator in the organization of the first Antislavery Societies (1833, 1834) in New York city and Philadelphia. In 1833 he published, (Middletown, Conn.,) "Pictures of Slavery in the United States," from his personal observations in Virginia, the volume also containing the former book enlarged. In 1837 this was republished (Isaac Knapp, Boston) with an addition—"Slavery Illustrated in its Effects upon Woman"—constituting one of the strong antislavery documents of those times, (1833-1840.) In a letter to Mr. Bourne's son, in 1858, Mr. Garrison

* Mr. Goodell commenced, in 1827, the editing and publication of the "Weekly Investigator," in Providence, R. I., "devoted to moral and political discussion, and reformation in general, including temperance and antislavery." Some time in 1827 or 1828 Mr. Garrison came to Boston to assist Rev. William Collier (Baptist) in editing and printing "The National Philanthropist," devoted wholly to temperance. Late in 1828 Mr. Garrison went to Bennington, Vt., to edit "The Journal of the Times;" and, in January, 1829, Mr. Goodell's paper was merged into the "National Philanthropist," in Boston, Mr. Collier retiring. In July, 1830, it was removed to New York, and published, by W. Goodell and P. Crandall, as "The Genius of Temperance," and subsequently discontinued, Mr. Goodell then taking charge of the "Emancipator."

said: "I confess my early and large indebtedness to him for enabling me to apprehend with irresistible clearness the inherent sinfulness of slavery under all circumstances, and its utter incompatibility with the spirit and precepts of Christianity. I felt, and was inspired by, the magnetism of his lion-hearted soul, which knew nothing of fear, and trampled upon all compromises with oppression, yet was full of womanly gentleness and susceptibility; and mightily did he aid the anti-slavery cause, in its earliest stages, by his advocacy of the doctrine of immediate emancipation, his exposure of the hypocrisy of the colonization scheme, and his reprobation of a negrotating, slave-holding religion."

We have introduced these facts to show that Mr. Garrison is not entitled to the credit of originality—as some have claimed—for his peculiar views, but was preceded by others, and even guided by them.

In the latter part of 1828 Mr. Garrison went to Bennington, Vt., where he edited "The Journal of the Times," and soon achieved the reputation of a fanatic. In his mind, sharper and intenser than Mr. Lundy's, antislavery sentiments assumed a sterner type than the sturdy Quaker ever dreamed of, and, in the midst of the prevailing stupor, he rang out the astounding notes of immediate emancipation. Here he was again visited by Mr. Lundy, whose invitation to aid him in editing his paper in Baltimore he accepted; in which service he became a victim of slave-holding vengeance, fully determining his life career. The story of his severe attacks upon the slave-system, his arrest, trial, incarceration, and release through the generosity of Arthur Tappan, is familiar to all. He returned to Boston, and on the first of January, 1831, commenced the publication of "The Liberator," a redoubtable knight-errant, helmeted, greaved, and mounted upon a fiery charger, the hero of many a desperate tournament, of many a bloody fray, of many a fierce encounter.

Thus far the leading champions of antislavery have been chiefly representatives of the Churches; and the Churches have uttered emphatic testimony, and enacted stringent disciplinary regulations against slavery, though sometimes hesitating and hindered because of the complex political environment of the institution. The field, therefore, was not an uncultivated

one, nor destitute of resolute, experienced workers, when Mr. Garrison arose. One hundred and fifty-seven years of anti-slavery seed-sowing, by religious men; fifty-eight years of organized movements, by societies and conventions, composed chiefly of members of the Churches; and more than sixty years of legislation against slavery by ecclesiastical bodies, preceded the advent of Mr. Garrison in the field, who, a child of the Church, and originally inspired by her ministrations, came forth as one of the long succession of apostles of antislavery.

More than this: At the time when Mr. Garrison came before the public this cause was gaining prestige from the culmination and assured speedy triumph of British emancipation, incepted, championed, and sustained, from first to last, by the best representatives of British Christianity in and out of Parliament. The first of August, 1834, witnessed the consummation; and the example of that sublime achievement stirred the world with powerful pulsations of universal liberty.

ART. V.—THE PLACE OF CONGREGATIONALISM IN HISTORY AND LITERATURE.

The Congregationalism of the Last Three Hundred Years, as Seen in its Literature: with Special Reference to Certain Recondite, Neglected, or Disputed Passages. In Twelve Lectures, Delivered on the Southworth Foundation in the Theological Seminary at Andover, Mass., 1876-1879. With a Bibliographical Appendix. By HENRY MARTYN DEXTER. New York: Harper & Brothers.

DEEDS must always anticipate elevated and fascinating historiography. Even poets must have something on which to build their shining castles. Byron, in his boat on Lake Geneva, could never write without first getting stirred by the record of men in the glow of action. Had there been no Achilles or Agamemnon there had never been an Iliad. The Americans have been too busy at creating history to give due attention to the writing of it. Our period of repose and retrospection has begun to dawn, however, and, now that our current of life is getting more regular and methodical, the opportunity is coming for a calm and judicial examination of the great factors that have entered into our national development. The period from the discovery of America, in 1492, down to the Pilgrim

landing at Plymouth, in 1620, had little bearing on the later America. It was the time of pause and uncertainty, when the prospect bade fair to make of this western world simply a new territory which should compensate Rome for her Protestant losses in the eastern. The color of that century and a quarter, so far as the religious promise of this continent was concerned, was Jesuitical, stationary, revolutionary, half Spanish, and half French. But when the colonists on the "Mayflower" saw before them the shore-line of Plymouth, on that memorable November morning, after a stormy passage of ninety-eight days, the darker star disappeared from this new sky, and a brighter one came in sight to take its place. Holmes has struck the real significance of the westward pilgrims:

"And these were they who gave us birth,
The Pilgrims of the sunset wave;
Who won for us this virgin earth,
And freedom with the soil they gave."

Old things were to pass away, and all things were to become new. A revolution was to take place. From that time forward this part of the American continent was in Protestant hands. Events transpired in their natural order. The immigrations, the colonial regulations for local government, and the small educational beginnings, proved clearly enough the presence here of a force that meant no compromise with Rome, but a Protestant commonwealth for all the coming centuries. Mexico, and Central and South America, with their ebb and flow of revolution, their incapacity to deal with the aborigines, their perpetual borrowing of thought and method and faith from the corrupt Latin countries of Southern Europe, are visible proof of what the United States would have been without the Protestant and Anglo-Saxon element in that critical, plastic period of our history. We have made mistakes. Sometimes we have been excessively patient, and now and then have been over hasty. But taking 1620 and 1880 as the *termini* of our positive and homogeneous development, no historical period can show more rapid growth, a keener eye for real exigencies, and a stronger arm to serve the righteous cause.

To Congregationalism belongs the high honor of being the *oldest* positively religious element in this permanent American *life*. It was not simply a protest against Rome, but against

the economy of the English Establishment. The most careful student of the Brownists, before they ever dreamed of leaving England for Amsterdam or Leyden, or were dignified with the name of Congregationalists, will fail to find one word against Romanism, where he will find ten against the Protestant Church of England. But we must not forget that the protest against Rome was implied in the latter. Indeed, the real, though not always expressed, ground of objection to episcopacy and other elements of the English Protestant system, was that the Church of England was only half Protestant. Here it was about right. Who can tell whether Romanism or Protestantism predominated in the Church of England of Henry VIII.? But for the younger denominations that have sprung from the loins of the first Church of England, and have been teaching it lessons ever since, the difference between the latter and the Church of Rome would to-day be so slight that either could be taken as a substitute for the other. This is not the first historical instance, neither will it be the last, when the most of a parent's wisdom has been derived from the lips and example of his children.

The aim which Dr. Dexter has in view, if we may judge from the title of his work, is to make the literature of Congregationalism tell the story of the religious body itself. What is this Church? To answer this question, he would ask, What has it written? His book, therefore, is the literary record of the denomination of which he is an honored son and an ardent student. By the fruit of the pen he would show what manner of tree this is which sprang from the small grain in calm little Norwich three centuries ago, and has been shooting out its branches through the whole period. This is very laudable, though all too special a purpose for broad and full historical writing. It judges great movements by data often obscure and uncertain. It ignores the fact that generally the true hero writes but little. It would not be safe to test the Protectorate by such sprawling general orders of Cromwell as Carlyle has furnished us, or, going further back, to judge Charlemagne's reign by any record which the hero made, save through the few compact pages of his faithful Eginhard. The result, however, is good, for it follows one thread of development from the beginning. It absolutely finishes one subject, and

hands it over to the general Church historian for incorporation in his work for all time to come. The Congregational Church placed firm emphasis on the power of the pen, from the time when it was only a floating dream in the brain of quaint, belligerent, uncompromising Robert Browne. Whether still in England, or in Holland, or as a fresh colonist on the shore of Massachusetts, it used the printing-press with untiring zeal. Its very bibliography reveals a marvel of literary productiveness. Dr. Dexter had already written largely on the Church of his fellowship and love before he came to this crowning point of his historical studies, for which, with his antiquarian taste and keen eye, he has searched for all existing literary memorials of the Pilgrim and Puritan in the libraries and small towns of New England, and has ransacked the collections of England and Holland, and visited the Brownist Meccas on both sides of the Channel. He pays little attention to style, and now and then lingers too long on minor events; but these are defects of such small weight that they do not enter into our estimate of the general finish of his work.

The Congregational place in literature can be determined but by its actual achievement in life. We begin with the fortunes of Browne, the father of Congregationalism. While the Church which he founded has always claimed a settled ministry, Browne himself, during the whole of that part of his life which bears any relation to Congregationalism, and was at all productive, was one of the princes of an unwearied itinerancy. He was born in Totthorpe, Rutlandshire, England, in 1550. At the age of twenty he attended Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, about a year; became chaplain to the Duke of Norfolk; began to disseminate his doctrines of independency while in this position, but was aided by the duke in refusing to respond to the summons of the Ecclesiastical Commissioners; afterward went to Southwark, where he taught three years; lectured to scattered companies on Sundays in a gravel pit in Islington, near London; returned to his father's home, because of the plague in London; re-appeared as a student at Cambridge; preached six months in a pulpit of the city, and sent back the money he was entitled to; began to harangue against the bishops; was prohibited by them from further preaching; went to Norwich, where he organized a little Church of sympathizers; on ac-

count of persecution he and his flock emigrated to Middlebury, Holland; through lack of harmony, he and four or five families left for Scotland; was soon cited before the Kirk of Edinburgh; returned to his father's house in England; went to Stamford; preached his doctrines at Northampton; was cited before Bishop Linsell, but, on refusing to appear, was excommunicated; afterward became reconciled, made concessions, and was re-admitted to the Church of England; became master of St. Olave's, Southwark, on agreeing not to keep any conventicles, or confer with suspected or disorderly persons, but to accompany the children to sermons and lectures in the Church, to conform to the doctrine of the Church of England, to use the regular Catechism in the school, and to take communion in the parish; received from his kinsman, Lord Burghley, the living of Achurch; occupied it full forty years; and died at last in Northampton jail.

Browne had few co-workers. He held a busy pen, and was an original in thought and expression. The work which he did was finished when he ceased his wanderings and re-entered the Church of England. His last forty years count for nothing in making an estimate of his life. He had expressed his opinions of dissent from the Church of England, and after practically giving the denial to this first antagonistic part of his life by his long service within the fold from which he had been driven, there were others who took up the cause which he renounced, appealed, and with justice, to his writings as their authority, developed his forsaken cause in a careful and methodical way, and in time gave birth to a posterity which carried on still further their cause of independency. To the words of Browne, the protesting and unreconciled, therefore, we must look for the doctrinal warrant for the Congregational movement. The key-note to this whole opposition to the Church of England was the ungodliness of its members. The entire historical basis of the Brownism of the latter part of the sixteenth and the former half of the seventeenth, and of the Congregationalism of the two succeeding centuries, can be put into a single line—the unchristian life of the average parishioner of the Church of England. If men of unholy life could be members of the Church, and share in its sacraments, and control its destinies, Browne had no faith in such a Church. Dr. Dex-

ter puts the case thus: "Not merely the worldliest, and the most selfish and greedy people, but unbelievers and those of scandalous lives, might legally, if in point of fact they did not habitually, partake of the Lord's supper, without protest or distinction, side by side with the very elect and anointed of God." Browne saw this with his own eyes, and he did not hesitate to fulminate against this mixture of Christ and Belial in the Church of England as little better than that of Rome. He spoke on this wise:

No man can serve two contrary masters, saith Christ, (Matt. vi,) neither can they be the Lord's people without his staff of beauty and bands, (Zech. xi, 7;) that is, without the Lord's government, for his covenant is disannulled, as it followeth in the 10th verse. Now his government and scepter cannot be there where much open wickedness is incurable. For if open wickedness must needs be suffered, it is suffered in those which are without; as Paul saith, What have I to do to judge them which are without? (1 Cor. v, 12.) And again he saith, even of these later times, that men shall be lovers of themselves, covetous, boasters, proud, cursed thinkers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, intemperate, fierce, despisers of them which are good, traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God, having a show of godliness, but having denied the power thereof. From such we must turn away, as Paul warneth, (2 Tim. iii, 2;) that is, we must count them none of the Church, and leave them, whether in all these or in some of them they be openly so faulty as that they be incurable. Also, if any be forced by laws, penalties, and persecutions, as in those parishes, to join with any such persons either in the sacraments, or in the service and worship of God, they ought utterly to forsake them and avoid such wickedness. For the abomination is set up, antichrist is got into his throne, and who ought to abide it? yea, who ought not to seek from sea to sea, and from land to land, as it is written, (Amos viii, 12,) to have the word and the sacraments better administered, and his service and worship in better manner?

The true Christian is justified in withdrawing from a fallen, or never risen, Church, such as Browne conceived the Church of England. This is his argument for separation:

Not that we can keep its commandments without all breach or offense, for we are not Donatists, as the adversaries slander us, that we should say we may be without sin, or that the Church may be without public offenses, or if there fall out some sort of grosser sins that therefore it should cease to be the Church of God; we teach no such doctrine; but if in any Church such gross

sins be incurable, and the Church hath not power to redress them, or rebelliously refuseth to redress them, then it ceaseth to be the Church of God, and so remaineth till it repent and take better order.

The difference between the estimate of the proper relation of the godly member of the Church of England to his Church by the founder of Congregationalism and the founder of Methodism, is very clear. Browne believed in separation, and advocated it with all his power. Wesley, coming after the chill and formalism which the long reign of Deism had inflicted on the Establishment, found himself a preacher within its fold, and set to work to check the evil and introduce a pure and fervent practical life. His care for the Church was not to leave it, but to work with his full might within it. With all his radical plans, he was too much of a conservative to advocate separation. The founding of a new reform organization was not originally in his thought. He hoped to so revive the spirit of the Church of England that the heaven might finally permeate the mass. He strove for a regeneration from within, by the introduction of the great descent of divine power. It was only when the movement became so strong, and the numbers so large, and the spirit on the part of the Church of England so hostile, that his Societies were compelled to a separate religious body. The hand of Providence compelled them to a strong ecclesiastical autonomy. There was no formal declaration of secession. There was no long list of charges giving a reason for withdrawal, made by the first generation of Methodists against the Church of England. They simply held their annual meetings, arranged their work for the new year, built their chapels, sent their missionaries west to America and east to India, constructed a great pastoral net-work over the British islands, and formed themselves into a Church in the scriptural and apostolic sense. They grew into independency. Congregationalism, on the other hand, started out with the idea of separation from the Church of England. It was the first note which Browne sounded, and it never ceased to be heard until, wearied and exhausted by his long warfare, he came back to the old hearth-stone. These two thoughts—intentional separation and undesigned independency—lie at the root of the whole development of Protestant ecclesiastical life. Each had

.

its advantages, its dangers, its peculiar triumphs. The one is better adapted to one age, the other to a different one. Browne could never have said what he did without prompt excision, or a steady march to the stake. Wesley could never have multiplied his followers, and carried on his marvelous work of organization and evangelization, if he had adopted Browne's plan of declaring secession with his first breath. Both movements, however, were directed by the same Hand, and the world has not yet seen the full, ripe harvest-field from either.

The part which satire has taken in religious controversy, and even in the great work of the Reformation, is usually one of the overlooked chapters in ecclesiastical historiography. There are always sober minds who disapprove of the introduction of this element, even when advocating their cause, on the ground that it indicates a reliance on an unserious agent. Nevertheless, there is a place for even the satirist; a public which only his pen can reach; a world of abuses which it is his function to reveal and hold up to just contempt. The search for the philosopher's stone in Germany had called forth many a learned volume, but it was reserved for the caustic pen of John Valentine Andrea to prove its absolute folly, and make it the laughing-stock of his generation. The "Praise of Folly," by the quiet and scholarly Erasmus, written by snatches while making a journey from Basel to Rotterdam, and illustrated by the pencil of Hans Holbein, did more to expose the superstitions and abominations of Romanism to popular contempt than the works of all the Reformers besides. The work of repudiating the errors of the Church of England, which Browne began, was very serious business. There would seem to have been no place for any but straightforward writing, and the use of the most reverent language. But suddenly there appeared a thin, black-letter pamphlet, bearing as impudent and unecclesiastical a title as ever printer put into type.* It was in the interest of the

* Thus runs the rare title: "Oh, read over D. John Bridges, for it is a worthy Work: or, An Epitome of the first Book of that right worshipful volume, written against the Puritans, in defense of the noble clergy, by as worshipful a priest, John Bridges, Presbyter, Priest, or Elder, doctor of divillity, and Dean of Sarum. Wherein the arguments of the puritans are wisely prevented, that when they come to answer M. Doctor, they must needs say something that hath been spoken. Compiled for the behoof and overthrow of the parsons, vicars, and curates, that have learnt their catechisms, and are past grace. By the reverend and worthy Martin

Brownist movement, and was calculated to do infinite damage to the Establishment. It consisted simply of Browne's doctrines, thrown into the keenest satire. The corruption of the general clergy, the pride and vanity of the bishops, the repressive measures of the whole ecclesiastical government of Great Britain, and the corrupt life in the parishes, are dwelt upon without mercy. The books written against the Puritans by preachers of the Establishment had been carefully read by this Martin Marprelate, and their ignorance was now exposed with a cleaving force which excited universal interest. The pamphlet spared no man or thing which stood in its way. It shot out puns from its savage muzzle which made many a bishop fairly dance with rage. For example, the dignified Archbishop of Canterbury is called "*paltri-politan*," "his *gracelessness*, John Canter." The Bishops are described as "proud, popish, presumptuous, profane, paltry, pestilent, and pernicious prelates, cogging and cozening knaves," and "horned masters of the Convocation House." John, Bishop of London, has a "notable brazen face," and is "dumb dunstical John;" the Bishop of Winchester "is not able to say bo to a goose;" and the Dean of Sarum deserves "a caudal of hempseed and a plaster of neck-weed, as well as some of your brothers the papists."

Martin had thoroughly acquainted himself with the life of the men whom he attacked. He charged John of London with swearing "like a lewd swag," with playing bowls on the Sabbath, with making a preacher out of his porter at the gate, with practically stealing some cloth, with refusing to pay his honest debts, with making hay on the Sabbath, with cutting down and selling the noble old elms of Fulham which did not belong to him personally, and with cheating a poor shepherd out of a legacy. Serious charges these, but they would not have been made without ground. He gives incidents of priestly immorality, openly naming his men, and makes the following broad declaration: "Those who are petty popes and petty antichrists ought not to be maintained in any commonwealth."

Marprelate, gentleman, and dedicated to the Convocation House. The Epitome is not yet published, but it shall be when the Bishops are at convenient leisure to view the same. In the meantime let them be content with this learned epistle. Printed Overseas, in Europe, within two furlongs of a Bouncing Priest, at the cost and charges of M. Marprelate, gentleman."

But my Lord B. in England . . . all the Bishops in England, Wales, and Ireland are petty popes and petty antichrists. Therefore no Lord Bishop is to be tolerated in any Christian commonwealth." Still, Martin is willing to have peace. But, to do so, the Bishops must promise: 1. To labor to promote the preaching of the word in all parts of the land; 2. To make ministers of only godly men; 3. To punish nobody for refusing to wear popish garments, or omitting corruptions from the Prayer Book, or not kneeling at the communion; to leave off private excommunication and allow public fasts; and molest nobody for this book. Such is Martin's *ultimatum*, and he closes it thus: "These be the conditions which you brother Bishops shall be bound to keep inviolably on your behalf. And I your Brother Martin, on the other side, do faithfully promise upon the performance of the promises by you, never to make any more of your knavery known unto the world."

It is not necessary to add that Martin's terms were not accepted. His little book went throughout England. The Earl of Essex presented one to the Queen; the students of Oxford and Cambridge read it secretly; the four Bishops chiefly attacked met and took counsel together, saying that the enemy must be banished and his charges answered. The Queen gave special orders for the arrest of the author, wherever found. While the search was going on Martin thrust out another pamphlet, the promised "Epitome," which had as keen an edge as the first battle-ax. Take as specimens two of the *Errata* appended to it: "Wheresoever the prelates are called my Lords, take that for a fault;" and "There is nothing spoken at all of that notable hypocrite, Scambler, Bishop of Norwich. Take it for a great fault, but unless he leave his close dealing against the truth, I'll bestow a whole book of him." The answer of the Bishops came out in due time—a quarto of two hundred and fifty pages, "An Admonition to the People of England." Time was not given by Martin to read this ponderous effusion. It had hardly begun even its limited circulation before a third satire came out, and then a fourth, until there were seven, all of them issued within the short space of as many months. The pen of satire was employed to correct him, but then, as ever, people would laugh at only one side of the disputation. The effort to find out who was the real Martin Marprelate was continued with

desperation. He was wanted for the scaffold. His pamphlets had been printed in first one place, then another; the copy was furnished in scraps, which women aided in printing, and the pamphlets, when ready, were smuggled to the public by being hidden in personal apparel or wrapped in the middle of rolls of leather and delivered by the common carriers. He accomplished his task thoroughly; and his real name, like that of "Junius," still stands under the rose. The publisher was found out to be John Penry, and, while many believed he was the author of the Marprelate tracts, there was lacking just the final evidence needed to hang him for it. The whole controversy was a sign of the times. A great issue was at stake, and there was a conscience underlying the Brownist cause which had spoken out in homely phrase against the crooked and repressive ways of the Church of England in Elizabeth's day. Many people became convinced that there was just ground for complaint, and a broad sympathy was felt for the non-conforming element of English Christians which had not existed before. The wit of Martin had penetrated every part of the British islands, and from that day onward there never struck an hour when the Puritans of England were without friends in every social circle of the land. No man can tell how far the satire of Marprelate, which startled the country in the latter half of 1588 and the former half of 1589, contributed to gain adherents to the Puritan cause through the whole time down to the landing at Plymouth, and, later on, to supply the first emigrants with a steady current of re-enforcement for New England colonization. In all literary history it is not likely that satire has ever played a more important part, and worked farther into the future, than did these grotesque black-letter pamphlets of the first Brownist generation.

We now come to the most important step in this whole period of early Congregational history—the flight to Holland.

England was no place for these radicals. There was no safety for them in the north, and still less in the south. Public martyrdoms were not preferred by Queen Bess' churchly overseers, but if nothing less, or else, would do, then by all means the block and the fagot must be invoked. The favorite mode of serving death to the average Separatist was to let him lie in prison until he was forgotten, and to be kept there until he

died. Only the rare criminals were put to death in the old, gross style. Of course there was every reason why they should be executed, or, as blunt John Weaver put it :

"The Welchman is hanged,
Who at one Kirk flanged,
And at her state banded,
And hewed are his buks.
And though he be hanged,
Yet he is not wranged ;
The de'il has him fanged
In his kruded kluka."

Dennis, Copping, and many others, were executed without much delay. Fifty-two of these Separatist Protestants were parceled out for personal labor to forty-three clergymen of the Establishment. Pity that there were not at least two apiece for the surpliced gentry ! Fifty-nine were known to die in prison within a very short time. But, with all possible opposition, a Brownist congregation was organized in London. Its life was precarious and feeble. It was not safe an hour. The leaders felt this, and began to think of the best way of getting out of the country. Holland was the nearest Protestant shore, and so the Brownists in Lincolnshire and elsewhere began to betake themselves thither. The congregation which was organized in London in 1592 broke up the following year. Some went at first to the obscure places in the Netherlands, such as Campen and Naarden, but they soon gained courage, and settled in Amsterdam, with Henry Ainsworth as their teacher. Controversies arose among them, but there was a general growth, and always a wonderful literary activity. These Separatists were full of the literary spirit from the very beginning, and wherever they went they sharpened their pens and went to writing treatises on Church government, biblical interpretations, and doctrines of faith. When once in Holland they were not watched, and they sent back their books to England with amazing industry. The wonder was how they managed to get money enough to print and publish. When James I. ascended the throne it was hoped the Separatists might breathe more freely. But here they were mistaken. There was as little hope as ever, and the Amsterdam Society was re-enforced by the best Brownist blood, John Robinson and his company, from

Scrooby. After a time Robinson and his associates left for Leyden, and there formed a Church, which became progressive and united, and developed into the Plymouth Colony.

The strongest and best-balanced mind produced by the whole Brownist protest was this same John Robinson. He was clear in his convictions, skillful in management of men, and far-seeing of dangers that lie in any State-Church system. Of his birthplace, childhood, and youth but little is known. He studied at Cambridge, the only English university where there was any freedom of thought, and while there he came under the influence of Perkins, and formed such opinions of ecclesiastical and personal independence as gave character to his whole life. He preached near and in Norwich four years as a clergyman of the Church of England. But there was a silent protest in his soul all the time. He was stung by a sense of bondage. He went to Gainesborough, separated from the Establishment, and united with the feeble Separatist Society in that place. He afterward went to Scrooby, became pastor of the little Church there, and in a short time he and his flock emigrated to Leyden. At that time Leyden was the Dutch center of learning. It was the Athens of the North.

Robinson, in addition to his duties as pastor, matriculated, busied himself in the great library, soon became involved in the controversies of the hour, and entered the lists against the Arminians. He had been so hardly dealt with by human sovereignty that he took refuge in an extreme emphasis on the doctrine of divine sovereignty. The excitements of the Synod of Dort took firm hold on him, and, while he had felt the sting of persecution in England, and the very presence of himself and his Church in Holland was a proof of the crime of persecution, he failed to see that the persecution of the Dutch Arminians by their enemies was as sinful and unjustifiable as the persecution of the Separatists by Elizabeth and James. He defended the conclusions of Dort as the final grasping and grouping of the truth, the one point beyond which it was impossible for theology to make any further progress. His Church grew to a membership of three hundred, and far surpassed the parent congregation of English Separatists in Amsterdam.

But John Robinson and Elder Brewster could see that Holland was not the proper place for a permanent home for

English protesting Christians. Their families could not grow into firm and progressive citizenship. They entered into correspondence with James I., asking permission to return to England. But that ruler was not willing to renew his acquaintance with them, and a portion of them resolved to try their fortunes in the New World. It was a sad hour when that company of brave spirits stood on the quay at Delftshaven, a part to cross the sea and a part to remain, their pastor among them, to welcome home again the outgoers should they be driven back by any force whatever. Those who remained behind were as willing to be the emigrants as any others. It was a mutual arrangement for the common good. Robinson had been the guide of the little group in Leyden, and was now their inspiration as they left him on the dyke :

“The pastor spoke, and thus he said :

“ ‘Men, brethren, sisters, children dear,
God calls you hence from sea ;
Ye may not build by Haarlem Meer,
Nor yet along the Zuyder Zee.

“ ‘Ye go to bear the saving word
To tribes unnamed, and shores untrod ;
Heed well the lessons ye have heard
From those old teachers taught of God.

“ ‘Yet think not unto them was lent
All light for all the coming days,
And Heaven’s eternal wisdom spent
In making straight the ancient ways.

“ ‘The living fountain overflows
For every flock, for every lamb ;
Nor heeds, though angry creeds oppose
With Luther’s dyke, or Calvin’s dam.’ ”

Robinson continued to be the shepherd of the fragment of his flock. He had some domestic afflictions, and in five years his weary body was laid away in the crypt of St. Peter’s Church. He had been a devout Christian, and had spent his life for his cause. His theological writings were numerous. His opinions harmonized in the main with Browne, though in learning and method of statement he was far in advance of that pioneer in Separatism. His definition of a Church was more reverential, but not more elastic, than Dr. Leonard Bacon’s definition of Congregationalism: “Let every man do as he pleases, and if he

wont do it, make him." Robinson says that a Church is "a company, consisting though but of two or three, separated from the world, either Christian or unchristian, and gathered into the name of Christ by a covenant made to walk in all the ways of God known unto them, and so hath the whole power of Christ."

On the personal duty of separating from a fallen Church, such as he claims the Establishment to be, he says: "But this I hold, that if iniquity be committed in the Church, and complaint and proof accordingly made, and that the Church will not reform, or reject the party opposing, but will, on the contrary, maintain presumptuously, and abet such impiety, that then, by abetting that party and his sin, she makes it her own by imputation, and enwraps herself in the same guilt with the sinner. And remaining irreformable, either by such members of the same Church as are faithful, (if there be any,) or by other sister Churches, wipeth herself out the Lord's Church-roll, and now ceaseth to be any longer the true Church of Christ. And whatsoever truths or ordinances of Christ this rebellious rout still retains, it but usurps the same, without right unto them, or possession of blessing upon them, both the persons and sacrifices are abominable unto the Lord."

But Robinson was willing to admit the non-separating to communion with him and his fellow-believers: "He who prefers a separation from the English, national, provincial, diocesan, and parochial Church, and Churches, in the whole form, state, and order thereof, may, notwithstanding, lawfully communicate in private prayer and other the like holy exercises, (not performed in their Church communion, nor by their Church power and ministry) with the godly among them, though the said godly are remaining, of infirmity, members of the same Church, or Churches, except some other extraordinary bar come in the way between them and us."

These declarations of Robinson entered into the substance of the Congregationalism of the future. Their spirit came with the Pilgrims to Plymouth, and has not left their posterity. Tenacity of opposition to formalism and proscription on the one hand, and a readiness for fraternization with all evangelical believers on the other, are very discernible in the general history of that Church. Now and then there have been exceptions, and notably in certain darker hours in the colonial period; but in the

main there has been a fair equilibrium between law and liberty in the Congregational structure.

It was a very serious question, and one likely to have an important bearing upon the whole religious development of this Western Continent: Would the successors of the first Pilgrims be of like creed and spirit with the men of the "Mayflower?" Robinson might be regarded as a very wise Church teacher, and yet there was danger that the blasts of winter, and all the hardships that came of the new life in the wilderness, might heal this Separatist ailment, and thrust those adventurous spirits back to the embrace of the Mother Church. It was not unlikely that the little divisions which cropped out in Holland might be repeated in the New World, and that the Pilgrims might lose their sense of united independence in the warmer passion of self-assertion. The "Mayflower" needed other vessels to follow in her crooked and tedious wake. The men who scrambled ashore from her deck over the icy rocks of Garnet Point would soon be lost in the forest if there were no brothers to come later into near companionship with them. And when new reinforcements might arrive, was it likely that, coming as they would from England, and not from Robinson's teachings in Holland, there could be harmony in ecclesiastical rule?

Let us see what took place. The first ten years of the Pilgrims produced but five new Congregational Churches; the first twenty years, only thirty-five. During the first nine years of their stay there was complete homogeneousness; but in 1629, when a new band arrived at Salem, there appeared the first sign of diversity. The Salem people were Non-conformists, but at the same time were not Separatists, like the Leyden Brownists and Robinsonians. They were drawn to Plymouth rather than to the James River region because they had no sympathy with the Church of England. Yet they frowned not a little on the emigrants from Leyden, and evidently had but little desire to follow in the footsteps of such a feeble folk. Higginson thus expressed the position of his Salem company as related to their predecessors at Plymouth: "We will not say, as the Separatists were wont to say at their leaving of England, 'Farewell, Babylon; farewell, Rome!' But we will say, 'Farewell, dear England; farewell, the Church of God in England, and all the Christian friends there!' We do not go to

New England as Separatists from the Church of England; though we cannot but separate from the corruptions in it. But we go to practice the primitive part of Church reformation, and propagate the Gospel in America." There was no little side-glancing between the Salem and the Plymouth colonists. Each looked with doubt upon the other, and yet each felt that they had more interests in common than otherwise. An incident brought them into brotherly relations. The Salem men were suffering from scurvy, and, sending over to Plymouth for a physician, Dr. Samuel Fuller was deputed to attend them. Fuller had been a Leyden deacon, and, through his representations, Endicott was led to say of the Plymouth colonists, that their position as a Church was "far from the common report that hath been spread of you touching that particular." So, when the Salem company organized themselves into a Church, and elected and ordained their pastor, Plymouth sent Governor Bradford and others as delegates, who gave the new Church the right hand of fellowship.

There was a recognition of pleasant relations, but there was a doubt as to the future. The Plymouth men had the right. They called themselves "Separatists," because that is just what they were. The Salem men were also Separatists, but they were not willing to acknowledge it. They did not like the Brownist odium, and were unwilling to fraternize with the men who called Browne their spiritual father. These two classes of protesting Christians, both of whom were represented in the very first decade of the colonization of New England, are types of all the later generations of Dissenters from the English Establishment. One class have always been decided, and have been ready to acknowledge their divergence total and final. The other have been decided in conviction, and yet have looked with no little longing for a probable return to the State Church. They have been in the wilderness, but could not forget the flesh-pots of Egypt. They have now and then been willing to pay tithes, and submit to the University Tests, and hoped that the future would bring about perfect equality. Far nobler and stronger have those been who recognized their own independence, and were willing to say a long farewell to the Church from which they had departed. History has pronounced its verdict on the trimming Church, and it is this.

Whenever a Church halts between its convictions and its first fold, it deserves to lose public confidence and support. Reason enough: Only the positive and candid can attract.

The later comers to New England, such as Winthrop in 1630, were of the Salem type; but it is interesting to note that the name "Separatist" gradually disappeared, because the antipodal force did not exist in New England as yet. In due time those who repudiated fellowship with the Brownist and Robinsonian Dissenters forgot their grievances, and became absorbed in the general Congregational life. Plymouth led. She had a right to do it. She had seen farther into the future than any others, and was on her pilgrimage to the broad, clear light of the better days. To her belongs all honor for a steady grasp of the right.

But we are now confronted with the great historical objection to the first civil test made in New England on a religious basis. In 1631 the General Court of the Massachusetts Colony declared who should be members of its body politic in these words: "No man shall be admitted to the freedom of this body politic but such as are members of some of the Churches within the limits of the same." Carpers and freethinkers, who have called themselves historians, have, for two centuries, been finding fault with this condition of colonial citizenship. They have called it fanatical and intolerant, and have held it up to public scorn. The German critics, who have never understood American Church life, and of whom there is little hope that they ever will, until an evangelical faith prevails in Germany as it does in the United States, have never wearied of stigmatizing it as a piece of oppressive legislation. What wrong, we reply, in making Church membership a condition of participation in civil rule? The colonists were a religious people; they were a Church, or, rather, a group of Churches, *ecclesiolæ in ecclesia*. They had the right, as they passed over into the civil stage of their career, to see that this civil life did not become secularized by worldly and unworthy camp-followers. It ill becomes writers who were born in the State-Church system, and whose infancy and youth have been spent in the same bondage, and whose maturity has been employed in feeding at its crib, while they have maligned the very doctrines that have created our Christian civilization, to take

offense at a necessary precautionary measure for the exercise of the very rights which our fathers crossed the sea to secure? Away with this indignation at the strong position which the colonists took to give a Christian character to their incipient civil polity! The time will come when this abuse of the New England heroes will pass away. It does not help the matter to add the charge of belief in witches, and other abnormalities. The colonial superstitions are largely the creation of a later day, and were propagated chiefly by Church-of-England writers, who came over to New England so late that they found the ground occupied by stronger minds, and took in hand the poor revenge of representing the northern colonies as far gone in wild beliefs.

The first Congregationalists had to feel their way carefully toward an order of Church service, for, through fear of falling into footsteps of the ritualism which had been a large factor in driving them from the Establishment, they leaned too far the other way. Their usages in Holland could hardly be adopted now, for in that country the Church life was necessarily that of small, dispersed congregations, in the midst of a strange language and of those strong, overshadowing Protestant Churches which had received them as brotherly guests. But the colonists had to regulate for the future, and without such examples of dissenting service in England as could give them best aid for organization in their new home.

One will smile a little as he goes over their arrangements for worship. These were primitive enough, but we must remember that all their work was initial, and the wonder is that they succeeded as well as they did. Sabbath morning service began at nine o'clock. In Boston, where advancement was most rapid, the people were called together by the ringing of a bell, but usually the congregation received notice of the time of worship by the beating of a drum, the blowing of a shell or horn, or the hoisting of a flag. In West Springfield the drum was used until 1743. In South Hadley, in 1749, a conch-shell was procured for calling the people together for worship, and John Laurin was the first to blow it. In 1759 Montague paid thirty shillings for a conch-shell, and twenty shillings for a drum. In 1652 the Haverhill Church employed a "blow his horn in the most conven-

ient place every Lord's day, about half an hour before the meeting begins, and also on lecture days ; for the which he is to have one peck of corn from every family for the year ensuing." In 1720 the Sunderland Church voted twenty shillings for sweeping the meeting-house and "tending the flag" at all public meetings the year ensuing. The pastor opened the meeting with prayer lasting about a quarter of an hour, after which the teacher read and expounded a chapter of the Bible. Then one of the ruling elders lined off a psalm, which was sung by the congregation. The pastor then preached, after which the teacher concluded with prayer and the blessing. The services were sometimes very protracted. One hearer reports that he stayed so long that the hour-glass was turned up twice ; while Rev. Mr. Syme, on the occasion of the formation of the Woburn Church, continued "in preaching and prayer about the space of four or five hours." The Lord's supper was usually administered once a month, at the close of the reading service. Lechford thus reports the order :

Then one of the teaching elders prayes before, and blesseth, and consecrates the bread and wine, according to the words of institution ; the other prayes after the receiving of all the members, and next communion they change turnes ; he that began at the end, ends at this ; and the ministers deliver the bread in a charger to some of the chiefs, and peradventure give to a few the bread in their hands, and they deliver the charger from one to another, till all have eaten ; in like manner the cup, till all have drank, goes from one to another. Then a psalme is sung, and with a short blessing the congregation is dismissed.

The most scrupulous arrangements were made for the seating of the congregation. The ruling elders sat in front of the pulpit, though a little lower down ; the deacons sat on a still lower seat, all facing the congregation. The men sat on one side of the church, and the women on the other. But there was a certain order of civil and social dignity, which was changed from year to year, according to the changes in the dignity of the auditors. The children were placed by themselves, under the care of a tithing man. The Church was supported by voluntary gifts handed in at the public service. Lechford thus describes the method of receiving these contributions :

The magistrates and chief gentlemen first, and then the elders, and all the congregation of men and women in the absence of their husbands, come up one after another one way, and bring their offerings to the deacon at his seate, and put it into a box of wood for the purpose, if it bee money or papers; and if it bee any other chattel, they set it or lay it downe before the deacons, and so passe another way to their seates again. This contribution is of money, or papers promising so much money. I have seen a faire gilt cup with a cover, offered there by one, which is still used at the communion. Which money and goods the deacons disburse towards the maintenance of the ministers, and the poore of the Church, and the Church occasions, without making account, ordinarily.

The full details of all these arrangements for public service, the growth of the thanksgiving occasion, and especially the relative functions of the various Church officers, are given by Dr. Dexter with great fullness. His utilization of Felt, Palfrey, and other historians of the New England Church, is admirable, while his gleaning from those excellent local histories of New England towns and Churches, which are our best treasury for the genesis of the Congregational Church in this country, is thorough and fair. Not only to his text must we commend the reader for such detailed information of this character as we can find nowhere else in a single volume, but to his rich and full annotations, which have, without question, cost him more time and exhaustive labor than the body of his work.

The later history of Congregationalism is more familiar to the general student than the complicated and disturbed beginnings which have thus far occupied our attention. With all the freedom which the Pilgrims and their early successors enjoyed to develop their ecclesiastical life, the future brought its dark clouds of doctrinal differences. We refer to the Half-way Covenant. Away back in Leyden lay the germ of the great Congregational rupture of the eighteenth century. Because of small numbers and little growth this element of division could not assert itself. But, later on, when the Congregational territory was vastly broadened, there came the necessity for dealing with it. Shall unregenerate persons be granted access to the Lord's supper?—this was the fundamental question which Congregationalism was now compelled to confront. In Connecticut there was a strong party which favored the admittance of all persons of regular life to full communion in the Churches.

Men who contributed to the support of the Gospel, and yet had no voice in calling the pastor, and were denied "the honors and privileges of Church membership for themselves and baptism for their children," protested against this severe condition. The Connecticut magistrates called a council, and the Massachusetts Court, desiring the co-operation of the Confederate Colonies, afterward ordered a council of thirteen of its own ruling elders. Connecticut was suspicious of results, but sent a limited representation. The meeting took place in Boston, in 1657, and concluded that it was the duty of adults who had been baptized when children, "though not yet fit for the Lord's supper, to own the covenant they made with their parents by entering thereinto in their own persons;" and that in case such parents "understand the grounds of religion, and are not scandalous, and solemnly own the *covenant* in their own person," there can be no sufficient cause to deny baptism to their children.

This action, instead of promoting peace, made the breach wider. Accordingly a Synod was called in Massachusetts, which met in 1662, and reached the conclusion allowing "baptized persons of moral life and orthodox belief to belong to the Church so far as to receive baptism for their children, and all privileges but that of the Lord's supper." The Connecticut Church, with Channing, Davenport, and others at its head, stubbornly opposed this resolution. They claimed that such a difference in Church membership was only technical, and that the granting of the privileges of membership to any but regenerate persons would fill the Church with a worldly and unsafe element. The Boston people adopted a strategic measure. When John Wilson, pastor of the First Church, died, in 1667, John Davenport, the champion of Connecticut orthodoxy, was invited to succeed him. Twenty-eight male members seceded, and formed the historic "Old South" Church. But this incident did not arrest the Half-way Covenant in Boston and other parts of New England north and east of Connecticut. In fact, it gained strength in the latter colony also, after the first generation of opposers had passed away. In 1700 the action of the Massachusetts Synod received its completion in the theory of Solomon Stoddard, of Northampton, that "the Lord's supper is constituted to be a means of regeneration," and that mon

"may, and ought to, come to it, though they know themselves to be in a natural condition." Here was consistency, at least. Many of the younger men adopted Stoddard's lax view, and this became the prevailing tendency of the Churches. The new liberty in the admission of members brought wealth and social position, but also a decided moral decline. Increase Mather called it an apostasy, and made the following prophecy: "If the begun apostasy should proceed as fast the next thirty years as it has done these last, surely it will come to that in New England (except the Gospel itself depart with the order of it) that the most conscientious people therein will think themselves concerned to gather Churches out of Churches." The elders of the Massachusetts Colony called a Synod in September, 1679, to take into consideration the best methods to avert the numerous calamities that were now multiplying on sea and land, which, as the more pious believed, were judgments inflicted for the growing irreligiousness of the people. Dr. Dexter names some of these divine visitations:

A French and Indian war; the old Charter gone; Governor Andros come, and a Church of England service forcibly intruded into the South meeting-house; privateers infesting the coast; fires, hurricanes, very extraordinary hail-storms, floods whose violence damaged the channels of rivers; ministers' houses struck with lightning; news of a tremendous earthquake swallowing two thousand victims, followed by a pestilence sweeping away three thousand more, in Jamaica; the small-pox raging in New Hampshire, and again in the Carolinas; great losses of cattle; a scarcity of food, bringing the price of food up to the highest price ever known; the coldest weather in the winter since the country was settled; and the heavy cloud of the witchcraft delusion settling like a pall over some of the best places and best people of Massachusetts.

The Synod, interpreting these calamities as judgments, enumerated thirteen classes of sins that had invoked them, and recommended twelve classes of duties as a means of averting them. Of the result, says Dr. Dexter again:

This action of the Synod produced a good effect. Faithful ministers were much strengthened by it in laboring with their people, and devout Christians provoked to a more earnest piety. Many Churches made solemn renewal of their covenant with God. And the other Colonies, particularly those of Plymouth and Connecticut, to a considerable extent followed the lead of Massachusetts.

There was not sufficient reformation, however, in either Massachusetts or Connecticut to satisfy the more spiritual members of the Congregational Church. Hence, in the first decade of the eighteenth century, two efforts were made in favor of a stricter life—one in Massachusetts in 1705, and the other in Connecticut in 1708. The Synod of the latter, consisting of twelve ministers and four laymen, assembled in Saybrook, and adopted fifteen articles. The Boston Association, which had met in 1705, adopted certain proposals, which were regarded as too strongly Presbyterian for the body of Congregationalists. Both these conventions had less bearing on the religious life of the people than on the polity of the Church, and there was no positive and wide-spread spiritual revival until the Great Awakening, under Whitefield and his co-adjutors, in 1734–1742. Dr. Dexter thus summarizes the efforts of that remarkable revival: "It had a twofold influence. It added from forty to fifty thousand members to the Churches of New England; struck a death-blow at the Half-way Covenant, and its introduction of unconverted men to the communion table, if not to the pulpit; gave a mighty impulse to Christian education; re-invigorated Christian missions, and founded the Monthly Concert for the conversion of the world."

The great division of the Congregational Church by the Unitarian movement—a subject too extensive for treatment here—was a catastrophe such as few Churches have had to suffer, and constitutes a distinct chapter in our American ecclesiastical history. While the issue was met wisely and calmly, had Congregationalism been possessed of a strong, central, and connectional power, it is not likely that the rupture would have been as broad as it was. A Church government with less latitude to the individual congregation, has great advantage over any other when schismatic forces threaten the doctrinal structure. The separate Churches are then in large measure within the control of the whole governing system, and Church property does not become alienated by the doctrinal vagaries of few or many congregations.

The recent history of Congregationalism, both in the United States and England, abounds in proof of a thorough comprehension of the vital questions of the times and a capacity and courage in meeting them. Its missionary spirit is worthy of all

praise. One has only to observe the work it is now doing for the evangelization of the newer parts of our country to be convinced that the spirit of the Pilgrims has not left their descendants. Where would Kansas be to-day, but for its rescue from the grasp of the slave-holder by the Congregational sons of New England? And the wrong of Kansas was the one thing which opened the eyes of the nation to the magnitude of the crime of slavery, and its ready daring to occupy all our new fields.

In the study of ecclesiastical history one has frequent reminders of a certain parallelism that seems to pervade whole periods and embrace large religious bodies. The humble beginnings of Congregationalism and Methodism furnish us a beautiful illustration of this principle. They began within a few miles of each other, in Eastern England. The whole of that part of England where these two bodies arose has furnished the land with the most of its brains and heroism from the time when it first emerged from its Druid darkness down to the present time. The German, Danish, and Norwegian elements occupied it, and they carried on savage strife for many a century. By and by, though the Norman became ruler, this eastern shore of England was always fond of its old liberty, and knew when to strike its blows for independence. Cambridge became its school of advanced thinking and warm feeling. All the first teachers of Brownism, with Browne at the head, were Cambridge students. The first immigrant preachers of the Congregational Church here had breathed the free air of Cambridge, and were ready for the fight for freedom here. The old Norse spirit has never left the flats around Cambridge and Ely; and while Cardinal Wolsey was founding his new college at Oxford, and having his kitchen big enough for cooking whole oxen at once, on which his courtiers might fatten, the Cambridge students were living on scanty commons, and meditating what next to do, and where next to go for a larger breathing-place.

The wonder is that John Wesley did not go to Cambridge. Not all his family were Tories, but there was just enough of the Whig and the Liberal element in it to save him from absorption by it. Though his father did send him to Oxford, he never got rid of his eastern Viking blood, and when he was through with Tory Oxford, his liberal spirit asserted itself, and

he made the world his parish and posterity his friend. Methodism started from the humble Epworth rectory. But just a little way from it there had gone one day a little vessel that struck straight for the Dutch coast. This place was humble Scrooby, and the Brownists were on their way to Leyden. Epworth and Scrooby! Two little towns still, and never to be much larger, they have sent out currents that will never be stayed. They have done their work well in plowing deep channels for the great waters of the future. Not many stood at the dock to see the Brownists leave home, and, later, John Wesley was compelled to make a pulpit of his father's tombstone. But what of that? Those were only such unfriendly incidents as were needed to bring the steel of great souls into vigorous play. There was no seer at hand to tell what should be the influence of two Epworth boys on the world, the one in its song and the other in its soul; nor, over a century earlier, in 1607, to tell what was the true weight of William Brewster, John Robinson, and the rest of the passenger list in the Scrooby boat for Holland. But the liberty and evangelization of the western hemisphere were to be wrought out by these feeble initiatives. The heroes of both Scrooby and Epworth may not have had any clear thought as to what should be the issue of their work, but we suspect that, away down in the deep calms of their faith, there was an expectation that great results would come to distant lands from the labors to which they were impelled by the persecution of the unloving Church of England.

The part that Holland took in the Congregational and Methodist movements gives us another picture of the unconscious parallels of historical sequence. No Protestant battle was more bravely fought than that of Holland against Spain and her cruel Alva. When freedom came that little land spread her wings of commerce over every sea, and welcomed to her dykes the oppressed of all countries. Arminius taught in Leyden the theology that produced the Methodism of the later day, and the name Leyden warmed the chilled colony from Scrooby for their long voyage across the Atlantic and their long battle for freedom in this new land. Did not humble Leyden do her work well? Little did her people dream, as Arminius and Episcopius walked along her sleepy canals and crossed her curious bridges to their lecture rooms, that the

words spoken there would reverberate through all coming times; and they thought as little, too, that the Brownist guests from Scrooby were destined to be pioneers for freedom in Church and State throughout new America. But these parallels will never cease. God has his own way of leading his trusting children into the upward pathways, and those children cannot afford to forget that no mountain of sin is safe in its place if their faith be as the grain of mustard seed.

ART. VI.—HERMANN LOTZE.

IN Germany Hegelianism is out of fashion. In England, Italy, and America a few thinkers, tired of their intellectual nakedness, and unable to weave a philosophical robe of their own, have seized upon and donned the cast-off garments of the Germans, and now parade the streets and by-ways of philosophy with all the peculiar Hegelian complacency and arrogance. The Germans enjoy the spectacle, and occasionally remark that foreign countries are fifty years behind Germany in their thought-development. The grains of truth in this quiet hint are just numerous enough to make it incisive and biting. To trace the causes of the fall of the great philosophical system that dominated German thought for the greater part of the first half of the century is not our purpose. Apart from its rotten foundations and paper buttresses, which eventually would have made it a mass of ruins, it had a vigorous and implacable enemy. Against pantheistic idealism, the blind worship of logical forms, the factitious deduction of the world with its varied life out of the necessary development of the Infinite idea—against Hegelianism in all its phases—stood the great Herbart. During his life his followers were comparatively few; but in the softer light of to-day he is seen to be, after Kant, the noblest figure in German philosophy. Says Wundt, the Leipzig professor, "Next to Kant I am most indebted to Herbart for the constructions of my own philosophical opinions."* In a word, almost every department of the systematical philosophy of the Germany of to-day has its roots in him.

* "*Physiologische Psychologie.*" Introduction.

Among those who have had their starting-point in Herbart's system, no one is more prominent than Hermann Lotze. He was born in Bautzen in 1817. At the early age of twenty-two he had taken his degrees in medicine and philosophy, and was acting as privat-docent in both of these departments in the University of Leipsic. At twenty-four he published his "*Metaphysik*;" at twenty-five his "*Allgemeine Pathologie und Therapie*," and three articles in Wagner's "*Handwörterbuch der Physiologie*;" at twenty-six his "*Logik*;" at thirty-four his "*Physiologie des Körperlichen Lebens*;" and at thirty-five his "*Medicinische Psychologie*. In these works of his earlier life we find the leading principles of his philosophy. Like Berkeley, Hume, and Schopenhaur, his development was rapid, and in his younger days the circle was described in which his thought was afterward to move. The most important of his publications in recent years have been "*Mikrokosmos*," "*Geschichte der Aesthetik*," "*Logik*," and "*Metaphysik*." The "*Mikrokosmos*," now in its third edition, is a compendium of his system, and contains, in a somewhat popular form, his opinions on psychology, metaphysics, religion, ethics, æsthetics, and history. Though not the profoundest, it is the richest of the works, and its influence has made itself felt outside of the limits of the philosophic schools.

Lotze's life, like that of Kant, has been uneventful. He came to the little and quaint old university city of Göttingen as professor of philosophy in 1844, and has remained there ever since, declining recently a call to the great University of Berlin.* In the suburbs he has an old-fashioned house in the midst of a large garden, and in the fresh air of the fields and the thick shade of his trees he leads the ideal life of the philosopher.

In the short space of a review article an exposition of the entire system of Lotze would be impossible; and we propose to confine ourselves to a more or less coherent exposition of his "Philosophy of Religion," borrowing from his metaphysics what is necessary for completeness, and sketching his discussion of one or two questions that are now of special interest to the religious world.

* Since the above was written, Lotze has finally been induced to accept a professorship of philosophy in the University of Berlin.

In the logic of John Stuart Mill, where he is speaking of the "distribution of the primeval natural agents through the universe," occurs the following remarkable passage: "The utmost disorder is apparent in the combination of the causes which is consistent with the most perfect order in their effect; for when each agent carries on its own operations according to a uniform law, even the most capricious combination of agencies will generate a regularity of some sort, as we see in the kaleidoscope, where any casual arrangement of colored bits of glass produce, by the law of reflection, a beautiful regularity in the effect." In striking contrast is the following extract from Lotze, "Nature cannot be regarded as a kaleidoscope which is shaken by accident and made to produce figures that *appear* as if meaning was in them. If this meaning is to have real meaning, we must deal seriously with our postulate, and maintain the conviction that the same power that establishes in things their mechanical capacities for action, includes directly that form-determining fantasy, which provides these capacities for action with their points of application and assigns to them their significant directions." * In these two passages from Mill and Lotze we have a statement of the two methods of apprehending the cosmos, the casual, and the theological; both of them recognizing the supremacy and universality of laws, but the one attributing their conjunction to chance, the other to a purpose.

But Lotze is a teleologist of a unique type. In the first of his three articles in Wagner's "*Handwörterbuch der Physiologie*," he attacks with trenchant hand the theory of a vital force, and shows that the chemical and physical forces acting upon the organic germs are sufficient to explain the development of all life, and that there are no residual phenomena to be accounted for by an hypothesis of a vital force. This article was received with enthusiasm by the evangelists of necessity, and they welcomed Lotze with open arms. But they forgot, in the first place, that the occasion called for the expression of only one half of his theory, and, in the second place, that he had written in his "*Metaphysik*" that the "true beginning of metaphysics is in ethics;" and so when he began to emphasize the ideal side of life and to vindicate the longings of the *Gemüth*, he was charged with apostasy. How consistent he

* "*Mikrokosmos*," book ii, p. 9.

has been may be seen when he says that a mediation between mechanical necessity and freedom consists in showing "how unexceptionally universal is the extent of mechanism;" but he adds, "and how fully subordinate the mission is that it has to fulfill in the construction of the world." * In this idealization of the mechanical view of nature we have an anticipation of the course of Lotze's philosophy. But only a more detailed examination will show how this mediation between freedom and necessity is to be effected, and how the kaleidoscopic laws of Mill are to be fused into a higher unity. That the objects of the external world act upon each other and upon us is a fact thrust upon the naivest observation; and the mutual action and reaction of the ultimate particles of matter is an equally coercive fact for the scientific mind. But as cogent as is this fact of interaction (*Wechselwirkung*) we are involved in inextricable difficulties when we come to explain it. Consider for a moment the attraction of the earth and the moon.* "O that is simple enough!" we are ready to say; "it is effected by the law of gravitation." But we have satisfied ourselves with the husks of delusion instead of the bread of knowledge, for a law is not a power extraneous to the bodies themselves, enforcing its dictates by virtue of its superiority of position, but only a humble formulation of their methods of action. Gravitation is only the general name of a mystery of which the attraction of the earth and moon is a specific case. But, it may be further argued, something goes out from each of the attracting bodies, and effects their interaction. This, however, only shoves the difficulty farther back, for this something must act on the body to which it comes; and thus all the old difficulties again arise. If it be said that a force is radiated, and that it brings about the phenomenon of approach, it is to be replied that the thought is unfruitful, and, when taken as a whole, contradictory. Turn the matter as we may, we can find no explanation of their mutual attraction, and we can do naught better than present ourselves at the confessional stool of philosophy with this frank avowal of our ignorance. "Bodies do work upon each other at a distance, but the *modus operandi* is one of nature's secrets." Transitive action, (*transeunte Wirkung*), then, is a fact to be accepted without explanation.

* "*Mikrokosmos*," Introduction, p. 15.

But when we consider immanent action, (*immanente Wirkung*,) that is, the interaction between the parts of one and the same body, we are involved in a similar perplexity. Although the space between two atoms is almost infinitely small, yet the difficulties that encountered us in the thousands of miles between the earth and the moon are not one whit abated by less than microscopic distances. An attribute of one atom cannot go over to the others; for in the space between the two it would be nobody's attribute, which is to affirm and deny in one breath its attributive character. These difficulties in both transitive and immanent actions are not new; but in much of the Cartesian philosophy and in the college philosophy of to-day only one phase of it has been emphasized, the interaction of mind and matter. To explain this phenomenon, one philosopher devised the theory of "occasional causes," and Leibnitz that of "pre-established harmony." But the first did not escape the difficulty, for its very postulate was that matter could affect mind, and mind matter. For it was God, a spirit, who raised the arm, matter, on the occasion of a volition, and who excited a sensation on the occasions of the proper excitation of the nerves. The second was but little more successful. It assumed a primal action of God, a spirit, in the creation of the world of matter, and escaped further interaction only by a rigid and factitious predetermination of every phase of the universe's development. The action of mind on matter, then, is no more of a mystery than the action of matter on matter, and the persistency with which it is thrust forward as a subject demanding a specific explanation is simply an indication of the limitation of our philosophical horizon.

Though immanent action is a mystery, we have no hesitancy in accepting it as a matter-of-fact. All of us have wondered at the attraction of gravitation, and have tried to devise some mechanism by which it could be brought about; but few of us, however, have deemed the phenomenon of cohesion, or the transmission of motions from particle to particle, to be matters urgently demanding an explanation. To repeat our exposition in Lotze's own words:

We regard this immanent action, developing state out of state in one and the same thing, as a fact that calls for no further effort of thought, but, at the same time, we are conscious that this

action in respect to its realization is fully incomprehensible. For how it is that a state m of a thing A proceeds to bring about a resulting state n is not one whit better understood by us than how the same state m proceeds to produce the state x in another thing B . Only the unity of the thing in which this incomprehensible process takes place makes it appear superfluous to ask after conditions of its possibility. We are, therefore, satisfied with immanent action not because we understand its genesis, but because we are aware of no hinderance to an unquestioned recognition of it as a given fact; for the different states of a subject must, we think, necessarily have an influence over each other. And, indeed, if we do not follow this fundamental thought, there will remain to us no means of finding an explanation for any event.*

In this aspect of immanent action, then, we find a hint that enables us not indeed to elucidate transitive action, but to illustrate it. Only where unity is, where each part is linked with the other, and where all together form one coherent whole, do we find that our faculties adapt themselves to the phenomenon of interaction. We must then cease to regard the world as made up of distinct elements, and begin to see in it a vital unity. This unity, indeed, is no working hypothesis, but is forced upon us by the very fact of interaction; for if bodies were entirely independent of each other, if each failed absolutely to influence the other, if each existed, as it were, in a world for itself, then all possibility of mutual action would be at an end, and life, growth, development, would be myths. The abyss that exists between separate bodies must be bridged, and this can be done only by making them part of the same organic whole. "The plurality of our cosmic theory must give place to a monism by which the ever-incomprehensible transitive action goes over into an immanent action."† At this critical point of Lotze's philosophy we deem it best to supplement our exposition by his own words. It is a point to which he himself more than once returns, and in our hands it cannot suffer by a partial repetition of its content:

Not the empty shade of a course of nature, but the full reality of an infinite living being, whose innerly cherished parts form all finite things, can so bind together the manifoldness of the world that the interactions reach over the abysses which would eternally separate the individual elements from each other. For

* "*Metaphysik*," p. 96.

† *Ibid.*, p. 187.

an action going out from the one is not lost in the nothingness that lies between it and the other, but as in all being (*Sein*) the really existing (*das wahrhaft Seiende*) remains one and the same, so the infinite reality (*Wesen*) works in all interaction only upon himself, and his energy never leaves the enduring basis of being. That which is active in one part is not shut up in itself and unknown to all others; nor does the individual state (*Zustand*) have to pass over an illimitable way in order to seek another element to whom it may communicate itself; nor, in fine, does it have to exert a power that is likewise incomprehensible in order to compel this indifferent second element to participate in its nature. Every excitation of a single thing is at the same time an excitation of the entire infinite in which it finds the living basis of its being; and thus each element is able to transmit its action to another having likewise the same basis. The infinite it is that through the unity of his nature causes the finite event here to be followed by its effect there, and no finite thing works upon another by means of its own finite power. On the contrary, each excitation of the individual thing moving the external basis that is the reality behind the shadow of all finite, is able to transmit its action to that which is apparently removed only through this continuity of their community of being.*

But this infinite being, that lies at the basis of the finite, plays a more important role than that of rendering possible the mutual action of the elements of the world. It is the "infinite substance," the "unifying being," the "one reality," in which all finite things are comprised as "modifications," "parts," "states," or "appearances." It assigns to every atom its sphere of action and the nature of its energy, and to every cause the amount and character of its effect. In all its varied changes it preserves its unity and adjusts a disturbance in one part by compensation in another. It is one and indivisible and all in all. We are approaching in this "infinite being" our conception of God; but it yet lacks many of the essential attributes; the chief among them being personality. Lotze passes in review the various arguments for the existence of God, and finds with Kant that they all fall short of their purpose. The teleological argument has, perhaps, the most claim to our consideration, but a candid examination of it discloses defects. "By seeking ye cannot find out God," was said long ago by the inspired seer, and Lotze but iterates the content of this thought in his denial of the worth of ratiocination as a means of estab-

* "*Mikrokosmos*," vol. i.

lishing the existence of God. It has pleased him to revive the ontological argument, but in a form in which the original is scarcely recognizable. That alone is greatest which has a real existence. If our ideals, then, are to attain their full width, they must be more than mere thought. Now "we cannot prove, but only experience, that a beautiful something is beautiful," and so we cannot demonstrate, but only feel, that our idea of the one true, the one good, and the one beautiful, has its counterpart in reality. Immediately and without syllogistic confirmation we realize that "it is surely impossible that the greatest of all thinkable things does not exist." In this dictate of the feelings, then, we find that personality which was heretofore lacking to the infinite being of our reason. In taking the sum total of Lotze's argument for the existence of God, we find a marked similarity between his aim and that of Descartes in his second great argument; as both attempt to show, but by different argumentation, that the conservation of the world in each successive moment is possible only under the postulate of an infinite Being.

The asserted barrenness of philosophical research has served so often certain popular writers and orators of the "hard-fact" school with subject-matter for telling witticisms that it would be willful cruelty to show that philosophy has produced valuable and enduring results. Just here it is to our purpose to emphasize only this fact, the persistency with which philosophy throws up new problems for consideration. Until the time of Kant most philosophers regarded time and space as purely objective, and few questions were asked and answered concerning them. It is not one of the least of the many merits of Kant that he subjected these two intuitions or concepts to a rigid analysis, and showed many of the difficulties that arise from a postulation of their objective existence. This analysis was epochal in the history of philosophy. In the post-Kantian idealism space was reduced to a species of garment in which the infinite Idea revealed himself, and in the Herbartian realism it was held as a mere projection of the mind in the spaceless world, and thus entitled to only a subjective existence. The thought has fermented in the minds of all the post-Kantian philosophers, and has given rise to some peculiarly valuable and interesting psychological results. Lotze maintains the sub-

jectivity of space. Until somewhat recently he held also the subjectivity of time, but in his last work he expressly says that time must be given a certain degree of objectivity if the apparent succession of phenomena is to be explained. Deprived of all space-relations our hard and material world loses much of its hardness and materiality, and becomes what the Germans and French are pleased to call an *intelligible* world. But between it and the world of space—and here Herbart and Lotze diverge radically from Kant—there is an exact correspondence. A change of an element in the space world is represented by a change in the spaceless world; a motion of a body in the space world by the equivalent of a motion in the spaceless world. Indeed, so exact is this correspondence that the ratios in which different bodies stand to each other in the space world obtain likewise in the spaceless world. To illustrate that which is only thinkable and not conceivable, we may say that the space world is represented by the hands of a watch and the spaceless world by the hidden works. Every motion of the hands is represented by a motion of the works, and the ratios of the distances passed over by the hands are the same as the ratios of the corresponding motions of the wheels. But the illustration falls short. What is not amenable to illustration cannot be illustratively expressed.

Pushing our inquiries further back, and asking after the nature of this world behind the phenomenon, of this *noumenon*, we meet with one of the most striking features of the Lotzian philosophy. It maintains hylozoism. The world is not a series of points dead and cold and stiff, but each atom has its own conscious life, its own history, and its own enjoyment. Nature is more than it seems. What to us is a series of insentient particles, contributing only to our pleasure and our life, is, in reality, innumerable beings endowed with all the energy of conscious life. "Every pressure and every tension that matter undergoes, the repose of stable equilibrium and the separation of compounds, all these do not merely occur, but, occurring, are the object of some enjoyment or other."* Our author is not terrified by the consequences of his theory. He calmly meets the objection that it proves too much; that although we can cherish the thought that the flower and the crystal are instinct

* "*Mikrokosmos*," vol. I, p. 400.

with sentient life, yet we revolt when we animate "the dust at our feet, the prosaic texture of our garments, and the material which the technic employs in the manufacture of the most diverse articles. . . . Dust is dust only for him whom it annoys. The indifferent form of the vessel just as little degrades the individual elements of which it is composed as a mean social condition, that represses all expression of intellectual life, annuls the lofty destiny to which these portions of oppressed humanity are called. When we speak of the divine origin and the lofty aims of human souls, we have then far more cause to throw a sorrowful glance upon this dust of the spiritual world, whose life appears to us so unfruitful and whose aim so fully missed." *

Lotze is both prose poet and scientist, and often there is only a step between his poetic inspiration and scientific precision. Albeit that the world is instinct with life, the results of chemistry and physics are in no degree invalidated. Iron delights in a union with oxygen, yet this delight is always expressed under the prosaic form of numerical equivalents; and the magnet finds pleasure in attracting its keeper, yet this pleasure can always be formulated under the unpoetic law of intensity inversely as the square of the distance. This self-consciousness of matter no more interferes with the laws of nature than our enjoyment of physical exercise disturbs the relation between the amount of muscular energy expended and the number of foot-pounds raised. Thus Lotze escapes the trenchant sentence of Kant which Wundt quotes with much approval, "Hylozoism is the death of natural philosophy." †

Hylozoistic doctrines have always been more or less popular in Germany, and, in addition to Lotze, are championed at present by Fechner and Zoellner. The German has a tender love for nature which the Anglo-Saxon mind can only with difficulty understand and appreciate. The flowers, the trees, the streams, the valleys, and the mountains are his friends, and he almost unconsciously invests them with life. This peculiar affection, the poetic feeling, the revolts against unproportion and waste, and the lofty benevolence that lavishes its highest good on all the objects around it, these incentives, more than logical reasons, have led Lotze to attribute conscious life to the

* "*Mikrokosmos*," vol. i, p. 407.

† "*Logik*," p. 584.

material world. Thus are restored to objective nature the beauty, variety, and harmony that an advanced knowledge had deprived her of. Color, sparkle, sound, and odor exist only in the mind of the observer. A dreary monotony, we know not what, reigns supreme in the unperceived world. No light, no sound, no taste, no smell is there. But let a ray of conscious life be attributed to the minute particles of matter, and instantly the ether vibrations transform themselves into the glory of color and the air vibrations into the wealth of sound, although the eye and ear of man and beast be not upon the scene.

We have seen that with Lotze space is subjective and matter sentient; yet the language of this *intelligible* and animated world permits of a translation into the language of every-day life. Just as we say the sun sets—though, in reality, he remains relatively still—so we will still continue to speak of dimensions and distances, of rest and motion, of atoms and molecules, and of matter and mind.

Lotze is, with qualification, a champion of the atomic theory. He finds the ordinary hard atom of science, however, full of contradictions, and replaces it by a point that is the center of in and out-going forces. These atoms cannot be, as we have seen, independent of each other; for interaction is possible only when they are parts of a higher unity. They are potent with energy and spaceless, thus possessing the qualities that partly characterize the Lotzian philosophy. "The phenomenality of space and the inner activity of things, which we have substituted for the changes of external relations as the source of all comings to pass, (*Geschehen*,) are the two points in which we most contradict the ordinary opinions."* On their objective side the chemical elements are irreducible. Attempts have been made to make them all allotropic forms of one basal and typical element, but they retain their peculiarities too tenaciously to justify any hopes of success. On their subjective side they find an organic unity in God. *They are spiritual, not material*. Each one is a thought of God. Each is, as it were, a word with a fixed meaning, and just as words are susceptible of use in various sentences, so the elements are capable of forming many different combinations. The whole material world, then, with its play of color and harmony of

* "*Metaphysik*," p. 425.

sound, is thus resolved into a series of the thoughts of God. The earthly vanishes, the divine assumes its place. But listen to Lotze:

Let us assume, in the first place, that an idea of definite content is so cogitated in God that all the consequences with which it encroaches upon the remaining world of his thought are also at the same time cogitated. And, in the second place, that these thoughts of God are precisely the power which causes the intuition ("*Anschauung*") of the external world to arise in finite minds. Or otherwise expressed: Let us suppose, in the first place, that a definite energy in the Infinite is so exercised that, in consequence of his unity, all of the other energies are, at the same time, exercised, which must follow from it in accordance with the universal conformity to law of this Infinite power; and, in the second place, that this activity of the Infinite is the operative might which produces in the finite mind a picture of the external world. Under these suppositions, then, these inner acts of the Infinite are, according to the idealistic theory, the real powers, which, operative in the Infinite and calling out and conditioning each other in conformity to law, produce that real result that is perceived secondarily by the individual minds as a world that embraces them and all external things.*

Thus we are brought again into the presence of the thought of the mystic Malebranche and the empiricist Berkeley, that we see all things in God. Many of our readers are ready to assume that our author has long since resolved the *we* into the infinite *One*, and that it is a mere play with words for us to speak of men's seeing the world in God. Write rather, say they, that all is God, and that God, not we, sees all things in himself.

But Lotze is neither pantheist nor panlogist. Both mind and matter are, as we have said, "states," "manifestations," "parts," "modifications" of God; but this is not equivalent to pantheism. Carrière, of the University of Munich, admirably fixes Lotze's place in the future history of philosophy. "Thus Lotze comes to that which I laid down more than thirty years ago as the problem of the present time, the union of the opposing principles of Spinoza and Leibnitz, of Hegel and Herbart, and, consequently, the subjection of pantheism and deism by a fusion of transcendence and immanence."† How Lotze escapes from this apparent logical dilemma, how this "fusion of

* "*Mikrokosmos*," vol. iii, p. 529.

† "*Deutsche Revue*," January, 1880.

transcendence and immanence is impossible," we will let him show us in his own words:

It is true that so long as things are only states (*Zustände*) of the infinite they are nothing in themselves. Something must be won for them; and this evidently is the wish of that insistence on their existence outside of God. But things do not gain this true and genuine reality of being something in themselves, or even of being in themselves, by being placed outside of God; as if this transcendence, whose meaning it would be impossible to state, were the preliminary and formal condition on which existence *per se* (*Fürsichsein*) hung as a result. On the contrary, when something is in itself, when it refers itself to itself, when it comprehends itself as an ego, it thus separates itself from the infinite through its own very nature. It does not thus *acquire*, but *has* that existence out of the Infinite; nor does it fulfill any condition under which full reality, as an act of existence comprised and furnished by something else, first comes to it. Existence *per se*, or egoism,* (*Ichheit*), is the only definition that expresses the essential content and worth of what we from accidental and badly chosen stand-points indicate as reality or independent being outside of God in contradistinction to immanence in God. Who, therefore, looks upon minds as like to things, which, indeed, is necessary, as states, thoughts, in modifications of God or the infinite, yet regards them as not a line serving to transmit from point to point, by means of their connections as links of a chain, the consequences of the nature of the infinite, but as enjoying at the same time by means of a reflex reference what they do and undergo as *their* states and *their* experiences of themselves; he who thus regards the matter, I say, and then still believes himself compelled to assign to these living minds that are immanent in God an existence outside of him, in order that in the fullest sense of the word they may be real, seems to us no longer to know what he wishes, no longer to know that he has long since had the full and-entire kernel to which he anxiously seeks the shell.†

This immanence of all things in God is a necessary outcome of Lotze's first principles. As we have seen, no one thing can act upon another in so far as they are parts of the same organic whole; and, consequently, if there is to be communication between the finite mind and the infinite mind it must be by means of the immanence of the finite in the infinite. Mediating between realism and idealism, Lotze can be called an ideal-realist. Pantheism and ideal realism agree in this, that all finite things are states of the Infinite; they differ in this, that

* Of course, in its philosophical signification.

† "*Mikrokosmos*," vol iii, p. 580.

the one denies, the other assigns, them an individuality. Additional significance may be given to the difference when it is emphasized that Lotze is a resolute champion of the freedom of the will.

Tendency-philosophy is somewhat hazardous. Theories that in one generation are used to substantiate a certain phase of thought are employed in the next to support directly its opposite. If Jonathan Edwards could rise up from the tomb and see the motley crowd that swarms around his doctrine of necessity, he would unquestionably probe again into the depths of the will, and not, indeed, with the prepossession that he would bring out determinism. We are reminded of the waggish tricks of "Puck" when we see Mr. Spencer quote with serious mien Sir William Hamilton and Dean Mansell as the great apostles of his favorite theory of agnosticism, and acknowledge himself as a faithful and loving disciple of these masters. Hegel said that he established in his system only those principles that every child learned in its catechism; and yet under his protecting wing nestled Feuerbach, with his coarse materialism, and Bauer, with his radical criticism. Truly it would be going too far to supplement the words of Hamlet, and say, In philosophy "nothing is either good or bad, but thinking makes it so;" yet the results that we have just traced of certain theories are sufficient to show how much depends on the individuality of the thinker, and how dangerous it is in philosophy to denominate a doctrine as unqualifiedly good or unqualifiedly bad.

Weakening thus the unpleasant connotation of the expression "philosophic skepticism," we will show how far it figures in the philosophy of Lotze. As different as John Stuart Mill and Lotze are in their aims and methods, the one theistic, the other positive, yet skepticism plays a not insignificant role in the system of each. A comparison of one or two passages will show how near they can approach each other in this respect. Many of our readers are familiar with this famous passage of Mill:

It must at the same time be remarked that the reasons for this reliance (or the law of causation) do not hold in circumstances unknown to us and beyond the possible range of experience. In distant parts of the stellar regions where the phenomena may be entirely unlike those with which we are acquainted, it would be

folly to affirm confidently that this general law prevails any more than those special ones which we have found to hold universally on our own planet. The uniformity in the succession of events otherwise known as the law of causation, must be received not as a law of the universe, but of that portion of it only which is within the range of our means of sure observation, with a reasonable degree of extensions to adjacent cases. To extend it further is to make a supposition without evidence, and to which, in the absence of any ground from experience for estimating its degree of probability, it would be ridiculous to affect to assign any.*

The passage from Lotze, though not bearing on causation, has a remarkable similarity to the one quoted from Mill, (though written without reference to it,) the coyness of transcending the domain of experience being exhibited equally well in both :

I can by no means consider it as self-evident that the tie of gravitation binds together all existing elements according to the same law, as if they were mere selfless examples of a mass capable of use. We know its validity for the solar system alone, and only for a number of the double stars may the supposition be correct that they are also held in their paths by a like mutual attraction, whose law, indeed, is unknown. But that the same action extends itself from one connected system of elements in space to another also connected is by no means as well proved and as irrefutable as is the homogeneous transmission of the undulations of light. †

Or, again, compare the following passages :

I am convinced that any one accustomed to abstraction and analysis, who will fairly exert his faculties for the purpose, will, when his imagination has once learned to entertain the notion, find no difficulty in conceiving that in some one, for instance, of the many firmaments into which sidereal astronomy now divides the universe, events may succeed one another at random, without any fixed law; nor can any thing in our experience or in our mental nature constitute a sufficient nor indeed any reason for believing that this is nowhere the case. ‡

Says Lotze :

I would be the last to deny the great worth and the indispensableness of the other method of thinking, which, in our mechanics, bases its calculations upon the abstract concept of mass and its constancy, force and its persistence, inertia and the immutability of the elements. . . . But I am the last to ascribe to these theories, which are mere abstractions out of the short sketches

* "Logic," p. 342.

† "*Metaphysik*," p. 461.

‡ "Logic," p. 338. 

of the course of nature accessible to us, that metaphysical truth that would entitle them to decide these questions that transcend all experience. *

This denial of metaphysical validity to the scientific doctrines of the permanence of matter and the persistence of force demands further consideration. To those who are accustomed to regard the external world as composed of hard and material atoms, to a great degree independent of each other, and acting together, as it were, only by courtesy, it is about impossible to conceive the quantity of matter as being either increased or decreased. But to Lotze, who resolves the chemical elements into the thoughts of God, and who regards him not as a fixed quantity, but as a spirit, an intellect, an idea, developing itself in accordance with a definite plan, it is readily conceivable that the number of these thoughts may become greater or smaller, according to the exigences of the development of this fundamental idea—just as our working vocabulary increases or decreases in proportion to the complexity or simplicity of the subject we are elaborating—and this change on its objective side will be an increase or decrease of the quantity of matter. The persistence of force is questioned by a similar process of reason. We are finite, and can catch only vexatious glimpses of the shadowings forth of the Infinite. Cornered off into one little part of the universe, and allotted only an insignificant time for observation, we can readily fail to grasp the true workings of nature. It may be that the universe is like a sense spring, whose force is released by every power which removes the hinderances to its positive and perceptible action. It is true that this supposition is not confirmed by experience, but experience is limited. The universe, then, instead of being a fixed quantity, moving itself within the limits of a determined quantity of force—instead of being, as it were, a simple tone ever monotonously repeating itself—may be regarded as a melody now sinking down to a few simple notes, now bursting forth in all the wealth of a rich and varied harmony.

The position of Lotze toward the question that has excited during the last fifteen or twenty years a feverish interest among all classes cannot fail to be of interest. We can, of course, but refer to the doctrine of evolution. He has never entered into

* "*Metaphysik*," p. 462.

a detailed discussion of it, and our exposition must consequently be brief. He regards the permanence of types as evidence sufficiently strong to refute the theory of Darwin. Basing himself on the persistence with which different races of men maintain their characteristic features, despite the influences of different climates, soils, and methods of life, he argues that no change of environment nor inheritance of variation will justify the conclusion that all life has sprung from a few primal germs. He believes in different centers of creation, and his position leads him to assume separate creative acts for the different races of men. But waiving all discussion of the scientific side of evolution, we wish to emphasize one or two of his statements that bear on its moral phase. "Whichever of the two ways of creation God may have chosen, neither will cause the dependence of the world on him to become laxer, neither will attach it to him more firmly.* This is a bugle-call back to reason. Startled by the brilliant results of Darwin's work, the thinking world has written too much that is akin to the following passage from "The Nation:" "Channing's theology, much as he did to liberalize that of New England, is already absolute in the details of his creed, created no school, and has nothing in it *which will guarantee it against the undermining influences of the doctrine of evolution.*" Lotze's protest against such premature judgments is timely and valuable. Be the world specially created or evolved, with him moral questions are moral questions, and with burning sarcasm he deprecates the resolving of the science of ethics into a question of worms and frogs. But he protests likewise against the persistence with which some writers limit the creative methods of God to that of special creation.

Even the religious sense dare not prescribe to God the way in which he shall further develop his creation. We can remain assured that however undutiful this way might be, the guidance of the hand of God would not pass away. Man, who prolongs his life by consumption of the common products of nature, has no right to claim an ineffably noble origin of this his body. And, moreover, he must value himself according to what he is, and not according to that from which he has arisen. It suffices that we no longer feel ourselves to be monkeys, and it is a matter of indifference whether our remote ancestors, whom we no longer

* "*Microcosmus*," vol. ii, p. 158.

remember, belonged or not to this lower stage of life. Painful only would it be if we were compelled to become monkeys again, and this event impended in the near future.*

Since the revival of the study of natural science the possibility of miracles has again become the theme of more or less controversy. The emphatic protest that Lotze makes against any hypostization of laws, and his rigid subjection of the finite elements to the dictates of the Infinite, permits readily the inference that in his system miracles can have a place. The power that works them does it through his close relation to the inner nature of things, changing it, and thus bringing about the result in a manner that violates no law. Just as a galvanic current passed through water so changes the nature of the component atoms, hydrogen and oxygen, that their chemical affinity is destroyed, and they are given off as elementary gases, without in the meantime any law being violated; so God modifies the inner nature of things, and prepares them thus for new and unusual methods of action. But once again we must acknowledge the imperfection of our illustration.

"That whose worth and meaning entitles it to be a permanent member of the world's economy will live eternally; that which lacks this preserving worth will be destroyed." Such is Lotze's formulated answer to the momentous question of the soul's immortality. With him any demonstration is impossible. To call the soul a substance, and thus to entitle it to immortality, is to prove too much. If it is indestructible it cannot have been created, and, consequently, must have pre-existed. Moreover, having no right to limit the substantial nature to human souls, the immortality of the souls of animals is assured. And, further, the souls in the world being limited to a fixed number, we are brought dangerously near the doctrine of metempsychosis in the transmigration of souls. Such, when pushed to its legitimate consequences, are the results of the hypothesis of the soul as indestructible substance. Nothing remains to us, then, but the opening thought of the paragraph—the worthful is eternal.

Here we break off our exposition with the remark, that Lotze's "*Medicinische Psychologie*" has been the stimulus to the physiological psychology of Germany, and that his theory

* "*Metaphysik*," p. 465.

of the *Localzeichen* is one of the most important contributions of the century to psychology. That we have done scant justice to Lotze we are fully aware. As a Gothic cathedral, seen through haze and distance, loses its splendor and becomes a mere outline, so does a system like Lotze's lose its glory when seen through the fog of a magazine article. And as the cathedral, on a nearer view, reveals its numerous statues, its pointed arches fretted with tracery, its flying buttresses delicate in their strength, and its tower, with its graceful supports and pinnacles swinging itself audaciously into the heavens; so only through a study of his books themselves does Lotze's system reveal its many lofty thoughts, its graceful reticulations of dialectic subtleties, its flashes of poetic insight, inspiring and revealing, and its majestic unity which bases itself on the solid ground of experience, and, adorned with the idealized facts of labor, trade, domestic life, and history, rises up to the Eternal One. Lowell asserts that "with the gift of song Carlyle would have been the greatest of epic poets since Homer." Lotze is likewise a prose-poet, but his prose is lyrical. To the rare combination—absent in the philosophy of Carlyle—of exact thought and poetic energy, he owes much of his power. With him is "everywhere the aspect of the whole universe marvel and poetry, while prose is only the limited and one-sided perception of small regions of the finite." Lotze is a great spirit, and, as Ribot says, "worthy of our full homage."

ART. VII.—HARRIET MARTINEAU.

IN the autobiography of Harriet Martineau, we are presented with what must be considered a decidedly interesting book. It is the story of a woman who, with little of the quality called *genius*, yet resolutely and persistently employed the talents given her, and "made a covenant with labor as her portion and pleasure under the sun."

This remarkable lady was born at Norwich, England, in 1802. She was of French Protestant descent, her earliest recorded ancestor having emigrated to England on the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. She was the sixth of eight children, all of

whom seem to have received the best education which their parents could afford them; admonishing them, at the same time, that they must regard their education as their only secure portion.

Harriet improved well the advantages afforded her, acquiring, in the course of her school training, a knowledge of the Latin and French languages, to which she afterward added Italian and German, and was duly "exercised in composition as well as reading, in her own language and others." It was remarked of her, however, that in her childhood and youth there were few or no tokens of unusual talents or ability. "Her health was delicate, her spirits low, her habits of mind anxious, and her habits of life silent." It added seriously to the disadvantages of her youth—as well as of all her after life—that, at about twelve years of age, a slight deafness began to develop itself, which, growing upon her, rendered it necessary for her to use a trumpet during the remainder of her life.

Miss Martineau early addicted herself to the practice of composition, and her first appearance in print was before she was twenty years of age. Her earliest writings were mainly of a religious character, evincing Unitarian leanings; while, throughout her long and extraordinary career of authorship, it seemed to be characteristic of her that she wrote because she *must* write. Thoughts appeared to swarm within her and clamor for utterance; so that never, while health permitted, did her pen grow weary.

It soon transpired, however, that an additional necessity called for the exercise of her faculty of composition. The small fortunes falling to herself and sisters being lost by the failure of the house where their funds were intrusted, she suddenly found herself poor, and that it had now become necessary to provide, by her own labor and industry, for her support. Such was the occasion of one of her early and most successful literary efforts. This was her series of "Illustrations of Political Economy." An enterprise of this character might seem peculiar, especially as an undertaking of a lady, and a lady, too, not yet thirty years of age. But she was deeply impressed with the necessity of such a work, particularly for the instruction of the laboring classes, as well as for the influence which she hoped might be brought to bear upon the higher orders of

society. This literary enterprise embraced a series of tales the scenery of which was laid in different localities and countries, exhibiting, by skillful and interesting pen pictures, the great natural laws of society. It was a simple and unpretentious work—not professing “to offer discoveries or new applications of discoveries. It popularized in a fresh form some doctrines and many truths long before made public by others.”

In introducing this series of tales to the public the author experienced uncommon difficulties and struggles, the story of which may afford a useful moral to other young authors. She had applied to several publishing houses, all of which declined to issue the work. She at length, however, gained the ear of one publisher, who seemed partially inclined to attempt it. But he suddenly changed his mind, and was disposed to abandon the whole project. He had been advised against the enterprise, and presented a multitude of objections; while her final interview with him, as related by herself, is thus pictured :

I said to him, “I see you have taken fright. If you wish that your brother should draw back, say so now. There is the advertisement; make up your mind before it goes to press.” He replied, “I do not wish altogether to draw back.” “Yes, you do,” said I; “and I would do so at once. But I tell you this—the people want this book, and they shall have it!” “I know that is your intention,” he replied; “but I do own I do not see how it is to come to pass.” “Nor I; but it shall,” said I. Mr. Fox insisted that his brother should not go on with the publication unless its success was secured within a fortnight. “What do you mean by its success being secured?” asked Miss Martineau. “You must sell a thousand copies in a fortnight,” was the reply. No wonder that the poor lady was discouraged. “I began now at last to doubt whether my work would ever see the light. I thought of the multitudes who needed it—and especially of the poor—to assist them in managing their own welfare. I thought, too, of my own conscious power of doing this very thing. . . . At last it was necessary to go to bed; and at four o’clock I went, after crying for two hours with my feet on the fender. I cried in bed till six, when I fell asleep. But I was at the breakfast table by half-past eight, and ready for the work of the day.”

But her hour of triumph came. The publication commenced; and before the eventful fortnight ended, instead of the requisite one thousand, *five* thousand copies had been demanded. “From that hour,” she writes, “I have never had any other anxiety about employment than what to choose, or any real care about money.”

This series of tales comprised over a score of numbers, were issued once a month, and exhibited her best ability and success in this species of composition. Several other works of fiction proceeded from her pen, although this kind of writing seems not to have been her forte. The judgment of critics has been, that "the artistic aim and qualifications necessary for the successful execution of such compositions were absent—that she lacked power of dramatic construction, and that poetical inspiration and critical cultivation without which no work of the imagination can be worthy to live."

Soon after completing her series of pieces illustrative of political economy, Miss Martineau determined on a season of rest from literary labor. For this purpose she, in the summer of 1834, embarked at Liverpool for the United States, being actuated by a desire to witness for herself the practical operation of our institutions. Her reputation as an author preceded her to this country, and she was received and treated with distinction. After visiting various northern cities and the national capital, she journeyed to the South, and traveled somewhat extensively in the slave States, it being a special object of desire with her to study the subject of slavery as then existing in that portion of the Republic. She had always cherished sentiments opposed to the institution, and her southern travels do not seem to have exerted an influence, as with many other travelers, to modify or change her antislavery views, except to strengthen and confirm them.

It happened that Miss Martineau's visit to this country occurred at that period of time when antislavery feeling began to be specially aroused, and when, also, the country, North as well as South, arose in violent opposition to the sentiments and operations of abolitionism. The mob spirit became sadly prevalent, and lawless violence frequently broke forth—encouraged, too often, by many people of respectable standing in society. Meantime, Miss Martineau's sympathies were decidedly with the abolitionists; nor did she hesitate to avow her sentiments, although conducting herself with commendable prudence and modesty. It followed, as a matter of course, that she at once lost caste with many who, on her arrival here, welcomed her to their homes and firesides; while the evidence from her narrative is not slight that even she herself was not exempt from

danger growing out of the rabid spirit of the time. After a two years' visit here she embarked for England, and reached her native shores in safety. "When I returned home," she wrote, "the daily feeling of security, and of sympathy in my antislavery views, gave me a pleasure as intense as if I had returned from a long exile."

The next spring following her return home Miss Martineau published "*Society in America*," and afterward "*Retrospect of Western Travel*." Other works followed in rapid succession, such as, "*How to Observe*;" "*Morals and Manners*;" several volumes of "*Guides to Service*;" her novels, "*Deerbrook*" and "*The Hour and the Man*;" four volumes of children's tales, entitled "*The Playfellow*;" and "*Life in the Sick Room*." The most voluminous and laborious of her works was her "*History of the Thirty Years' Peace*," occupying her about one year; and, including the introduction, comprising three volumes. She also published "*Eastern Life—Present and Past*," which seems to have been deemed the best of her writings. Some smaller works succeeded, such as "*Guides to the Lakes*," "*Household Education*," and others; while accompanying all these multitudinous works were articles from her pen for various periodical publications, too numerous for specification. Among her last literary enterprises was a condensed translation of Comté's "*Positive Philosophy*," which she finished in November, 1853.

Miss Martineau, with all her love of literature and retirement, did not confine herself entirely to her beloved England. In addition to her protracted visit and extensive travels in this country, she in 1839 traveled in the south of Europe, and some years afterward visited Egypt, Palestine, and adjacent regions, a tour which gave rise to her "*Eastern Life*."

The autobiography of Miss Martineau seems to have been her last considerable work, and is the one in which the reading world will be the most deeply interested. It was written to be published after her decease, and when all praise or censure of the book would be nothing to her. Perhaps this consideration had its influence in that remarkable independence of thought and freedom of expression so characteristic of the entire narrative.

Of this freedom and singular plainness of speech we have

ample illustration in her remarks touching one and another of the distinguished characters of her time.

Of William Taylor, for example, she writes that his knowledge of German literature was a distinction which injured him. He was completely spoiled by the flatteries of shallow men and pedantic and conceited women.

Mrs. Barbauld she thought one of the finest writers in our language; and the best example of a woman of a sound classical education.

Brougham she distrusted; believing him vain and selfish, low in morals and unrestrained in temper, talking exceedingly fast, eating fast and prodigiously, profane and indecent in conversation, envious, jealous, and false.

Jeffrey had a warm heart, was generous to an extreme, a great converser, and had a cordial sympathy with all elevated sentiments.

Mrs. Trollope ranked low in the estimation of Miss Martineau; and she denounced manfully the "dirty pages" of her slanderous book on this country.

Sydney Smith she liked from the beginning, with all his bluntness and abundant witticisms. As a conversationalist, he was glorious; but she considered his manners and many of his sentiments as not very clerical, and judged him as having mistaken his calling, not having the spiritual tendencies and endowments suited to a clergyman.

Malthus, the political economist, was one of her friends; and he was pleased to tell her that her tales illustrating his favorite science had reported his views precisely as he could have wished.

Hallam was at his brightest when she first knew him. She enjoyed his works greatly, especially his "History of Literature;" and had a profound respect for him as an author before ever dreaming of him as a friend.

Southey she reports as gentle, kindly, and agreeable; but at the time of her meeting him seemed to be declining.

Bishop Whately she pictures as odd, of overbearing manners, sometimes rude and tiresome, and at other times full of instruction. She records that, when once alluding to his lawn sleeves, he said, "I don't know how it is; but when we have got these things on, we never do any thing more."

Monkton Milnes she liked for his catholicity of sentiment and manner, his ability to sympathize with all manner of thinkers and speakers, and being above all exclusiveness; and she pronounces his person wonderfully beautiful.

Of Grote, the historian, she speaks as being constitutionally timid and shy; which qualities he endeavored to conceal by a curious, formal, old-fashioned, deliberate courtesy. But she deemed him a grand man and a gentleman, as well as a scholar and author, while his reputation in these respects, she says, was always of the highest.

Mr. Roebuck, she writes, was full of knowledge, full of energy, full of ability; but possessed of much vanity, of lively spirits when well, and very highly agreeable as a guest or host.

To Mr. Macaulay, whom as a scholar and author we all revere so much, Miss Martineau takes many serious exceptions. Conceding his imposing and real ability, she, however, proceeds to excoriate him unmercifully, denouncing him as wanting heart, as unreliable, as fundamentally weak in his speeches and writings, and as failing signally as a legislator and politician. His *History* she pronounces a mere historical romance; takes him to task for his plagiarisms, for his slanderous attacks on William Penn, for his loose and unscrupulous method of narrating, for divers misrepresentations; and, in a word, transfixes the poor man, and holds him up before the world as simply a stupendous failure.

Campbell, the poet, she pictures as being too sentimental, and having a craving for praise too inordinate and morbid to allow him to be an agreeable companion.

Babbage, inventor of the calculating machine, she describes as extremely sensitive to what was said of him as an author; collecting every thing in print about himself, pasting them in a large book, and gloating and growling over them for whole days.

Of Lyell and Darwin she was a special admirer, while they, with their devoted wives, were ever-welcome visitors. Of Madam Lyell especially she speaks with enthusiasm, affirming that she grew handsomer, brighter, and more cheery from year to year.

The great Mrs. Somerville was also one of her friends, and her she characterized as of great simplicity, always well-dressed,

and thoroughly womanly in conversation and manners, with beautiful surroundings at her home, where, among other things, were several drawers filled with diplomas from sundry learned bodies.

Of Joanna Bailey, also, she speaks with great admiration, describing her as one whose serene and cheerful life was never troubled by the pains and penalties of vanity.

Allan Cunningham comes in for many pleasant words of approval. His simple sense and cheerful humor rendered his conversation as lively as that of a wit, while his literary knowledge and taste gave it refinement enough to suit any society.

Macready was artificial, but a more delightful companion could not be. A chivalrous spirit, unsleeping domestic tenderness, and sweet beneficence, all combined to make him the idol of society.

Carlyle, of course, was one of her heroes; and her characterization of this singular genius is more extensive than that of others. She was a frequent visitor at his Chelsea home, and consequently saw him in the more prominent phases of his character. Of one of his moods she thus writes: "The sympathetic is, by far, the finest in my eyes. This excess of sympathy has been, I believe, the torment of his life;" and she indulged the notion that the savageness which has come to be the prominent characteristic of this remarkable man is a mere expression of his intolerable sympathy with suffering people. "He cannot," she adds, "express his love and pity in natural acts like other people, and it shows itself too often in unnatural speech;" that is, in speech that is savage and ferocious. All this may be so, but plain and simple people will conclude it to be the first and last case of such a paradox in the history of the race. Miss Martineau's opinion of Carlyle was extremely favorable, and she deemed that he was worthy of being recognized as one of the chief influencers of his time.

Her estimate of Coleridge was not so exalted, though for a time she greatly admired him as a poet. He appeared to her to have been constitutionally defective in will, in conscientiousness, and in apprehension of the real and true.

Of the Brownings she writes that Robert was full of good sense and fine feeling; full, also, of fun, and a real genius; while she praises the genius of Mrs. Browning, esteeming her

poetry as wonderfully beautiful in its way. She pronounces them a remarkable pair.

In a sketch like this, it is, of course, indispensable that we pass over a multitude of interesting incidents associated with the life of this notable woman. Also, it is time to revert to the religious aspect of her character, or, more properly, to that sad "eclipse of faith" that gradually settled over her mind, and shut out from her vision all idea and hope of that glorious immortality brought to light in the gospel, and so precious with every Christian heart.

Miss Martineau, in her childhood and as she grew up, had received a Christian training, and passed no morning or evening without prayer. It is melancholy, therefore, to trace the gradual decline of her faith in the great scheme of redemption, and in revelation itself, until, in the course of her reading and speculation, she stranded, at length, on the stern rock of *necessity*; whence, through a long after-life of half a century, she was never extricated.

The views to which, at about twenty years of age, she had drifted, may be considered as embodied in the following propositions: The New Testament proceeds on the ground of *necessity*; and the fatalistic element pervades the doctrine of Christ and the apostles. The practice of prayer is wholly unauthorized in the New Testament, and Christian prayer, as now offered, answers to the Pharisaic prayers which Christ condemned. Miss Martineau, therefore, gradually ceased from all prayer, whether for herself or others. She professed to find herself a better person when she cared least about being good; and found, or thought she found, that working out her own salvation was demoralizing. Every thing in the material and spiritual world being fixed by immutable laws, she reached the same condition of ease about her spiritual as her temporal welfare, and, to use her own language, she "felt it better to take the chance of being damned (as she viewed damnation) rather than to be always quacking one's self in the fear of it." Then as prayer ceased, so all praise was laid aside, for she expressed herself as ashamed to offer to God a homage that would be offensive to a human being.

Thus with this distinguished lady all faith and worship ceased forever, and she reached the conclusion that Christian-

ity is a monstrous superstition, having the character of a mere fact in the history of the universe. There *may* be another life, but she does not believe it; she does not desire it; she indulges no care about it. If she finds it to be true, "all right," says she. Ay, most certainly, *all right*; but what will be involved in those two little words!

But we hasten to close at once this very imperfect notice of a very remarkable book—the production of a very remarkable woman. The pages additional to the autobiography, by Mrs. Chapman, Miss Martineau's editor and devoted friend, will be read, especially by American readers, with almost equal interest with the autobiography itself. We lay aside these volumes with mingled feelings of pleasure and sadness: pleasure, on the one hand, at the thought of what may be accomplished by a diligent pen, whether in the hand of man or woman; and sadness, on the other, at the possibility that an intelligent and talented lady of enlightened Britain, and in the nineteenth century, should most deliberately turn away from the light and hopes of Christianity, and embrace quietly, and apparently without the slightest misgivings, the darkness and hopelessness of paganism.

ART. VIII.—SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES AND OTHERS OF THE HIGHER PERIODICALS.

American Reviews.

AMERICAN CATHOLIC QUARTERLY REVIEW, January, 1881. (Philadelphia.)—1. A Glance at the Conflict between Religion and Science; by Rev. S. Fitzsimons. 2. The Joyous Knights: or, Frati Gaudenti; by Rev. Bernard J. O'Reilly. 3. The Anticatholic Issue in the Late Election—The Relation of Catholics to the Political Parties; by John Gilmary Shea. 4. Ireland's Great Grievance—Land Tenure in Ireland and other Countries; by M. F. Sullivan. 5. The Existence of God Demonstrated; by Rev. John Ming, S. J. 6. Lord Beaconsfield and his Latest Novel; by John McCarty. 7. The Religious Outlook in Europe at the Present Day; by Rev. Aug. J. Thebaud, S. J. 8. The French Republic, Will it Last? by A. de G.

BAPTIST REVIEW, January, February, March, 1881. (Cincinnati.)—1. Organization and Personality; by President David J. Hill. 2. The Antiquity of Man—Its Present Phase; by Rev. E. Nisbet, D.D. 3. The Will in Theology; by President Augustus H. Strong, D.D. 4. Some Conditions of Pulpit Power; by Rev. Samuel Graves, D.D. 5. The Doctrine of Two Messiahs among the Jews; translated from the German, by Rev. J. F. Morton. 6. The Denominational Work of President Manning; by Reuben A. Guild, LL.D. 7. Moral Lessons from the Word; by Rev. Philip L. Jones. 8. The Old Testament Apocrypha; by Prof. John A. Broadus, D.D., LL.D.

LUTHERAN QUARTERLY, January, 1881. (Gettysburgh.)—1. The Asperity of Luther's Language; by John G. Morris, D.D., LL.D. 2. The Confessional Principle and the Confessions; by H. E. Jacobs, D.D. 3. Notes on Some Postulates in the New Ethics; by C. A. Stork, D.D. 4. Philosophy of Religion; by Prof. W. H. Wynn, Ph.D. 5. Is the Lord's Day only a Human Ordinance? by M. Valentine, D.D. 6. Some Elements of Family Religion; by Rev. J. C. Koller, A.M.

NEW ENGLANDER, January, 1881. (New Haven.)—1. Horace Bushnell; by Rev. Henry M. Goodwin. 2. Bayard Taylor's Posthumous Works; by Professor Franklin Carter. 3. Beowulf Gretti; by Prof. C. Sprague Smith. 4. The Irish Land Question; by Henry Carter Adams, Ph.D. 5. The Teaching of Church History as to the Method of the World's Conversion; by Rev. William De Loss Love. 6. A Humble Apology; or, Is the Pulpit Insincere? by Rev. M. C. Welch. 7. A Word with the Spelling Reformers; by Prof. Lemuel S. Potwin.

NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, January, 1881. (Boston.)—1. Sketch of the Life of the Hon. John Howe Peyton; by Col. J. T. L. Preston. 2. The Rev. John Eliot's Record of Roxbury Church Members; by William B. Trask, Esq. 3. Longmeadow Families; by Williard S. Allen, A.M. 4. Diary of the Hon. Paul Dudley, 1740; by B. Joy Jeffries, M.D. 5. Records of Dartmouth, Mass.; by the late James B. Congdon. 6. Taxes under Gov. Andros; by Walter Lloyd Jeffries, A.B. 7. Lieut. John Bryant and Descendants; by William B. Lapham, M.D. 8. Quincy Family Letters; by Hubbard W. Bryant, Esq. 9. Early Records of Gorgeana; by Samuel L. Boardman, Esq. 10. The Youngman Family; by John C. J. Brown, Esq. 11. Cabo de Baxos, or the Place of Cape Cod in the Old Cartology; by Rev. B. F. De Costa. 12. Descent of Margaret Locke, Wife of Francis Willoughby; by Col. Joseph L. Chester, LL.D. 13. Letters of Shirley and Moulton; by N. J. Herrick, Esq. 14. The Atherton Family in England; by John C. J. Brown, Esq. 15. Grantees of Meadow Lands in Dorchester; by William B. Trask, Esq. 16. Wright Genealogy by Rev. Stephen Wright. 17. Letters Written during the Revolution; by John S. H. Fogg, M.D.

PRINCETON REVIEW, January, 1881. (New York.)—1. Grounds of Knowledge and Rules for Belief; by Mark Hopkins. 2. The Public Schools of England; by Prof. William M. Sloane, Ph.D. 3. The Historical Proofs of Christianity; by George P. Fisher, D.D., LL.D. 4. Christian Morality, Expediency and Liberty; by Prof. Lyman H. Atwater. 5. Legal Prohibition of the Liquor Traffic; by Henry Wade Rogers. 6. Is Thought Possible without Language? by Prof. Samuel Porter. 7. Presidential Elections and Civil Service Reform; by William G. Sumner.

UNIVERSALIST QUARTERLY, January, 1881. (Boston.)—1. The Light of Asia; by G. T. Flanders, D.D. 2. Faith or Faithfulness? by Austin Bierbower. 3. A Study of American Archaeology; by Rev. J. P. McLean. 4. Revelations of God; by Rev. S. Crane. 5. Materialistic Conceptions of Religion; by Prof. J. S. Lee. 6. Jesus, the Christ, the Son of God; by Rev. Mary J. S. De Long. 7. New Defenses of Endless Punishment; by T. J. Sawyer, D.D.

CONTEMPORARY REVIEW, September, 1880. (New York.)—1. The Unity of Nature; by the DUKE OF ARGYLL.

We give, from the "Contemporary Review" for September, 1880, this initial article—an article remarkable both for beauty of style and force of argument—omitting the introductory part for want of room. The point of the argument is, that the unity of the universe and the unity of God reciprocally demand and demonstrate each other. Monotheism he holds to have been the primitive doctrine of God, derived from original revelation. And, amid the complexities of nature, there is a

oneness that shows the truth of the primitive belief. His first proof of this unity is derived from gravitation, which binds the material worlds in one. This argument was given in an article with great clearness some years ago, in our pages, by Professor Winchell; we, therefore, omit it, and proceed to the second.

Nor is gravitation the only agency which brings home to us the unity of the conditions which prevail among the worlds. There is another: Light—that sweet and heavenly messenger which comes to us from the depths of Space, telling us all we know of other worlds, and giving us all that we enjoy of life and beauty on our own. And there is one condition of unity revealed by Light which is not revealed by gravitation. For, in respect to gravitation, although we have an idea of the *measure*, we have no idea of the *method*, of its operation. We know with precision the numerical rules which it obeys, but we know nothing whatever of the way in which its work is done. But in respect to Light, we have an idea not only of the measure, but of the mode of its operation. In one sense, of course, Light is a mere sensation in ourselves. But when we speak of it as an external thing, we speak of the cause of that sensation. In this sense, Light is a wave or an undulatory vibration, and such vibrations can only be propagated in a medium which, however thin, must be material. Light, therefore, reveals to us the fact that we are united with the most distant worlds, and with all intervening space, by some ethereal atmosphere which embraces and holds them all. Moreover, the enormous velocity with which the vibrations of this atmosphere are propagated proves that it is a substance of the closest continuity, and of the highest tension. The tremors which are imparted to it by luminous bodies rush from particle to particle at the rate of 186,000 miles in a second of time; and thus, although it is impalpable, intangible, and imponderable, we know that it is a medium infinitely more compact than the most solid substance which can be felt and weighed. It is very difficult to conceive this, because the waves or tremors which constitute Light are not recognizable by any sense but one; and the impressions of that sense give us no direct information on the nature of the medium by which those impressions are produced. We cannot see the luminiferous medium except when it is in motion, and not even then, unless that motion be in a certain direction toward ourselves. When this medium is at rest we are in utter darkness, and so are we also when its movements are rushing past us, but do not touch us. The luminiferous medium is, therefore, in itself invisible; and its nature can only be arrived at by pure reasoning—reasoning, of course, founded on observation, but observation of rare phenomena, or of phenomena which can only be seen under those conditions which man has invented for analyzing the operations of his own most glorious sense. And never, perhaps, has man's inventive genius been more signally displayed than in

the long series of investigations which first led up to the conception, and have now furnished the proof, that light is nothing but the undulatory movement of a substantial medium. It is very difficult to express in language the ideas upon the nature of that medium which have been built up from the facts of its behavior. It is difficult to do so, because all the words by which we express the properties of matter refer to its more obvious phenomena—that is to say, to the direct impressions which matter makes upon the senses. And so, when we have to deal with forms of matter which do not make any impressions of the same kind—forms of matter which can neither be seen, nor felt, nor handled, which have neither weight, nor taste, nor smell, nor aspect—we can only describe them by the help of analogies as near as we can find. But as regards the qualities of the medium which causes the sensation of light, the nearest analogies are remote, and, what is worse, they compel us to associate ideas which elsewhere are so dissevered as to appear almost exclusive of each other. It is now more than half a century since Dr. Thomas Young astonished and amused the scientific world by declaring of the luminiferous medium that we must conceive of it as finding its way through all matter as freely as the air moves through a grove of trees. This suggests the idea of an element of extreme tenuity. But that element cannot be said to be thin in which a wave is transmitted with the enormous velocity of light. On the contrary, its molecules must be in closest contact with each other when a tremor is carried by them through a thickness of 186,000 miles in a single second. Accordingly, Sir J. Herschel has declared that the luminiferous ether must be conceived of not as an air, nor as a fluid, but rather as a solid—"in this sense at least, that its particles cannot be supposed as capable of interchanging places, or of bodily transfer to any measurable distance from their own special and assigned localities in the universe."* Well may Sir J. Herschel add that "this will go far to realize (in however unexpected a form) the ancient idea of a crystalline orb." And thus the wonderful result of all investigation is, that this earth is in actual rigid contact with the most distant worlds in space—in rigid contact, that is to say, through a medium which touches and envelops all, and which is incessantly communicating from one world to another the minutest vibrations it receives.

The laws, therefore, and the constitution of Light, even more than the law of gravitation, carry up to the highest degree of certainty our conception of the universe as one—one, that is to say, in virtue of the closest mechanical connection, and of the prevalence of one universal medium.

Moreover, it is now known that this medium is the vehicle not only of Light, but also of Heat, while it has likewise a special power of setting up, or of setting free, the mysterious action of chemical affinity. The beautiful experiments have become

* "Familiar Lectures on Scientific Subjects," p 285.

familiar by which these three kinds of ethereal motion can be separated from each other in the solar spectrum, and each of them can be made to exhibit its peculiar effects. With these again the forces of galvanism and electricity have some very intimate connection, which goes far to indicate like methods of operation in some prevailing element. Considering how all the forms of Matter, both in the organic and in the inorganic worlds, depend on one or other, or on all of these—considering how Life itself depends upon them, and how it flickers or expires according as they are present in due proportion—it is impossible not to feel that in this great group of powers, so closely bound up together, we are standing very close indeed to some pervading, if not universal, agency in the mechanism of Nature.

This close connection of so many various phenomena with different kinds of movement in a single medium is by far the most striking and instructive discovery of modern science. It supplies, to some extent, a solid physical basis, and one veritable cause for part, at least, of the general impression of unity which the aspects of Nature leave upon the mind. For all work done by the same implement generally carries the mark of that implement, as it were of a tool, upon it. Things made of the same material, whatever they may be, are sure to be like in those characteristics which result from identical or from similar properties and modes of action. And so far, therefore, it is easy to understand the constant and close analogies which prevail in that vast circle of phenomena which are connected with Heat, Light, Electricity, Chemical and Vital Action.

But although the employment of one and the same agency in the production of a variety of effects is, no doubt, one cause of the visible unity which prevails in Nature, it is not the only cause. The same close analogies exist where no such identity of agency can be traced. Thus the mode in which the atmosphere carries Sound is closely analogous to the mode in which the ether carries Light. But the ether and the atmosphere are two very different agents, and the similarity of the laws which the undulations of both obey is due to some other and some more general cause of unity than identity of material. This more general cause is to be found, no doubt, in one common law which determines the forms of motion in all matter, and especially in highly elastic media.

But, indeed, the mere physical unity which consists in the action of one great vehicle of power, even if this were more universally prevalent than it is known to be, is but the lowest step in the long ascent which carries us up to a unity of a more perfect kind. The means by which some one single implement can be made to work a thousand different effects, not only without interference and without confusion, but with such relations between it and other agents as to lead to complete harmonies of result, are means which point to some unity behind and above the implement itself—that is to say, they point to some unity in the method of

its handling, in the management of the impulses which, receiving, it conveys, and in the arrangement of the materials on which it operates.

No illustration can be given of this higher kind of unity which is half so striking as the illustration which is afforded by the astonishing facts, now familiar, as to the composition of solar light. When we consider that every color in the spectrum represents the motion of a separate wave or ripple, and that, in addition to the visible series, there are other series, one at each end of the luminous rays, which are non-luminous, and, therefore, invisible—all of which consist of waves equally distinct; when we consider, further, that all these are carried simultaneously with the same speed across millions of miles; that they are separable, and yet are never separated; that they are more accurately together, without jostling or confusion, in perfect combination, yet so that each shall be capable of producing its own separate effect—it altogether transcends our faculties of imagination to conceive how movements of such infinite complication can be united in one such perfect order.

And be it observed that the difficulty of conceiving this is not diminished, but increased, by the fact that these movements are propagated in a single medium; because it is most difficult to conceive how the particles of the medium can be so arranged as to be capable of conveying so many different kinds of motion with equal velocities and at the same instant of time. It is clear that the unity of effect which is achieved out of this immense variety of movements is a unity which lies altogether behind the mere unity of material, and is traceable to some one order of arrangement under which the original impulses are conveyed. We know that in respect to the waves of Sound the production of perfect harmonies among them can only be attained by a skillful adjustment of the instruments, whose vibrations are the cause and the measure of the aerial waves which, in their combination, constitute perfect music. And so, in like manner, we may be sure that the harmonies of Heat, Light, and Chemical Action, effected as they are among an infinite number and variety of motions, very easily capable of separation and disturbance, must be the result of some close adjustment between the constituent element of the conveying medium and the constituent elements of the luminous bodies, whose complex, but joint, vibrations constitute that embodied harmony which we know as Light. Moreover, as this adjustment must be close and intimate between the properties of the ether and the nature of the bodies whose vibrations it repeats, so also must the same adjustment be equally close between these vibrations and the properties of Matter on which they exert such a powerful influence. And when we consider the number and the nature of the things which this adjustment must include, we can, perhaps, form some idea of what a bond and bridge it is between the most stupendous phenomena of the heavens and the minutest phenomena of earth. For this adjustment must be

perfect between these several things—first, the flaming elements in the sun which communicate the different vibrations in definite proportion; next, the constitution of the medium, which is capable of conveying them without division, confusion, or obstruction; next, the constitution of our own atmosphere, so that neither shall it distort, nor confuse, nor quench the waves; and, lastly, the constitution of those forms of Matter upon earth which respond, each after its own laws, to the stimulus it is so made as to receive from the heating, lighting, and actinic waves.

In contemplating this vast system of adjustment it is important to analyze and define, so far as we can, the impression of unity which it makes upon us; because the real scope and source of this impression may very easily be mistaken. It has been already pointed out that we can only see likeness by first seeing difference, and that the full perception of that in which things are unlike is essential to an accurate appreciation of that in which they are the same. The classifying instinct must be strong in the human mind, from the delight it finds in reducing diverse things to some one common definition. And this instinct is founded on the power of setting differences aside, and of fixing our attention on some selected conditions of resemblance. But we must remember that it depends on our width and depth of vision whether the unities which we thus select in Nature are the smallest and the most incidental, or whether they are the largest and the most significant. And, indeed, for some temporary purposes—as, for example, to make clear to our minds the exact nature of the facts which science may have ascertained—it may be necessary to classify together, as coming under one and the same category, things as different from each other as light from darkness. Nor is this any extreme or imaginary case. It is a case actually exemplified in a lecture by Professor Tyndall, which is entitled “The Identity of Light and Heat.” Yet those who have attended the expositions of that eminent physical philosopher must be familiar with the beautiful experiments which show how distinct in another aspect are Light and Heat; how easily and how perfectly they can be separated from each other; how certain substances obstruct the one and let through the other; and how the fiercest heat can be raging in the profoundest darkness. Nevertheless, there is more than one mental aspect, there is more than one method of conception, in terms of which these two separable powers can be brought under one description. Light and Heat, however different in their effects—however distinct and separable from each other—can both be regarded as “forms of motion” among the particles of matter. Moreover, it can be shown that both are conveyed or caused by waves, or undulatory vibrations in one and the same ethereal medium. And the same definition applies to the chemical rays, which again are separable and distinct from the rays both of light and heat.

But although this definition may be correct as far as it goes, it is a definition, nevertheless, which slurs over and keeps out of

sight distinctions of a fundamental character. In the first place, it takes no notice of the absolute distinction between Light or Heat considered as sensations of our organism, or as states of consciousness, and Light or Heat considered as the external agencies which produce these sensations in us. Sir W. Grove has expressed a doubt whether it is legitimate to apply the word "Light" at all to any rays which do not excite the sense of vision. This, however, is not the distinction to which I now refer. If it be an ascertained fact, or if it be the only view consistent with our present knowledge, that the ethereal pulsations which do, and those which do not, excite in us the sense of vision are pulsations exactly of the same kind and in exactly the same medium, and that they differ in nothing but in periods of time or length of wave, so that our seeing of them, or our not seeing of them, depends on nothing but the focusing, as it were, of our eyes, then the inclusion of them under the same word "Light" involves no confusion of thought. We should confound no distinction of importance, for example, by applying the same name to grains of sand which are large enough to be visible, and to those which are so minute as to be wholly invisible even to the microscope. And if a distinction of this nature—a mere distinction of size, or of velocity, or of form of motion, were the only distinctions between Light and Heat—it might be legitimate to consider them as identical, and to call them by the same name. But the truth is, that there are distinctions between them of quite another kind. Light, in the abstract conception of it, consists in undulatory vibrations in the pure ether, and in these alone. They may or may not be visible—that is to say, they may or may not be within the range of our organs of vision, just as a sound may or may not be too faint and low, or too fine and high, to be audible to our ears. But the word "heat" carries quite a different meaning, and the conception it conveys could not be covered under the same definition as that which covers Light. Heat is inseparably associated in our minds with, and does essentially consist in, certain motions, not of pure ether, but of the molecules of solid or ponderable matter. These motions in solid or ponderable matter are not in any sense identical with the undulatory motions of pure ether which constitute Light; consequently when physicists find themselves under the necessity of defining more closely what they mean by the identity of Heat and Light, they are obliged to separate between two different kinds of Heat—that is to say, between two wholly different things, both covered under the common name of Heat—one of which is really identical in kind with Light, and the other of which is not. "Radiant" Heat is the kind, and the only kind of Heat, which comes under the common definition. "Radiant" Heat consists in the undulatory vibrations of pure ether which are set up or caused by those other vibrations in solid substances or ponderable matter, which are Heat more properly so called. Hot bodies communicate to the surrounding ethereal medium vibrations of the same kind with light, some of

these being, and others not being, luminous to our eyes. Thus we see that the unity or close relationship which exists between Heat and Light is not a unity of sameness or identity, but a unity which depends upon, and consists in, correspondences between things in themselves different. It has been suggested that the facts of Nature would be much more clearly represented in language if the old word "Caloric" were revived, in order to distinguish one of the two very different things which are now confounded under the common term "Heat"—that is to say, Heat considered as molecular vibration in solid or ponderable matter, and Heat considered as the undulatory vibrations of pure ether which constitute the "Heat" called "radiant." Adopting this suggestion, the relations between Light and Heat, as these relations are now known to science, may be thrown into the following propositions, which are framed for the purpose of exhibiting distinctions not commonly kept in view:

I. Certain undulatory vibrations in pure ether alone are Light, either (1) visible or (2) invisible.

II. These undulatory vibrations in pure ether alone are not Caloric.

III. No motions of any kind in pure ether alone are Caloric.

IV. Caloric consists in certain vibratory motions in the molecules of ponderable matter or substances grosser than the ether, and these motions are not undulatory.

V. The motions in ponderable matter which constitute Caloric set up or propagate in pure ether the undulatory vibrations which constitute Light.

VI. Conversely, the undulatory vibrations in pure ether which constitute Light set up or propagate in grosser matter the motions which are Caloric.

VII. But the motions in pure ether which are Light cannot set up or propagate in all ponderable matter equally the motions which are Caloric. Transparent substances allow the ethereal undulations to pass through them with very little Caloric motion being set up thereby; and if there were any substance perfectly transparent, no Caloric motion would be produced at all.

VIII. Caloric motions in ponderable matter can be and are set up or propagated by other agencies than the undulations of ether, as by friction, percussion, etc.

IX. Caloric, therefore, differs from Light in being (1) motion in a different medium or in a different kind of matter; (2) in being a different kind of motion; (3) in being producible without, so far as known, the agency of light at all. I say "so far as known," because, as the luminiferous ether is ubiquitous, or as, at least, its absence cannot anywhere be assumed, it is possible that in the calorific effects of percussion, friction, etc., undulations of the ether may be always an essential condition of the production of Caloric.

It follows from these propositions that there are essential distinctions between Light and Heat, and that the effect of lumi-

niferous undulations, or "Radiant" Heat, in producing Caloric in ponderable matter depends entirely upon, and varies greatly in accordance with, the constitution or structure of the substances through which it passes, or upon which it plays.

The same fundamental distinction applies to those ethereal undulations which produce the effects called Chemical. No such effects can be produced upon substances except according to their special structure and properties. Their effect, for example, upon living matter is absolutely different from the effect they produce upon matter which does not possess vitality. The forces which give rise to chemical affinity are wholly unknown. And so are those which give rise to the peculiar phenomena of living matter. The rays which are called Chemical may have no other part in the result than that of setting free the molecules to be acted upon by the distinct and separate forces which are the real sources of chemical affinity.

What, then, have we gained when we have grouped together, under one common definition, such a variety of movements and such a variety of corresponding effects? This is not the kind of unity which we see and feel in the vast system of adjustments between the sun, the medium conveying its vibrations, and the effect of these on all the phenomena of earth. The kind of unity which is impressed upon us is neither that of a mere unity of material, nor of identity in the forms of motion. On the contrary, this kind of unity among things so diverse in all other aspects is a bare intellectual apprehension, only reached as the result of difficult research, and standing in no natural connection with our ordinary apprehension of physical truth. For our conception of the energies with which we have to deal in Nature must be molded on our knowledge of what they do, far more than on any abstract definition of what they are; or rather, perhaps, it would be more correct to say that our conception of what things are can only be complete in proportion as we take into our view the effects which they produce upon other things around them, and especially upon ourselves, through the organs by which we are in contact with the external world. If in these effects any two agencies are not the same—if they are not even alike—if, perhaps, they are the very antithesis of each other—then the classification which identifies them, however correct it may be, as far as it goes, must omit some characteristics which are much more essential than those which it includes. The most hideous discords which can assail the ear, and the divinest strains of heavenly music, can be regarded as identical in being both a series of sonorous waves. But the thought, the preparation, the concerted design—in short, the unity of mind and of sentiment, on which the production of musical harmony depends, and which it again conveys with matchless power of expression to other minds—all this higher unity is concealed and lost if we do not rise above the mere mechanical definition under which discords and harmonies can nevertheless be in this way correctly classed together. And

yet so pleased are we with discoveries of this kind, which reduce, under a common method of conception, things which we have been accustomed to regard as widely different, that we are apt to be filled with conceit about such definitions, as if we had reached in them some great ultimate truth on the nature of things, and as if the old aspects in which we had been accustomed to regard them were by comparison almost deceptive; whereas, in reality, the higher truth may well have been that which we have always known, and the lower truth that which we have recently discovered. The knowledge that Light and Heat are separable, that they do not always accompany each other, is a truer and juster conception of the relation in which they stand to us, and to all that we see around us, than the knowledge that they are both the same in respect of their being both "modes of motion." To know the work which a machine does is a fuller and higher knowledge than to know the nature of the materials of which its parts are composed, or even to perceive and follow the kind of movement by which its effects are produced. And if there be two machines which, in respect to structure and movement and material, are the same, or closely similar, but which, nevertheless, produce totally different kinds of work, we may be sure that this difference is the most real and the most important truth respecting them. The new aspects in which we see their likeness are less full and less adequate than the old familiar aspects in which we regard them as dissimilar.

But the mind is apt to be enamored of a new conception of this kind, and to mistake its place and its relative importance in the sphere of knowledge. It is in this way, and in this way only, that we can account for the tendency among some scientific men to exaggerate beyond all bounds the significance of the abstract definitions which they reach by neglecting differences of work, of function, and of result, and by fixing their attention mainly on some newly-discovered likeness in respect to form, or motion, or chemical composition. It is thus that, because a particular substance called "Protoplasm" is found to be present in all living organisms, an endeavor follows to get rid of Life as a separate conception, and to reduce it to the physical property of this material. The fallacy involved in this endeavor needs no other exposure than the fact that, as the appearance and the composition of this material is the same whether it be dead or living, the Protoplasm of which such transcendental properties are affirmed has always to be described as "living" Protoplasm. But no light can be thrown upon the facts by telling us that life is a property of that which lives. The expression for this substance which has been invented by Professor Huxley, is a better one—the "Physical Basis of Life." It is better, because it does not suggest the idea that Life is a mere physical property of the substance. But it is, after all, a metaphor which does not give an adequate idea of the conceptions which the phenomena suggest. The word "basis" has a distinct reference to a mechanical support.

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—23

port, or to the principal substance in a chemical combination. At the best, too, there is but a distant and metaphorical analogy between these conceptions and the conceptions which are suggested by the connection between Protoplasm and Life. We cannot suppose Life to be a substance supported by another. Neither can we suppose it to be like a chemical element in combination with another. It seems rather like a force or energy which first works up the inorganic materials into the form of protoplasm, and then continues to exert itself through that combination when achieved. We call this kind of energy by a special name, for the best of all reasons, that it has special effects, different from all others. It often happens that the philosophy expressed in some common form of speech is deep and true, while the objections which are made to it in the name of science are shallow and fallacious. This is the case with all those phrases and expressions which imply that Life and its phenomena are so distinguishable from other things that they must be spoken of by themselves. The objection made by a well-known writer,* that we might as well speak of "a watch force" as of "a vital force," is an objection which has no validity, and is chargeable with the great vice of confounding one of the clearest distinctions which exist in Nature. The rule which should govern language is very plain. Every phenomenon or group of phenomena which is clearly separate from all others should have a name as separate and distinctive as itself. The absurdity of speaking of a "watch force" lies in this—that the force by which a watch goes is not separable from the force by which many other mechanical movements are effected. It is a force which is otherwise well-known, and can be fully expressed in other and more definite terms. That force is simply the elasticity of a coiled spring. But the phenomena of Life are not due to any force which can be fully and definitely expressed in other terms. It is not purely chemical, nor purely mechanical, nor purely electrical, nor reducible to any other more simple and elementary conception. The popular use, therefore, which keeps up separate words and phrases by which to describe and designate the phenomena of Life, is a use which is correct and thoroughly expressive of the truth. There is nothing more fallacious in philosophy than the endeavor by mere tricks of language, to suppress and keep out of sight the distinctions which Nature proclaims with a loud voice.

It is thus, also, that because certain creatures widely separate in the scale of being may be traced back to some embryonic stage, in which they are undistinguishable, it has become fashionable to sink the vast differences which must lie hid under this uniformity of aspect and of material composition under some vague form of words in which the mind makes, as it were, a covenant with itself not to think of such differences as are latent and invisible, however important we know them to be by the differences of result to which they lead. Thus it is common now to speak of things

* Mr. G. H. Lewes.

widely separated in rank and function being the same, only "differentiated," or "variously conditioned." In these, and in all similar cases, the differences which are unseen, or which, if seen, are set aside, are often of infinitely greater importance than the similarities which are selected as the characteristics chiefly worthy of regard. If, for example, in the albumen of an egg there be no discernible differences either of structure or of chemical composition; but if, nevertheless, by the mere application of a little heat, part of it is "differentiated" into blood, another part of it into flesh, another part of it into bones, another part of it into feathers, and the whole into one perfect organic structure, it is clear that any purely chemical definition of this albumen, or any purely mechanical definition of it, would not merely fail of being complete, but would absolutely pass by and pass over the one essential characteristic of vitality which makes it what it is, and determines what it is to be in the system of Nature.

Let us always remember that the more perfect may be the apparent identity between two things which afterward become widely different, the greater must be the power and value of those invisible distinctions—of those unseen factors—which determine the subsequent divergence. These distinctions are invisible, not merely because our methods of analysis are too coarse to detect them, but because, apparently, they are of a nature which no physical dissection and no chemical analysis could possibly reveal. Some scientific men are fond of speaking and thinking of these invisible factors as distinctions due to differences in "molecular arrangement," as if the more secret agencies of Nature gave us the idea of depending on nothing else than mechanical arrangement—on differences in the shape or in the position of the molecules of matter. But this is by no means true. No doubt there are such differences—as far beyond the reach of the microscope as the differences which the microscope does reveal are beyond the reach of our unaided vision. But we know enough of the different agencies which must lie hid in things apparently the same to be sure that the divergences of work which these agencies produce do not depend upon or consist in mere differences of mechanical arrangement. We know enough of those agencies to be sure that they are agencies which do, indeed, determine both arrangement and composition, but do not themselves consist in either.

This is the conclusion to which we are brought by facts which are well known. There are structures in Nature which can be seen in the process of construction. There are conditions of matter in which its particles can be seen rushing under the impulse of invisible forces to take their appointed place in the form which to them is a law. Such are the facts visible in the processes of crystallization. In them we can see the particles of matter passing from one "molecular condition" to another; and it is impossible that this passage can be ascribed either to the old arrangement which is broken up, or to the new arrangement which is substituted in its stead. Both structures have been

built up out of elementary materials by some constructive agency which is the master and not the servant—the cause and not the consequence—of the movements which are effected, and of the arrangement which is their result. And if this be true of crystalline forms in the mineral kingdom, much more is it true of organic forms in the animal kingdom. Crystals are, as it were, the beginnings of Nature's architecture, her lowest and simplest forms of building. But the most complex crystalline forms which exist—and many of them are singularly complex and beautiful—are simplicity itself compared with the very lowest organism which is endowed with Life. In them, therefore, still more than in the formation of crystals, the work of "differentiation"—that is to say, the work of forming out of one material different structures for the discharge of different functions—is the work of agencies which are invisible and unknown; and it is in these agencies, not in the molecular arrangements which they cause, that the essential character and individuality of every organism consists. Accordingly, in the development of seeds and of eggs, which are the germs of plants and animals respectively, the particles of matter can be traced moving, in obedience to forces which are unseen, from "molecular conditions" which appear to be those of almost complete homogeneity to other molecular conditions which are of inconceivable complexity. In that mystery of all mysteries, of which physicists talk so glibly, the living "nucleated cell," the great work of creation may be seen in actual operation, not caused by "molecular condition," but determining it, and, from elements which to all our senses and to all our means of investigation appear absolutely the same, building up the molecules of Protoplasm, now into a sea-weed, now into a cedar of Lebanon, now into an insect, now into a fish, now into a reptile, now into a bird, now into a man. And in proportion as the molecules of matter do not seem to be the masters but the servants here, so do the forces which dispose of them stand out separate and supreme. In every germ this development can only be "after its kind." The molecules must obey; but no mere wayward or capricious order can be given to them. The formative energies seem to be as much under command as the materials upon which they work. For, invisible, intangible, and imponderable as these forces are—unknown and even inconceivable as they must be in their ultimate nature—enough can be traced of their working to assure us that they are all closely related to each other, and belong to a system which is one. Out of the chemical elements of Nature, in numerous but definite combinations, it is the special function of vegetable life to lay the foundations of organic mechanism; while it is the special function of animal life to take in the materials thus supplied, and to build them up into the highest and most complicated structures. This involves a vast cycle of operations, as to the unity of which we cannot be mistaken—for it is a cycle of operations obviously depending on adjustments among all the forces both of solar and terrestrial physics—and every part of

this vast series of adjustments must be in continuous and unbroken correlation with the rest.

Thus every step in the progress of science which tends to reduce all organisms to one set of elementary substances, or to one initial structure, only adds to the certainty with which we conclude that it is upon something else than composition and structure that those vast differences ultimately depend which separate so widely between living things in rank, in function, and in power. Although we cannot tell what that something is—although science does not as yet even tend to explain what the directive agencies are or how they work—one thing, at least, is plain: that if a very few elementary substances can enter into an untold variety of combinations, and by virtue of this variety can be made to play a vast variety of parts, this result can only be attained by a system of mutual adjustments as immense as the variety it produces, as minute as the differences on which it depends, and as centralized in direction as the order and harmony of its results. And so we come to understand that the unity which we see in nature is that kind of unity which the mind recognizes as the result of operations similar to its own—not a unity which consists in sameness of material, or in identity of composition, or in uniformity of structure, but a unity which consists in similar principles of action—that is to say, in like methods of subordinating a few elementary forces to the discharge of special functions, and to the production, by adjustment, of one harmonious whole.

NORTH AMERICAN REVIEW, February, 1881. (New York.)—1. The Nicaragua Canal; by General U. S. Grant. 2. The Pulpit and the Pew; by Oliver Wendell Holmes. 3. Aaron's Rod in Politics; by Judge Albion W. Tourgee. 4. Did Shakespeare write Bacon's Works? by James Freeman Clarke. 5. Partisanship in the Supreme Court; by Senator John T. Morgan. 6. The Ruins of Central America, Part VI; by Désiré Charnay. 7. Poetry of the Future; by Walt Whitman.

Notwithstanding the great name of General Grant, and the great importance of the isthmian transit, the prime article of this number is Judge Tourgee's on "Aaron's Rod in Politics." Wrapt up in this enigmatical title is a very able discussion of the method of removing the illiteracy of the people, especially of the Southern States, and the endowing every voter with the intelligence necessary to an intelligent vote. The proportions of this illiteracy is thus presented:

Voting population of the United States.....	7,623,000
" " " former slave States.....	2,775,000
Illiterate male adults in the United States.....	1,580,000
" " " former slave States.....	1,123,000
Per cent. illiterate voters in United States to entire vote.....	20
" " " slave States.....	45
" " " States not slave.....	9
" " " South Carolina.....	59
Illiterate voters in Southern States (white).....	804,000
" " " (colored).....	819,000

From this table the following facts will be apparent:

1. The sixteen Southern States contain about one third of our voting population, and *almost three fourths of our illiteracy.*
2. Forty-five per cent. of the voters of the Southern States are unable to read their ballots.
3. The illiteracy of the South, plus six per cent. of its literate voters, can exercise the entire power of those States.
4. If this illiterate vote be neutralized by force or fraud, a majority of the intelligent voters, or twenty-eight per cent. of the entire vote of those States, will exercise their entire national strength.

These States have one hundred and thirty-eight electoral votes; or, in other words, they exercise *seventy-two per cent.* of the power necessary to choose a President or constitute a majority in the House of Representatives, and *eighty-four per cent.* of a majority in the Senate.

By reason of their ignorance, forty-five per cent. of the voters of the South are unable:

1. To know what is their political duty.
2. To be sure that their votes actually represent their wishes.
3. To secure the counting of the ballots which they cast.
4. To protect themselves in the exercise of their ballatorial privileges.—P. 144.

We lately read in a Southern Methodist paper an ingenious article, evidently written by a man of culture, claiming to show that a common school education was unnecessary for public political safety, for our fathers, who founded our Constitution, were illiterate, having in fact no common school system. The article was self-contradictory. For, if ignorant men can construct a government just as well as the educated, why could he not have framed just as good an article without the knowledge of grammar, orthography, or penmanship? Judge Tourgee had evidently encountered this argument, and gives reply:

OUR FOUNDERS WERE PICKED MEN.

The immigration to our shores (except the pauper and penal immigration to some of the Southern plantations) had chiefly been confined to religious malcontents, who came to avoid persecution, and persons who voluntarily left their homes to seek advantage from settlement in unbroken wilds. This very fact stamps them as among the most enterprising, far-seeing and determined of their respective classes. They were really picked men. The doctrine of the survival of the fittest never had a better illustration than in the settlement of the American colonies. This was the main reason why our early settlers, coming as they did chiefly from the middle and lower classes of England, developed so sud-

denly a capacity for self-government, invented new governmental forms, and adapted themselves to untried conditions with such astonishing ease.—P. 149.

Our author would not raise a fund and intrust it to any State, since ample experience shows that it would be very liable to be squandered by the demagogues in the Southern States, as other national bestowments have been. He would adopt the

MODEL OF THE PEABODY FUND.

It is, in effect, the plan adopted in the distribution of the Peabody Fund, and has there shown itself well calculated both to secure immunity from imposition and also to awaken public interest and co-operation in educational work. By this wise method of administration the trustees have doubled, and perhaps trebled, the value of Peabody's munificent benefaction. Giving to no school enough to wholly sustain it; requiring it to be kept open a certain number of months in every school year; to have a certain minimum of enrolled pupils and a certain average attendance during that time; and, above all, paying only when its work has been done; the Peabody Fund has done more good by inducing others to give than by the funds actually distributed. Its working has been altogether harmonious both with State systems and free schools maintained by private subscription. The same system adopted by the nation would have a like effect. If the authorities of a State should refuse to co-operate with the nation, the people of the separate districts of such State might still share its benefits by a little individual exertion. It would only be necessary, in order to carry out this provision, to ascertain the number of illiterates in any specified territory of each race, apportion the fund thereto, and, before giving money to any school within that town or district, to require proof either that it was open to all races, or, in States where public opinion does not allow of mixed schools, that like opportunity was afforded to the other race by other schools in such district. Of course, the details of this would require careful elaboration. No man could to-day draw a bill sufficiently broad and elastic to meet all the needs of such a system. Only care, experience, and the most extended study of the data furnished by full and careful reports, could enable one to accomplish such a task.—Pp. 156, 157.

The question next discussed is,

BY WHOM WOULD THIS PLAN BE OPPOSED?

It is in the Southern States alone that any opposition to such a plan of national action is to be anticipated. The mistaken ideas of the rank and file of the "Solid South," in regard to the true interests of that section, naturally incline them to oppose any thing looking toward governmental action in this respect, and

many of their leaders would be bitterly hostile to any thing which promised to secure the enlightenment of their constituents. Their power depends in great measure on the ignorance of the masses. It is a mistake to suppose that the leaders of the "Solid South" are the best men of the organization which they control. They are, to a large extent, the buccaneers, the desperadoes, of their own party; the men who were bold enough and unscrupulous enough to assume its leadership in the days of active kukluxism, and head the revolutionary organizations which gave it power. They are men who gained prominence by their boldness in directing movements which touched the verge of treason, were unlawful and violent. There were many who sympathized with the purposes of such organizations who did not approve of their methods. Few cared to face danger and ostracism to oppose; but many tacitly disapproved. These are the really "best men" of the "Solid South." As a rule, they are not extravagantly proud of their present leaders. Many of them—and the number is hourly increasing—are becoming more and more convinced that the education of the voter is the only chance for the permanent prosperity of their section. These would undoubtedly give in their adhesion to such a system.—P. 158.

Senator Morgan's article on "Partisanship in the Supreme Court" is an insidious plea in behalf of judicial treason. What he virtually demands is that the nation should place judges on the bench hostile to our national existence. It is a true traitor's plea. It asks this nation to disregard the law of national self-preservation. More than once did the Democratic Supreme Court, during the Rebellion, aim a blow at the Union cause. Notably, when the question of the power of the government to blockade the rebel States came before that court, the Democratic majority would have given victory to secession by a negative decision had not Judge Grier deserted their side and left them alone in their disloyalty. No man who ever took arms, or favored the use of arms, against his country; no man who denies that we are a nation, or claims that a single State has a right to dismember our nationality, ought ever to be seated in that court. And such an exclusion is not partisanship but patriotism.

James Freeman Clarke furnishes an ingenious argument against certain modern theorists, to show that Bacon did not write Shakspeare, but that Shakspeare wrote Bacon. You find the argument so skillfully conducted that, if not convinced yourself, you are likely to believe that the writer is, when he unceremoniously breaks up the play by telling you that he is

only parodying the opposite argument, and showing that the historic fact stands undisturbed that Shakspeare wrote Shakspeare and Bacon wrote Bacon.

We are sorry that the able editor encourages charlatanry by inserting Walt Whitman's semi-idiotic twaddle.

English Reviews.

BRITISH AND FOREIGN EVANGELICAL REVIEW, January, 1881. (London.)—1. Agnosticism; by Rev. Robert Flint, D.D., LL.D. 2. Evolution and the Hebrews: A Review of Herbert Spencer's "Hebrews and Phœnicians;" by Rev. Alfred Cave, B.A. 3. The Eloquence of the Pulpit. Translated by Clement De Faye from the French of the late Adolphe Monod. 4. Two Modern Apostles; by Rev. Alex. Macleod Symington, B.A. 5. Christian Philosophy of Patience. 6. The Observance of the Sabbath; by Rev. Leonard Bacon, D.D. 7. Evolution in Relation to Species; by Rev. J. H. M'Ilvaine, D.D. 8. Criteria of the Various Kinds of Truth; by Rev. James M'Cosh, D.D. 9. The Regeneration of Palestine; by Prof. William Wells. 10. The Faith of Islam; by Rev. Edward Sell.

BRITISH QUARTERLY REVIEW, January, 1881. (London.)—1. Congregationalism. 2. Ugo Bassi. 3. The Lord's Supper Historically Considered. 4. The Constitutional Monarchy in Belgium. 5. The Christian Church and War. 6. Materialism, Pessimism, and Pantheism: Final Causes. 7. Dr. Julius Müller. 8. Some National Aspects of Established Churches.

EDINBURGH REVIEW, January, 1881. (New York.)—1. Memoirs of Prince Metternich. 2. The Navies of the World. 3. Jacob van Arteveld, the Brewer of Ghent. 4. Endymion. 5. Dr. Caird on the Philosophy of Religion. 6. Laveleye's Italy as It Is. 7. Army Reform. 8. Grove's Dictionary of Music. 9. Kinglake's Invasion of the Crimea. 10. England and Ireland.

INDIAN EVANGELICAL REVIEW, October, 1880. (Calcutta.)—1. Missionary Education; by Rev. C. W. Park. 2. Foreign Missions of the M. E. Church; by Rev. James Mudge, B.A., B.D. 3. The Prospects of Hindu Caste; by Rev. M. A. Sherring, M.A., LL.B. 4. Prayer Books; by Rev. William Harper, M.A. 5. Reply to Mr. Harper on Prayer Books; by Rev. W. R. Blackett, M.A. 6. Intemperance among the Santals; by A. Campbell. 7. Reasons for the Adoption of Ishwar, as the Term or Equivalent for God, in the Santali Language; by A. Campbell.

LONDON QUARTERLY REVIEW, January, 1881. (New York.)—1. Lord Campbell, Lord Chief Justice and Lord Chancellor. 2. Californian Society. 3. Lord Bellingbroke in Exile. 4. Protection of British Birds. 5. Lord Beaconsfield's Endymion. 6. Belief and Unbelief. 7. Mr. Justin McCarthy's History of Our Own Times. 8. Employment of Women in the Public Service. 9. The Ritualists and the Law. 10. The Truth about Ireland.

LONDON QUARTERLY REVIEW, January. (London.)—1. The Great Pyramid and its Interpreters. 2. National Education: English and Continental. 3. Recent Travels in Japan. 4. The Land Question in England and Ireland Contrasted. 5. Christianity and the Science of Religion. 6. The Doctrine of the Spirit in the Epistle to the Romans. 7. The Protest of the Wurttemberg Clergy against Methodism.

The seventh article is a reply, written with Christian moderation and considerable ability, to a manifesto from certain Lutheran clergymen against our German Methodism. The manifesto aims to make as broad a doctrinal issue as possible against

Methodism, charges that Methodism is as much to be avoided as Rationalism or Romanism, and gives a very earnest warning against the Methodistic infection. It gives a catalogue of the disabilities which all Methodists must incur, in the following terms: "Every member of our Church who transfers to a Methodist preacher any such spiritual function as marriage, the baptism or confirmation of a child, or the burial of his relatives, by that act separates himself from the national Church; and, until he returns, will be deprived of all his ecclesiastical privileges, especially his claim to the burial of the Church, so far as the presence of the clergy and the singing of the choristers at his funeral is concerned. Neither can such a one vote for, or be elected, a member of the parish vestry. The clergy will not permit any child to be confirmed who at the same time is receiving religious instruction from the Methodists."—P. 443. Our reviewer adds: "It is the story with which Methodism in England is thoroughly familiar. The community of German Methodists is in a certain sense excommunicated, and must go on its way under the protection of the law."—P. 443.

Of the nature and consequences of these onslaughts by the state clergy on Methodism the reviewer gives the following excellent paragraph:

The Theses wind up with very practical suggestions: "16. The best means against Methodism is doctrine in conformity with our confession and care for souls. But to these must be added polemics in preaching and in catechising. It must be regarded as a plain duty, flowing from pastoral compassion for the poor flock, that a definition of what is Methodistic and what is Lutheran is not to be shunned. It must be clearly explained that the question is not about a State Church or a Free Church, about the clergy or the meeting, but about another way of salvation, when in truth there is no other. 17. Where the Methodist is purposing to nestle, visits to those who are threatened are desirable. Plain statements from the pulpit and historical instruction at special services have been proved to be beneficial. In addition, the parishioners must be taught to distinguish Methodist individuals from Methodist societies, and not to sin against Methodists, but rather to learn from them." All that the objects of these cautions could desire is that this "historical information" should be honestly given. There should be perfect truth in these polemics and catechisings. All misstatements and exaggerations are wrong in themselves and should be shunned; moreover, they are sure to be found out sooner or later. The defendant has nothing to fear in any case. No surer means of bringing the character of

Methodism to light could be adopted than this public preaching and private teaching against them. People will be stimulated to inquire who they are who are as bad as infidels and Romanists, and to read their books, and to ask what are those "activities peculiar to Methodism" which, on the other hand, their pastors recommend for "adaptation to our own Church." They will find out that these activities are, after all, very much like the healthy charitable vigor of the Acts of the Apostles; and, indeed, that those which are most "peculiar" are marvelously akin to those Pietistic methods of encouraging godliness to which South Germany owes much of the religion it has. Now this kind of discovery invariably tends to recommend the system which these ministers abhor. If they were well read in the ecclesiastical history of Great Britain in the last century—a branch of learning in which German divines generally show themselves strangely deficient—they would know that these "polemics" were among the most nourishing elements of the growth of Methodism. It has always thriven on this kind of diet. The Lutheran clergy could not more effectually serve the cause they wish to suppress than by declaiming against it in the style of these declamations.—Pp. 442, 443.

The action of the Methodist ministry in reply is thus in conclusion stated:

As we approached the close of this short paper a sheet reached us containing the Reply issued, under the sanction of the English and American Methodist ministers, by Mr. Dieterle, one of their body. It is a temperate and well-argued letter, and clearly traces the chain of circumstances—clerical intolerance and the leadings of Providence—which have justified the attitude assumed by the German Methodists, with the help of England and America. We have reason to believe that this counter plea has been useful in circles independent of the two bodies, and hope that it will tend to awaken more moderate thoughts, and thoughts more worthy of themselves, in the minds of the evangelical clergy themselves. Meanwhile, we think that the attacked should defend themselves by a dignified and silent discharge of their duties. They should not be drawn into polemics. No good can come of them. Meek submission to whatever penalties they have to endure, and a persevering return of good for evil, will do more than multitudes of pamphlets or sermons. But our space is gone; and we must, for a time at least, dismiss this painful controversy.—Pp. 443, 444.

The following paragraph occurs in a book notice of Dr. Maccracken's "*Lives of the Leaders of the Church Universal*," criticising especially the American part of that book:

It would be easy to take exception to much in the execution of the task that Dr. Maccracken set himself. The very plan of the book,

which associates some eighty authors in the composition of more than a hundred lives, renders it very unequal in style and merit. In some sections the ecclesiastical element predominates, in others the historical, and in others the devotional. Occasionally the matter is paltry, as when a doctor in divinity, after fixing the average weight of Bishop M'Kendree at one hundred and sixty pounds, introduces us to a curious discussion as to the color of his eyes. But, as a rule, the information is *reliable*, and the leading traits in the character are rightly and forcefully portrayed. Some of the lives, indeed, are exquisitely well told, and no one can read the familiar stories of Lawrence, of the girl-martyrs at Lyons and Carthage, or of Monica and her son, without seeing fresh beauty in them, and having his devotion stirred and his admiration re-awakened. Except for very frequent Americanisms in phrase and spelling, the rendering is fairly done, though amid the exigencies of translation the rights of grammar are not always respected, and sentences of this kind too often disfigure the pages: "By exceeding diligence the youth was soon so far along in grammatic studies that he could give lessons, and so earn his own living." By a little more care in his editorial work, and a rigid preference of pure forms of English to bastard ones, etc., Dr. Maccracken will be able to rid this first series of its few blemishes; and, if he show similar skill in selection in the next series, he will have accomplished the great work of proving historically the identity of the Christian religion under all names, and in all places and ages, since the ascension—

We interrupt the sentence in the midst of its exuberant flow to say that the entire train of remarks is characterized by that tone of excessive self-respect which renders our English cousin both in Europe and America, so often much more agreeable to himself than to any body else. Our own experience is that as many an ugly looking linguistic "bastard" is often begotten in England as in any other part of the globe; though our reviewer would doubtless reply, at least mentally, that an Englishman's "bastard" is, of course, truly legitimate. For is not an Englishman's talk truly English? Yet an American hears in England phrases from even literary mouths that sound wonderfully "bastard." He may hear an English clergyman maintaining from the pulpit that "a young man ought to *get on*." He wonders when he hears an Englishman say, "This is different to that;" or, "Immediately that this took place that event followed." Even in this writer's high-toned criticism, he wonders whether "reliable" is legitimate or "bastard." And the very phrase in which this exception to "Americanisms" is taken

seems to us very "bastard." "*Except for* very frequent Americanisms," etc., is, we rejoice to say, not American, and we believe is not English. It seems to us that so peremptory a critic should write in legitimate style; or are we to understand that when an Englishman begets a new linguistic kink it is a legitimate, but, if an American, a "bastard?" On this point we have a few words to offer.

The very adjective English as applied to language is not a geographical but an ethnological term. When we profess to speak English we have no reference to a locality. What is called the English language is as much the property of the man born in America or Australia as of the man born in London. To the common English-speaking race we owe the duty to seek to maintain such uniformity as will tend to preserve the language as one. But that can never be accomplished by setting one locality—a locality noted for its recklessness of speech and utterance—as supreme and capricious arbiter. The vast English-speaking republic will not leave it to cockneydom to decide at its own sweet will what is purity of language. A word is none the worse for being an Americanism. A new word must attain legitimacy not from the spot in which it is born, but by its own intrinsic excellence. If it expertly express a shade of thought demanding its designation, if euphonious, if accordant with the laws of analogy so as to define itself instantly to the whole world-wide republic, it needs no certificate from England. If not, it is truly "bastard," though begotten by an English adulterer. So long, indeed, as England's present pre-eminence in literary rank remains, the decently expressed disapproval of English criticism will command respect. But the great future of the language is with America. And when an Englishman puts on his expansive strut and talks about a "vile Americanism" and "bastard," contempt is a game that two can play at.

As to "spelling," we remember the statement of an eminent German, that the English language, by the simplicity of its syntax, is the best of all languages for universal diffusion, but its universality is prevented by its whimsical orthography. And, we may add, its whimsical orthography is kept in existence by the stiffness of English conservatism, which prefers an absurdity simply because of its being in place and familiar to

the eye. We have no belief that America will be brain-bound through centuries by any such obstructiveism. We believe the time is coming when the rickety old spelling-machine will be "smashed," and a beautiful reconstruction come into existence.

German Reviews.

THEOLOGISCHE STUDIEN UND KRITIKEN. (Theological Essays and Reviews.) 1881. Second Number. *Essays*: 1. ROEDENBERG, On Marriage with Special Regard to Divorce, and the Remarriage of Divorced Persons. *Thoughts and Remarks*: 1. TOLLIN, Servetus on Preaching, Baptism, and the Lord's Supper. 2. NOWACK, Remarks on the Fourteenth Year of Hiskia. 3. HOLLENBERG, Critical Remarks on the Second Martyrdom of St. Ignatius. *Reviews*: 1. KNAAKE, Review of Three Works on Servetus by Tollin. 2. SIEGFRIED, Review of Nowack's Commentary to the Prophet Hosea. *Miscellaneous*: 1. Programme of the Hague Society for the Defense of the Christian Religion for the Year 1880. 2. Programme of the Teyler Theological Society at Haarlem for the Year 1881.

According to Dr. Roedenberg, the author of the first article, the introduction of civil marriage, if viewed from the stand-point of the Evangelical Church, is in general of a very questionable advantage, but in one respect it has had a very favorable influence upon the shaping of the relation of the Church to the State, (of course, he means the Evangelical Church of Germany.) "It has freed," he says, "the Church from the obstruction which had hitherto prevented the scriptural management of the laws relating to the Christian marriage. This liberation imposes upon the Evangelical Church the duty of examining again and again the principles by which she judges the admissibility and the consequences of divorce by the words of Holy Writ. It must be admitted that the repeated attempts which the Church has made at different times to harmonize her action with the demands of Holy Writ have, in spite of all the labor expended upon them, remained at length without lasting result. This consideration should lead to a new investigation whether or not the principles by which the Church has been guided suffer from a mistake which hitherto has not been sufficiently recognized and appreciated. I find this mistake in the doctrine of malicious abandonment. I am of opinion that this doctrine is irreconcilably opposed to the teachings of the Lord and the apostles, and that, consistently developed, it must lead to the principle of the absolute solubility of marriage. As long as malicious abandonment is recognized as a scriptural ground for divorce so long will the force of consistency induce

people to recognize also numerous other grounds for divorce as justified, and all counter-efforts will finally be in vain."

Dr. Roedenberg says that his article is intended to prove the above assertions to be correct. This truth, however, appears to him to be impossible without examining more closely, under the guidance of Holy Writ, the nature and essence of marriage, and without, in particular, contemplating marriage also with regard to its natural basis and its effects, (the *unitas carnis*,) from which the Lord himself, in opposition to the Pharisees, derives the indissolubility of marriage. In order to appreciate this point in its full significance it may be of service to remember how from the time of the Middle Ages the scriptural views of the bodily unity of married persons controlled the consciences of the people, how they shaped the formation of the laws on marital affairs, especially on the judicial consequences of the marriage, as the laws of inheritance and property. The author announces that he will treat of these points more fully than is generally the case, in order to show their consistency and validity. In the opinion of Dr. Roedenberg the Church Fathers were right who represented a divorce as becoming perfect only by the remarriage of the divorced persons. "The Lord does not condemn a mere separation as much as the remarriage of the divorced, and the apostle also judges leniently on mere separation. But the remarriage of divorced persons is repeatedly and emphatically designated by the Lord as adultery. He exempts from this judgment only the remarriage of those who were separated on account of the *novela* of the other part. It is not difficult to determine the position of the Church with regard to the divorced, as long as they remain single; but the difficulty begins as soon as the divorced contract a new marriage, and demand from the Church to recognize them as man and wife, to admit them to the Lord's Supper, and to solemnize their marriage." The questions connected with these points cannot be thoroughly answered without previously elucidating what is effected in regard to the conclusion of a perfect marriage by the civil marriage act, what by the beginning of this marital communion and the consummation of the marriage, and what remains to be consummated by the religious solemnization of the marriage. This is an outline of the treatise which the author intends to

write on the subject. It is begun in the present number of the *Studien*, and will be concluded in the next.

The readers of the German Theological Quarterlies during the last twenty years cannot but have noticed the great number of books, pamphlets, and articles treating of Michael Servetus, the learned Spaniard of the sixteenth century who was burned by order of Calvin for having denied the doctrine of the Trinity. What is still more remarkable, all these numerous publications have been written by one man, H. Tollin, pastor at Magdeburg. In the present number of the *Studien* we have from his pen one new article, entitled, "Servetus on Preaching, Baptism, and the Lord's Supper," and a review of three different books published by him since 1875, and entitled, "Dr. M. Luther and Dr. M. Servetus, Philip Melancthon and M. Servetus, and Michael Servetus and Martin Butzer." For twenty years Mr. Tollin has been ransacking the libraries of Germany, Switzerland, France and Northern Italy, to find new information of Michael Servetus, whom he regards as one of the literary heroes of mankind, and to whom he wishes to procure that prominent place which, in his opinion, is due, but has hitherto been denied to him. In the opinion of his reviewer, Mr. Tollin is no historian, he is carried away by his enthusiasm for his hero, and led astray into the most exaggerated assertions. He is, of course, deeply interested in his subject, writes in a beautiful style, and frequently presents views which surprise by their novelty. But, says the reviewer, many of his statements have been found to be untrustworthy, and his many new books and articles must, therefore, be received at least with a great reserve.

ZEITSCHRIFT FÜR WISSENSCHAFTLICHE THEOLOGIE. (Journal for Scientific Theology.) Edited by Dr. Hilgenfeld. 1881. First Number. 1. HILGENFELD, Cerdon and Marcion. 2. W. GRIMM, On a Few Questions concerning the Book Tobias. 3. FRITSCH, The Letter of Ratramnus on the Kynokephaloi, (Dog's Heads.) 4. TOLLIN, The Generation of Jesus in Servetus' "Restitutio Christianismi." 5. GRUNWALD, Contributions to the History of the Masora.

Second Number. 1. HILGENFELD, The Muratorianum and the Investigations by A. Harnack and Franz Overbeck. 2. JULIUS FURST, Contributions to the Critical Investigations on the Books of Samuel. 3. SEUFERT, Relationship between the First Epistle of Peter and the Epistle to the Ephesians. 4. ROESCH, Remarks on the Itala. 5. EGLI, Remarks on the Pentateuch, (a) On Noah's Ravens, (b) On Exodus, i, 16. 6. PREISS, The Origin of the Jehovah Worship. 7. HILGENFELD, The Epistle of the Valentinian Ptolemy to Flora.

"Of all the heretics of the ancient Church," says Dr. Hilgenfeld, "none has exerted so powerful and so lasting an influence

upon his time as Marcion of Pontus, the countryman of the cynic philosopher, Diogenes of Sinope. No other heretic of the ancient Church is, moreover, of so great importance for the critical investigations on the history of the New Testament as Marcion, who opposed his own canon of the Holy Scriptures to the scriptural canon of the Orthodox Church. Even the old Church workers represented him as the destructive critic of the Gospels and Epistles of Paul, (*Tertullianus adv. Marcionem*, iv, 3,) while, on the other hand, the modern critical school lays stress on Marcion's assertions of a direct opposition between Paul and the primitive apostles, regarding it an ancient testimony for the true history of primitive Christianity. This modern school has even shown to Marcion the honor of finding polemical references to him in several writings of the New Testament, particularly in the pastoral letters of Paul. It is, therefore, a question of the highest importance at what time and in what manner Marcion made his appearance as a heretic." According to the ancient Church Fathers, Marcion, notwithstanding his marked originality, was closely connected with the heretical Gnosis. It is in particular stated by Epiphanius (see M'Clintock and Strong's "Cyclopædia," art., Marcion) that Marcion joined at Rome the Syrian Cerdon, who preached in that city the Gnostic doctrines, and that he confessed his intention of proclaiming an abiding schism in the Christian Church. This connection between Marcion and the Gnostics has recently been denied by Adolf Harnack, who has been engaged for some time in preparing a special work on Marcion, the first installment of which was published in 1876 in the "*Zeitschrift für Wissenschaftliche Theologie*," (p. 80-120,) in an article entitled, "*Beiträge zur Geschichte der Marcionitischen Kirchen*." In the first theological essay published by him, (*Zur Quellenkritik des Gnosticismus*, 1873,) Harnack expresses the opinion that "the originality of this wonderful man, Marcion, is so extraordinary that it cannot be sufficiently emphasized. Entirely different from the Gnostics who, following their abstruse and theoretical speculations, left the Christian masses far behind them and conceded to them as psychists a certain relative right, he feels himself called upon to work among these masses, and to purify and transform the faith which animated them. Because he was fully convinced that the forms in

which the Catholic Christianity of his times had become crystallized were not only not entitled to any recognition, but that they were absolutely unchristian, yea, antichristian, he believed himself to have received the mission to go immediately back, in a reformatory manner, to the primitive history of Christianity, and to serve a Church—which in his opinion was relapsing into Judaism—as the only trustworthy guide in the return to the right path. In this sense he believes in his own divine mission. As formerly Paul was commissioned by God to bring to light unadulterated the true preaching of Christ, thus a hundred years later he was divinely commissioned to warn once more, in the same manner, the erring Church.” Hilgenfeld considers this argumentation of Dr. Harnack as being in the main correct, but he submits that if Marcion was not like the other Gnostics, a mere man of the school, but above all a man of deeds and of life—if he did not care so much for a large number of followers as for a reformation of the entire Church—then it does not interfere with his originality if he passed through the school of a Gnostic like Cerdon, but obtained his peculiar significance as an ecclesiastical agitator and organizer. Hilgenfeld then goes on to examine all the passages in the early Church writers which refer to or shed light upon the relation between Cerdon and Marcion. In summing up the result of his minute investigations he finds that not a single one of the Church writers whose passages he has examined gives us the right to represent Marcion as a heretical autodidact, or even as one of the principal heretics blooming at a time when Valentinus and Bauloder were only blossoming. On the contrary, he arrives at the opinion that Marcion of Pontus did, for a considerable length of time, a flourishing business as a ship-owner; that about 140 or soon after, at a time when he was already a Christian, or at all events acquainted with Polycarpus of Smyrna, he joined the Christian congregation at Rome; that in Rome he entered into a closer connection with Cerdon, the Syrian, and entirely fell out with the Orthodox Church. Though he may have been a pupil and follower of the theoretical heretic, Cerdon, he practically did a great deal himself by widening the heresy into an open schism. His lasting work consisted in the rupture between a Christianity freed from the law on the one hand, and all ten-

dencies toward Judaism on the other, and in the foundation of a heretical universal Church which he endeavored to spread throughout the world, and even supplied with its own Scripture. His work continued to exist long after the merely theoretical gnosis had ceased. The recent literature on the subject, as is usual in the articles of Professor Hilgenfeld, is copiously quoted.

French Reviews.

REVUE CHRETIENNE, (Christian Review.) December, 1880.—1. BERSIER, The Unchangeable Value of the Teachings of Jesus Christ. 2. E. W., A New Life of Saint Paul. 3. LORIOT, A Great Man and a Grand Nature.

January, 1881.—1. MOURON, The Physiology of the Mind. 2. PUAUX, The French Mission in South Africa among the Bassutos. 3. E. W., Lord Beaconsfield's New Novel.

February, 1881.—1. SABATIER, The Future of Theology. 2. PUAUX, The French Mission in South Africa among the Bassutos. (Second Article.) 3. SCHARFFER, The Lyric Poets of Austria. 4. E. W., George Eliot.

The editors of the *Revue*, in a brief preface to the December number, announce that a few changes will be made in the editorial management of next year's volume. E. de Pressensé will write the monthly review of important events alone, instead of alternating with A. Sabatier. The latter will write once every three months a *bulletin littéraire*. Twice a year M. Philippe Bridel will give a *bulletin philosophique*. The *Chronique Allemande* by Professor Lichtenberger, and the *Chronique Anglaise* will be continued as in the volume for 1880.

All those who take an interest in the progress of Protestant missions in pagan countries are acquainted with the French Protestant mission among the Bassutos, in South Africa. Its success has long been the glory of Protestant France, for, small as the number of Protestants is in France, especially since Alsace and Lorraine have been united with Germany, they have made, by their Bassuto mission, a very notable contribution to the prosperous missions of the Protestant world. The war which the English government of the Cape Colonies wantonly provoked, in 1880, by ordering the peaceable Bassutos to lay down their arms, and which at the beginning of 1881 had not yet been ended, has produced a most painful impression upon Protestant Churches in general, and particularly upon the

Protestant Churches of France. It is, therefore, very opportune that the *Revue* gives us, from the pen of an old, tried contributor, the history of the favorite pagan mission of Protestant France. The first missionaries were sent out in 1829. The Society of Evangelical Missions, which took this field in hand, had been formed only a few years ago. On arriving at the Cape Colony the missionaries met with a warm reception on the part of the descendants of the French Huguenots who had lived there since the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. They had lost, under the rule of the Dutch, the knowledge of their native tongue, and only one old man was met with who still spoke French, but they still were greatly attached to France. Soon after King Moshesh of the Bassutos, who was greatly harassed by the neighboring tribes of the Koranas and the Griquas, heard of them, and he sent some oxen to a Hottentot hunter, who was acquainted with the missionaries, with the request to send him in return a "man of prayer." One of the three missionaries who accepted the king's invitation was M. Casalis, whose name is now indissolubly connected with the beginning of the civilization and Christianization of the Bassutos. After having labored among them for twenty-three years he published the work, *Les Bassoutos ou Vingt Trois années de séjour et d'observations au sud de l'Afrique*, (second edition, Paris: 1860,) which will always remain the chief source of information for the history of this interesting mission, and a standard work of the missionary literature of Protestantism. King Moshesh remained the devoted friend of the missionaries until his death, and never wavered in his high appreciation of the services which the missionaries rendered to his people by instructing and civilizing them; he died, however, without becoming a Christian himself. The people gradually passed over from a nomad life to fixed settlements, and the Church, which, under the management of missionaries belonging to the Reformed Church of France, naturally assumed the Presbyterian form of government, gradually and steadily grew. In 1841 the first printing-office was established, where a newspaper and several works in the native tongue have been published. Of the New Testament no less than 26,000 copies have been printed and sold. A normal school has been established at Morija, and is likewise in a flourishing condition. In

1872 the synodal organization of the native Church was completed, and has since that time been in uninterrupted operation. Under the influence of the missionaries, agriculture and commerce have been wonderfully developed. They have exported more than one hundred thousand sacks of wheat, of two hundred pounds each, and more than two hundred thousand balls of wool, and have imported manufactured articles from Europe of an aggregate value of more than 3,750,000 francs. The majority of the Bassutos are still pagan, but the Christian minority, excelling by education, industry, and wealth, already has a controlling influence. In 1880 the French Protestant mission in the lands of the Bassutos numbered sixteen missionaries, two physicians, one assistant missionary, and one director of an industrial school. There were fourteen stations or central Churches, with sixty-nine annexes, under the care of one hundred and twenty-six native helpers. The contributions of the Bassutos for the support of missions amounted in 1879 to the sum of 37,700 francs. More recently a resolution was passed at one of the synods of the Bassuto Churches to send out a missionary for the conversion of the river tribes of the Zambesi. The sum of 15,000 francs was at once subscribed for this object, and numerous catechists declared their readiness to join in the mission. When M. Coillard, who was put at the head of the mission, arrived in August, 1878, at Leshoma, on the Zambesi, he was surprised to find that all the tribes of the country, the Makhalakas, the Batokas, the Masobiéas, the Matotekas, the Mashapatanéas, fully understood the Séssuto, or the language of the Bassutos.* A major in the English army in South Africa, Mr. Malan, who is known for his intimate acquaintance with the natives of South Africa, has written an interesting work on the beginning and importance of this new mission, which has been translated into French, *La Mission française du sud de l'Afrique, impressions d'un ancien soldat, par C. H. Malan, traduit par madame G. Mallet*, (1878.) The entire territory inhabited by the Bassutos covers an area of about 12,700 square miles, with a population estimated at about 100,000. By the treaty of peace which they had to

*The name of the country inhabited by the Bassutos is Lessouto; the name of the language, Séssuto; one inhabitant is called Mossouto; and the plural of this word is Bassutos.

make with the Boers of the Orange Free State, on March 26, 1866, after a protracted war, they had to cede a portion of their territory to that Republic; the remainder, with about 60,000 inhabitants, was, on March 12, 1868, annexed to Natal.

ART. IX.—FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.

PROTESTANTISM IN ITALY.

[ONE of the last numbers of the new edition of Professor Herzog's "*Real Encyclopædie für Protestantische Theologie und Kirche*," contains an article on Italy, by K. Rönneke, which, after treating of the present condition of the Roman Catholic Church, gives a full statement of the different Protestant denominations of that country in 1880. As the progress of Protestantism in Italy has a special interest for every Protestant, we translate this account of the present condition of Italian Protestantism for our readers.]

The Evangelical Church in Italy is at present represented by the well-known Waldensian Church and the less known Free Italian Church, to which must be added a few smaller ecclesiastical denominations which owe their origin to Foreign Missions.

I. THE WALDENSIANS.—This Church, after being heavily oppressed for many centuries and often subjected to bloody persecutions, received in the former kingdom of Sardinia freedom of worship by a decree of February 17, 1848. At that time the Church numbered in the so-called Waldensian valleys the following fifteen congregations: Angrogna, Bobbio—Pellice, Masello, Perrero, Pomaretto, Praly, Pramollo, Prarostino, Rodoretto, Rora, S. Germano, S. Giovanni, Torre Pellice, Villa Pellice, and Villa Secca. Besides, it had a congregation in Turin. These old congregations of the Waldensians must be distinguished from the new congregations which, by means of an active evangelization, have been formed in all parts of the kingdom of Italy. The former numbered in 1879, 11,958 members, 17 active and 6 superannuated pastors, with 4,727 pupils in the day schools, (elementary schools, college, and seminary,) and 2,859 pupils of Sunday-schools. The college of Torre Pellice has 7 professors and 75 scholars, the seminary of the same place, 8 teachers, with 31 pupils, the Female High School at the same place, 9 teachers and 71 pupils; the preparatory college at Pomaretto has 2 professors and 32 pupils. Besides, there are 3 hospitals at Torre Pellice, Pomaretto and Turin, and 1 orphanage for girls at Torre Pellice. In 1855 a theological school was founded at Torre Pellice for the education of clergymen who formerly had been educated abroad, especially at Geneva and Lausanne. This school was removed in 1862 to Florence, and had in 1879 3 professors and 18 students. At the head of the entire Church

there is a Board of Administration and Superintendence, called The Table, consisting of 5 persons, and elected by the Synod of the Church, which annually meets in the first week of September. The Synod elects likewise a Committee of Evangelization, which consists of 6 members, and has control of the work of evangelization, and superintends all the new congregations, stations, schools, etc. According to the official report of 1879 the number of the new congregations was 39, of stations, 32. We mention of them the following: Ancona, Aosta, Brescia, Caltanissetta, Castiglione, Catania, Coazze, Como, S. Fedele, Courmayeur, Favale, Florence, (2 congregations,) Genoa, Guastalla, Ivrea, Leghorn, Lucca, Messina, Milan, Modica, Naples, Pinerolo, Pietra-Marazzi, Palermo, Pisa, Reggio, (Calabria,) Rio Marina and Porto Ferraio, (on the island of Elba,) Rieti, Rome, San Bartolomeo in Galdo, Sanpierdarena, Syracuse, Susa, Trabia, Trapani, Turin, Vallecrosia, Verona, and Venice. Elementary schools are found in Ariccia, Catania, Florence, Genoa, Guidizzolo, Leghorn, Lucca, Naples, Palermo, Pietra-Marazzi, Pinerolo, Pisa, Poggio-Mirteto, Rio Marina, Rome, Sanpierdarena, Monzambano, Trabia, Transella, Turin, Venice, Verona, Viareggio. There are employed for these congregations and schools 34 ordained ministers, 23 evangelists, 44 teachers, 7 colporteurs. The congregations and stations number 2,813 communicants, about 400 catechumens, 1,684 pupils in the elementary schools, and 1,636 children in the Sunday-schools.

II. THE FREE ITALIAN CHURCH.—This Church has been in existence since 1870, in which year 23 congregations which had been formed independently of the evangelization carried on by the Waldenses, united themselves at Milan into a religious denomination under the above name. They have their own creed and constitution, which were adopted by the second and third General Assemblies at Milan and Florence. At the head is a Committee of Evangelization, consisting of 5 ordinary and 4 honorary members. The Church has 36 congregations, and 35 stations of evangelization, of which we mention the following: Albano, Bari, Bassignana, Belluno, Bergamo, Bologna, Brescia, Mottola, Fara-Novarese, Florence, Leghorn, Livorno, (Piedmont,) Milan, Naples, Pietrasanta, Ghezzano, Rocca Imperiale, Rome, S. Giovanni Pellicce, Savona, Treviglio, Treviso, Turin, Udine. Elementary schools have been established in Florence, Leghorn, Naples, Pisa, Cisanello, Rome. The congregations and schools are under the care of 15 ordained ministers, 15 evangelists, 3 colporteurs, 21 male and female teachers. The rolls of the congregations contain the names of 1,800 communicants, 265 catechumens, 724 children in Sunday-schools, and 1,800 in the elementary schools. Since 1876 the Free Italian Church has conducted at Rome a "Theological School" with 4 professors and 10 students. Connected with it is a preparatory school with 3 teachers and 7 scholars.

III. THE FREE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.—This Church consists of the remnant of those independent small congregations which were unwilling to join the Free Italian Church. The heads of this Church refuse on principle to give any information on the number of their members

and laborers. We must, therefore, content ourselves with stating that among the larger congregations of this Church are those of Alessandria, Bologna, Florence, Genoa, Mantua, Milan, Rome, and Turin. Besides these there may be about 50 other places where this denomination has a larger or smaller number of brethren. The Church rejects the institution of an ordained ministry as contrary to the Gospel.

IV. THE WESLEYAN CHURCH.—Wesleyan missionaries from England have labored in Italy since 1861. Their missions are divided into a northern and southern district. The northern district embraces 28 congregations and stations, 14 ordained ministers, 2 evangelists, 11 male and female teachers, 2 colporteurs, 756 communicants, 58 catechumens, 414 scholars in elementary schools, 898 scholars in Sunday-schools. The southern district has 15 congregations and stations, 8 ordained clergymen, 5 evangelists, 10 male and female teachers, 573 communicants, 196 catechumens, 888 scholars in the elementary, and 228 scholars in Sunday-schools. Among the places where this Church has congregations and stations are Rome, Bologna, Velletri, Spezia, Padua, Vicenza, (Bassano,) Reggio, (Emilia,) Parma, Mazzano Inferiore, Cremona, Milan, Pavia, Intra, Rimini, Aquila, Noto, Caserta, Catania, Catanzaro, Cosenza, Messina, Naples, Palermo, Salerno. It has day-schools in Bologna, Marinasco, Mazzano Inferiore, Spezia, Caserta, Catania, Naples, and evening schools in Mezzano Inferiore, Spezia, Rome, Velletri.

V. THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH has been at work since 1873. It has congregations and stations in Arezzo, Bologna, Faenza, Forlì, Florence, Foligno, Milan, Modena, Naples, Narni, Perugia, Rome, Terni, Venice. The number of ordained ministers is 8, of evangelists, 9, of colporteurs, 1, of communicants, 437, of catechumens, 215, of children in Sunday-schools, 160, of Bible women, 5.

VI. BAPTISTS.*—1. The American Baptists have been evangelizing since 1870 in Bari, Barletta, Cagliari, Milan, Modena, Naples, Rome, Torre Pellice, Venice. They have 9 ministers, 175 baptized members, 65 catechumens, 2 elementary schools, and 5 Sunday-schools. The English Baptists have been at work since 1871 in Civitavecchia, Genoa, Leghorn, Naples, Rome, Turin, Trapani. They employ 11 ministers and evangelists in these places and in the neighborhood. The largest congregation in Rome numbers 124 members, 16 catechumens, and 80 children in Sunday-schools.

The Protestant Italian press is at present represented by the following papers: 1. "*Rivista Cristiana*," a literary monthly; 2. "*Famiglia Cristiana*," a weekly family paper with illustrations; 3. "*Amico di Casa*," a popular almanac with a very large circulation; 4. "*Amico dei Fanciulli*," an illustrated monthly for children; 5. "*Le Tomoin*," a French religious journal for the Waldensian valleys; 6. "*Il Cristiano Evangelico*,"

* The "Baptist Hand-Book for 1881" (London, 1881) gives the number of members of Baptist Churches as about 400. It enumerates 26 places where Baptists meet for divine worship.

a religious journal for the Waldensian missionary congregations; 7. "*L'Educatore Evangelico*," a Waldensian school journal; 8. "*Il Piccolo Messaggiere*," the Church paper of the Free Italian Church; 9. "*La Vedetta Cristiana*," the Church paper of the Free Christian Church; 10. "*La Civiltà Evangelica*," the Church journal of the Wesleyans; 11. "*La Fiaccola*," the Church journal of the American Methodists; 12. "*Il Semiatore*," a literary monthly of the American Baptists. Noteworthy are also the seamen's missions, which are carried on in the ports of Genoa and Naples in floating chapels, as well as the evangelical military congregation in Rome.

Among the charitable institutions controlled by Protestants we mention: 1. The Orphanage and House of Refuge for Boys, in Florence, founded by Dr. Comandi, with 80 boys; 2. The Ferretti Orphanage for Girls, in Florence, with 82 girls; 3. The Orphanage in Vallecrosia for Boys and Girls, founded by Mrs. Boyce, containing 50 orphans; 4. The Gould Female Institution at Rome, for the education of both boys and girls; 5. The Van Meter Schools at Rome; 6. The Labor School for Women at Rome.

The English Italian Tract Society keeps an evangelical printing and publishing office (*Tipografia Claudina*) at Florence. The British and Foreign Bible Society has offices and depositories in Ancona, Florence, Genoa, Leghorn, Milan, Naples, and Rome. In the same cities there are also Protestant book-stores. An Italian Bible Society has been in existence since 1873. Young Men's Christian Associations have been organized in Florence, Messina, Naples, Padua, Rome, Turin, and Venice. There are missions for the Jews in Rome, Leghorn, and Verona.

There are German Protestant congregations in Bergamo, Florence, Genoa, Leghorn, Milan, Messina, Naples, Rome, and Venice, and in connection with them hospitals in Florence, Milan, Genoa, Naples, Rome; elementary schools in Genoa, Messina, Rome, Venice; high schools for boys in Florence, Leghorn, Naples; female high schools in Florence, (under the control of the Kaiserswerth deaconesses, with a boarding school,) and Naples.

ART. X.—FOREIGN LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.

THE new edition of the great theological cyclopædia of Protestant Germany, by Professor Herzog and Professor Plitt, ("*Real Encyclopædie for Protestantische Theologie und Kirche*." New York: B. Westermann & Co.; Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe,) has now reached the end of the letter K. Of the fifteen volumes which the complete work is to contain seven have now been completed. In a prefatory remark to the seventh volume it is announced that one of the editors, Professor J. L. Plitt, of Heidelberg, had died on Sept. 10, 1880. His place has been filled by the appointment of Professor Albert Hauck, who, as editor of several theological periodics

als, and by other literary labors, had made himself favorably known as an able theologian. The new volumes which have been published since our last notice of the work, and which contain the articles from the beginning of the letter E to the end of the letter K, fully support the high reputation which this work has enjoyed throughout the Protestant world since the publication of the first number of the first edition. We need not tell the regular readers of the *Methodist Quarterly Review* of the wonderful productivity which continues and steadily increases in the department of Protestant theological literature. Every successive number of the Review calls attention to works which shed new light on important points of theological and religious science. The number of works which are of a strictly religious character now amounts to many thousands every year. Germany alone publishes several thousands every year, and it is especially in Germany where the young theologians who wish to obtain an academical degree or a theological professorship are expected and encouraged to write special treatises on points that need further elucidation. Thus it may be said that every important subject treated of in a theological Cyclopædia needs revisions and additions after a few years. A comparison of the volumes of the new edition of Herzog's "Cyclopædia" with the corresponding volumes of the first edition, which were published some twenty years ago, shows, indeed, that in almost every article of importance new information derived from recent literature has been added. The first three volumes of M'Clintock & Strong's "Cyclopædia" were published in the years 1867, 1870, and 1872, and even since then, as the most cursory perusal of the large articles in the German work will show, an extraordinary amount of new matter in the religious sciences has been made available. No one can examine any volume of this grand work without becoming convinced that in the whole range of Cyclopædias, general and special, it has hardly any superior and but few equals. What makes this Cyclopædia especially valuable as a work of reference is the fact that almost every article has been prepared by a theologian of acknowledged reputation, who shows himself fully conversant with the entire literature on the subject, and treats of it in an exhaustive manner. Among the most thorough articles on the fundamental doctrines of Christianity we have noticed those on Gott and Kirche, both by Dr. Julius Köstlin, and that on Jesus, by Zöckler. The biographical articles on the Popes have all been written by Professor Zopf, and those of the last four volumes embrace among others those on Innocent III., Gregory VII., and Honorius. The last-named article gives an interesting reference to the literature called forth by the dogmatization of Papal Infallibility, which, it would seem, the condemnation of Pope Honorius as a heretic, by a council recognized as ecumenical, should have sufficed to make forever impossible. Other interesting biographical articles are those on Franz von Assisi; Julian the Apostate, by A. Harnack; Hus, by Gotthard Lechler; Johannes Presbyter, by Germann; Jansenius, by Dr. Herzog; Josephus Flavius, by E. Schürer; Johannes von Damascus, by Dr. Dörner. One of the most interesting

archæological articles is that on the Katacomben, by H. Merz. An excellent article on Hebrew Poetry has been furnished by Professor E. Reuss, of Strassburg; and one of equal excellency on the Hebrew Language, by Professor Bertheau, of Göttingen. Some of the main branches of theology, as well as several auxiliary sciences, are represented in these volumes: as Ethics, by Dr. Christlieb; Homiletics, Hermeneutics, Church History, by Hauck, the new associate editor; Church Law, by Wasserschleben; Church Music, by E. Krtger; Catechetics, by Zezschwitz. Joshua, Judges, Jonah, and other articles on the Old Testament, have been written by Professor Volck, of Dorpat; the History of Israel before Christ, by Oehler; and the History of the Jews since the beginning of the Christian Era, by Pressel; St. John the Apostle, by Dr. Ebrard; Irenæus, by Zahn; Justinus the Martyr, by Professor Engelhard. Very learned articles on the Canons of the Old and the New Testament have been contributed by H. L. Strack and Woldemar Schmidt; on the Gnosis and Gnostics, by Jacobi; on the Jesuits, by Steitz; on Irvingism, by Köstlin; on the Inquisition, by Benrath. The articles on the ecclesiastical statistics of the several countries give generally full information; they embrace articles on England and Ireland, by Schöll; France, by Pfender; Holland, by Dr. Gerth Van Wyck; Italy, by K. Rönneke. The article on the Greek Church has been written by Dr. Gass, well known as one of the best writers on the subject. Nearly all the authors mentioned above are favorably known in the theological world as writers on the subjects which have been assigned to them by the editors of the *Cyclopædia*, and most of them have been referred to in former numbers of the *Methodist Quarterly Review*. As a specimen of the articles on the religious condition of foreign countries we give, on another page of our present number, a translation of part of the article on Italy.

ART. XI.—QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE.

Religion, Theology, and Biblical Literature.

The Higher Criticism and the Bible. A Manual for Students. By WILLIAM B. BOWEN, Wesleyan Minister. 12mo., pp. 478. London: Wesleyan Conference Office. 1881.

The object of this admirable "Manual" is to furnish a bird's-eye view of the great battle now going on between the self-styled "higher criticism" and the sacred canon. It brings its survey down to the present moment, with such rehearsals of the antecedent facts as are necessary for a complete understanding of "the situation." Those readers and thinkers whose minds have been disturbed by the distant cannonade sending its rumble from beyond ocean, will here find a brief, but clear and comprehensive,

summary of the whole matter. Mr. Boyce seems to be a fine master of the literature of the subject, German and English; for it is to these two nations that the great debate is mainly committed. His survey is symmetrically planned, his diction clear and lively, his judgment acute, and his soundness in the faith unquestionable. The student who is alive to this, one of the most momentous discussions of our century, will find in addition to the work of Bishop Hurst on Rationalism, and Professor Harman's volume on the Canon, a most valuable supplement in this little "Manual," by the "Wesleyan Minister," Mr. Boyce.

It was in 1753 that Astruc, a French physician, suggested the theory that the book of Genesis was composed of two sets of documents, distinguished the one by the use of the term Elohim for the divine name, and the other by the word Jehovah. His suggestion remained lifeless until 1780, when it was indorsed by Eichhorn, under whose patronage it really introduced what was termed by its advocates "a new era in the criticism of the Pentateuch." On Astruc's little hobby the "higher criticism" has ridden, not only into existence, but into a battle of a century, winning in its own view conquest after conquest; and it is now boasting of final victory in the most complete destruction of all authentic biblical literature before the building of the second temple. There is nothing in intellectual history so sweeping as this result save, perhaps, Father Hardouin's annihilation of the entire literatures of the classic ages, or Dugald Stewart's resolution of Sanscrit language and literature into a manufactured system of so-called "Kitchen Latin," invented by the monks of the Middle Ages.

Astruc's suggestion is harmless so far as it implies that Moses used patriarchal documents in the construction of his history previous to his own time. The strong resemblance to the Mosaic of the Assyrian cosmogony, as exhumed by George Smith, confirms this view. The obvious probability is that Abraham came from Assyria bringing the patriarchal documents with him. Nor is there any reason to deny that the two divine names, Elohim and Jehovah, have in themselves a difference of import justifying a preference of one over the other in a given connection. The two designations of our Saviour, Jesus and Christ, have different meanings, suggesting which should be used for a given purpose, and yet either is often used without much regard to the distinction. But assuming Astruc's germinal idea, the rationalistic

critics have run into a strain of adventurous theories whose very extravagance is their own refutation. They render a large part of the text a patchwork contributed not by two different writers, a Jehovist and an Elohist, but by a half dozen or more gentlemen, sitting in social symposium, and manufacturing a verse by piecemeal scraps. There are, created by the critics' pure fancy, a Jehovist, an Elohist, a Jehovist Junior, an Elohist Junior, a Redactor, a Deuteronomist, and a committee of Levitical Legislators, all men in buckram, called into existence like "spirits from the vasty deep," and set to the work by the creative genius of the "Higher Criticism." There are two serious difficulties in bringing all this scheme within the world of common sense. The first is that no such patchwork ever occurred in human history; the second is that if it ever took place in the case of our present text, it is out of the question to suppose that the different parts could be so distinguished and assigned with any certainty to their respective contributors.

It is undoubtedly true that coming down through the long centuries the text of the Old Testament has been subjected to modifications and interpolations, most of which cannot, at the present time, be distinguished or corrected. Mr. Boyce's concessions on this point are ample and yet judicious. "Our present text is an unsafe guide on points in which verbal accuracy and minute niceties are essential. We have reason to infer that the phraseology of the earlier books has been modified from time to time, to some extent, by the removal of obsolete words and expressions, their place being supplied by others of modern date and usage. And although our present text is a recension based upon a thorough revision of the text by Ezra after the captivity, yet it is obvious from the differences in the phraseology, and in occasional omissions and additions found in the Septuagint version, that of this recension there must have been various exemplars, from one or more of which, varying considerably from our text, the Greek translation was made. It is not necessary, however, to suppose with the learned Quarry that there has been a complete modernization of the old Hebrew. That such mere verbal alterations in the letter do not affect the substantial accuracy of the Sacred Writings is obvious, as they do not touch the facts or the teachings therein contained."—Pp. 89, 90. These concessions do not affect the great whole by which the Old and New Testaments are the first and second volumes of God's great Revelation. The great structures of Type and Prophecy still stand. And they

stand authenticated by the ratification of our divine Teacher, who, upon this subject, if not an impostor, is a conclusive authority. Mr. Boyce gives the following summary of His testimony:

1. While some learned scholars have decided that the Patriarchs are mythical personages, our Lord refers to them as real persons. See Matt. iii, 9; viii, 11; xxii, 32; Luke xiii, 28; John viii, 37, 56-58. 2. He represents Abraham as having had a glimpse of His office and work. Compare John viii, 56, "Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day, and he saw it and was glad," with the following verse (57) and with Gen. xxii, 8, 13, 14, and Heb. xi, 17-19. 3. While Bishop Colenso intimates that the name of Moses may be "regarded as merely that of the imaginary leader of the people out of Egypt, a person quite as shadowy and unhistorical as Æneas in the history of Rome, and our own King Arthur," our Lord, "THE GREAT TEACHER," expressly refers to him as a real living actor and lawgiver at the period of the Exodus, and of the residence of Israel in the wilderness. Look at the following passages: "He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives; but from the beginning it was not so." Matt. xix, 8; Mark x, 8. "The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat." Matt. xxiii, 2. "And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead." Luke xvi, 31. "Now that the dead are raised, even Moses showed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob; for he is not a God of the dead but of the living; for all live unto him." Luke xx, 37, 38. "And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up." John iii, 14. "There is one that accuseth you, even Moses in whom ye trust; for had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me, (referring to Deut. xviii, 15); but if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?" John v, 45-47. "Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven." John vi, 32. "Did not Moses give you the law?" John vii, 19. "Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision." John vii, 22. 4. Our Lord pays special deference to the writings of Moses, that is, the Pentateuch, making it the foundation of his discourse to the disciples on the road to Emmaus: "And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself," and again to the assembled disciples, when he told them that "all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the Psalms concerning me." Luke xxiv, 27, 44. 5. Our Lord refers in Matt. xxii, 37-40, to Deut. vi, 5, as containing the *first* and great commandment, and to Lev. xix, 18, as containing the *second*. "Then one of them which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying, Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment, and the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets." But our Lord's highest testimony to the book of Deuteronomy is found in the fact, that in his great temptation after his baptism (as recorded in Matthew, chap. iv) he repels the tempter by three quotations from that book: the quotations are in Deut. viii, 3, and vi, 16, and 13. Well may we apply to the Sadducees of the nineteenth century the words addressed by our Lord to the Sadducees of his day: "Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God." Matt. xxiii, 29.—Pp. 176-177.

The latest and most destructive theory is that of Graf, sustained by Wellhausen, according to which the Old Testament is mainly the work of Ezra and his compeers after the captivity. The leading characters of old Hebrew history are myths. The

stories of Abraham, the patriarchs, the prophets Elijah and Elisha, are legends. Of course so sweeping a monstrosity, such a massacre of the history of this wonderful people of the Messiah, does not stand unchallenged. There are Christian scholars amply competent to meet the onslaught. Our great Old Testament Commentaries, Lange and The Speaker's, perform well their part. Nor are we fearful of any surrender or in haste to make any concessions to the spirit of a bold and licentious "criticism" on the sacred canon. We purpose to "hold the fort."

The underlying secret of all this movement is the dogma of **antisupernaturalism**. With all the ardent faith of a devotee the critic first assumes as axiom the fatality of physics and the absolute impossibility of a supernatural event. There cannot be a miracle, either of action or of prophetic foreknowledge. In regard, then, to the biblical records the problem is not to ascertain whether they are true or not; but, assuming their untruth, to explicate how they came into existence and credit. To secure the triumph of the antisupernatural axiom the whole literature of a people, standing through ages, is to be remorselessly ground to powder. The axiom will neither admit that prophecy prefigured the person and history of the Messiah, nor the miracles of the Messiah himself. The absurdity of the processes by which the conclusions are attained, and the monstrosity of the conclusions themselves, are not fully felt until the whole stupendous abolition is complete, and then comes a revolt of the common sense. Father Hardouin and Bishop Colenso are found to be twin theorists.

But it is not the Bible, the Church, and the religion alone that are swept by this axiom of unfaith. Nature is by it reduced to a mechanism and God to a superfluity. The issue then is the Bible or Atheism. And with the Bible and Theism goes immortality; and man is reduced to the mere animal. Our purest sentiments become coarse and brutalized, our highest aspirations are bent downward. It is a battle for our highest nature. Nor will this degradation stop in thought, philosophy, or religion alone. It demoralizes and brutalizes private and public character and life. It engenders ultra-democracy, anarchy, and communism. Atheistic revolution is the penalty; from which there is no recovery but on the high plane of a firm religious faith which Christ and the Bible alone present.

The Sunday Service of the Methodists in North America. With other Occasional Services. Small 12mo., pp. 108. London: Printed in the year MDCCLXXXIV.

The Sunday Service of the Methodists in His Majesty's Dominions. With other Occasional Services. Small 12mo., pp. 108. London: Printed by Frys & Couchman, Worship-street, Upper Moorsfield. 1786.

Though these two volumes cannot be classed with "the latest publications," being brown with venerable age, yet, both as relics of the primitive day of Methodism and suggestive mementos for our own present and future, we are glad to be able to give them a clear place in our "Quarterly Book-Table." The former of the two is the property of Bishop Harris, and the latter belongs to the library of Drew Seminary. The sole difference between the two volumes, so far as we can discover, is in the title-pages, and the absence of one of the Twenty-five Articles in the first volume. They are, in every respect, two editions of the same book. The first was printed without place or name of printer for our American Church after our National Independence of Britain; the second, two years later, for the British Methodists universally.

Both volumes commence with the following note of Introduction, with the same date at bottom:

I believe there is no Liturgy in the World, either in ancient or modern language, which breathes more of a solid, Scriptural, rational piety, than the Common Prayer of the Church of England. And though the main of it was compiled considerably more than two hundred years ago, yet is the language of it, not only pure, but strong and elegant in the highest degree.

Little alteration is made in the following edition of it, (which I recommend to our Societies in America,) except in the following instances: 1. Most of the holy-days (so called) are omitted, as at present answering no valuable end. 2. The service of the Lord's Day, the length of which has been often complained of, is considerably shortened. 3. Some sentences in the offices of Baptism, and for the Burial of the Dead, are omitted; and, 4. Many Psalms left out, and many parts of the others, as being highly improper for the mouths of a Christian congregation.

BRISTOL, September 9, 1784.

JOHN WESLEY.

Then follows an index of three pages for the Lessons to be read. They are designated by the churchly methods, "Sunday after Advent," "Easter," "Whitsunday," "Trinity," etc. Then follow the prayers and lessons and psalms in full. The Ritual succeeds, with the forms of the ordinances and ordinations, concluding with one hundred and four psalms and hymns. On the whole we suggest some notes.

It was American Methodism which first brought out Mr. Wesley's purposed construction of his societies into a Church. Here as elsewhere he acted upon the suggestions of Providence. He waited four years before he obeyed the unanimous request of the American Methodists to give them an episcopal churchdom. Its

form appears in the first of these two volumes. Two years later he prescribed the same episcopal church-form for all the "Methodists in His Majesty's Dominions." How false is the talk that Mr. Wesley regretted the ordination of Coke! So far from regretting his establishing an Episcopacy in America, he proceeded with a firm and steady step to prescribe the same Episcopacy for England. For that purpose he proceeded to ordain Mather as an English Methodist Bishop under the name of Superintendent, and the issue from his hand of the second of the above volumes, with its threefold ordinations, of three grades of ministers, is conclusive proof that he intended those ordinations to be perpetuated, and the universal establishment forever of one Methodist Episcopal Church. Had his purpose been completely accomplished our coming Ecumenical Conference would have been the assemblage of a purely Episcopal body of Churches. As it is, we shall have a truly Methodistic, but not perfectly Wesleyan, assemblage. The several American Episcopal Methodisms are alone in form completely Wesleyan Churches.

The question was raised in our last General Conference, When does a man become Bishop—at and by his election, or by his ordination? Strange that such a question should be raised by any Methodist competent to be elected to General Conference! Wesley ordained and made Coke a Bishop irrespective of any election whatever. Wesley's words of ordination were, "Receive the Holy Ghost for the office and work of a Superintendent in the Church of God, now committed unto thee by the imposition of our hands," etc. It is not by the election, (for Coke was not elected at all,) but by the imposition of hands that the office and work of a Bishop are committed unto the candidate. Equally explicit is our own modified form, "The Lord pour upon thee the Holy Ghost for the office and work of a Bishop in the Church of God now committed unto thee by the authority of the Church through the imposition of our hands," etc. According to this most excellent form, the episcopate is conferred by the manual imposition, but cannot be conferred otherwise than by "the authority of the Church," given through the General Conference election. The Church authorizes the officiating Bishop to "commit" the office to the candidate. The election selects the man, the imposition confers the office.

Our Bishops in 1844 said that the action of ordination was to "confirm" the election of the candidates. In the ordinary meaning of the word "confirm" that statement is certainly not true.

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—25

Or at least it does not express the full import of the action. The election is a complete act, a fact accomplished, and neither receives nor needs any confirmation. What the imposition of hands does is to "commit" the office to the man already fully elected. On the one hand, the election does not commit the office to the elect man; on the other, the ordaining Bishop has no power to refuse to ordain, or to ordain a man not elected. Should the Bishop refuse to ordain he would be guilty of contumacy. Should one or more Bishops, or one or more elders, ordain a man not elected by the proper authority, no Annual Conference and no part of the Church could properly accept his authority. If, however, some other Christian body elects, either before or after the ordination, the man so ordained, he is indeed their Bishop, and may be acknowledged as such. It is by the proper imposition of hands that the Bishop is made, (as Coke by Wesley;) it is by the election that he is appropriated by a particular Church as its Bishop. An ordained but not elected Bishop would be Bishop of no Church and of nothing.

Thirteenth Annual Report of the Freedmen's Aid Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church, for 1880. 12mo., pp. 64. Cincinnati: Western Methodist Book Concern Press. 1880.

During the thirteen years of its existence this society has disbursed near nine hundred thousand dollars. It has established six chartered institutions, being so-called colleges and universities, three theological schools, one medical, and ten unchartered academies and schools. It has taught nearly half a million scholars. A few Southern statesmen and ministers have begun to shed the sunshine of their faces on the work. The encouragements appearing have created the purpose of enlarging the field and including the poor whites, whom the old slaveocracy and the present remnants of that class have stigmatized as "white trash," and given over to brutalization.

Bishop Warren, in his speech at the anniversary, gives us a fine mixture of the figures of rhetoric and arithmetic. The following illustrates the wisdom of the neglect of or opposition to common schools: "Massachusetts raises for each one of its school population \$15 26, North Carolina 77 cents, and Georgia but 95 cents. We will not compare States so differently situated, but two that lie almost along side, one settled by Northern and one by Southern people and ideas. In 1877 Kansas sent 87 per cent. of its children to school, Arkansas only 8 per cent.

Kansas raised \$5 65 per child for education, Arkansas only about 50 cents. Commissioner Eaton says: 'A sadder statement for a single year could hardly be penned.' In 1878 the school population of Arkansas increased 12,708, but the number of pupils attending school increased only 377. In the Educational Report of General Eaton for 1877 we find that the six States of South Carolina, Florida, Alabama, Arkansas, Mississippi, and Georgia reduced their meager appropriations for schools by over \$2,000,000. In the report of 1878, the last issued, we find that Alabama, Arkansas, Virginia, and Kentucky are still backsliding. It is no comfort that they cannot go much farther; they are so near bottom now. Kentucky joins Delaware in the shame of giving people of color no educational advantage that they do not pay for themselves."—Pp. 54, 55.

The following illustrates the qualifications of the "Solid South" to govern the country: "The census of 1870 shall add a fact or two. By that census Massachusetts had \$1,463 for every man, woman, and child on its soil; Alabama had \$202; Georgia, \$226; North Carolina, \$243. The beggarly style in which the great mass of the people live cannot be appreciated except by the discomforts of an actual experience. President Fairchild, of Berea College, Kentucky, speaks of twenty counties in that State in which more than half of the people are unable to read. In six counties he says he found but one good school-house, and half of the people live in houses without windows. There has not been a single year between 1869 and 1879 when the single State of Illinois has not paid from once to twice as much internal revenue as the whole eleven Confederate States together."—P. 55. These solemn facts are a striking comment on the declaration made by Southern brethren that we are "not needed in the South."

We seem to hear of late the premonitory utterance of a proposal on the part of our brethren of the Church South that all our work and results in their section should—strange to say—be, coolly and clearly cut off from our own future control, and handed over to the jurisdiction of the Church South. If we rightly understand the utterance, our delegation to the Methodist Ecumenical Conference soon to be held in London, may be met by a scheme to so cut up our entire Methodist Church into sections as that the entire Episcopal Methodism South will be incorporated into the Church South. We shall at present suggest but a single query as to this transfer of all our membership, schools, and churches to that jurisdiction.

That query lies in the total want of sympathy in the Church South with our entire Christian philanthropic work in the South. That work there exists in spite of their very unanimous opposition. The election of a line of Democratic instead of Republican Presidents would have probably enabled and induced the populace to expel our agencies from the South. And up to the present hour we hear the report of a speech from Bishop Pierce maintaining that we have no business in the South. We are not aware that our Southern brethren have established, as Church work, a single colored academy or school. Their last General Conference withheld all expression, not only of approval of *our* work, but even of *any* colored educational work. They set off from their own communion years ago a colored Methodist Episcopal Church, and granted them ordination and the legal ownership of their Church property on express condition that they should not join the "North Church," but never, we believe, have they given them a penny or a good word for the education of their ministry. We must see a very unanimous and total change of heart on this subject—we must see the creation of a hitherto non-existent "enthusiasm of humanity" toward the body and soul of both negro and poor white—before we can entertain the proposal, or even thought, of placing this great and glorious enterprise under their control. When the Bishops and ministry and press and laity of the Church South can say to us in genial sympathy: "Brethren, we appreciate your self-sacrificing liberalities and toils; we rejoice with bounding hearts at your success; we desire the enlightenment of the ignorant and the upraising of the poor and downtrodden, of whatever race or color; and we exult in joining and emulating you with full heart, hand, and purse in your labor of Christian love"—then we may begin to think of leaving the work in their hands. No such utterances or spirit, and no action in accordance with such utterances or spirit, have, with a noble exception or two, been heard to this hour. The frown is still upon the face, and the cold shoulder is still spread, and episcopal announcements still declare that we are not needed in the South. To this generous proposal of theirs, therefore, to take the fee-simple of the temporalities and spiritualities of our Southern field into their own hands, we should most cordially reply: "Brethren, we admit the magnanimity of your offer; but your slavery-born propensities are still too strong within you, and we dare not as yet trust our humble wards in your guardianship."

A Commentary on St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans. By JOSEPH AGAR BEET.
London: Hodder & Stoughton. 1877.

This is a popular commentary intended to convey to its readers the results of critical study. It is from the pen of an eminent English Wesleyan scholar. An Arminian dogmatic interest is predominant in the exposition; yet, we think, in no such manner as to impair its fairness. The epistle is carefully analyzed, and the comment follows the analysis. The first division extends from chapter i, 18 to iii, 20, with the title, "All are guilty." Division II, from chapter iii, 21, to chapter v, includes "Sanctification and its Results." Division III, "The New Life in Christ," chapters vi-viii. Division IV, "The Harmony of the Old and the New," chapters ix-xi. Division V, "Practical Lessons," chapter xii to the end of the epistle. Special pains are taken to explain leading terms, such as "faith, holiness, election," etc. On adoption and the witness of the Spirit the author is clear and satisfactory. "In the order of cause and effect"—we give his concluding sentences on the passage—"the witness of God's Spirit precedes that of our own spirit; but in the order of our thought our own cry comes first. We are first conscious of our own filial confidence, and then remember that it was wrought in us by the Holy Spirit." On election and predestination the notes are very full, and the view taken is both reasonable and logically consistent. The doctrinal mistakes of Calvin and Augustine are pointed out, and at the same time justice is done to their sincere effort to protect the Church from Pelagian error. The Predestinarianism of the fathers of the Protestant Reformation was undoubtedly a reaction from the Catholic dogma of the satisfaction of divine justice by human works. Their going to the opposite extreme is not without precedent in the history of human thought.

The expression, "They who put to death the actions of the body," appears to us to be uncouth, if not unmeaning. The author's desire to develop Wesleyan theology leads him to add much matter to what is strictly exposition of the text; but for popular use this is, perhaps, no disadvantage.

The Four Gospels; or, The Gospel for All the World. By D. S. GREGORY, Professor of the Mental Sciences and English Literature in the University of Worcester.
Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. New York: Phillips & Hunt.

In this volume Professor Gregory endeavors to solve the question why we have a fourfold life of Christ. He follows the classification accepted by many critics, that Matthew's is the Gospel for

the Jew, Mark's for the Roman, Luke's for the Greek, and John's for the Church. Under each head he gives, first, the historical, and then the critical view of the adaptation of each to its purpose. Thus, for instance, it is shown that the central idea of the Gospel of Matthew is that Jesus is the Messiah, and that this idea is the key to its meaning. Mark presents the successive stages of the work of Jesus as the divine Conqueror in establishing his universal empire. The historical testimonies are compactly summed up, and a good critical analysis is presented of the Gospels in their turn.

It is possible to push this theory too far; and it may be a question whether it has not been pushed too far by Professor Gregory. The three synoptical Gospels were undoubtedly intended each for a certain race or people; and this fact may have determined the selection of matter and the form of its presentation. But that Mark had in his mind the establishment of such a thesis as Professor Gregory ascribes to him may well be doubted. All the evangelists agree in the purpose to show that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, but beyond this, in our opinion, they attempted nothing farther than to adapt themselves to the persons among whom the Gospels were intended to circulate. John affirms the purpose of his Gospel to be the general one we have named. (Chap. xx, 31.) He may have intended, besides, to supplement the synoptists, which he certainly did. But whatever may be thought of Professor Gregory's theory his book is a most excellent one; it condenses into a small compass a large amount of valuable information.

Critical and Exegetical Commentary on The New Testament. By HEINRICH AUGUST WILHELM MEYER, Th.D. From the German, with the Sanction of the Author. The Translation Revised and Edited by WILLIAM P. DICKSON, D.D. *The Epistle to the Ephesians and The Epistle to Philemon.* 8vo., pp. 383. *The Epistle to the Thessalonians.* By Dr. GOTTFRIED LUNEMANN. Translated from the Third Edition of the German, by Rev. PATON J. GLOAG, D.D. 8vo., pp. 254. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1880.

Biblical scholars will watch and welcome the progress of this great work. With the volume containing Ephesians and Philemon the master-hand of Meyer ceases its work. It is marvelous that one man should have achieved so great a task. His successors, Lunemann, Huther, and Dusterdieck, though unequal to the master, have worthily continued the work. The Clarks will issue all the volumes with the possible exception of Dusterdieck's Apocalypse. The accuracy of the translators' and

publishers' part of the work is, we believe, very complete; and the exegetical student will rejoice in seeing this plain but handsome set standing on his library shelves.

History of Christian Doctrines. By the late Dr. K. R. HAGENBACH, Professor of Theology at Basel. Translated from the fifth and last German edition, with additions from other sources, with Introduction by E. H. PLUMPTRE, D.D., Professor of Divinity in King's College, London; Examining Chaplain to the Archbishop of Canterbury. 8vo. Vol. II. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1880. New York: [Scribners' imported edition; price, \$3.]

One condition of being a good theologian is a thorough acquaintance with the history of the doctrinal thought of the Christian Church of past ages. No author, on this subject, rivals Hagenbach. We welcome the steady progress of this new and latest edition.

Philosophy, Metaphysics, and General Science.

Introduction to the Science of Language. By A. H. SAYCE, Deputy Professor of Comparative Philology in the University of Oxford. In two volumes, crown 8vo., pp. 441, 421. London: C. Kegan Paul & Co. 1880.

The work of Professor A. H. Sayce, which he modestly styles "An Introduction to the Science of Language," marks an epoch in the most fascinating, and also the most fruitful, branch of "The New Learning." Bopp published his work, "*Das Conjugationssystem*," in 1876, and this work laid the first stone of the science of comparative philology; but his "Sanskrit Grammar" did not appear until 1827, and from this latter event we may more appropriately date the commencement of work upon this new temple of knowledge. Professor Sayce introduces the student to a science which has been built up in half a century. Doubtless a good deal of older knowledge has entered into the building; but, as a rule, it has had to be taken out again. The new science rose upon the site of the old grammar, and yet it has entirely reconstructed this ground upon which it built. So that, while grammar may be said to have grown into the science of language, it may also be said that the science of language has made a new system of grammars. It is a very striking fact that this new science, which, though it has a well-defined field, touches all the great knowledge and faith questions of our times, has been kept so free from entangling alliances with the sleepless and unforgiving controversies of the age. This happy result is due to the genuine scholarship and disciplined culture of those who

have pursued these studies in language. While some men cannot talk about light without letting fly poisoned arrows at religion, the professors of comparative philology have been able to express their views upon collateral issues in all the momentous debates with such discretion, candor, and modesty as to retain the good-will of all the fraternities of knowledge.

If these two volumes be only "An Introduction" there must be a large place beyond their gates. In the strictest sense, it is only an introduction which Professor Sayce has written. He leads his reader up to the several problems presented by linguistics, opens each one of them fully enough to make clear its nature, difficulties, and limits, and leaves his reader face to face with the work left for the studies of the future. Every knowledge has its impassable bounds; somewhere the discoverer must write *ne plus ultra*; a science has reached a certain stability, and even venerableness, when it can say, "I do not know and I cannot find out." Linguistic study can scarcely be said to have defined its limits so as to be able to confess its powerlessness in certain directions. It has cast out of its domain a number of questions, (such as race, for example,) and it has greatly changed the forms of others, (the origin of language is a specimen,) so that what remains to be studied is stated in such terms as to suggest that research may make all things plain—all, that is to say, which is accepted as within the province of the science of language.

In this science the first has become last; its first serious wrestle was with comparative morphology, but no sooner had the grammatical forms yielded up their laws than the student of them began to send morphology to the rear, and now Professor Sayce hesitatingly assigns morphology a place at the end of the line. Phonology, the science of intelligent sounds, and sematology, the science of meanings in words, are now the two main branches of the science. Morphology, according to Professor Sayce, is essentially a matter of syntax, but it retains in his work the office of determining the classification of languages because the mode of constructing the sentence remains the best-known principle of classification. Phonology is the region of positive knowledge, intelligent sounds are things of physics and physiology, and, therefore, ponderable and measurable. Meanings are in the realm of metaphysics, and involve some of the most subtle and subtile mental phenomena. Morphology originates in the metaphysical region, but evolves itself into the ponderable facts of syntax.

It is an interesting fact that phonology, though it is the physical domain, cannot afford us a principle of classification. The distribution of languages into families has to be effected by grouping mental results as they appear in the sentence. And so perplexingly common is the mind of man that all kinds of syntax occur in all languages, so that the groups have to be made by collating only the predominant syntactical characteristics of every speech. The inference is unavoidable that the ardor with which phonology has been pursued, and the hopes based upon the microphone or other mirrors of sound, have met, and must meet, disappointment. Language does, indeed, consist of sounds, but the contents are so much the larger and more masterful part that the poor shells of sound sink into relative insignificance. "We have," says Professor Sayce, "to discover the different mental points of view from which the structure of the sentence was regarded by different races of mankind; to investigate and compare the various contrivances and processes through which these points of view eventually found their fullest expression; to classify the modes of denoting the relations of grammar at the disposal of language; to examine the nature of composition and of stems in the groups of speech of which they are characteristic; to analyze the conceptions of grammar, and to determine the elements and germs out of which they have sprung; and, finally, to ascertain the true origin and meaning of the so-called rules of syntax, and keep record of the changes that take place in the change of words."—Vol. i, p. 440. To pursue such studies successfully, we must, according to our author, give less attention to roots and single words. "We shall never," he says, "have a satisfactory starting-point for our classification unless we put both word and root out of sight, and confine ourselves to the sentence or proposition, and the ways in which the sentence may be expressed."—Vol. i, p. 389. The sentence is, historically, anterior to the words of which it may now be composed. Grammar grew from resolution of the sentence into its elements. "In the less advanced American languages the several members of the sentence have never attained the rank of independent words which can be set apart and employed by themselves." The present reviewer several years ago made the suggestion in these pages that common household speech consists of sentences, and he believes that the Genoese peasant is incapable of resolving his speech into words.

Probably the most satisfactory chapter in this book is that devoted to roots. Starting from the endless discussion whether the

first roots were nouns or verbs, Professor Sayce advances to the general conclusion that the primordial root was rather a mental type than a real word; "it was an unexpressed, unconsciously felt type which floated before the mind of the speaker, and determined him in the choice of the words he formed." "The primordial types which presented themselves almost unconsciously before the framers of language, which lay implicit in the words they created, must be discovered and made explicit by the comparative philologist. Just as the phonologist breaks up words into their component sounds, so must the philologist break up groups of allied words into their roots, for roots are to groups of words what the letters and syllables are to each word by itself." In other terms, our search for roots is an attempt to trace the mental operations in speech of those who did not speak these types, but only had them unexpressed in their minds. Following this line of reasoning we see, of course, that Professor Whitney speculated unprofitably when he told us that the Aryan group of languages were descended from a monosyllabic tongue; that our ancestors talked to each other in single syllables. Professor Sayce pronounces such a language "a sheer impossibility," contradicted by all that we know of savage and barbarous dialects. The general student will be refreshed to know this; and he may also take comfort from knowing that the so-called primordial roots are the grammatical children of our philologists. "The so-called 'root period' of the primitive Aryan really means the analysis of the most ancient Aryan vocabulary which a comparison of the later dialects enables us to make. Behind that root-period lay another, of which obscure glimpses are given us by the roots we can still further decompose."—Vol. ii, p. 10.

The brief compass of a book notice restrains us from much comment upon the inferential views of Professor Sayce upon several subjects. He is a strong advocate of an improved spelling for our language. For that matter, all scholars are substantially agreed that our spelling is bad. The differences among them are entirely respecting the possibility of improving the spelling of a language written by a hundred millions of people now belting the world. Science can make no valuable contributions to this question until the practical parts of the problem seem less difficult. Perhaps time and the very sensible discussion of the subject, which is now common, may prepare the way for the introduction of an improved spelling. When we want one, the researches and experiments in phonology, of which Professor Sayce

makes a useful record in his fourth chapter, will furnish principles to guide the reformer. The conclusion which our author reaches respecting the age of human speech seem to us less satisfactory. He believes that "the antiquity of man as a speaker is vast and indefinite." It is possible, of course, that before the oldest record of spoken language there was a vast period of growth and decay, a long struggle with imperfect vocalization, a slow progress up from interjections into sentence words and thence into artificial grammar; it is possible, but it is not proved or provable. We have no time-piece for the mental growth which underlies grammar. We may come to possess one, but it is, perhaps, hardly to be expected that we shall. At all events, a true student must continue to shrink from affirming that there are ever so many cities under the remains of the last-found predecessor of Troy.

D. H. W.

History, Biography, and Topography.

The Invasion of the Crimea; Its Origin and an Account of its Progress down to the Death of Lord Raglan. By ALEXANDER WILLIAM KINGLAKE. Vol. IV.

The subject treated in this volume is very appropriately designated "the winter troubles." The victory won by the Allies at Inkerman did not relieve them from the necessity of spending the winter of 1854-55 on the bleak and barren downs known as the Chersonese Heights. The battle of Alma, fought in September, had made them virtually masters of the whole Crimea, Sebastapool and the Chersonese only excepted, and of these the defeated Russians had at that moment only a very weak hold. But when the Allies committed the grave military blunder of marching by the Russian flank to the south of Sebastapool, they left all the communications of their enemy open, and thereby enabled him to pour in those reinforcements which put him in a condition, not merely to make a most obstinate defense of the fortress, but also to so hem in the allied forces that they could not stir beyond the ground on which they were encamped. Hence the commissariat of the allied armies was wholly dependent on supplies sent from England and France.

Two results followed this dependence. It demonstrated the incapacity of both the French and English systems of military administration, and it involved both armies in a depth of privation and suffering rarely paralleled in the cruel records of war.

The volume before us fearlessly, faithfully exhibits the factors which enter into the demonstration of the former point; and it portrays with graphic force the terrible and long-continued misery so heroically and patiently endured by the unfortunate soldiers in both camps. Nor were the sufferings of the Russians much less severe than those of their besiegers. It is true they were better sheltered; but, owing to the impossibility of forwarding suitable and sufficient supplies for such vast numbers to a point so far distant from the base as the Crimea, they were subjected to almost inconceivable privations. Taking into account the length of time during which all three armies suffered the horrors of that terrible winter, we know of no other leaf in the annals of human wars more painfully illustrative of their folly and cruelty.

In nothing was the English war department more inefficient than in its hospital arrangements. Hundreds of men died in them who, under better treatment, might have been restored to health. When the disgraceful facts reached England, a new force arose. The women of England, represented by Miss Stanley, Florence Nightingale, and other self-sacrificing ladies, hastened to nurse the sick and console the dying victims of the war. Mr. Kinglake does ample justice to those devoted women, as he does also to Lord Raglan, the noble-minded, patient, and sorely tried British commander. Though not treating of brilliant deeds of arms, but of the nobler courage which refused to yield in face of difficulties so grim as to invite despair, this volume wins the reader's attention as readily as either of its predecessors.

Memorials of Gilbert Haven, one of the Bishops of the Methodist Episcopal Church.
Edited by W. H. DANIELS, author of "The Illustrated History of Methodism," "D. L. Moody and his Work," "The Temperance Reform," etc. With an Introduction by Rev. BRADFORD K. PEIRCE, D.D., Editor of "Zion's Herald." 12mo., pp. 359. Boston: B. B. Russell & Co. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. Philadelphia: Quaker City Publishing House. 1880.

Without waiting the deliberate movements of official biographers, Mr. Daniels has here gathered the materials of a beautiful memorial to the Bishop. A brief biography, a collection of eulogies, a series of "Havenisms," being passages from his writings and details of his opinions, illustrated with eight engravings, form its contents. It is most tastefully done up by the publishers, in blue and gilt, on fine paper and liberal print, forming a memento pleasing to the eye. The engraved likeness of the Bishop as frontispiece wonderfully presents the blended force and mildness of his nature.

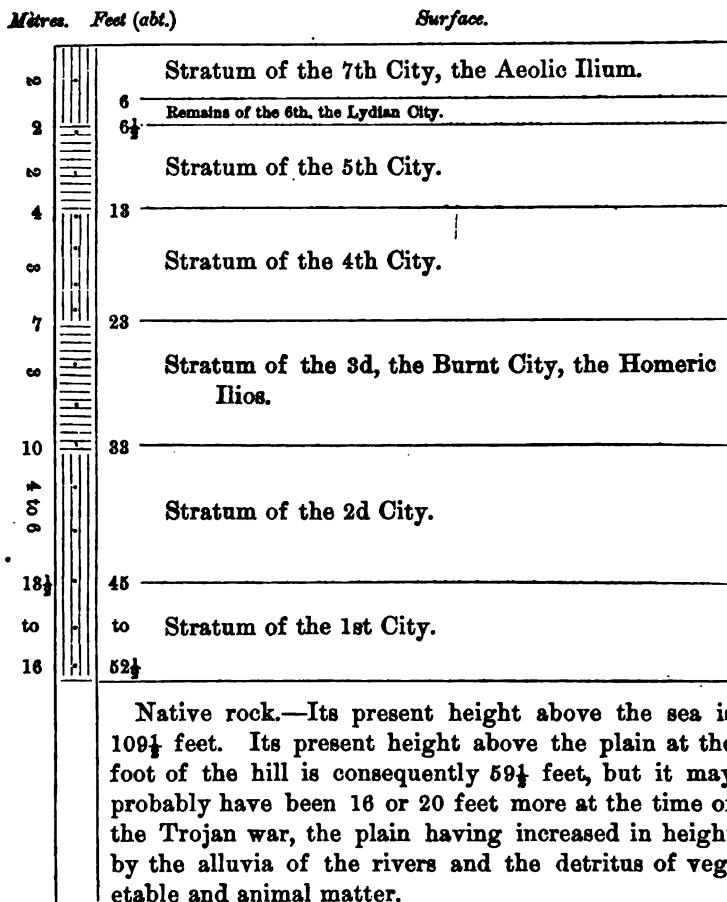
Ilios, the City and Country of the Trojans: The Results of Researches and Discoveries on the Site of Troy and throughout the Troad in the Years 1871-72-73-78-79. Including an Autobiography of the Author. By Dr. HENRY SCHLIEMANN. With a Preface, Appendices, and Notes, by Professors RUDOLPH VIRCHOW, MAX MÜLLER, A. H. SAYCE, J. P. MAHAFFY, H. BRUGSCH-BET, P. ACHERSON, M. A. POSTOLACCAS, M. E. BURNOUR, Mr. F. CALVERT, and Mr. A. J. DUFFIELD. With Maps, Plans, and about 1,800 Illustrations. 8vo., pp. 800. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Schliemann, his history, researches, and achievements, are a real-life romance. The whole story is marvelous and unique—"truth stranger than fiction." He was born in 1822, the son of a Prussian clergyman, and was early fired by his father's conversation with an enthusiasm for Homer and Troy, and a desire to exhume the buried remains of the Homeric city. His enthusiastic talk on the subject made him the laughing-stock of all his young associates save two sweet maidens, the younger of whom especially utterly won his heart by listening to and sympathizing with his enthusiasm. His love for her energized his soul and body for the giant work. He learned languages in his own unique way with a marvelous rapidity, and, entering into trade, grew rich with as marvelous a facility. The moment he was rich enough for marriage he sent his offer to his distant sweetheart, which arrived, alas! a few days after her marriage to another. He subsequently married an Athenian lady, who not only sympathized in his enthusiasms, but heroically shared in the dangers and fatigues of his labors. He believes, with a serene faith, that a gracious providence guided him. He gave up trade and traveled to all the most interesting points of the world. While in California the adoption of a new constitution made all present residents American citizens; so that Schliemann was overslaughed with an American citizenship, and jubilantly and proudly, finds himself one of the universal Yankees! At the proper time for his immediate mission of "resurrecting" dead and buried Troy, he obtained leave from the Turkish government, by aid of European and American ministers, and, bringing a small army of diggers to the hill of Hissarlik, he cut it from summit to bottom with enormous gorges. The magnificent book before us tells us his latest and fullest story. Nor does he now tell his simple story alone. Attended by a body-guard of men like Virchow, Max Müller, and others above named, he may safely hold himself no longer amenable to questionings of his honesty or even to captious criticisms upon his work. His triumph is complete.

Coming, then, to Hissarlik, the mound of Troy, the spade of Schliemann pierced down through seven successive cities to the

basal limestone rock. These successive urban strata are presented to our eye in the following

DIAGRAM.



The first, or bottom city, resting upon the rock, was without walls, and abounds in pottery, which, if taken as a test of civilization, proves the bottom city to be superior to the city above it. Simple plastic clay seems divinely provided for man's earliest efforts at forming permanent vessels and utensils; being, in fact, earlier accessible than metals, and more pliable to man's rude hand than wood. Hence urns, jars, and bowls of hand-shaped and sun-dried or fire-baked clay, stand in place of wooden coffins,

boxes, and wash-tubs, having the advantage of easier formation, and then enduring to bear their testimony to future ages. Besides pottery, there were here found stone implements and articles of gold, silver, and copper, but no iron. Gold readily reveals itself to man by its glitter and beauty, and copper by its purity in solid lumps; but iron lies concealed in the ore until art detects and develops it. Yet in Genesis Tubal-cain was an iron-dealer before the flood. Iron, however, is said to be mentioned in the Pentateuch but thirteen times, while brass (the mixture of copper and tin) occurs twenty-four times. Of *the second city*, the layer reveals a specimen of the phallus, indicating that that strange worship was contemporary with that stratum. Derived, probably, from Phœnicia, this emblem signalized the worship of the generative power of nature, having the bull and the cow for its animal generative symbols, and referring to the sun as the great generator of life, and the moon as his sister and wife. These appear as Baal and Ashtoreth in the Hebrew history. The third city, "the burnt city," is the center of interest, as being the locality celebrated in Homeric song. Even this city discloses no iron, and not a single specimen of a sword. It is the opinion of Virchow that it is not to the West that we must look for correlated archæology with that of Hissarlik, but to the East—to Assyria and Egypt. This accords with the biblical account, which reveals the cradle of the race in Asia pouring its migrations westward. Troy stood in the great highway of transition across the Hellespont to Europe. And this third city displays the signs of such a conflagration as every Latin student has found depicted in the early pages of Virgil. "Here," says Virchow, "was a great devouring fire, in which the clay walls of the buildings were molten and made fluid like wax, so that congealed drops of glass bear witness at the present day to the mighty conflagration. Only at a few places are cinders left, whose structure enables us to discover what was burnt—whether wood or straw or wheat or pease. A very small part of this city has escaped the fire; and only here and there in the burned parts have portions of the houses remained uninjured beneath the rubbish of the foundering walls. Almost the whole is burned to ashes. How enormous must have been the fire that devoured all this splendor! And in spite of all this what riches have been brought to light out of the ashes! Treasures of gold, one after another, presented themselves to the astonished eye. The possession of such treasures must have become famous far and wide. The splendor of

this chieftain must have awakened envy and covetousness; and the ruin of his high fortress can signify nothing less than his own downfall and the destruction of his race."

Troy and its downfall were real historic facts. Magnified and glorified by the poets as they were, so that we can draw no clear line between fact and legend, facts lay at the base of the legend. History, chronology, and topography are all too definite and coincident to allow a reasonable doubt. And the burned city exhumed by Schliemann's spade is the locality and remnant of the real Homeric Troy. To believe that all the coincidences that unite in demonstrating this identity are fallacious is credulity, not healthful skepticism. For, first, while all agree that the Homeric locality was in the Troad, there is no other spot than Hissarlik that can raise pretension. Two localities have been named, but the inevitable spade demonstrates the fact that neither of them can show the remains of an ancient city, and so their rivalry has no existence. On the contrary, Hissarlik has the suffrage, unanimous and supreme, of all antiquity. Demetrius, of Scepsis, a late writer, was the first to question this site, and Professor Mahaffy has in the present volume shown the motive and fallacy of his falsehood. The claims of Bournabashi are refuted by its distance from the sea-shore, by its want of all ancient testimony, and by the unanswerable logic of the spade. When Xerxes came from Asia with his millions to conquer Europe he went up to the hill of Hissarlik to pay his homage to the heroes of Troy. When Alexander marched from Europe to conquer Asia he stood upon the summit of Hissarlik and offered his homage alike to Achilles and to Homer. Here, all true antiquity said, was the site of the burned Troy; and here Schliemann, in our day, has thrust in his spade *and found it*.

It seems a formidable objection to Hissarlik as the site of the Homeric Iliion that due measurement shows not space enough for more than a respectable village of three thousand inhabitants. Schliemann's answer to this objection is important because applicable to other ancient foundations than those of Troy. Scholars, classical and biblical, have been too little observant of the smallness of ancient cities, especially at their commencements. Says Schliemann:

As regards the size of all the pre-historic cities, I repeat that they were but very small. In fact, we can hardly too much contract our ideas of the dimensions of those primeval cities. . . . So, according to the Attic tradition, Athens was built by the Pelasgians, and was limited to the small rock of the Acropolis, whose plateau is of oval form, nine hundred feet long and four hundred feet broad at its broadest

part; but it was much smaller still until Cimon enlarged it by building the wall on its eastern declivity and leveling the slope within by means of *débria*. The Ionians, having captured the city, forced the Pelasgians to settle at the southern foot of the Acropolis. According to Thucydides, Athens was only enlarged by the coalescence of the Attic demi there (*συνοικισμός*) effected by Theseus. In like manner Athens, (*Ἀθῆναι*), Thebes, (*Θῆβαι*), Mycenæ, (*Μυκῆναι*), and all the other cities whose names are of the plural form, were probably at first limited to their stronghold, called *πόλις*, and had their names in the singular; but the cities having been enlarged, they received the plural name, the citadel being then called Acropolis, and the lower town *πόλις*. The most striking proof of this is the name of the valley "*Polis*," in Ithaca, which, as I have shown above, is not derived from a real city, or acropolis—for my excavations there have proved that this *single* fertile valley in the island can never have been the site of a city—but from a natural rock, which has never been touched by the hand of man. This rock, however, having—as seen from below—precisely the shape of a citadel, is for this reason now called *castron*, and was, no doubt, in ancient times called *Polis*, which name has been transferred to the valley.

The ancient Polis or Asty (*ἄστυ*) was the ordinary habitation of the town-chief or king, with his family and dependents, as well as of the richer classes of the people; it was the site of the Agora and the temples, and the general place of refuge in time of danger. We have traces of this fact in the extended sense of the Italian *castello*, to embrace a town, and in the Anglo-Saxon *burgh*; also, as Professor Virchow suggests to me, in the Slavish *gard—hortus*, (Burgwall.) "What, indeed," says Mr. Gladstone, "have we to say when we find that, in the period of the *incunabula* of Rome, the Romans on the Palatine were probably faced by the Sabines on the hill of the Capitol?" It is, therefore, not the smallness of the third, the burned city, which can prevent us from identifying it with the Homeric Troy, because Homer is not a historian, but an epic poet.—Pp. 514, 515.

These views appear to solve some difficulties in biblical history, especially those statements that seem to demand a larger primitive population than the chronology appears to admit. Thus Cain (Gen. iv, 17) "builded a city" in the land of Nod. That is, he fortified a nook which became, in a few decades, his castle, and in centuries a city that boasted of him as its founder. And so "the beginning" of Nimrod's kingdom, in Gen. x, 10, were three or four hunting rendezvous in the land of Shinar which became the ultimate foundation of the Assyrian Empire. So Mizraim led a body of emigrants to Egypt, somewhat larger, probably, than the household of Jacob, which in a subsequent age descended to the same country.

The revelations of Schliemann in regard to Troy come into no collision with biblical history. If we suppose that Homer was nearly contemporary with Solomon, the fall of Troy comes somewhere between Solomon and Moses. The two earlier cities, with their great depth of stratum, we could afford, if necessary, to admit to be antediluvian. On the other hand, the successive ascending strata, while they reveal the fact of progress in human history as a whole, show that progress to be often interrupted by retrogression.

The volume is a specimen of splendid book-making. Its wealth
FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—26

of maps, diagrams, and pictures presents the best possible means for bringing the objects of the narrative clear before the mind's eye of the reader. It is done up, externally, in the Harpers' best style, and takes its place not only as "the book of the season," but as a permanent unique in literature.

Literature and Fiction.

Tales from the Norse Grandmother. By AUGUSTA LARNED. 12mo., pp. 432. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.

The literature of old Norse in English has been at the best but scanty, and could boast of scarcely any attempt to popularize its Eddas and Sagas, until the volumes of Professor Anderson appeared. These were unfortunately marred by exaggerated praise of the old Norse as a literature, and immoderate and ungraceful attacks upon our study of Latin, which Mr. Anderson would summarily abolish, (*"Præterea censeo Romam esse delendam,"* he says,) and replace with Norse. This book is written with another purpose, is to the point, and perhaps does not exaggerate the importance or attractiveness of the Norse remains. The worst thing about it is the title, which is neither attractive nor scientific, since the word Edda is not known to mean grandmother, (or great grandmother,) though this interpretation has plausibility and a good following among scholars. But as to the work itself it is deserving of almost unqualified praise. It will not only please young readers, for whom it was written, but every body, and will not repel the learned. Seldom, indeed, do we see a work so carefully and patiently prepared for type. Our author has also very happily extended the mythology of the North a little way into its history, and, by making us think of the people when she tells us of their religious system, has rendered their myths tenfold more real. The volume is, therefore, much more than a mythology, and vastly more interesting. Nothing is more difficult than to interest a reader, not a Norse specialist, or otherwise prepared to appreciate it, in Northern mythology—or, indeed, in the modern masterpieces of Scandinavian literature. There is a chill, a weirdness like that of an opened barrow, which repels. We trust this volume may do much toward awakening an interest in not only the old Scandinavian literature, but also the treasures of the new.

S.

Foreign Theological Publications.

Die deutschen Bischöfe und der Aberglaube. Eine Denkschrift. By Prof. Dr. Fa. HEINR. REUSCH. Bonn: 1879, Neusser.

This small octavo of 109 pages ("The German Bishops and Superstition") is not only a true, but a sad, and, in many respects, an amusing record of the duplicity and villainy of the Romish Church, as practiced upon their deluded followers by her bishops and priests in Germany.

The dissemination and encouragement of superstition among the masses have ever been a prolific source of the power of the Roman hierarchy in papal countries.

The priest who is the most expert in exciting and affecting to the greatest extent the credulity of the multitude, is the most popular and successful in his pastoral work, and never fails to be most acceptable to "the abomination that maketh desolate."

Dr. Reusch is an honest, zealous, learned, and an influential representative of the Old Catholic movement, and observes, writes, and speaks in the interest of truth and common sense, and not, as he expresses it, through any desire to injure Catholicism, or bring reproach on it in the eyes of those who do not belong to the Roman Catholic Church, but in the hope that by exposing the damage the sin will cease, and the wish that his publication of the truth may be honestly considered by all those who have at heart the spiritual welfare of German Catholics, and who are called to promote true religion among them.

He says, further, that the substance of his publication is made up of extracts from such writings as have appeared in Germany for the most part since the year 1870, and are disseminated among the Catholic people; that he has added to these extracts only so much as he considered necessary, in order that such readers as are not acquainted with these things may the more easily understand, and rightly estimate, the quotations; that the works from which he quotes are imported chiefly from France; that they appear every year in greater number, in the shops and stores of the best known Catholic booksellers and publishers, and at lowest possible price, so as to insure most certainly the greatest possible sale and quickest circulation; that the continual appearance of later editions and later writings of the same tendency is proof that this kind of literature finds large diffusion; that the German bishops are fearfully responsible for the spread of superstition by

means of these writings, for most of them appear with their approval; that they are responsible, too, for all books and writings that appear without such express approval, since they have the power, according to the laws of the Catholic Church, to demand that all religious writings appearing in their dioceses shall be laid before them for examination, and that they can thus prevent the publication, sale, and circulation of superstitious books among the Catholics. But there is not much to hope in this direction from the clergy of a Church that is ever ready to bestow upon its members blessings and benefits nowhere else to be found, such as indulgences to live to the flesh, and to dispense to the living safe passports to heaven, and for the dead remissions from the tortures of purgatory. Prayer to the heart of Jesus, Mary, and Joseph is recommended to all Catholics as an infallible medium through which to obtain all benefits for themselves, and deliverance for their dead from the flames of purgatory. Aside from this, prayer-unions are organized with such remarkable effect that one of the wonderful results is not unfrequently, in direct answer, freedom from military duty! According to the opinion of a certain French bishop, there is no doubt—for tradition fixes it—that at his last supper Jesus either handed to his mother or sent to her (although she was not in the company of the apostles, but was certainly present in the same house at the Easter solemnity) his sacrificial body and blood, in the form of food and drink. The same remarkably endowed prelate hesitates not to affirm the bodily ascension of the mother of Christ, and adduces as proof incontestable of the fact, the very remarkable circumstance, that the remainder of her clothing is still preserved and honored with most reverential care, in the oldest churches of Christendom. For example, Aix La Chapelle has preserved for more than a thousand years Mary's robe and girdle, which Constantinople four hundred years before had received from Jerusalem, and preserved in her oldest church, the Church of the Virgin; but that no Christian Church had ever been able to show relics of her body, and yet it is well known to be purely impossible that the holy apostolic Church had forgotten or neglected the place where such a treasure reposed. Bishop Martin, of Paderborn, regards this ingenious argument of his French brother bishop as so thoroughly convincing that he takes great delight in imitating him. He also affirms that he *knows* that Mary died (so then dead!) of no other sickness than that of love to her son, Jesus. Such are but a few of many examples cited by Dr. Reusch of the unblushing

manner in which superstition and falsehood are systematically diffused among the Catholic population of philosophic Germany, in order that the priest may the more easily and effectually control the mind and conscience of his deluded flock. The book is all the more interesting and valuable since it comes from one who, having had sufficient experience in the mysteries of Romanism to disgust him, has become awakened to the fact that he has long been groping in thick darkness, and is now honestly seeking after the true light. To preacher and people, and to all who are interested in exposing the tricks of priestcraft, branding the infamy of the Romish Church, advancing the cause of truth, planting pure and deep and firm the principles of our holy religion, and vindicating the purity, simplicity, and power of our glorious Christianity, we earnestly advise a careful perusal of the work.

Archäologische Studien über altchristliche Monumente. Mit 26 Holzschn. By Dr. VICT. SCHULTZE. Wien: 1880, Braumüller.

The above work is not from the hand of a flying traveler who, possessing little or no previous preparation for archæological investigation, visits places of historic importance and observes and studies objects of interest only long enough to form wrong conceptions, and to give off false impressions; but from the hand of a trained and an experienced master, whose great object is to interpret honestly and intelligently the symbols of the faith that sustained the early Christians, not only in life, but remained as an anchor to the soul in the hour and article of death; and to do this not in the interest of this sect or that, or for the propagation and support of this or that system of dogmatics, but in the service of universal Christian truth.

Dr. Schultze, who is a fine classical archæologist, and is well known for his rare powers of exact observation, as well as for his correct appreciation of the conditions of the historical development of the most ancient Christian art, has made, for years, the oldest art monuments of Italy one of his special lines of study, and, as one of the results of his labors, in this interesting field of investigation, presents the reader in this volume an amount of information that is not only astonishing, but, better than all, entirely reliable, and, so far as we know, not to be found in any other work on the same subject.

The work consists of eight essays, preceded by an introduction, in which the author prepares the reader for the better com-

prehension and appreciation of the general principles of his system of interpretation.

His remarks on the symbolism of the *Bilderkreis* of the early Christians are very full of interest. In the first essay, in which the interest of his remarks is much enhanced by a number of important illustrations, the author, in order to apply his principles the better, discusses and interprets very carefully the frescoes of the Sacrament Chapels in S. Callisto.

The subject of the third essay is the Juno Pronuba Sarcophagus in Villa Ludovisi, which the author says has remained to the present unnoticed by the student of old Christian monuments. He assigns this stone coffin to the second half of the fourth century, and regards it as a most interesting example of the syncretism of that period.

The fourth essay relates to the Catacombs of Syracuse. These chambers of the dead, which are as yet but little known, are, in the judgment of Dr. Schultze and also of the writer of this notice, of no little importance, as contributing to the oldest history of Christianity in Sicily.

In number five the author describes and interprets forcibly and clearly, we think, although differing in his interpretation from nearly all other archæologists, a sarcophagus of *S. Paolo fuori le mura*, an old Christian monument about which much has been said and written by different critics.

The next number is a treatise on, and critique of, the old Christian art representations of Mary. In order to this the author makes out a list of forty-two numbers, which he arranges in chronological order, thus giving a general, and at the same time critical, view of images of the Virgin preserved up to the fifth century.

In number seven, which relates to the grave of St. Peter, he shows the traditions of the Church of Rome respecting the location of the grave, to be utterly worthless and supremely ridiculous.

In number eight a description, and, in many instances, short explanations, of one hundred and twenty numbers of the old Christian sculptures found in the *Museo Kircheriano* in Rome, are given.

The work is an octavo of 287 pages, and is furnished with twenty-six wood engravings, and an alphabetical index. We doubt not that all who take an interest in the discovery, study, and interpretation of old Christian monuments, will be pleased

to give it a hearty welcome. To the student of monumental theology, the Christian archæologist, and to the Church, we can recommend it as a work of no little value.

Miscellaneous.

Great Preachers, Ancient and Modern. By Rev. W. H. WITHROW, M.A. 12mo., pp. 221. Toronto: William Briggs, Methodist Book Room. 1880.

Mr. Withrow's name is well known to our readers as an acceptable contributor to our Quarterly, and the author of an admirable work on "The Catacombs." His selection of "Preachers" takes a high range among the tallest pulpit orators of the Universal Church of the Christian ages. Of ancient preachers the roll consists of Origen, Athanasius, Chrysostom, and Augustine; of the modern, Francis Xavier, John Knox, Richard Baxter, and George Whitefield. The essays are attractive and elevating pictures of the purest and noblest men of our race.

Letters to a Quaker Friend on Baptism. By WILLIAM TAYLOR, author of "Christian Adventures in South Africa," "Four Years' Campaign in India," "Our South American Cousins," etc. 18mo., pp. 163. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1880.

Our stalwart evangelist believes in body as well as in soul. In letters, at once gentle and forcible, he refutes the erroneous spirituality of our Quaker friends, who would abolish the ordinances and retain a semblance of their import. The argument against their view has heretofore been seldom presented, and this little manual is largely original, finding and supplying a blank place in our doctrinal library.

Missionary Concerts for the Sunday-School: A Collection of Declamations, Select Readings, and Dialogues. Compiled by Rev. W. T. SMITH. 16mo., pp. 267. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. New York: Phillips & Hunt. 1881.

FRANKLIN SQUARE LIBRARY: *The Dean's Wife.* By Mrs. C. J. ELOART. 4to., pp. 58. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

"*The Human Race,*" and *Other Sermons*, Preached at Cheltenham, Oxford, and Brighton. By the late Rev. FREDERICK W. ROBERTSON, M.A. 12mo., pp. 236. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Duty. With Illustrations of Courage, Patience, and Endurance. By SAMUEL SMILES, LL.D. 12mo., pp. 412. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

A Key to the Apocalypse; or, Revelation of Jesus Christ to St. John in the Isle of Patmos. By Rev. ALFRED BRUNSON, A.M., D.D. 16mo., pp. 215. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Notes on Baptism: In which its Spirituality as a Covenant, Made or Kept, is Clearly Set Forth and Uniformly Adhered to. By Rev. R. GREGG. 16mo., pp. 151. Springfield, Ill.: H. W. Bokker. 1880.

The Story of the United States Navy. For Boys. By BENSON J. LOSSING, LL.D. Illustrated. 12mo., pp. 418. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Shakespeare. A Critical Study of his Mind and Art. By EDWARD DOWDEN, LL.D. 12mo., pp. 386. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The Mountain Movers; or, A Criticism of so-called Modern Miracles, in Answer to the Prayer of Faith. By STEPHEN H. TUNG, Jun., D.D. 16mo., pp. 32. Paper Covers. New York: The People's Pulpit Publishing Co. 1880.

Christian Heroism: Illustrated in the Life and Character of St. Paul, the Apostle to the Gentiles. A Discourse. By A. A. LINSOOM, D.D., LL.D. Small 8vo., pp. 56. Paper covers. Macon, Ga.: J. W. Burke & Co. 1880.

Platonism versus Christianity: The Question of Immortality, Historically Considered, with special reference to the Apostasy of the Christian Church. To which is annexed an Essay on The Unity of Man. By J. H. PETTINGELL, A. M. 16mo., pp. 97. Paper Covers. Philadelphia: The Bible Banner Association. 1881.

Good Government. Appeal of Peter Cooper, now in the 91st Year of his Age, to all Legislators, Editors, Religious Teachers, and Lovers of Our Country. By PETER COOPER. 8vo., pp. 48. Paper Covers. New York: J. J. Little & Co., Printers. 1880.

Catholics and Protestants Agreeing on the School Question. By I. T. HECKER. 8vo., pp. 16. Paper Covers. New York: Catholic Publication Society Co. 1881.

The New South: Gratitude, Amendment, Hope. A Thanksgiving Sermon, for Nov. 25, 1880. By ATTICUS G. HAYGOOD, D.D. 8vo., pp. 16. Paper Covers. Oxford, Ga. 1880.

Higher Education of Medical Men, and its Influence on the Profession and the Public. Being the Address delivered before the American Academy of Medicine, at its Fifth Annual Meeting, held at Providence, R. I., Sept. 28, 1880. By F. D. LENTZ, A.M., M.D. 8vo., pp. 16. Paper Covers. New York: Chas. L. Birmingham & Co. 1880.

The Southern Pulpit. Jan., 1881. Conducted by Rev. H. M. JACKSON, and Rev. J. J. LAFFERTY. 8vo., pp. 60. Paper Covers. Richmond, Va.

METHODIST QUARTERLY REVIEW.

JULY, 1881.

ART. I.—THE TERRITORY OF ALASKA.

Report upon the Customs District, Public Service, and Resources of Alaska Territory. By WILLIAM GOUVERNEUR MORRIS, Special Agent of Treasury Department.

The Native Races of the Pacific States of North America. By H. H. BANCROFT.

Contributions to North American Ethnology. By W. H. DALL. Issued by the Department of the Interior.

Alaska and its Resources. By W. H. DALL.

Travel and Adventure in the Territory of Alaska, and in Various Parts of the North Pacific. By FREDERICK WHYMPER.

Preliminary Report on the Population, Industry, and Resources of Alaska to the Census Office. By IVAN PETROFF, Esq.

Alaska and Missions of the North Pacific Coast. By Rev. S. JACKSON, D.D.

It is now fourteen years since his majesty, the Emperor of all the Russias, in consideration of the sum of "seven million two hundred thousand dollars in gold," ceded to the United States of America the "territory and dominion" of Alaska. The geographical area included in this cession is vast, comprising more than 580,107 square miles, of which 548,901 miles are on the continent of America, and nearly 31,206 in the Aleutian, Kadiak, Behring Sea, Chugach, and Alexander Archipelagos. These are the dimensions of an empire.

Alaska is bounded on the east by British Columbia, on the west by Behring Sea. An air line, drawn across at its greatest breadth from east to west, would be 2,200 miles long. Another line drawn from the Arctic Sea, its northern boundary, to Attou Island, its southern extremity in the Pacific Ocean, would measure 1,400 miles. Its shore line, as ascertained by

the United States Coast Survey, including its bays and islands, measures 25,000 miles. Its entire area is "nearly equal to one sixth of the whole United States and Territories." The natives named it *Al-ák-shak*, or *Al-áy-ek-sa*, which signifies "a great country or continent." Alaska is an English corruption of its native designation.

The physical aspect of this broad domain is graphically described by Hubert H. Bancroft in the following paragraph:

Midway between Mount St. Elias and the Arctic sea-board rise three mountain chains. One, the Rocky Mountain range, crossing from the Yukon to the Mackenzie River, deflects southward, and, taking up its mighty line of march, throws a barrier between the east and the west, which extends throughout the entire length of the continent. Between the Rocky Mountains and the Pacific interposes another, called in Oregon the Cascade range, and in California the Sierra Nevada; while from the same starting-point the Alaskan range stretches out to the south-west along the Alaskan Peninsula, and breaks into fragments in the Aleutian Archipelago. Three noble streams—the Mackenzie, the Yukon, and the Kuskokwim, float the boats of the inland hyperboreans, and supply them with food. . . . The northern border of this territory is treeless; the southern shore, absorbing more warmth and moisture from the Japan current, is fringed with dense forests, while the interior, interspersed with hills and lakes and woods and grassy plains, during the short summer is clothed in luxuriant vegetation.

Perhaps no act of Secretary Seward's official life has been so severely and generally censured by the American public as his negotiation of the treaty by which Alaska was added to our territorial possessions. It has been ridiculed as "Seward's folly," and condemned as a bad bargain, by which valuable gold was given in return for a title to a vast but useless possession. Yet Mr. Seward never questioned the wisdom of his act, nor the value of the country purchased. And when asked, at the close of his public career, what he considered the most important act of his official life, he promptly replied, "The purchase of Alaska; but it may take two generations before the purchase is appreciated."

Those who know most of this "great country" concur in the judgment of Mr. Seward, with the single exception that, instead of requiring two generations to demonstrate its value, it will take but a short time to convince the public that its pur-

chase was a wise, politic, and profitable transaction. Mr. William H. Dall, one of the most scientific of its recent explorers, says of it: "We have bought for a nominal price the key to the North Pacific. It can no longer be said that three iron-clads can blockade our entire western coast. . . . The time may come when we shall call our Pacific fishermen to man our fleets, or the lumbermen of Alaska and our hardy northern trappers to don the blue and strike another blow for unity and freedom." Mr. William Gouverneur Morris, special agent of the Treasury Department in Alaska, says in his report that its best modern explorers have "demonstrated that Alaska is not the 'desert watery waste' hitherto supposed; but that, instead of being only fit for polar bears to live in, it has, if properly protected and nurtured by the government, a bright and useful future before it." To the same effect is the more recent statement of Ivan Petroff, Esq., special agent of the census, who, after making very extensive explorations, says, in his report to General F. A. Walker, "It thus becomes apparent that we possess in Alaska an immense area of land and sea, which, during the twelve years of our occupation, has impressed our people . . . that though, as far as we know, it does not invite emigration from our more favored States and Territories, yet there are still stored up in the recesses of its lonely coast and deep interior, resources which may prove of great value."

The opinions of these gentlemen do not rest on mere hearsay reports, but are deduced from personal observations and investigations covering the coast-line from Sitka to the delta of the majestic Yukon River, the greater part of the valley of the Yukon, and the Aleutian Islands. Their testimony justifies Mr. Seward, Senator Sumner, and other senators who voted for the purchase of Alaska, and proves, we think, that in this thing at least they were wiser than their generation.

The skepticism of the American public with respect to the value of this territory was, no doubt, largely founded on the idea that, if Alaska had been worth keeping, Russia would not have sold it. This at first sight seems plausible; nevertheless it may be true that a very thinly populated country, situated at a vast distance from the populous parts of Russia, and from the seat of its government, might for these reasons be so difficult for it to develop, as to be of little value to such a great

empire; yet that same territory, being near to the western portions of the United States, and accessible to their population by water, might be so easily developed as to be to them a desirable possession on economic grounds, provided that it possesses resources intrinsically valuable, and in sufficient abundance. And this appears to have been the actual condition of things. Russia, from 1779, when Catherine II. issued her first ukase subjecting the Aleuts to tribute, down to the date of the cession of Alaska, governed it through the agency and in the interests of the great fur companies, to which from time to time she granted charters. In one decade the fur company paid only \$1,500,000 taxes into the imperial treasury, most, if not all of which, must have been required for the maintenance of the colonial officials. Being therefore of small economic value to its revenue, Russia could spare it without pecuniary loss.

If Russia had been as eager to push her conquests in America as she is to extend the area of her sovereignty in Europe and Asia, she would have had a political motive for retaining Alaska. But her policy is not to acquire any thing in America but the good-will of the people of the United States, she "being desirous," says the treaty, "of strengthening, if possible, the good understanding which exists" between the United States and the Emperor of all the Russias. Possibly this desire on the part of his Russian majesty arises out of his conviction that in the conflict for Asiatic ascendancy, which is sure to take place sooner or later between Russia and England, the "good understanding" between him and the United States may be of great political value to him, and a serious disadvantage to his enemy. Here, then, is a diplomatic reason for selling us a territory which, owing to its character and geographical position, could add nothing either to the strength or wealth of Russia, notwithstanding it possesses resources from which we, on account of its contiguity to our Pacific States, may ultimately derive very great benefits.

Because the continental portions of Alaska lie principally between the parallel of fifty-four degrees and forty minutes north latitude and the Arctic Ocean, there is a widely prevalent opinion that its climate is too frigid to permit its settlement by white men. This, though a natural, is a false impression. It is true that a very large proportion of its interior is so cold as

to give no promise of ever being more than a vast breeding-place for fur-bearing animals, and a hunting-ground for the Indian nomad and the white trapper. But its coast, from Sitka to Behring Sea, has a climate which is as moderate as that of New York. As the Atlantic Gulf Stream modifies the climate of England, Ireland, and Western Europe, so an analogous stream, known as the Kurosiwo, or Japanese Gulf Stream, rises a little south of the island of Formosa, flows east of Japan, and then divides into two currents. One of these tropically heated streams enters Behring Sea; the other passes south of the Aleutian Islands, and ameliorates the climate of Southern Alaska to such a degree, that the annual temperature of Sitka, in latitude fifty-seven degrees, is higher than that of Ottawa, in latitude forty-five degrees, twenty-five minutes.* This warm current, which first strikes our continent near the mouth of the Columbia River in Oregon, sweeps along the coast line of Alaska westward until it reaches the peninsula of Aliaska, where it "bends back upon itself." West of that peninsula, and running north as far as Behring Strait, the other arm of the Gulf Stream modifies the climate, though in a lesser degree, as far north as the delta of the Yukon and Norton's Sound. Even Behring Strait is so much affected by it, that icebergs from the Polar Sea never pass through its waters.

But while this stream gives warmth to the sea-board of Alaska, it is also a cause of extreme humidity. Fog, sleet, and rain characterize the climate, and make it less agreeable than it would be if favored with a clearer atmosphere. As to its temperature, Dr. Dall, in his "Alaska and its Resources," says that at Sitka "the average of many years' observation places the mean *winter* temperature about thirty-three Fahrenheit, which is nearly that of Mannheim on the Rhine, and warmer than Munich, Vienna, or Berlin. The *maximum* temperature in 1868 was seventy-one degrees, the *minimum* eleven degrees. On the island of Unaláshka, in the Aleutian district, the average *maximum* for five years was seventy-seven degrees, *minimum* zero. Further north, at St. Michael's, on Norton's Sound, in latitude sixty-three degrees, twenty-eight minutes, the *mean* for the summer was fifty-three degrees, for the winter, eight degrees, six minutes. At Fort Yukon, in the interior, latitude

* See Dr. Lyell's "Report on the Geological Survey of Canada," 1875-76.

sixty-six degrees, thirty-four minutes, the *mean* for the summer was fifty-nine degrees, sixty-seven minutes, for the winter, twenty-three degrees, eighty minutes. These figures show great climatic differences, especially between the coast line and the interior. They also justify Mr. Dall in saying, "I have seen with surprise and regret that men whose forefathers wielded the ax in the forests of Maine, or gathered scanty crops on the granite hill-sides of Massachusetts, have seen fit to throw contempt and derision on the acquisition of a great territory far richer than that in which they themselves originated, principally on the ground that it is a 'cold' country. This complaint is but half-true, since on half of the coast of the new territory the thermometer was never known to fall below zero. Icebergs are unknown in Alaska from Dixon's Entrance to Behring Strait, and no polar bear ever came within a thousand miles of Sitka."

The *resources* of Alaska must be sought, not in its agricultural possibilities, but in its timber, fisheries, fur-producing animals, and mineral deposits. There is a quite general agreement among its explorers that it can never become an agricultural country. On account of its great humidity, not because of a generally barren soil, in no part of it can cereals be cultivated successfully, except perhaps on a few of the Aleutian Islands. Such vegetables as turnips, beets, carrots, radishes, salads, and cabbages have been grown with varying success from Sitka to the Yukon Valley. Potatoes have not done well, though the Russians say that the Aleuts have grown them from the beginning of the century. Grass is of fine quality and abundant every-where, except in the southern part of the district of Sitka, where the rugged mountains leave very few patches of land sufficiently level for cultivation. "There appears to be no doubt," says Dall, "that cattle may be advantageously kept in the Aleutian District," if properly treated. The same may be said of sheep. No trees bearing fruit fit for food have been found in Alaska, but its small fruits are numerous in variety, of excellent quality, and grow in profusion. The islands of Kadiak and Cook's Inlet are unquestionably the best agricultural portions in our new possessions.

In timber Alaska is very rich. It is found as far north as the Yukon Valley in abundance. In the Southern Sitkan Dis-

trict it grows in great profusion, covering the rugged, lofty mountains and valleys of the Alexander Archipelago, and also of the mainland to distances ranging from fifty to one hundred and fifty miles from its sea-board. The Aleutian Islands, however, are absolutely treeless. Though they are mountainous, and have a climate like Scotland, they produce no timber larger than a shrub. Mr. Petroff observes of the whole country that, "the timber of Alaska extends over a much larger area than a great many surmise. . . . The area thus clothed is very great." And this statement harmonizes with the testimony of Dall, Whymper, and all other intelligent explorers.

As to the *commercial* value of its timber there is a diversity of opinion. Petroff does not rate it very high, because, as he affirms, excepting the Yellow Cedar, which, in his opinion, is not very abundant, "the lumber sawed from it is not of the first quality." Mr. W. H. Seward, after visiting the country, said, "I venture to predict that the North Pacific coast will become a common ship-yard for the American continent, and, speedily, for the whole world." This was probably a somewhat optimistic statement. Nevertheless, it is largely borne out by the observations of Dr. Dall, who found, even in the Yukon Valley, an abundance of white spruce, (*Abies alba*), a beautiful conifer growing from a height of from fifty to a hundred feet, "valuable for building purposes" and for "spars." He also found the birch (*Betula glandulosa*) very plentiful, and fitted to be put to "a multiplicity of uses." The black birch, poplars, willows, larches, alders, and junipers also abound in the Yukon Valley. The most valuable tree in the Sitkan district, and, indeed, on the entire Pacific coast, is the yellow cedar, (*C. Nutkaensis* Spach.) The "noble thuja," (*T. excelsa*), the Sitka spruce, (*Abies Sitkensis*), the hemlock, and the balsam fir, are there also, but in what relative proportions cannot be determined until experienced lumbermen shall penetrate those dense unexplored forests. Then it may appear that the truth lies between the opposite opinions of Mr. Petroff and Mr. Seward.

The coasts and rivers of Alaska are so rich in fish that the accounts given by many witnesses read like fairy tales. There is, probably, no good reason for doubting that its salmon, cod, herring, halibut, clam, and perhaps mackerel fisheries, both as

to the numbers and quality of the fish, are equal to any and superior to most other fisheries in the world. When developed in a systematic manner, they must become a source of great wealth to such of our citizens as may hereafter become settlers in this distant territory.

Alaska has in the number and variety of its fur-bearing animals a sure source of wealth, provided their hunting be judiciously regulated. The fur-bearing seal (*Callorhinus ursinus*, Gray) and the sea-otter (*Enhydra marina*, Flem.) are marine animals. The former are taken principally on two small islands in Behring Sea, known as the Pribyloff Islands, and the latter in the waters adjacent to the Aleutian Islands. The fur seal was formerly found in many other parts, but the irrational greed of its captors has destroyed nearly all its "rookeries," except in the above-named islands, which are now the best sealing grounds in the world. The regulations enforced by our Government with respect to the number which may be annually captured are well fitted to maintain those islands as "a government stock farm from which it will derive, as it has derived, an annual revenue of \$317,000, without diminution of the seals."

Besides these marine fur-bearing animals, Alaska contains the fox, marten, mink, beaver, otter, lynx, black bear, and wolverine. Upward of 40,000 skins of these fauna were known to be shipped from the country last year, besides an unknown number obtained by whalers.

Concerning the mineral riches of Alaska it is difficult to write with certainty, because there is so much contradictory testimony and so little has been done toward determining the question. It is claimed by some, apparently on good grounds, that coal, iron, copper, cinnabar, silver, and gold are abundant in many parts of the territory. But whether the coal is fit for use, or the precious metals are in quantity sufficient for profitable mining, is uncertain. Until our Government provides laws for securing titles to land this uncertainty must continue, inasmuch as capitalists are not likely to invest money in a soil to which they can gain no legal title. Why Congress does not give Alaska either a territorial government or attach it to Washington Territory, is a problem which many find impossible of solution on any principle creditable to its wisdom.

That the scattered locations of the natives and the difficulty of intercommunication between their widely separated villages make the problem a difficult one to solve must be conceded. Nevertheless, our people having become its owners, it would seem eminently just and proper that our legislators should place it under special laws and administrators suited to the condition of its population, and to the ascertainment, if not to the speedy development, of its resources, which may prove to be of incalculable value.

The most important question to the Christian philanthropist, with respect to Alaska, is the number, condition, and prospects of its population. Its material wealth is but as a fleck of foam in comparison with the moral and spiritual condition of its native population, and with the demand which its prospective settlement by emigrants from the States makes on the Christian Church to suitably provide for planting itself at such points as are best fitted for evangelizing work among both natives and settlers. That its vast fisheries and untrodden forests will, sooner or later, attract white settlers scarcely admits of doubt. That the grazing facilities in many of its islands will prove equally attractive to growers of cattle is, to say the least, highly probable. And should its mineral deposits prove equal to geological and other indications, it will very soon become our new El Dorado, to which thousands of men, stimulated by golden dreams, will be allured.

But whether emigrants shun or seek Alaska, the American Church should occupy its central points of population and trade. The debased condition of its native tribes calls loudly for the Christian missionary. By prompt response to this demand the Church would not only meet her obligation to preach Jesus to the native Alaskan, but she would also place herself in position to exert her influence on white emigrants, should they chance to rush thither. The philanthropist who recognizes the significant truth that "emigration tends to barbarism," will readily perceive that the Church owes it both to the native and to the emigrant to provide that Christian teaching without which the vices of the latter, mingling with the sensuality of the former, sink both into the depths of an almost irretrievable debasement.

The numbers of the native tribes in Alaska have been

variously estimated. The Russians, at the time of its transfer, claimed a population of about 66,000, of which about 3,000 were Creoles, or half-breeds, and Russians. General Halleck, in his report to the Secretary of War in 1869, makes the entire native population about 60,000. Mr. W. H. Dall, in his "North American Ethnology," estimates it as low as 26,843. These figures, added to the Creoles and whites, which he sets down as numbering 3,254, make the total population 29,097.

Mr. Dall's estimate, though differing so widely from the others, is confirmed by the partial census taken last year by Ivan Petroff, Esq., special agent of the Census Office, after extensive explorations, which required him to travel 8,700 miles by steamer, sailing vessel, and canoe. That gentleman's observations and inquiries, with some estimates for parts of the territory yet to be visited, led him to enumerate the natives at 28,103, the whites and Creoles at 2,075, making a total of 30,178 as the present aggregate population of the territory. It must not be forgotten, however, that a large portion of its interior remains unexplored by white men. Hence the estimates of the unknown region, though based on careful inquiries among the Indians on its border, must be accepted as somewhat uncertain quantities.

Of the 28,000 natives Mr. Petroff enumerates 2,214 Aleuts, 17,488 Innuits, or Esquimaux, and 8,401 Indians proper. The first inhabit the Aleutian Islands, which lie in the Pacific ocean along a curved line over a thousand miles in length, reaching from the south-western extremity of the peninsula of Alaska almost to Asia. The second occupy the coast line from Mount St. Elias, in the North Pacific, and along Behring Sea, to the British boundary line in the Arctic Sea. The third, or Indians proper, are found in the part known as the Sitkan District, in south-eastern Alaska, and in the vast valleys of the interior, behind the limits of the Inuit villages. The varied character of these three divisions of the Alaskan people will be made apparent in the following condensed sketches. We begin with the most numerous body, the Innuits, or Esquimaux.

The Inuit of Alaska is a true Esquimaux, though taller and more shapely than his brethren of the Arctic sea-coasts. He is five feet six or seven inches in height, possesses a "fair skin slightly Mongolian in complexion." His face is broad, his

cheek bones prominent, his mouth large, with full lips; his eyes, which are small and black, are set rather prominently in their sockets almost in a line with the bridge of his small and much-depressed nose. But in some of the Innuït tribes the nose is straight and prominent, and their members, if suitably dressed, might easily pass as Anglo-Saxons in the streets of our Eastern cities. The women are smaller than the males, and, while young, are often comely and attractive. Like the men, they have handsome feet and hands. Except around the trading-posts the Innuït of both sexes dresses in a coat called a "parka," which covers the body from the neck to the ankles, and is made either of the skin of the reindeer, the marmot, the mink, or the breast skins of birds. They wear trowsers made of either skin or cotton drill, and cover their feet with either moccasins or reindeer boots.

The Innuït house is an excavation covered with a mound of earth, having a small hole in its apex for the escape of smoke and the admission of light. Slender frames raised above the floor, and running round the interior, serve to hold the skins on which he sleeps. He makes the dog his beast of draught. He is both a hunter and a fisherman. He loves independence, is brave, light-hearted, talkative, fond of dancing, enjoys eating, raw or stewed, the flesh and blubber of the walrus, seal, and whale. He is hospitable, but will steal without compunction if he has the opportunity, though the sentiment of his people is opposed to more serious crimes. He has no laws, but public opinion favors the punishment of a murderer with death. He loves the vice of intoxication. His treatment of the old and infirm is cruel. Regarding them as useless, he often puts them to death. He burns the dead bodies of good men, buries those of women, and leaves the remains of bad men to rot or to be eaten by birds and beasts.

Like his Indian cousins, the Innuït believes in evil spirits, and in the power of the shâman, and is, therefore, much under his power. He has a vague notion of immortality, but no definite conception of rewards and punishments.

Russian influence over the Innuït tribes accomplished little or nothing toward their civilization. The Greek Church made but few converts among them. Perhaps its failure grew out of the hatred which the Innuït cherishes against the Russians

because of their former barbarities. Possibly, as Petroff suggests, its priests so misconceived the Innuït character as to make no impression upon it. And more probably, their preaching, being in word and not in spiritual power, could not reach either the consciences or hearts of these good-natured savages.

The Aleut is of smaller stature than the Innuït. Petroff says of him: "He wears the expression which we ascribe to the Mongolian race, to the Japanese more particularly. The hair is long, coarse, and black; the beard is scanty; the face broad; the cheek bones high and very prominent; the nose is insignificant and flattened; the eyes are black and small, set wide in the head under faintly marked eyebrows—just a suggestion of obliquity, and that is all; the lips are full, the mouth large, and the lower jaw square and prominent; the ears are small, and the skin a light yellowish brown." The women, though not handsome, are far from being repulsive. Except when on hunting excursions, and when about the village, at which times they wear the ancient waterproof garments made from the intestines of marine mammalia, the Aleuts dress in our modern style, their clothing stores being supplied by traders with goods from San Francisco. Not unfrequently the latest fashions may be seen adorning the persons of the belles of an Aleutian village.

The houses of these people, called *barrabaras*, were formerly half underground. Their walls were of earth, laid upon wooden frames, and from two to three feet thick. They were warm and comfortable if kept in good repair, albeit the air within them was close and foul. But the *barrabara* is now being rapidly replaced by the frame cottage of civilized society. The materials for their construction are procured at San Francisco by means of traders, who visit the islands to purchase the spoils of the Aleutian hunters.

The Aleutians are no longer idolaters. The Greek Church, which began its missions in Alaska in 1793, under the authority of a ukase issued by the reigning Russian empress, is established in all their islands. They are all nominally members of that communion; but, says Dall, "there is very little knowledge of the true principles of Christianity among them." Petroff confirms Dall, saying, "The piety of the Aleutian peo-

ple is very pronounced, so far as outward signs and professions go. They greet you with a blessing and a prayer for your health. They part from you murmuring a benediction. They never sit down to the table without invoking the blessing of God upon them. In a great many other respects down to trifling details, they carry the precepts and phraseology of the Church upon their lips incessantly." They have a place of worship in every settlement, and in two of their villages there are parish priests supported by funds supplied by the ecclesiastical authorities in Russia, and administered through the Greek Bishop of the Diocese of Alaska, whose residence is in San Francisco, but who, it is said, intends shortly to remove into the territory. The parish priests mentioned above make an annual tour among the islands to administer the sacraments and solemnize marriages. In the intervals the services of the churches are conducted by their local unordained officers. The only real apostle (Father Innocentius Veniaminoff) the Greek Church has ever had in Alaska established schools after his coming, in 1824, in all the Aleutian villages, by means of which large numbers learned to read and write Russian, and some their native tongue. But since his death the schools have been abandoned, and the children are mostly growing up untaught.

It is to be feared that notwithstanding their devotion to religious forms, the Aleutians are utterly ignorant of their spiritual meaning and ethical demands. Dall says: "They are greatly addicted to the use of snuff and liquor when they can obtain it. For the latter they would sell themselves as slaves, or dispose of all their property. . . . Crime is almost unknown among them, but there is a strong sensual element in their characters." Petroff confirms Dall. After speaking of their "improvident extravagance," he describes their habit of spending their surplus funds, at the close of a successful hunting season, in procuring a vile drink called kvass, inviting their friends, and drinking first to stupid intoxication, and then to "frenzied riots and a rumpus," during which they dance and howl, pull each other's hair, fight, and drive their wives and children from their houses into hiding places. By these excesses they destroy the comforts of their homes, and finally shatter their health and lose much of their skill as hunters. Nevertheless, while stating these facts, so demonstrative of the

worthlessness of the spiritual and ethical influence of the Greek Church, Mr. Petroff says, "It is idle to talk of the necessity of any new missionary work among these people!"

The *Indians* of Alaska in their general features resemble those of Oregon and British Columbia. Dall separates them into two principal *stocks*, the Thlinkets and the Tinneh, each of which is subdivided into several tribes. The Thlinket tribe, which inhabit Sitka Bay and the neighboring islands, he describes as having coarse black hair, small eyebrows, and fine large eyes:

Their complexion is dark, teeth white and good, hands and feet soft and small; . . . they have generally adopted a style of dress somewhat civilized in appearance, and it is now impossible to find any of them dressed in their original style, which is quite forgotten. At present men and women wear much the same clothing. It consists of a long skirt or chemise, and a blanket, ornamented with buttons, which covers the whole body. . . . They all paint, and, while naturally not ugly, become fearfully so in consequence. Lampblack or vermilion mixed with oil is rubbed over the whole face, and the color is removed by small brushes, leaving patterns on the skin. . . . They perforate their noses, wearing a ring adorned with feathers. They make a succession of perforations all around the edge of the ears, which are ornamented with scarlet thread, sharks' teeth, or pieces of a shell. Each hole is usually the record of a deed performed, or a feast given by the person so adorned.

The Tinneh tribes, which inhabit the northern interior, all possess these general characteristics, varied by habits which climatic differences and their greater or less intercourse with Russian traders have contributed to form. Hence some of them—the Slávè Indians, for example—are nomadic, moving from place to place. They have no permanent dwelling, and "live in skin tents throughout the year. Others, such as the Unakhotana, have settled villages, and build houses, though they leave them during the hunting season." Some of these tribes are quite intelligent, others are "very low in the scale of intelligence."

"Indian character, with some modifications, is the same every-where." Among some of the tribes theft is not considered a crime. Murder demands blood for blood. Licentiousness is universal; gambling is a prevailing vice. Polygamy is common among those tribes who are able to keep more than

one wife. Infanticide is often practiced, many mothers destroying their infant girls to save them from the intolerable hardships which fall to the lot of Indian women. They make slaves of captives taken in wars, which, however, are not frequent among them. They also obtain slaves by purchase, and the children of slaves are held in servitude. They do not believe, says Dall, in a Supreme Being, but in an obscure polytheism, which peoples the earth with multitudes of good and evil spirits. Out of this belief arises their faith in the shâmans, or sorcerers, who are supposed to have control of the spirits. In consequence of this superstition the shâmans exercise an authority over them which often amounts to chieftainship, albeit most of them are represented by Petroff and others as being "unmitigated scamps." The idea of transmigration of souls into other human bodies is common among the people.

Most of the Indian tribes cremate their dead, except the bodies of shâmans, which are inclosed in boxes set on four poles near the sea-shore. The remains of slaves are thrown into the sea. Slaves are not unfrequently killed as sacrifices to the *totems*, or caste symbols of the tribes.

The ethnology of the Alaskan and other American aborigines must, for the present, be regarded as an unsolved problem. Some ethnologists accept the theory of their Mongolian or Tartar origin. Their opinion, with its grounds, is summarized by Schoolcraft in his great work on the history of our Indian tribes, as follows. Referring to the Aleutian Islands, he says :

The chain of islands connects the Continents of Europe and Asia at the most practicable points, and it begins precisely opposite to that part of the Asiatic coast north-east of the Chinese Empire, and quite above the Japanese groups, where we should expect the Mongolian and Tartar hordes to have been precipitated on their shores on the American side of the trajet extending south of the peninsula of Onalaska. There is evidence in the existing dialects of the tribes of their being of the same general group with the Toltec stock.

Professor Van Rhyn, in "Appleton's Cyclopædia," inclines to a theory very ably presented by Mr. Markham in the "Arctic Papers" of the London Geographical Society. He says, "It is probable that America was first peopled by Mon-

golians who entered over the N. N. E. point of Asia, and from whom the Arctics probably descend." But, in taking this view, Professor Rhyn does not wholly reject that of Schoolcraft, for he adds, "It is not unlikely that Polynesians also entered America from the west."

Mr. W. H. Dall, in his contributions to Indian ethnology, agrees with Dr. Rink, of England, in rejecting the theory of the original peopling of the American Continent by way of the Aleutian Islands, affirming that it is "totally indefensible." Concerning the Tartar, Japanese, or Chinese origin of the Inuit tribes, he declares that it finds no corroboration in their manners, dress, or language. Yet he considers it highly probable that, in the "far and distant past," the first population of America was derived from Asia by way of Behring Strait. After spreading southward and eastward, and developing into numerous stocks and tribes, it finally, by a reflex movement, occasioned by tribal wars, returned to the north-west. But the history of its intermediate migrations and of its varied development is hidden by mists so dense as to be at present impenetrable. Even the original identity of our Inuit and Indian tribes cannot be regarded as a question beyond dispute, although Mr. Dall asserts that "linguistically no ultimate distinction can be traced between the American Inuit and the American Indian." Future investigations by students of ethnology may or may not settle these interesting problems, but for the present it must be admitted, as Bancroft observes, that "their opinions are intrinsically not of much value, except as showing the different fancies of different men and times. Fancies I say, for modern scholars, with the aid of all the new revelations of science, do not appear in their investigations to arrive one whit nearer an indubitable conclusion."

But while their ethnological relations are uncertain, the fact that in this great land over which our flag now waves there are some thirty thousand souls in sore need of the Gospel is indubitable, and ought to startle the Christian conscience of the nation. That most of them are accessible is also certain. Their villages lie along the coasts and on the island shores from Sitka to the Yukon delta. That the Greek Church failed to evangelize them should not be accepted as proof that they cannot be Christianized. That Church has a form of Christianity,

but possesses little of its power. Its missionary efforts, though partial failures, are, nevertheless, scathing rebukes to our American Churches. It did what it could; but these, with the praiseworthy exception of the Presbyterians, have hitherto refused even to try the effect of spiritual teaching on their fellow-countrymen in Alaska.

It is only four years since the Presbyterian missionary set his feet on the soil of Alaska. Yet his success goes far to prove that the Indians are eager to learn Christian truth, and susceptible to its regenerating power. Their desire for Christian instruction cannot be more impressively expressed than in the language of some of their representative men.

The following pregnant words were spoken by a Thlinket chief named Moses M'Donald at a meeting held by the Methodist mission at Fort Simpson, in British Columbia, across the border of Alaska. It was called to welcome a visit made by secretaries of the Presbyterian Board of Missions in 1879. Chief M'Donald said :

We are glad that you are coming to help the poor people our neighbors, the Stickeens, (in Alaska.) When we heard of the great American nation—its large cities, its great business houses, its vast wealth and Churches—we were amazed that you did not do something for this people a long time ago.

In the same vein, yet with greater force, the Chief Toy-a-att said, at a public meeting in Fort Wrangell :

. . . We have been told that the British government is a powerful one, and we have also been told that the American government is a more powerful one. We have been told that the President of the United States has control over all the people, both whites and Indians. We have been told how he came to be our great chief. He purchased this country from Russia, and in purchasing it he purchased us. We had no choice or say in change of masters. The change has been made, and we are content. All we ask is justice.

We ask of our father at Washington that we be recognized as a people, inasmuch as he recognizes all other Indians in other portions of the United States.

We ask that we be civilized, Christianized, and educated. Give us a chance, and we will show to the world that we can become peaceable citizens and good Christians. An effort has already been made by Christian friends to better our condition, and may God bless them in their work !

These cries from the mouths of heathens living under our own flag, from men whose conversion demonstrates the power of the Gospel to elevate and save their people, are unique in that they appeal not only to our Christian charity, but to our sense of justice. Our government is doing the aborigines of Alaska great wrong by neglecting its duties to a people over whom it claims rights of sovereignty. It is a burning shame, a blot on our national reputation, that there is no law in Alaska, no court of justice, no administration by which crime can be punished—nothing but our flag, our custom-houses, and a few revenue officers to collect an insignificant revenue from the fur trade. Surely that cry of the Indian chief for justice to himself and his fellow-Indians is grounded in righteousness. It ought to quicken our national pride of character, if not the public conscience, and inspire an irresistible demand from the American people that Congress shall throw the ægis of law over that great land and its thousands of ignorant heathen, many of whom are actually begging for the educational institutions which are the conditions of civilization.

The thoroughly evangelical character of the experience of the Indians, converted through the instrumentality of the Presbyterian missionaries, is delightfully illustrated in the following extracts from speeches made at a public entertainment they gave to those men of God. Toy-a-att, the chief mentioned above, said :

When I was young I was a great fighter; now I have learned from Christianity to fight no more. Christianity has changed us. Formerly we thought the crow made us, and made these mountains, . . . and every thing; now we know God made us, . . . made them all with his strong arm. . . . I have a Saviour. He died on the cross to save me. I believe on God. . . . When I die I know where I go. I go to God my Saviour. My heart is very happy now. I am in a bay where no wind; no wind now to upset my canoe and trouble me. I am in a safe harbor. The Lord is my light and peace.

Another chief, named Kadeshan, said :

You have heard how bad I was long ago. . . . I had a proud heart. . . . I do what devil tell me. How great the change now. Some one whisper in my ear and humble my heart to God. Formerly white men come here and blind our hearts. They learned us more badness. We knew no God in heaven, and they did not tell us. Then we hear a little about God at Fort Simpson, and

they tell us to pray God to send us a teacher. We then cry to God; we ask God, he answer our prayer. He never forget us while sinners. . . . See how kind God is. . . . See with your own eyes what God has done for us. . . . White men laugh at us because we Christians. We don't care; we not ashamed. They laugh against God, and cry down us. But we must strong our hearts, and not care for what they say.

A chief from Buffalo Island, named Hotchcox, visited a school of the Presbyterian Mission at Fort Wrangell, and while the tears streamed down his face, he placed his hand upon his heart and said: "Me much sick heart. You come teach all Stickeens, all Hydahs, all Tongas about God. My people all dark heart. Nobody tell them that Jesus died. By and by all my people die, (pointing down,) go down, down, dark."

The voices of these Alaskan chiefs, coming across the continent, ought not to fall on heedless ears. From the depths of their deep debasement they appeal to the charity of the American Church, begging for the missionary, the Bible, and the Church, that their people may become "peaceable citizens and good Christians." Thus far, though more than fourteen years have passed since they and their tribes became our fellow-countrymen, only one branch of the American Church has responded to their thrilling call. Who is to blame for this cruel indifference we will not pretend to decide. We incline to attribute it to want of thought, rather than to want of heart. Yet, when closely analyzed, what is want of thought but want of heart? Were our American Churches fully imbued with the missionary spirit, would they have suffered thirty thousand of their fellow-countrymen to remain a decade and a half in the depths of heathenish debasement, almost wholly unsupplied with the teachers and preachers which many of them are so earnestly longing to receive? Submitting this inquiry to the conscience of the Church, especially to that of our own branch, which, because of its circuit and itinerant system, is peculiarly fitted to work among a people living in small villages, scattered over a vast extent of country, we close this paper, with the hope that the condition of our missionary treasury will be such next autumn, as to justify our General Missionary Committee in making a favorable response to these pleading voices, which are still crying, "Come over into Alaska and help us!"

ART. II.—ARE INDIAN MISSIONS A FAILURE?

*Allahabad Missionary Conference Report, 1872.**Bangalore Missionary Conference Report, 1879.**Indian Missionary Directory.**Lucknow Witness.*

VARIOUS unfavorable opinions are expressed in India and out of it, concerning the thirty-one missions and over six hundred missionaries at work among the two hundred and forty million non-Christians throughout the empire, from the unqualified belief, coming down from the old East India Company, that they should be suppressed as endangering her majesty's government in the East, and the statement of the "Hindu Patriot," the organ of educated Bengal, that "missionary labors in India have practically come to a dead-lock, and our countrymen are not therefore particularly anxious about them," to the general commiseration and skeptical contempt and ridicule of the "Pioneer," re-echoed by the average Anglo-Indian and English-speaking *Babu* up and down the land, whose chief moral nourishment is Buckle's "History of Civilization" and the works of Theodore Parker.

It is the purpose of this paper, therefore, in order to furnish a plain, brief statement of facts, and correct such erroneous opinions, to notice, first, the direct progress of the Indian native Church, (1,) in numerical strength, and (2) in morals; second, the educational progress of missions in India, school statistics and influence, and the indirect influence of the missions of the land; and lastly, the assurance of their ultimate and complete success not only in the Indian Empire, but in the whole world.

I. DIRECT PROGRESS OF THE NATIVE CHURCH.

1. *In Numerical Strength.*

(1.) Periodical Statistics. The statistics of the native Church have been taken from time to time, showing marked success in the efforts of missions to Christianize the land. In 1861 there were in the Protestant native Church, in the whole of India, 97 native ordained agents, 24,976 communicants, and 138,731 native Christians. In 1871 these had increased to 226, 52,816, and 224,258, respectively. In 1875 they had still further in-

creased to 311, 68,689, and 266,391. The general statistics, so far as taken in 1878, revealed 350,000 native Christians, and such has been the remarkable progress during the last two years, especially among the aboriginal tribes of South India, that it is almost certain that when the statistics are taken in 1881 it will be found that there are 500,000 native Christians belonging to the Protestant missions of the land. The Roman Catholics claim above 1,000,000 souls as belonging to their communion, and the Syrian Church numbers some 600,000; so that without exaggeration the statement can be made that to-day there are 2,000,000 native Christians in India.

(2.) Local Statistics. The increase of the Protestant Church in particular localities is interesting, as showing the success of missions in India. In the Nellore district the American Baptist Mission has the great responsibility of building up into a new Church 60,000 converts, who have almost all come over in the last two years. In Tinnevely, in 1878, 19,000 natives joined the mission of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel; and during the same time 11,000 were baptized by the Church Mission Society. In the Ougole mission field 1,000 candidates came forward in a single day, and in three months 10,000 had joined the mission and were baptized in the name of the holy Trinity. In Tinnevely and the Telugu country alone 60,000 souls became Christians in 1878. In the North-west Provinces, during the decade between 1861 and 1872, the Christian community nearly doubled. In Oudh the increase was 175 per cent.; in the Punjab, 64 per cent.; in Central India, 400 per cent. The Christians of the American Methodist Mission, during that decade, gained 500 per cent. In South India, where missions have had the greatest success, the increase has been (a) *Comparatively rapid*. During the time between the Ootacamund Missionary Conference, held in 1857, and the Bangalore Conference, in 1879, or in about two decades, the Church had increased three-fold, namely: increase of native ordained agents, 186; communicants, 41,000; baptisms, 93,000; and of unbaptized adherents, about 95,000; showing a total of 200,000 baptized Christians and 127,500 unbaptized adherents, the whole amounting to about one per cent. of the population. (b.) *Steady*. In 1857 there were 95,000 native Christians; in 1861, 125,000; in 1871, 192,000; and in 1878, 327,500; which shows an increase in four

years, from 1857-61, of 30,000; in ten years, from 1861-71, of 70,000; and in seven years, from 1871-78, of 135,500. (c.) *General*. As shown in the table below, giving the increase in four principal countries, during the twenty-one years, between the two South India Missionary Conferences:

COUNTRY.	1857.	1878.	Increase.
Tamil	75,000	172,000	97,000.
Telugu	3,800	83,000	79,200
Malayalam	9,600	34,000	24,000
Canarese	3,200	5,500	2,300

(3.) Rate of Increase. (a.) Compared with the Christian community. From 1850 to 1861 the rate of increase in the Protestant Church in India was 53 per cent., and from 1861 to 1871 the rate was 61 per cent., and it is not by any means visionary to state that the general statistics of missions in 1881 will show a rate of increase nearly if not quite equal to 70 per cent., and that the rate will continue to increase in the future. (b.) Compared with the whole population. In South India the native Christians of the Protestant Church amount to nearly one per cent. of the whole population, and when the Christian community of all India, Protestants, Roman Catholics, and Syrians, are considered as one body, as those who acknowledge Jesus Christ as their Lord and Saviour, they amount to nearly one per cent. of the entire population of the empire. It may increase the force of the above statistics to state that nearly all the 350,000 native Christians belonging to the Protestant missions of India have been brought over during the last seventy years, and that every year shows increased numbers of accessions.

2. In *Morals*.

The oft-repeated and most ignorant assertion of half-skeptical and ill-informed white Christians, that there *are no* native Christians in India, I believe to have an abundant and sufficient answer in the foregoing statistics; and now it seems proper to drive persistent and ungenerous maligners of Christian missions and missionaries from that other place of refuge, namely, if there *are any* native Christians in India they *are false ones*. "Such persons not unfrequently point to some of the *waifs* and *strays*, the ne'er-do-weels of the native Christian community; and, taking their cue from these hapless, restless, Christless wanderers, they throw obloquy upon the

whole native Church—as if the Church in Christian lands had not the counterparts of these to bewail, and as if it would be honest and fair to stamp the character of the Church from what is seen of its worthless members.”

In showing the true state of the native Christian Church in India I produce statements of some of the oldest, wisest, and most experienced missionaries, who, during a long stay in the land in the midst of the native Church, have had abundant opportunity to know whereof they speak. A committee of the Bangalore Missionary Conference has just recorded, as their candid opinion, that “the native Church has made progress in other respects,” (besides numbers.) “The Christian faith is proving itself still to be the power of God unto salvation. Those who receive it are drawing from it new health and life, and are manifesting some, at least, of the fruits of the Spirit in their moral conduct and social condition.” The Rev. J. Vaughan, of the Church Missionary Society, after seventeen years’ experience among the people, states :

As regards the moral standard of the whole Christian community, communicants and non-communicants, my experience leads me, without hesitation, to affirm that the native Christians of Bengal are, upon the whole, as moral, as regular in their conduct, as is the great mass of nominal Christians at home.

Dr. George Smith, after a residence of seventeen years, testifies :

Of the great body of the native Church it may be said that their Christianity is much of the same type as that of the rest of Christendom. Neither from our example nor in fairness, from a consideration of the origin and position of the native Christian converts, are the Churches of Europe and America entitled to expect a higher spirituality than theirs, or, at present, more rapid and extensive defections from heathenism and Islam.

The following emphatic statement was made before the Madras Diocesan Conference in 1879 by Bishop Caldwell, whose large practical experience in mission affairs gives him a right to testify. He remarked :

I maintain that the Christians of our Indian missions have no need to shrink from comparison with Christians in a similar station in life and similarly circumstanced in England or any other part of the world. The style of character they exhibit is one which those who are well acquainted with them cannot but like.

I think I do not exaggerate when I affirm that they appear to me in general more teachable and tractable, more considerate of the feelings of others, and more respectful to superiors, and more uniformly temperate, more patient and gentle, more trustful in Providence, better church-goers, yet free from religious bigotry, and, in proportion to their means, more liberal, than Christians in England holding a similar position in the social scale. I do not say that they are free from imperfections, but I am bound to say that when I have gone away anywhere, and look back upon the Christians of this country from a distance—when I have compared them with what I have seen and known of Christians in other countries, I find that their good qualities have left a deeper impression on my mind than their imperfections. I do not know any perfect native Christians, and I may add that perfect English Christians, if they do exist, must be admitted to be exceedingly rare.

Now, add to these statements two facts, (1.) that the native Church is growing in liberality and Christian giving. From 1851 to 1861 the Church gave the sum of 93,438 rupees, but in 1871 alone it gave the almost equal amount of 85,131 rupees, which was more than one rupee for each communicant. In 1878, in South India alone, the native Church gave 75,000 rupees. The Church at Nagarcoil, through the example of one good native deacon, gave nearly 1,000 rupees more than the whole Travancore London Missionary Society Mission at the date of the Ootacamund Conference in 1857. Dr. Jewett, of the Baptist Mission in Ougale, states that the new converts contribute about 400 rupees per month, a fact which not only shows their sincerity, but proves their liberality. From a review of the Karen Missions for 1877-78, it appears that the people have done remarkably well in the way of approach toward general financial independence and self-support, the entire appropriations of the home society of the American Baptist Missionary Union to the Karen work for the year being 66,094 rupees, while the Karen Churches contributed 72,695 rupees for the purpose of carrying on the work of God in their midst. They have also given 76,154 rupees toward lands, buildings, and presses, for the benefit of the people. (2.) The number of voluntary workers and unpaid agents is increasing. An experienced missionary, in an essay on the native Church, read before the Bangalore Missionary Conference in 1879, remarked :

We see individuals here and there showing very remarkable zeal in evangelistic work. I know such in Travancore, and our Reports speak of others whom I do not personally know. We do see members of the Church, then, both men and women, engaging in voluntary work for Christ. I hear of the same thing in Tinnevely, as when, a short time back, at the annual meeting at Mengnanapuram, on Bishop Sargent's expressing a wish to address a few words of encouragement to the voluntary workers then present, no fewer than one hundred and twenty-four men stood up, and thirty-eight others offered themselves as fresh volunteers. And not only men, but women too—women, as I have heard, in the Mission of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, being even more forward than the men. The brethren in the Madura and Nellore Missions bear emphatic testimony to the same effect.

When such can be said of the native Church in India by candid and careful men, who know whereof they affirm, and when there is such liberality and voluntary work on the part of the Christians, there must be vitality and life and consequent success.

II. EDUCATIONAL ADVANCEMENT AND INDIRECT INFLUENCE OF INDIAN MISSIONS.

1. *Educational Advancement.*

(1.) In the paper on the "Progress and Prospects of India Missions," prepared by that careful author and experienced missionary, the Rev. M. A. Sherring, of Benares, and read before the Allahabad Missionary Conference in 1872, the statement is made that "in the year 1861 there were in all the missions 75,975 pupils under instruction; in 1871 there were 122,372, of whom 22,611 were young women and girls. This shows an increase of 49,367. In the previous ten years, from 1851 to 1861, the increase was less than 12,000."

In South India, during the last twenty years, all missionary bodies, and especially all missionaries, have become even more deeply convinced of the necessity and importance of Christian schools as a missionary agency, and especially as the influence of government schools is for the most part non-Christian. Below are some of the comparative school statistics for South India:

SCHOOLS.	No. of Scholars.		
	1867.	1878.	Increase.
Anglo-Vernacular	6,327	19,659	13,332
Vernacular	28,029	52,482	24,453
Girls' schools	8,990	26,209	17,219

Between 1861 and 1871 1,621 pupils, educated in Indian mission schools, passed the university entrance examination, 513 passed the first arts examination, 154 took the degree of Bachelor of Arts, 18 that of Master of Arts, and 6 the degree of Bachelor of Laws. During the last twenty years mission schools have in every way increased threefold.

(2.) Influence of Mission Schools.

The influence of mission schools on the thousands who pass through them it is impossible to estimate. But testimony comes from all quarters as to the good they effect in various ways. (a.) There are always instances now and again of young men of the highest castes, and possessed of all the advantages and safeguards of an exclusive Hinduism, who are led to burst the bonds by which they are bound to their society and family, and all that is most precious to them on earth, and under the influence of the truth alone, and for Christ's sake, are led to acknowledge him as their Lord, and unite themselves to his Church. The influence and usefulness of such men in the native Church is far beyond their numbers. (b.) But besides the winning of these converts, Christian education is exerting an immense influence on thousands who are not yet brought to the point of confessing Christ. Through means of them the conscience of native society is being enlightened and quickened, its ideas are being modified, its feelings elevated and purified, and a congenial soil prepared for the reception of the saving seed of the kingdom. (c.) Another benefit of the higher Christian education, which must not be overlooked, is that which it confers on the native Church, not only in advancing temporally those who are prepared to take advantage of it, but in qualifying Christian men, both laity and clergy, to be teachers and guides of the growing Christian Church. It is a promising sign for the future of the native Church that, along with the immense increase from the lower castes, there is also a resolution to maintain a high standard of instruction, general and theological, for its pastors and catechists.*

2. *Indirect Influence of Missions.*

Indian missions have started a thousand influences, whose power cannot be directly measured, but which are telling mightily upon the great systems of the empire, and which, silent, gradual, and pervading, are destined to permeate and change the whole mass of heathenism and Islamism. Among these may be mentioned:

(1.) The General Enlightenment of the Masses. There are many things in India which cannot stand the light, and the

* "General Review, Bang. Con.," 1879.

moral and intellectual light poured in by mission preaching and teaching has caused thousands to be ashamed of many of their social and religious habits, customs, rites, and ceremonies, and to renounce all faith in them, and many, although not yet baptized, are intellectually convinced of the truth of the Christian religion.

(2.) Influence upon Idolatry. During the last half century marked changes have taken place in the Hindu's reverence for his gods, and it is a known fact that not a few have entirely renounced idolatrous practices, and others only continue them through family associations, superstitious fear, and caste prejudices, not having sufficient moral courage to avow their sentiments.

(3.) The Decay of Caste. Caste distinctions are not held so strongly as they were, and castes are drawing nearer together, while many are free to admit the absurdity and foolishness, not to say sinfulness, of them altogether.

(4.) Public Spirit. The people have a desire to learn. There is increased popular inquiry after truth. Thought is stimulated and quickened. Whenever missions are in progress justice and morality increase, and the people think more about religion, and many become earnest and sincere inquirers.

(5.) Treatment of Women. Through the influence of missions the female sex is being blessed and benefited. Women and girls by the thousand are being educated and made companions for, and not slaves of, their husbands. Said a learned Mohammedan in Turkey to a missionary: "You are right; we must educate our girls; on that depends the welfare of our country. We have lost our place among the nations because our sons have no mothers." In India missions are endeavoring to correct that, and give woman the place she should occupy. All women are now honored, widows are being permitted to remarry, and thousands of girls are at school.

(6.) The Personal and Literary Influence of Missionaries. Six hundred cultivated Christian gentlemen, with their wives and families, scattered up and down the land, must, in their constant contact with the people, exert an influence upon them for good. The literary and philological achievements of missionaries cannot be overlooked. "Since the beginning of modern missions the Bible has been translated into 212 languages,

spoken by 850,000,000 human beings, and distributed at the rate of nearly twelve copies every minute. It will not be long before the Bible will be published in every language on earth. All this has been done by missionaries. Thirty-nine of the languages referred to never had a written form until the missionaries created it."

Now, is any one prepared to shut his eyes to all these influences, and pronounce Christian missions, by means of which all these influences were set in motion, a failure? Are the more than 150,000 boys and girls under Christian instruction not being bettered thereby? And will the learning of mission schools have no effect upon their religion? Should not the fact be acknowledged that, besides the visible signs of progress there are a thousand secret forces at work by means of which India is undergoing a great moral change? And all these indicate the success of Indian missions.

III. THE ULTIMATE SUCCESS OF MISSIONS.

I now come lastly to assert this fact, that if during the whole history of Protestant missions in India, since Ziegenbalg and Plutschan landed at Tranquibar, in 1706, or William Carey first set foot on the soil of Bengal, on the 11th of November, 1793, there had not been one single convert to the Christian faith, it would be, although natural and human, still illogical and premature to announce the failure of Christian missions in India.

1. Those who pronounce modern missions a failure must first undertake the task of proving the failure of Christianity, for missions are not a failure unless Christianity is. Those, therefore, who recommend missionaries to give up the work as hopeless should, first of all, prove the Christian religion to be false, and then, with the downfall of the Christian edifice, will be carried in utter ruin the whole scaffolding of Christian missions. But it is a most encouraging fact that while the ultimate success of missions is wrapped up in the genuineness and divinity of the Christian system, that the triumph of the Gospel of Jesus Christ in the world is most clearly and emphatically revealed. "Every knee must bow and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord." "He must reign until he hath put all enemies under his feet." The world is given by covenant to Jesus Christ, and it has been said to Him, by Him



who hath power to fulfill the promise, "Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession." "The isles wait for his law. The wilderness and the solitary places shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose." "And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord."

2. Again, God's commands and promises to us concerning mission work are an abundant assurance of its ultimate success. The marching orders of the Church are: "Go ye into all the world and preach the Gospel to every creature. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations . . . to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world." And the additional promise of Him who sends the messenger forth into all the world is that "the kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal till the whole was leavened," showing that the silent, hidden, active, pervading, growing principle of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, as presented by the commissioned agents, will spread and permeate and overcome until the whole world is full of the glory of God.

3. As to Indian missions in particular, it may be said of them, in the language of an experienced Indian missionary, that "the enlarged activity of the native mind, the thirst for education pervading large masses of the people, the earnestness being manifested in the native Church, the energy and zeal and love for souls which some of its members are displaying, the growth of a liberal spirit among the Christian communities, the increasing number of catechists, Christian teachers, and ordained native ministers—all these circumstances, while irrefragable signs and proofs of progress, are also bases on which to build our hopes for the future."

I cannot better conclude this paper than by using the language of that grand Oriental scholar, Professor Monier Williams, with which he concludes his recent book on Hinduism:

Then let the Christian missionary, without despising the formidable Goliaths to which he is opposed, but with the quiet confidence of a David in the strength of his own weapons, go forth

fearlessly, with the simple sling and stone of the Gospel in his hand, and do battle with his enemies, not forgetting to use the sword of the Spirit. Much ground, indeed, has been won already by the soldiers of the cross; but to secure a more hopeful advance of Christianity throughout India, a large accession to the missionary ranks of well-trained men, thoroughly conversant with the systems against which they have to contend, and prepared to *live* as well as preach the simple story of the Gospel of Christ, is urgently needed. And far more than this is needed for the complete triumph of God's truth in India. Nothing less is demanded of us Englishmen, to whose charge the Almighty has committed the souls and bodies of two hundred and forty millions of his creatures, than that every man among us, whether clerical or lay, should strive to be a missionary according to the standard set up by the first great Missionary—Christ himself. Let no lower standard of duty satisfy us. So will the good time arrive when not only every ear shall have heard the good news of the reconciliation of man to his Maker, but every tongue also of every native in India, from Cape Comorin to the Himalaya Mountains, shall confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

ART. III.—THE FREEDOM OF CHOICE.

CHOICE is the rational election of an end. It is rational in the sense that it is for a reason mentally apprehended and approved. The reason so apprehended and approved is the motive for the choice. There can be no proper choice without such a motive, whatever may be actual or possible in mere arbitrary volition. Rational motive really conditions choice. Hence, there is for us no law of freedom in a power of choosing without motive, or with the less motive, or against all motive. There is no such power. There may be arbitrary volitions under such conditions, but they cannot be choices, because without the necessary rational element of choice.

The supposition that without actual motive to the good, or with all our motives, or even our stronger motives, persistently holding for the evil, a good life is yet practicable through choice, is utterly groundless. There could be no choice of the good in such a state. Hence, a good life would be impossible. The assumption of an available and responsible natural ability to choose the good in such a state is equally groundless. In the theory of natural ability and moral inability, the former

does not exclude the latter, but the two exist together. The moral inability is specifically and definitely an incapacity for the proper and necessary motive to the choice of the good. If the alleged natural ability, whatever it may be, can command the proper and necessary moral motive, then the moral inability is not a fact; if it cannot, then, respecting the good, it can be nothing more than a power of mere arbitrary volition; and, therefore, utterly insufficient for the good. No mere arbitrary power of volition, however great, can be a power unto a good life; for life, to be good, must be chosen as such, and for its own proper motives. Only for such motives is it rationally eligible. Whoever would practice the deeds of a good life must, as a conditioning fact, find his higher motives of choice in the motives to the good. On a like principle, whoever would practice the deeds of an evil life through choice must, as a conditioning fact, find his higher motives of choice in the motives to the evil. These motives, as compared with the possible motives to the good, may be infinitely the weaker; but actually, or as realized in experience, they must be the stronger at the time of choosing. This is the law of an evil life as chosen, whatever may be practicable therein—and very much is practicable—through mere arbitrary or executive volition.

Thus motives stand between us and our choices, not, indeed, as determining forces, because we are rational and moral agents with power over them, but as conditioning facts of choice. Clearly, there is this requirement within the moral sphere, the only sphere in which the question of freedom has any profound interest. We allege, not the necessity of rational motive to volition, but only to volition as choice.

Volition simply from motive-impulse is as the stronger impulse. As a mere executive volition, put forth for the attainment of the end of the impulse, there is no reason why it should not follow the stronger. There is no sufficient operating force to the contrary. This is no concession either for the approval of such as maintain the domination of motive over choice, or for the reprehension of such as, in the interest of freedom, deny that domination. Mere impulse inducing volition without reflection or judgment is in no true sense the proper and necessary motive of choice; neither is the volition

so put forth for the attainment of the end of the impulse in any true sense a choice. Hence, there is no concession respecting choice, but simply the statement of a law of volitional results from certain mental states, in none of which has choice any active part. But mental facts in which choice has no active part are without doctrinal consequence in the question of its freedom.

Choice is as the stronger motive at the time of choosing. The fact is not from the determining force of the stronger motive, but from the rational nature of choice. With two ends alternatively eligible, and a higher reason for one than the other, choice, if we make a choice, must go with the higher. We are under no necessity to choose. We may decide against both ends or with the less reason, but this decision would be an arbitrary volition, not a choice.

Many of our motive states are involuntary, and arise in purely spontaneous appetite or impulse. Strong incentives to evil so arise. Clearly this is the fact with many. It is more or less the fact with all until the good is chosen, and so chosen that the choice becomes an immanent state of the mind. These passionate impulses or appetences are urgent for speedy satisfaction, and, therefore, for the volitions through which the satisfaction may be realized. The tendency of such a state may be toward the indulgence of the evil through a mere executive volition in immediate sequence to the motive-impulse; or it may be to the choice of the evil against the good. The latter is possible only with the notion of the good and some sense of its eligibility. Without these facts we cannot be the proper subjects of a moral probation. But, with our spontaneous tendencies toward the evil, unless we have power over these motive states, power to control the appetent and impulsive through the motives of reason and religion, and to conduct life rationally and morally through choice from these higher motives, we have no valid and available law of freedom in choice. If we have power over these motive states, and over motives in their higher and truer sense; power to control the former through the latter, to overcome the one with the other, to replace the one with the other, then have we power over our choices; and, therefore, a true freedom in choice. Here is the vital question of freedom.

We allege this power over motives on the ground of certain laws and facts of mental action which vitally concern both the freedom of choice and the reality of rational and moral agency. These laws and facts must be treated severally and in proper order, but may be summarily stated thus:

1. Choice is the election of an end for a motive rationally apprehended. Hence, with exceptional cases, reflection and judgment must precede and qualify the elective volition, without which facts it cannot be a choice.

2. Choice, with all volition toward the end of a motive impulse, may be rationally suspended when one is under that influence. The suspension is rational when for the purpose of reflection and judgment upon end and motive in order to a proper election.

3. The rational suspension of all volition toward the end of any motive influence is neither choice itself nor dependent upon a motive of choice in any specific sense, but is from an immediate and essential power of personal agency.

4. With the suspension of choice and all mere executive volition, then, through a proper use of our rational and moral agency, we have power over our motives.

5. There are sufficient motives for the required choices of a rational and good life—sufficient, not only as objectively viewed, but also as realizable in experience.

6. With power over our motives, we have power over our choices, and, therefore, a true freedom of choice.

THE RATIONALITY OF CHOICE.

Motive and choice are so vitally related that their true interpretation must place them in scientific accord. Any interpretation on which they will not answer each to the other must be erroneous. The true interpretation must find a rational element in each.

There is a rational element in the proper motive of choice. Any appetite of the sensibilities, operative toward some voluntary act for its satisfaction, may be called a motive. It is such in a primary sense and in popular usage. It is commonly treated as a motive, or included in the definition of motive, in discussions of the will or the freedom of choice. It is a motive only in the sense of an instinctive impulse toward

some volition as the means of its own satisfaction. But a volition following immediately upon such an appetite, and simply for its gratification, is merely an executive volition, and in no true sense a choice. Neither is such an instinctive impulse in itself a true and sufficient motive of choice. It lacks the necessary rational element. Hunger and thirst are instinctive impulses toward eating and drinking. The mere satisfaction of these appetites is neither the whole nor the true motive of self-government in the case. Were this so we might always eat and drink just according to our appetite—whenever it craves, whatever it craves, all that it craves. This might be a law of life for an animal, but cannot be a law for a rational man. Were these appetites always normal and healthful in tone and tendency, with a happy adjustment to our higher good, then might we always follow them, but only for the reason that they were such, and, therefore, for a rational motive. When the appetites are excessive or wayward and their free indulgence would be harmful, the real and only true motive of self-government is one of prudence or duty, a rational motive. Only with such a motive can there be self-government through choice.

The same law applies in all the circles of our spontaneous emotions and desires. Sympathy is an instinctive impulse toward voluntary action, but not in itself a law of rational action nor a motive according to which we may act with choice. Before the action can be chosen the end of it must appear to be rationally eligible. Parental affection, followed simply as a motive tendency, often leads astray from both prudence and duty. The proper conduct under this instinctive motive impulse is, in the profoundest sense, a question of prudence and duty in the light of truth and conscience. The motive on which the proper conduct may be chosen is in this rational element. Avarice is a motive-impulse toward hoarding money, but not in itself simply a motive to the choice of the hoarding. With the common facts of moral reason and conscience and grave self-questioning, presumably there was a time when the miser chose his life; while now, as dominated by a morbid passion, his deeds are no longer chosen, but merely executed through volitions in immediate sequence to the blind impulses of his avarice. Yet are they evil to him under moral law, because he might have chosen, and, if yet in a probationary state,

might still choose, a life of generosity and benevolence through the motives of reason and religion. The quick resentment arising upon wrongful injury, and instantly operative toward the infliction of injury in return, is not such a motive in itself that the retaliation may be through choice. A motive in the proper sense, and as the condition of choice, could arise only in such reason or reasons as might appear to require or justify the infliction. Thus in any and every view a rational element is necessary to the motive of choice.

As motive in its higher and truer sense must have a rational element, so must choice be rational. It may be for a reason infinitely less than is possible for a contrary election; still it can be a choice only with the rational comprehension of its motive or end. When end and impulse are taken into reflection and judgment, and the end appears to be rationally eligible, then its election for that reason is a choice. It may not be judicious or wise, but so far it is rational, and, therefore, properly a choice. Life is rational only as it is chosen. The choice which renders life rational must be for a reason rationally apprehended, however inferior that reason. Every true and noble life is the formation of rational choice from the higher motives of life. No such life is otherwise practicable.

Every one, properly under a law of moral probation, at some time chooses between an evil and a good life. In the subsequent habits of life, one may act immediately from his evil impulses and tendencies. He may thus pursue an evil life with strong and persistent willing; but if without reflection or the apprehension of any rational eligibility therein, he no longer chooses it in any proper sense of choice. His volitions which take him to the ends of his motive-impulses are immediately from these impulses, and simply executive, not elective. Yet are they morally evil and responsible because of a power in the agent to apprehend the sufficient motives to a good life and to choose it. But a good life is ever impossible through any mere executive volition. In a life of good deeds the choice of the good is the vital and necessary fact of goodness. But this choice of the good is possible only from its own proper motives. These motives must lie in the obligation and value of the good. Only as these motives are apprehended in the moral reason can the good be so chosen that there shall be

goodness in the choice and in the deeds which follow. Thus in this highest, best sphere of volition, choice is rational. It is not simply from a moral impulse, but also from a moral reason as the motive.

Only an agent rationally constituted is capable of ordering his life through choice. We have the powers of a rational agency; but our life is conducted through choice only in the rational use of these powers. An animal has motive impulse and volitional power. It wills an end with executive energy. But it does not choose the end and cannot, because without faculties for its rational apprehension. Its volitions are immediately from the impulses of instinct. The operation is irrational. Such are our own volitions when there is no exercise of reason between motive-impulse and volition, whatever its end. The intervention of reason, either as intuitively active or as exercised in reflection and judgment upon end and motive, is the one fact essentially differentiating rational agency in volition from the operation of mere animal instinct. As between the two, there are different powers and cognitions, different ends, different motive-impulses in operation; but, except on the proper use of our rational faculties, mere impulse is equally the determining law of volition in the two cases. Mind thus moves volitionally in the sphere of animal instinct. Its only possible movement in the higher sphere of rational agency is by making reason the law of its choices.

It does not hence follow that on every instance of a new motive-impulse, even where morality is concerned, a season of rational reflection is requisite. Life is not thus in separate deeds, but according to some rule or law. A good life must be ordered on principle and in obedience to a recognized law of duty. A good man may have a sudden motive-impulse toward some wrong volition or deed, but reflection and judgment have gone before and settled the principle to which his present action must conform. With these facts, the instant application of this principle answers for all the requirements of reason in choice.

Such is the law of rational agency, an agency that is a nullity without a power over motives and volitions. There is no power over motives and volitions unless we may subject them to reflection and judgment. Without this agency there can be

no power of self-government through choice. There is no other rational self-government. The only alternative must be a succession of irrational volitions and deeds in immediate and necessary sequence to the stronger motive-impulses. In any motive state, other impulses may arise to influence the pending volition; but, except as responsive to the call of our rational agency and subject to its control, they must be purely spontaneous, and, therefore, powerless to release our volitions and consequent deeds from the absolute domination of mere motive-impulse. Nothing else than reflection and judgment as possibly influencing choice in any rational sense can come between motive and choice. Their interposition is the office of rational agency. Without that interposition there is no proper use of this agency, and, therefore, no rational self-government through choice.

THE RATIONAL SUSPENSION OF CHOICE.

Choice, with all volition toward the attainment of the motive end, may be suspended when one is under motive influence. The suspension is rational when for the purpose of reflection and judgment upon end and motive, that the election may be prudent, or wise, or responsive to the requirement of duty.

What is rational agency, or what can it avail for the higher ends of life, if, under the laws of mental action, there be no place for the proper use of its powers? Where can this use be so important as in the controlment of mental states and facts which vitally concern the power of rational self-government? Life is worthy of man only as it is from his own rational and moral agency. As such, it must be rationally chosen. Our choices are our most important, our morally responsible volitions. Through them we determine the ends of our life and the deeds for their attainment. Our character and destiny are in our choices. But if there be no power of rationally suspending choice, with all volition, toward the motive end, when under motive influence, there can be no place for the reflection and judgment necessary to rational self-government or to the proper choice of life. Our spontaneous motive-impulses must be the immediate determining causes of our volitions. Hence, the power of rationally suspending choice, with all volition toward the attainment of the

motive end, is necessary to choice itself, and the proper use of it a necessary mode of conducting life rationally.

In the habits of human life many omit this rational suspension of choice and mostly act immediately from spontaneous motive-impulse. They do this when the conduct is profoundly important, morally responsible even, and the call loud and urgent for the most reflective and rational action. Their conduct is simply executed, not chosen. This is consistent with personal agency, rational and moral, as constituted, though not with the proper use of its powers. These powers are not self-acting, but simply an investment which as personal agents we may and should use. If self-acting they could not be the powers of a proper rational and moral agency. Without their use our life is not from our own agency. Without their possession we are incapable of choosing our life or of conducting it rationally and morally.

The fact that many live with little reflection or rational self-control, and act merely and immediately from the motive-impulses of spontaneous appetite or desire, is often alleged in their reprehension. They should not be reprehended if without the power of rationally postponing all volition toward the end of their appetences when under such motive influence. For, if without this power, they are utterly incapable of conducting life rationally. Their only law of life must be one of mere spontaneous motive forces, commonly more wayward and violent, and far more ruinous, than the impulses of mere animal instinct.

This power of rational agency is manifest in the relative facts of psychology and human life. It is a fact above question, that often under motive influence all volition toward the end is deferred and held under deliberation. How shall the fact be explained? On a denial of rational deferment, there are only two modes in which an explanation can even be attempted. One is to account the delay to a mental state of indifference. But this is utterly inadmissible, because the motive state is manifest in the fact of deliberation. No one deliberates on questions of indifference in order to a judicious election or choice. The other is to account the delay to an exact balance of opposing motive influences. This would be practically the same as a state of indifference, though psycho-

logically different. The case is hypothetically admissible on the theory that volition or choice is absolutely determined by motive force. On the denial of rational deferment and reflection, motive influences or tendencies are the only forces practically operative in the mind. There is a motive tendency toward a given volition or choice. The only force which can prevent this result is a counter motive influence. Hence, the continuance of the delay requires for all that time an exact balance of opposing motive forces. The slightest preponderance of either would at once determine the volitional result, just as the heavier weight immediately preponderates the scale. Is this, then, a rational account of the case? This mental state of interested deferment runs through hours and days, sometimes through months and years, even. Can the fact be explained simply as the result of an exact balance of opposing motive forces? This is the only possible account, if we deny the power of rational deferment. Its utter insufficiency concludes the reality of this power.

The denial of this law of rational agency is by logical consequence the assumption that all great and worthy lives in the various spheres of human activity and achievement, in science and philosophy, in statesmanship and patriotism, in philanthropy and piety, are the formation of volitions in immediate sequence to motive-impulses or tendencies, and without any power of personal agency in the proper choice of ends. The assumption is, and must be, that all the truer and nobler lives, wrought in patience and self-denial, in an ever-enduring fortitude and the loftiest moral heroism, are the formation of purely spontaneous motive-impulses, each determining its own volitional result, just as it may exceed others in the force of its impulsion. But no true philosophy of such lives is possible with the notion that their formative law is in purely spontaneous motive forces, no one of which, as it may be the stronger, will submit to any restraint or delay under the immediate power of personal agency, but must of its own energy go at once to the volitional result of its own impulsion. In truth, reflection must be the habit, and the highest practical reason the guide of every such life. Its formation is possible only as the spontaneous motive tendencies may be subject to the personal agency. Over all the exigences of weakness and trial

and adverse tendency this agency must be sovereign, and have in command the weightier motives of reason and conscience, which may ever re-enforce the high purposes of a great and good life. Hence, the power of rationally suspending all volition toward a motive end when under the motive influence must be a power of personal agency. The philosophy of every great and good life is a conclusive witness to its reality.

IMMEDIATE POWER OF SUSPENDING CHOICE.

We here face the most subtle and perplexing objection to this vital law of freedom in choice. It is very easy most plausibly and persistently to affirm, that the position maintained respecting the suspension of choice gives no releasement either from an absolute dependence upon motive or from its determining influence upon our volitions. But most that may be thus said must be mere assertion, without possible verification in the facts of psychology or the laws of mind. Such assertion may be met with counter assertion equally broad and plausible. So far, if nothing is gained, neither is any thing lost. However, we shall not thus rest the question, but maintain our position on the ground of facts both of psychology and a true personal agency. The result will give us the rational suspension of choice, not as choice, but as immediately from rational agency itself.

The contrary assumption is that the suspension of all volition toward the end of any motive-impulse for the purpose of reflection and judgment upon end and motive, must itself be a choice and from some motive of choice. The mental action is not otherwise possible. Some reason operative as a motive of choice is necessary to its rationality. If a sufficient motive reason be present to the mind, it must pause and reflect. Such are the ready, plausible assertions, in the case. Their sense is that any rational deferment of elective or executive volition, when under motive influence, with all the intervening rational action, is absolutely dependent upon motive and necessarily determined according to its stronger impulse.

On the truth of this assumption the mind, when under motive-impulse, cannot pause and reflect, nor take account of any relative fact or principle which might influence the pending volition, except another motive intervene to determine the rational action. But such motive must be assumed to arise

spontaneously, if at all. No intrinsic power of immediate suspension and reflection can be conceded to rational agency because it is utterly inconsistent with the alleged dependence upon motive. There can be no delay and no casting about for any motive or reason counter to the present inclination, simply as the rational action of the personal agent. If so conditioned by spontaneous motive influence, why should he, or how can he, pause and reflect whether there be any reason against following a present inclination, except some motive impulse spontaneously arise which so determines his mental action?

If such be the law of mental action in this case, our volitions are not in any true sense from our own agency, but are immediately determined by our purely spontaneous motive states. Indeed, the mind is no longer a rational agent, because without the power of rational action from itself. The fact is not other because some spontaneous motive-impulse, opportunely arising, may determine the mind to pause, or even turn it away to reflection and the apprehension of reasons counter to the present inclination. There is still wanting the essential power of rational self-movement. The mind cannot act from itself as a rational agent, but is absolutely conditioned by a law of spontaneous motive influence. The irrational soul of an animal is not more dependent upon the impulse of instinct or passive under its dominance. That the mental movement determined by the spontaneous motive is to reflection and the apprehension of reasons counter to the present motive-tendency brings no relief, because even in such facts the mind is none the less dependent upon the spontaneous motive or passive under its power. This is the fact of necessitation in the case, and the fact exclusive of a true rational agency, whatever the mental action induced. It behooves all who hold such a philosophy to explain the consistency of this necessitation with rational agency, or how it is that an agency intrinsically free—free in the power of rational self-action—can be rationally active only through the determination of purely spontaneous motive. But this explanation never can be given.

Thus a proper rational agency is excluded. There is something far higher and other in this agency than is possible under a law of absolute dependence upon purely spontaneous motive. It consists in an intrinsic power of immediate self-movement,

a power to pause and reflect when under the impulse of motive, a power whereby the mind may turn itself to such facts or principles as may concern the present inclination, or call them up and hold them under deliberation. For all this there is required no other power or reason than what is ever at the command of a rational agent, so long as his proper agency remains. But the law of an absolute dependence upon spontaneous motive-impulse for any reflection or judgment while under that impulse utterly precludes this power, and leaves the mind to be driven helplessly onward in an endless succession of motive states, while its volitions are as determinately swayed by these spontaneous impulses as are the orbital movements of the planets by the forces of gravitation. We have no power over our motive states or motives in their higher sense; no power against them, or to modify them, or to replace one with another, and, therefore, no power to avoid or in the least modify any volition which they may induce. The concession of such a power would be a surrender of the whole assumption of our dependence upon spontaneous motive influence. But if we have not this power we have no true rational agency. It is really and utterly excluded. Now any position which, either by assertion or logical consequence, denies to personal mind a true rational agency, or any power necessary to it, must be a false position. Hence rational agency is, and must be, independent of spontaneous motive for its rational action when under motive influence.

The rational deferment of all volition toward the motive end when under motive-impulse is, as previously stated, for the purpose of reflection and judgment upon impulse and end, that the action in the case may be judicious or wise. It is the proper course for an agent rationally constituted and responsible for his volitions. Often the instant application of a principle previously settled may answer for the law of rational conduct. In many cases the proper action may be intuitively or instantly clear. But when it is not clear, as often it is not, our conduct is rational only as we take time and give the question such reflection as may be requisite to a proper judgment.

This deferment is not choice. The mental action is not the same in the two cases. The question may be appealed to consciousness or tested by the most searching analysis of all the

mental facts concerned, and the result will verify our position. Choice has its own mental form, well-known in consciousness, but really known only there. Simply as an elective volition it is the act of an instant. The pre-elective rational action is of the choice simply as the prerequisite of its rational quality. Yet the relation is vital to choice itself. We hold this view of choice; while the theory on which the single or stronger motive impulse must immediately determine the volitional result cannot hold it, because it would thereby concede all the power and requirement of rational agency which we maintain. But in no sense does our view identify the rational deferment of choice with the elective volition as mental acts. They are not the same. In the light of consciousness they are distinct and different. Hence the rational deferment of choice has not the same relation to motive as choice itself. It is not from an elective motive, nor dependent upon it, but is from an immanent power of rational self-action in personal agency.

Motive, in its higher and truer sense, is the reason for choice, but it is a specific kind of reason, because both motive and choice are specific mental facts. Motives, however diverse, are all one in kind, and operative in one mode. They all exist in a form of conscious interest in some end, and as a rational inducement toward its choice. They are motives because such an inducement. Thus the motive of choice is a specific mental state, and operative toward a specific mental act in the election of a definite end. Now consciousness, however searchingly questioned, will ever deny that such a motive is either the actual or the necessary inducement of that rational action which must precede choice as the prerequisite of its rational quality.

Consciousness is witness to the fact that this pre-elective rational action is immediately from the rational agency itself. The power so to act is intrinsic and necessary to this agency. It is an ever-usable power, so long as a true rational agency remains. Hence this agency may ever find in itself the spring of rational action. A power to pause and reflect when brought under motive influence, and before our important volitions or choices is the essential power of rational agency. We assert only the same truth when we affirm that a rational agent can act rationally. With this true and simple statement our position scarcely requires illustration or proof. For to admit the

reality of rational agency, and then deny its necessary power, is a contradiction. Who would attempt a philosophy of choice or pretend to build up a doctrine of responsible freedom on the denial of a true rational agency to the mind? But with the admission of this agency, it must be admitted that the mind can act rationally. Hence it must be independent of specific motive states, and have the power of rational action immediately from itself.

Objections may be urged against the reality of this power in view of the blindness of ignorance, the perversion of error, the enervation of vice, the thralldom of evil habit; but these are incidental questions or side issues, which in no sense antagonize our position. There are such instances, as many facts witness. Hence it is clear that rational agency may be greatly enfeebled, or, possibly, entirely overborne by the force of evil habit and vicious tendency. But this does not affect our position, for it is affirmed of a true rational agency, and not of a mind in such a state of thralldom from a wrong use of its powers, that its proper agency no longer remains.

There are results of benefit to freedom from proper rational and moral conduct, as well as results of evil from wrong conduct. By a right use of the powers of our personal agency—a use just according to its constitution and our own obligation—we may reach the highest measure of self-command and moral freedom.

We are not constantly in some special motive state or under some strong motive impulse, urgent for the volition which will carry us to its end. Nor is such a motive state either the limit of our rational agency or its highest sphere. In the hours of freedom from these special motive states this agency remains, with the power of reflection upon the laws and duties of life. In these hours of mental quietude and self-command, duty in all its relations and requirements may be calmly considered and rules of right conduct settled. We may thus give to the purpose of a reflective and upright life the strength and persistence of habit. We may so make it a law of life always to pause and reflect under any doubtful solicitation, that this law shall become an immanent state of our mind. It will thus be easy for us, even when suddenly brought under strong motive impulse or temptation, to pause and reflect, and so take to ourselves strength from the weightiest reasons against the wrong

doing to which we may be solicited. We need no elective motive for so doing; we need only the power which is intrinsic to rational agency. Nor is the action through choice in any strict sense.

Thus the proper rational action when under motive-impulse, the reflection and judgment upon end and impulse which should precede any volition toward the end, and must precede it if life is to be conducted rationally, is from an immediate power of rational self-action in rational agency. The denial of this power is the denial of rational agency itself. Logically, the consequence must be a helpless passivity of life under an absolute law of purely spontaneous motive-impulse.

POWER OVER MOTIVES.

With an immediate power of rational agency to postpone all volition toward any motive end, and to take end and motive with relative practical facts and principles under reflection and judgment, we have power over our motives. Power over motives is power over choices. Power over choices is true freedom in choice.

An analytic presentation of the laws and facts of mind with which this power of personal agency is vitally concerned will evince the reality of the power itself, and also conclude its sufficiency as a law of freedom in choice. It is proper, therefore, to treat, severally and in order, motive states of mind, laws of motive states, power over laws of motive states, power over motive states and motives.

There is a distinction between motive states, simply as such, and motives in their higher sense or as the condition of choice. The former may be simply a spontaneous appetite or impulse, while the latter must combine with some form of conscious interest a rational element as its proper eligible quality. This distinction, however, need not be formally maintained in the present point of discussion, for the laws and facts concerned are the same for both.

Any form of conscious interest operative as an incentive toward any volition in order to the attainment of an end is a motive state. The fact is the same whether the conscious interest arises from any one of our manifold sensibilities, or in the rational or moral part of our nature. There is no motive

state without some form of conscious interest in the attainment of some object or end.

There are certain laws of motive states. The same laws are common to all these states. Their place and value in the question of freedom will appear as we proceed with the discussion.

Motive states of mind are under a law of objective relation. They can take no practical form necessary to a motive quality except on the cognitive view of their object or end. There is a law of objective relation common to all forms of mental activity. In all thinking there must be a thought-object, some fact of the mind itself, or something extraneous to it. In the profoundest abstraction there is something objective to thought, without which the mental process would be impossible. In the purest conceptualism, as against realism, there is objectivity to the conception, and as necessary to the conceptive state, as an external object to the perception of vision. In the most transcendental intuitions, in the sublimest creations of the imagination, in the most airy soarings of fancy, in the dreamiest reveries, there is ever, and there must ever be, something objective to thought.

Such also is the law of facts in our appetent or affectional nature. There are purely spontaneous appetences. They spring from our constitution, and would spring all the same were we without any notion of objects which might satisfy them. But in this case they could not, in any proper sense, be motive states of mind, because without tendency toward any volition or deed in order to their satisfaction. Such a tendency is impossible without the notion of something satisfying. The same law applies to truths or conceptions of the reason, whether philosophic, moral, or religious. Such truths, however ideal or impersonal as conceived, are often truths of the profoundest conscious interest and the most forceful practical tendency, but only with notion of some end to be achieved. All objective motivity is powerless over the subjective in any practical sense, except as in mental conception and with the notion of a practical end. Such is one law of motive states of mind.

Motive states are spontaneous on their proper objective relation. With a subjective and objective motivity in correlation, then on the perception or conception of the motive object the result is a spontaneous impulse or tendency toward some

volition or deed answering to the motive state. Thus the sense of hunger and thirst, with the notion of food and water, immediately tends toward eating and drinking. The sense of moral obligation and responsibility, with the notion of some deed required as a duty, becomes a motive-impulse toward its performance. The principle is the same in all forms of conscious interest in motive ends, whether of the sensibilities or the reason. Thus, motive states spontaneously arise and remain with the proper conception of their objects or ends. There is no immediate will power either to prevent or repress them. They are necessary facts under their own law. This is no concession to the theory of the domination of motive over volition or choice. If any would so claim it he is most welcome. Our position is not broadly that we have no volitional power over these motive states, either to prevent or repress or change them, but qualifiedly that we have no such immediate volitional power. This is because they are spontaneous and necessary states under their own law. That they are such will be found wholly to the advantage of a true freedom in choice. The advantage is in the fact that, because motive states are such, we have mediately volitional power over them, and all the power requisite to the truest freedom.

The third law of motive states is not so much a distinct law as a special fact of such states consequent to the first law. If motive states are under a law of objective relation, and possible only on the mental conception of their proper object or end, then by consequence they must terminate with this conditioning relation. So soon as the motive object or end of these states, only on the conception of which they can arise and exist, is dismissed from thought, they must cease to have any motive quality or tendency. Such are the laws of motive states of mind. Motives, in the higher, truer sense of motives, are under the same laws.

We have power over the laws of motive states. This is the third principle or fact in which we ground the power over motives. If motive states are under such laws of objective relation, and we have power over these laws, then we must have power over the motive states. Also, a power over motive states must be a power over motives in the higher, truer sense of motive, because both are under the same laws.

Power over the laws of motive states is simply power over the practical relation of the mind to motive objects. These laws are conditioned by this relation. If a present motive object must, of its own nature and force, so occupy the mind and fix the attention, that we can neither dismiss it nor call into thought and reflection any other, we have no power to determine the relation of our mind to such objects. But if we can dismiss a present motive object, or replace it in the mind with another, or call another into thought and reflection, then the power is real and sufficient. Have we such a power? This is really the question, whether, as rational agents, we have power to use our mental faculties according to their own nature and office? But, as correctly so stated, the question determines for itself an affirmative answer.

Rational agency requires a certain complex of usable faculties. There must be a synthesis of rational intelligence, and sensibility and will. Of course there can be no rational agency without rational intelligence. Sensibility, as applicable to man in its lower sense, is not a necessity to rational agency. There must, however, be an emotional nature or a capacity for conscious interest in the ends of volition or choice. There is no eligibility to any being in the universe without some form of such interest. Nor could there be any rational voluntary action. All possible action would be purely spontaneous or automatic. Neither angel or archangel, however removed from the lower forms of human sensibility, nor even God himself, could be a rational agent without a capacity for conscious interest in the ends of volition or choice. There must be such an interest if only in the purest philosophic or moral reason. Of course there must be a will faculty, without which there is no proper agency, much less rational agency. A rational agent is such by virtue of this trifold synthesis of attributes.

Man is a rational agent with these three forms of attribute. But the intelligence is not the agent; the sensibility or emotional nature is not the agent; the will is not the agent. Man himself, as so constituted, is the agent. He is a rational agent because with such faculties he can act rationally. While a rational agent only by virtue of these faculties, yet is he above them with power to use them. They have in relation to him an instrumental quality and function, and he can use

them for their appropriate ends, just as he might use any voluntary bodily organ or any implement or tool. Mental faculties, in the very nature and definition of them, are usable faculties. Without the power of using them the proper notion of rational agency is utterly eliminated.

The will, as a usable faculty, is most proximate to the agent, and is immediately at his command. This does not imply an absolute power of volition any more than my voluntary use of a pen in this writing implies an absolute will power over it. Volition, in the lowest sense, is conditioned by some spontaneous mental state; as merely for the attainment of the end of some appetite or impulse by the notion of the end; as elective, by the apprehension of the reason for the choice. But nothing so conditioning volition is inconsistent with an immediate power of the agent over the will faculty. On the proper occasion he may so use it, and through volition control or use whatever is subject to him as an agent.

Thus he may use his intellectual faculties. Thinking is often spontaneous, or, at least, not consciously voluntary. It is none the less true that through the will we have the voluntary control of our mental faculties and may freely use them according to their own nature and office. Thus we may select the subject of thought and give it conscious attention and profound study. We may dismiss one subject and take up another. Every rational agent can do this. Every one who conducts life rationally must do it. The question of this power may be appealed to the facts of consciousness and they will verify its reality. The achievements of rational thought conclude the case. There are only two modes of mental activity: one spontaneous, the other by intentional origination and direction. Will the former answer for a philosophy of thought, as unfolded in human history? Is not the latter a necessity to that philosophy? Whence the civilizations of the race? Whence the facts of the higher civilizations, the arts and inventions, the sciences and philosophies, the literatures, the high achievements in the spheres of æsthetic art, the masterly statesmanship? Not from spontaneous mental revery, but from the rational use of mental faculties. These marvelous achievements were possible only as rational agents had the power of volitionally originating and rationally directing their mental

activities: This includes the power of determining the faculties to any particular subject of thought.

With such a power in the use of mental faculties, we can direct attention and thought to one object or another, or dismiss one and call up another, or replace one with another. Thus we can determine the relation of our mind to motive objects; whether a present object shall hold its place and engage the entire attention, or what other shall come into attention with it or entirely replace it; whether one object or another shall be in the mental apprehension, with its immediate power over the subjective motivity. But in these very relations are the laws of our motive states. Hence, power over these relations is power over the laws of motive states, and, therefore, over these states. With a motive object in conception there is a spontaneous motive state in correlation to it; with a dismissal of the object from thought, a termination of the motive state; with its replacement by a different motive object, a change in motive state. Thus, with power over the relations of our mind to motive objects, we can determine our own motive states. The result is just according to the laws of these states. Such a power we have, however metaphysical speculation and subtlety may seek or even seem to obscure it. The power itself is intrinsic to rational agency, original and simple, indefinable and inexplicable, yet none the less real and manifest.

Any one may readily test and verify the reality of this power. Some motive object comes into your perception or mental conception. It matters not how it comes, but only that it is there. Being there, it moves upon the correlate appetite, or affection, and draws you into a motive state. This state, spontaneously arising under its own law, is itself a tendency toward some volition or deed for the attainment of the motive object, or the satisfaction of the appetite or affection which it has awakened. No law of your mind binds you to this motive state or to any volition or deed toward which it may tend. You can separate yourself from the motive object or dismiss it from thought, and thus put it out of the relation to your mind which is necessary to its motive influence, or you can take into thought and reflection some fact or truth of counter motive influence, and the former will yield to the latter. You may suddenly become the subject of a sponta-

neous impulse or tendency which you would not follow. Your state of mind against it may be simply a cool judgment, while the motive state is full of fiery impulse. But however intense the impulse or cool the judgment, you can take time to reflect. This you can do as a rational and responsible agent. Then you can summon into thought and conscience the weighty reasons of prudence and piety against the indulgence of the present motive tendency. These reasons, so apprehended and meditated, will give you a counter motive state. This state may have far less intensity than the former, and yet be infinitely stronger in the motives of reason and conscience—infinity the stronger, not only intrinsically or potentially, but as realized in experience. You are called to some duty. Your mental apprehension of it may be wanting in clearness and vigor, while there is but slight response of moral feeling. Other feelings may be strongly adverse. In this state you can take time and call into meditation the weighty reasons of obligation and spiritual well-being which urge the duty. These reasons, so meditated, will bring the responsive disposition.

Thus have we power over the laws of motive states, and, hence, over these states. It is the necessary power of rational agency. Mere intellectual faculties, however great, cannot constitute this agency. Our own faculties might be lifted to a vastly higher degree, or even to that of the divine, were it possible, and still we would not be rational agents. There must be a power of rationally using these faculties. This is a power over the laws of motive states and over these states. Thus one can produce a motive state where he needs it, and restrain or replace another where he should be free from it.

We thus have power over motives. As motive is something more than a mere spontaneous appetite or impulse, and includes a rational element, power over motives is more than power over mere motive states. Yet the laws are the same in the two cases. Both classes are spontaneous under the same law of objective relation. This relation is determined for both simply by taking the motive object into proper mental apprehension. As we thus apprehend a rational or moral motive object we realize in experience a rational or moral motive. Through these higher and more imperative motives we have power over the lower appetites and desires. We are free, or

have the power of freedom, from a dominating law of spontaneous appetite or impulsive passion. A far higher and better life must be within our power as rational and moral agents.

If without power over motive states, and over motives as requisite to the choice of the rational and the good, our life must be spontaneous and flow with the current of our lower tendencies; while with this power we may subject it to rational and moral control. Over the impulsions of appetite and passion we may enthrone the rational and the moral. How this may be done has already been explained. We are not helplessly passive under any one spontaneous impulse, or any stronger or strongest impulse in the coincidence of two or more of diverse tendency. We have no immediate power of volition to prevent or repress such a motive state; but we have immediate power to defer any volition or deed toward its end. Then through reflection and judgment we may realize the motives of reason and conscience, and direct our life from them.

Is this power ever used? So it may be asked in objection. We have previously recognized the fact of a widely prevalent omission of this use. The question, however, or the objection which it clothes, is irrelevant. For the present we are simply maintaining the reality of this power, not its use. But, as a question of fact, it has been used, and in instances innumerable. If once used, it is a common usable power of personal agency. If never used, then never in all the history of the ages has any man in a single instance rationally determined his own conduct. Such is the logical consequence, and even the formal assumption of that irrelevant objection to our doctrine of rational agency. There is no need of further refutation or reply; else we might again array the great facts of civilization, as practicable only through a rational use of the faculties of a proper personal agency, and the many instances of rational and moral self-direction and control in the formation of great and good lives, as forever concluding the reality of this power, and also the fact of its very frequent use.

SUFFICIENT MOTIVES FOR REQUIRED CHOICES.

Many things have for us no eligibility. The fact does not concern our freedom, because we are not required to choose

them. For required choices there must be sufficient motives. We cannot otherwise have true freedom. This is consequent to the rational nature of choice. We choose for a motive rationally apprehended. When the requisite motive is not present to the mind, or within its power to command, there is no proper sphere of choice. With alternative ends of equal interest simply to the sensibilities, we may decide for either or against both, but by an arbitrary volition, not a choice. If we may combine with either a rational element, or a higher rational element with the one than with the other, then may we choose it. If against the impulses of the sensibilities or the motives of secular interest we may command a motive of duty, then may we choose the end of this motive. Hence the law of freedom is this: for the required choices of prudence and duty we may command the proper motives of choice. The principles of this law have already come into the discussion; most of them sufficiently so. Therefore we further require little more than their proper application. Yet a present analytic statement of the cardinal facts of the question will be helpful to clearness of view. The law of freedom, as given, requires, 1. Objective motives of proper eligibility for the required choices of prudence and duty; 2. A subjective motivity to their influence, as necessary to the actual motives of choice; 3. A power of personal agency to place the mind in such cognitive relation to the objective motives, that we may realize in experience the actual motives to the choice of their ends.

The reality of the requisite objective motives of proper eligible quality none will question. A life conducted with prudence or reason is, with all who think, far higher and better than a life determined by spontaneous appetite or passion. Duty asserts its own superiority of excellence and authority. These facts more than concede the requisite objective motives.

Subjective capacity for rational motives. A capacity for the rational motives of life will scarcely be questioned. It cannot be without questioning the fact of rational agency itself. Agency, in whatever grade, must have every capacity or facility necessary to it. We are rational agents only as we have the ability to conduct life rationally. But, as previously shown, life can be so conducted only as it is chosen. It can be ration-

ally chosen only from its own rational motives. These motives are such, not simply as objective, but only as realized in experience. This requires something more than a mere intellectual conception of the rational ends of life. It is still true that there can be no actual motive without some form of conscious interest in the end of choice. Hence the rational ends of life, as mentally conceived, must be realized in a conscious interest therein. Only with this interest can they be rationally eligible. As a question of fact, the rational ends of life have with many minds a consciously realized eligibility. One instance of a life rationally conducted must conclude the subjective capacity for these rational motives. There are innumerable instances of the kind.

Capacity for the motives of morality and religion. We here reach the profoundest issues of this question. It is here, too, that objections will be most strenuously urged against our position. We firmly and confidently maintain it. There must be a capacity for the motives of morality and religion, else there can be no actual motive to the choice of either. Without the proper motive neither can be chosen. Without the choice neither is possible. In this case certain rational ends of life, as below the moral and spiritual, would be the limit of our agency. It could not rise into the moral and religious sphere. No agency can rise a grade above its capabilities. As the agency of rational mind is impossible to mere animal instinct, so would moral and religious agency be impossible to man if without a capacity for the necessary moral and religious motives. There must be this capacity, either as native or gracious, else we cannot be under obligation to the choice of either. As mere animal instinct cannot be answerable to the laws of a rational life, no more could we be answerable to the laws of a good life if without a capacity for the necessary motives to its choice.

We are not unmindful of the relations of this question to Christian theology. It is easy to array the doctrine of a native depravity against this capacity for the motives of morality and religion. Both are truths, and without either contradiction or collision. Neither is less a truth for the reason of the other. The capacity for moral and religious motive is none the less sufficient for a proper moral and religious agency

because of its gracious original. It is a gracious endowment of fallen humanity through a redemptive economy.

We appeal the question of this capacity to the moral facts of human history, and none the less confidently because of the prevalent facts of moral darkness, stolidity, and vice. The moral life of humanity is double, a life within a life. With all the facts of evil there are the more widely prevalent facts which evince the common sense of moral obligation and responsibility and the common appreciation of obedience to the duties of morality and religion as the supreme excellence and wisdom of human life. These facts require, as their necessary source, a subjective state, which constitutes a capacity for the motives of morality and religion, and hence conclude its reality. As for the question of moral freedom, it is indifferent whether the source of this capacity be native or gracious. For the consistency of Scripture truth it must have a gracious original.

The motives of morality and religion are the paramount motives of human life. They are such, not only in intrinsic quality and as objective motives, which few question and the moral consciousness of humanity affirms, but also as realizable in experience. Only as the objective motive is properly apprehended in the consciousness can there be any actual motive. The possibility of this realization lies in our subjective motivity to the paramount motives of morality and religion as previously treated. Hence, in the realizations of experience the good may have for us the highest eligibility and be chosen against the enticements of evil.

Then the power of rational and moral agency, as previously explained, gives us the command of these paramount motives of life. It is simply the power of placing the mind in practical relation to the great truths and facts which embody the motives of morality and religion. We can determine our profound attention to these great questions and study them just as we do in the case of secular questions. Our moral motivations will answer to these great motive truths and facts so apprehended and meditated. Conscience and moral reason are, at least, potential realities with every one yet under a law of moral probation. They only wait for the proper reflection to rise into activities of a profound conscious interest in the ends

which they concern. In these activities shall thus be realized in experience the paramount motives to the choice of the good. Thus, the thoughtless can pause and reflect, while moral duty and the interests which hinge upon it shall rise upon his view as of all things the most imperative and important. The worldly mind can deeply concern itself with heavenly things. The sensual can apprehend the higher and diviner law of temperance and purity. The covetous and selfish can ponder the law of charity and realize its imperative claim. The hard and cruel can yield to the pathos of kindness and sympathy.

This is no doctrine of instantaneous self-regeneration, or of self-regeneration in any sense. It is simply the law under which our moral agency can realize the paramount eligibility of the good. The power of this agency, especially within the moral and religious sphere, is a gracious endowment. Also the divine Spirit is ever present for our aid, and often active as a light in the moral reason and a quickening force in the conscience. Here is the deeper source and the sufficient source of a true moral agency, with the capacity for the motives of duty. The prevalent habits of evil are no necessary result of an impotence of the moral nature. Nor are they consequent simply to a non-use of the powers of moral agency, but often and mostly even from a persistent resistance to the spontaneous apprehensions of the moral reason and the impulses of conscience, especially as enlightened and quickened by the divine Spirit. These facts render it the more manifest that through the proper and obligatory use of the powers of our moral agency we can realize the paramount eligibility of the good and choose it against the evil.

This primary choice of the good is not the realization of a new spiritual life in regeneration, but is only, and can only be, the election of its attainment. The choice of such an end and its attainment are clearly separable facts. A new spiritual life in regeneration, if chosen as an end, still has its own law of effectuation, and in itself must be entirely from the divine Spirit. The sphere of *synergism* lies back of this, where, through the help of grace and a proper use of the powers of our spiritual agency, we may choose the good; while that of the divine *monergism* is specially in the work of moral regeneration. Here the doctrine of the most rigid monergist

is the reality of truth ; while synergism within its own sphere is equally the reality of truth.

Whoever, by private entreaty or public address, seeks to persuade any one from an evil to a good life must assume the very law of freedom which we here maintain. No one in such an endeavor allows the plea of indifference or moral insensibility, or the dominance of propensities to the evil, or the want of realized motives to the choice of the good, to close the case. He will urge any and all such to pause and think, to take into thought and reflection the profound obligations and interests of morality and religion, on the apprehension of which, with the divine help, the paramount motives to the good shall be realized in experience when the good can be chosen against the evil. Every earnest moral and religious worker does this. The true evangelistic workers of the Christian centuries, and without respect to theological creed, have so entreated and persuaded the thoughtless and vicious. Thus prophets and apostles and the Master himself entreated evil men. So shall we continue to do. It is all groundless and without possible result, except as the evil have a capacity for moral and religious motives, and a power of personal agency whereby they may so place their minds in cognitive relation to the good that it shall be apprehended in the moral reason and in a profound conscious interest as supremely eligible.

TRUE FREEDOM OF CHOICE.

This is the doctrine of a rational and a real freedom. It rests upon no false ground, and is constructed with no irrelevant or irreconcilable principles. Every vitally related fact of psychology and personal agency has its proper place and office.

It is not the freedom of arbitrary volition, or the liberty of indifference. A life without interest in its chosen ends must be utterly forceless and useless. Indeed, it could have no chosen ends. It is the sheerest assumption that either the primary choice of the good or the maintenance of a good life is possible, with indifference to goodness and its blessedness as ends. The assumption is utterly unphilosophic and groundless. The theory of a valid and responsible freedom under a law of moral inability is of all theories the most irra-

tional. It requires that the good be chosen, not only without actual motive, but also against the dominance of inevitable counter motive. By so much does it sink below the liberty of indifference or the freedom of mere arbitrary volition.

The doctrine here maintained is clear of all these errors. Personal agency is the ground truth. This agency must be a reality, else there can be no place for the question of freedom. If a reality, it must have all requisite faculties. Then freedom should no longer be a question in issue. Its denial is the equivalent of a denial of personal agency in man. Rational agency and free rational agency really express the same truth. Moral agency and free moral agency are the same. For required choices sufficient motives are within command. This is a rational freedom.

It is not the freedom of moral impotence, impotence in the very seat of the necessary potency. It is the freedom of personal agency, with power for required choices. It is sufficient for the sphere of responsible life. Spontaneous motive states often tend toward the irrational and the evil, and the more strongly in many instances from previous vicious indulgence. But as rational and moral agents we have power against them, a gracious power, indeed, through the paramount motives of prudence and wisdom and duty. We can summon into thought and reflection, and into the apprehension of conscience and the moral reason, all the counter motives of obligation and spiritual well-being, as they may arise in the view of God and redemption and the eternal destinies. With these resources of paramount motive, and the light and blessing of the Holy Spirit, ever-gracious and helpful, we may freely choose the good against the evil. This is the reality of freedom in choice.

Any scheme of volitional necessitation, whether of theology, philosophy, or materialistic evolution, must utterly deny the necessary and manifest laws and facts of our rational and moral agency.

ART. IV.—OUR GERMAN METHODISM: ITS HOPES
AND DANGERS.

OCCASIONALLY the assertion is being made that German Methodism in the United States of America has attained its growth both as to numbers and efficaciousness, that the rising generation is becoming more and more Americanized and thereby drawn from her embrace; and that, therefore, this part of the Methodist Episcopal Church must necessarily suffer a gradual decline of membership, and should German immigration grow less or possibly cease, German Methodism would eventually become extinct.

It is also being remarked that German Methodism, as well as the whole Church, has lost much spiritual strength, waxed cold in love, and is less zealous and less successful in her endeavors to save immortal souls as compared with twenty-five years ago. If these assertions are based upon irrefutable facts, then the first part of our proposition, "the hopes of German Methodism," is of no avail, and a lamentation over the sorrowful facts would be in order rather than an attempt to dwell and enlarge upon the grand work God has been and is doing through the instrumentality of German Methodism among the Germans of our country. In treating a subject we are ever to bear in mind that there are "two sides to the question," and the conclusion depends very much upon the aspect from which it is viewed. He who looks through colored glass cannot behold an object in its clear light, and he who views German Methodism with a prepossessed mind or from a nativistic standpoint, cannot expect to judge soundly of the same.

Beyond doubt a serious error occurred in the administration of the affairs of the Methodist Episcopal Church at the close of the last century by rejecting Jacob Albright, as missionary to the Germans who had settled in this country. He was converted and licensed as a local preacher in 1790, and in 1796 began to itinerate among his people, believing that he was called of God to labor in their interest and to preach in the German language. He labored with great success. Many were converted and united with the Church. The Discipline was published in German, and the foundation laid for per-

manent work among his kinsmen. Mr. Albright applied to be appointed missionary by the authorities of the Church, but the objection was raised that preaching must be in English in order to Americanize the German population coming to the shores of our country. Had Mr. Albright been appointed to this special field and encouraged, as he should have been, what an ample harvest would have been prepared for the reaping of Dr. Nast and others! Not being recognized by the Church in the capacity to which Mr. Albright felt divinely called, he and his German converts were constrained to withdraw in 1807 and organize an independent Conference, which has grown into an excellent and prosperous Church, the Evangelical Association, numbering at present over one hundred thousand members.

Although Mr. Albright and his followers labored with such marked success, the steady increase of German immigration to the United States arrested the attention of Christian minds more and more. The religious state of the German population was deplorable indeed. The menacing growth of Romanism and infidelity, as well as the low moral condition of the nominally Protestant German Churches, caused alarm. Many of them were without any synodical relations, served by irresponsible and self-constituted ministers, who roved from place to place, and were in many instances outspoken rationalists. Even many of the Churches in regular standing in Lutheran and Reformed Synods were, according to reliable testimony, sunken in deep spiritual slumber. Then again, there were many German settlements throughout the country either too poor or too indifferent to connect themselves with any Church organization, living from year to year without any religious influences.

In the year 1833 Messrs. Holliday and Wright, the Western Book Agents, earnestly advocated the establishment of a German mission in the city of Cincinnati, where even then, as well as now, every third man was a German, but no suitable man could be found. In 1834 Bishop Emory, impressed with the importance of such a work, had issued, in the "*Western Christian Advocate*," a call for a minister able to preach in German and willing to enter upon such a mission. Just at this time, when the interest of the Church in the religious welfare of the Germans had reached its highest pitch, Dr. William Nast, the founder of German Methodism, was glori-

ously converted to God. This was on January 17, 1835. In the fall of the same year he was appointed by the Ohio Conference, into which he had been received on trial, as "German missionary in the city of Cincinnati."

The origin and growth of German Methodism, as an integral part of the Methodist Episcopal Church, may be justly pronounced as marvelous and marked by the most providential circumstances. Forty-five years ago, as we have seen, there was nothing but a poor, and, as some thought, hopeless beginning at Cincinnati. In his first year of missionary labor, which was performed under great trials and difficulties, Mr. Nast was permitted to count three clear conversions, one of them being John Zwahlen, who became a most successful Methodist preacher. At the close of the second year the first German society of the Methodist Episcopal Church consisted of twenty-six members. From this small beginning German Methodism has had a gradual increase and developed herself into a vigorous and healthy part of our great ecclesiastical body. To-day we number eight German Conferences, with 38,379 members, and 4,741 probationers, making a total membership of 43,120.

It is truly remarkable that the growth of German Methodism has not suffered a single intermission from the beginning to the present day. This is more than can be said of the parent Church. Through the O'Kelly excitement and schism, in 1792, a decrease of membership was reported of 1,035 in 1794, 6,317 in 1795, and 3,627 in 1796; making a total loss of 10,979 members in three years. In 1814 there was a decrease of 3,178, and in 1815 a decrease of 36. In 1836 a decrease of 1,840 was reported, and during the late war, from 1861 to 1864, a loss of 68,661 members was sustained. The growth of German Methodism has been a regular one. In 1847 there were 4,385 members; twenty years later, in 1867, 27,876. At the close of the next ten years, 1877, 40,515, and in 1880, 43,120 members and probationers. From the tenth to the thirtieth year the average yearly increase has been 1,174; in the next ten years, 1,264; in 1879, 1,165, and in 1880, 1,640. These figures prove conclusively that German Methodism is not in a state of decline, but enjoys a healthy increase from year to year. It may be said this is a very small yearly increase of membership among so many Germans

in this land. This is true. But we must bear in mind that the average yearly increase of the Methodist Episcopal Church has not been any greater in proportion to her numbers, opportunities, and facilities. German Methodism has not only held pace with the parent Church, but has, in some instances, outranked her, as we shall have occasion to show hereafter. Again, although German immigration has been on the decline in the last few years, (excepting in 1880,) German Methodism did not experience a corresponding falling off in accessions; indeed, the greatest increase at any one period of her existence is reported in 1875, which is 2,194 members.

In 1870 German Methodism reported 458 churches, at a probable value of \$1,367,200; and 196 parsonages, valued at \$246,550. In 1880, 641 churches, at a value \$1,886,459; and 306 parsonages, at a probable value of \$335,087. This shows an increase of 183 churches and 110 parsonages, with an increase of probable value of \$607,796.

In 1870 German Methodism raised \$17,234 47 for the missionary cause; in 1880, \$25,097 11. In looking over the "Manual of the Methodist Episcopal Church,"* we find an article entitled "A Word about Averages," in which it is shown that not a single German Conference in this country fell below an average of fifty cents a member for missions, while the total average amounts to fifty-eight cents per member. It is further said of these Conferences, "That they are not [below this high average] is due not to their pecuniary ability, but to their more thorough system in their efforts to conform *literally* to the requirements of the chapter on the support of missions in the Book of Discipline. . . . Not twenty Conferences exceed fifty cents a member, and only one, the Southern German, exceeds \$1, though the East German is within a few mills of \$1."

It may be proper to show, in a summary way, the amounts contributed by German Methodism last year:

Missionary collections.....	\$25,097	Average per member.....	\$0 58
Other collections.....	31,988	" "	74
Sunday-schools.....	20,280	" "	47
Current expenses.....	29,224	" "	68
Payment on debts.....	39,203	" "	91
New buildings, etc.....	78,755	" "	1 82
Preachers' salaries.....	252,038	" "	5 85
Total.....	\$476,585	Total average per member.	\$11 05

* Vol. i, No. 2, p. 80.

This is, indeed, a good showing for the benevolence of German Methodism, especially if we take into consideration that but few members can be called wealthy. It is the laboring man who, after providing for a large family, still has a surplus for the Lord's corn-house.

Again: The Sunday-school work of German Methodism has also been blessed with signal success in the last decade. In 1870 there were reported 518 Sunday-schools, 5,267 officers and teachers, 27,937 scholars, and 63,628 library books.

In 1880 there were 777 Sunday-schools, 8,212 officers and teachers, 41,301 scholars, 64,669 library books, and 1,416 conversions reported in Sunday-schools. German Methodism is most zealously engaged in the Sunday-school work and catechetical instruction of her youth. Dr. Henry Liebhart, editor of German Sunday-school publications and tracts, has well said: * "Earnestness, thoroughness, and simplicity are the characteristics of the schools. The German Sunday-school workers have only one aim in view, namely, the conversion and edification of the scholars. To achieve this the best approved methods are employed, no time being squandered with doubtful experiments or discussions of new theories. The International Lesson System is universally introduced, and has proved a blessing to German schools. It operates admirably well in every respect, and has by no means been a hinderance to catechetical instruction; for the German Methodists are working out the only true theory in regard to the Catechism, holding that it is not enough to teach it in the Sunday-schools, but demanding of their pastors that their children shall receive regular and thorough catechetical instruction, at set hours during the week, and the German Methodist preachers perform this duty faithfully and gladly, because they are deeply convinced of the great importance and immense value of such instruction." In order to facilitate the German Sunday-school work, Dr. Liebhart organized ten Sunday-school districts throughout the bounds of German Methodism, in which he conducts Sunday-school Conferences at regular intervals. Of these meetings it can be said that they have become established institutions of German Methodism, exerting a good influence, inspiring the workers, spreading instruction, introducing new

* "Manual of the Methodist Episcopal Church," vol. i, No. 1, p. 30.

methods, and stimulating the interest in the cause generally. The Chautauqua plan has also been introduced, and a German literary society organized, which is a branch of the Chautauqua Literary and Scientific Circle, and began operations in October, 1880.

In educational matters German Methodism has followed in the footsteps of the parent Church. Already four institutions of learning have been established and are in successful operation in the United States. Thus far German Methodists have shown commendable liberality to all these institutions. Ninety per cent. of all moneys expended for them has been paid by German Methodists, only ten per cent. coming from the English-speaking people. The biblical department of the German Wallace College, of Berea, Ohio, has been especially successful. During twenty years past eighty of its students have entered the German ministry of the Church, and many others are already occupying honorable positions in other professions. German Methodism has the honor of establishing the first orphan asylum of the Methodist Episcopal Church, upon which God's blessing has signally rested. The Church periodicals and Sunday-school literature are in a prosperous condition. The "Christliche Apologete," with an increase of size and subscribers, is doing a noble work for German Methodism in inculcating Methodist doctrines, and in the advocacy of all the institutions of the Church. "Haus und Herd" is proving a success and meeting a demand of German readers, and the "Sunday-School Bell" is not only a favorite among German Methodists, but is joyfully received in many non-Methodistic families and Sunday-schools.

But let us take a view of the spiritual condition and inner life of German Methodism. The old maxim of Wesleyan Methodism, "Holiness of heart and life," is not only still adhered to, but has of late taken a greater and deeper hold upon the minds and hearts of German Methodists. The doctrine of full salvation through the blood of Jesus Christ is preached and believed, professed and carried out in practical life. On the great question of temperance German Methodism occupies a clear and most decided position.

The same can be said of the observance of the Sabbath-day. There are more camp-meetings, basket-meetings, holiness and

Sunday-school conventions being held from year to year. We have, perhaps, less great and shouting revivals than at the beginning of German Methodism, nevertheless, the work done is deep and of permanent results; there are but few backsliders among those who once embraced religion, and in knowledge of God's word, Christian experience, systematic beneficence, and godly life, German Methodism of to-day is equal to any former period.

Again, it is objected that German Methodism has lost its characteristic stamp of plainness and simplicity, as well as outward influence upon the world. But we must bear in mind that the commercial and social conditions of the people of our country have undergone a material alteration in the last twenty years. This digression, therefore, is not so much due to the change of German Methodism as it is to the change of the surrounding circumstances.

That German Methodism has suffered a loss in regard to her influence upon the masses, we doubt very much. It is to be remembered, in the first place, that she never was very successful in drawing large numbers from the classes of the so-called higher educated, from the wealthy, or from the beer and whisky venders and consumers; her influence and success has always been limited to the middle classes. Secondly, German Protestantism was in former years in too low a spiritual condition to offer the hungering masses of Germans any food for their souls. A revival was an unheard-of thing in almost any German Protestant Church forty or fifty years ago. The greatest number of accessions to the Church in Cincinnati and other places, at any one time, consisted chiefly of members from other denominations, which to-day are supplied with pious men and successful ministers who understand how to build up their respective congregations. Thirdly, the German, therefore, coming to the United States to-day, and seeking a home and shelter for his soul, where he may enjoy heartfelt Christianity and religious fellowship, can, in many instances, find the same in his own Church, without being constrained to change his Church relations, as was often the case in former years.

That some of our congregations, in the larger cities, both East and West, have numerically decreased, can be accounted

for in a rational way. As for example, we will look at Cincinnati, Ohio, the cradle of German Methodism. There is hardly a congregation to be found in the Middle or Western States without a representative of Cincinnati among the membership. The Church records of our three congregations show that no less than three thousand members moved from Cincinnati. In this manner our congregations at New York, Cincinnati, St. Louis, and Chicago supplied the seed for a number of congregations throughout the entire country.

It has also been said, that in course of time the German language would die out in the United States, that the children of German Methodists are becoming Americanized to such an extent and rapid degree that German Methodism has no future, and that its increase depended entirely upon German immigration.

The first assertion is older than our century. This objection was made, as we have seen, to Mr. Jacob Albright's desire to be appointed by the authorities of the Church as missionary to the Germans. It was Bishop Asbury's opinion, one hundred years ago, that the German language in the State of Pennsylvania would soon die out. The history of the colonization of the United States proves conclusively that a foreign language can be carried into another country and there flourish for generations. For almost two hundred years the German language has held its own in the State of Pennsylvania, and that, too, without new immigration or German literature to any great extent. The same is true of the German colonies in Brazil, South America, of the Mennonites in slavish Russia, of the French in English Canada, and of the Hollanders in South Africa. The German language is to-day stronger and more extensively used in the United States than at any former period; it is introduced into quite a number of public schools, and receives continually more strength by the flood of German immigration which is pouring into our land. In the month of June, 1880, no less than 45,000 German immigrants landed in our different sea-ports. The city of New York has a population of 150,000 immigrated Germans, Chicago over 80,000, St. Louis over 60,000, and Cincinnati over 50,000. Multiplying these numbers by three, we have 450,000 Germans in New York city, 240,000 in Chicago, 180,000 in St. Louis, and

150,000 in Cincinnati. Will there be less in numbers in ten, twenty, or thirty years hence?

German language and German literature are a felt and recognized power in the United States. In cities, as well as in the country, German immigrants flock together. Cincinnati has her "over the Rhine," and all larger cities have their German quarters, where German language and customs are freely used. Germany, the land of literature in an eminent sense of the word, the land of philosophical thinking, of scientific and historic research, of the most radical and bold criticism, and of modern unbelief, is supplying the Germans of this country with the most extensive literature. The "*Gartenlaube*," a materialistic periodical of Germany, for instance, exports eighty thousand copies of each issue to the United States. These facts prove that the German language is alive and growing in our land, and that German Methodism has a great work to accomplish in spreading scriptural holiness among the German population. The youth of German Methodism, in some instances, it is true, is becoming Americanized and is drifting away from the Church. In most cases, however, these are such that have become alienated from Christianity to such a degree that they seek society in the world rather than in an English-speaking congregation. As a rule, German Methodism holds her youth. They are taught the German Bible and Catechism. They are indoctrinated into Methodism through the medium of the German language, and although they often appear very much Americanized in business life and in society, in their religion, however, they are decidedly German. All technical terms and expressions of a biblical discourse are more familiar to them and more readily understood in their mother tongue, though they may talk the queen's English ever so fluently. This accounts for the fact that the writer of these lines has had but two applications for a letter of recommendation in a sixteen-years' itinerancy, to be presented to English congregations. There are many congregations throughout German Methodism where but a small per cent. of her youth is lost from her embrace on account of the German language.

In viewing German Methodism, in the light of its history, development, present condition, and results obtained, we are entitled to the conclusion that the outlook into the future is a

hopeful and promising one. Methodism is a revival of earnest and primitive Christianity, and this is as much needed among our German population as at other places where all is spiritually dead. The doctrines of Methodism are drawn directly from the Bible; that is its real and not merely theoretical standard of faith, and that is what the Germans of this country pre-eminently need. German Methodism is no doubtful experiment of the parent Church, but an established fact. It is no passing shade upon the ecclesiastical dominion, but a power felt and making itself known more and more in saving souls as brands plucked from the eternal burnings, and as long as the German language shall be known and used as a means of speech, so long will German Methodism continue its God-given mission.

What, then, are the dangers threatening German Methodism? Church history informs us that, from the beginning, two formidable foes did much harm to the Church of Christ, namely, heresy and secularization. In regard to the first-named foe, heresy, we cannot perceive any danger for German Methodism. It is, indeed, a significant fact, that there has been no division among Methodists in Europe or America on questions of doctrine. The doctrines of Methodism are popular with the German Methodists, because they approve themselves to the mind and heart. Free grace, universal atonement, personal responsibility, salvation by faith, witness of the Spirit, and perfect love, are, and will ever be, popular Scripture doctrines, because they are clearly taught in the Bible, and the German Methodist believes them most heartily. As to the economy of the Methodist Episcopal Church, German Methodists are truly loyal. They believe not only in the doctrines of Holy Scripture as set forth in the articles of religion of the Methodist Episcopal Church, but they are also cheerfully willing to be governed by the rules of the same.

The chief danger threatening German Methodism can be expressed by the term secularization. This has ever been a great hinderance in promoting the religion of Jesus Christ. In almost every instance where the Christian Church succeeded in setting aside heresy and accommodating differences arising out of one-sidedness or narrowness of views, secularization stealthily crept into its clergy and laity, doing great damage to

the cause of Christ. The immediate result of secularization is indifferentism and dead formalism. This is the pestilence that walketh in darkness, and the destruction that wasteth at noon-day. The apostles of Christ had to battle with this foe in the different Churches they established, and the Roman Church of the mediæval age was thoroughly penetrated by it. Although Luther, together with other reformers, succeeded in giving this enemy a great blow, and to diffuse new life into the Church through the great work of Reformation they, under the guidance of God, carried out; nevertheless it is secularization, with all its consequences, which to-day has laid Christianity in Germany so low, doing, in many instances, more direct and immediate harm to God's cause than outspoken infidelity. And to-day it is secularization of the nominal Christians in the heathen world which greatly impedes the progress and work of evangelizing these dark lands.

In this direction, then, we descry danger for German Methodism, as well as for Christianity at large. What we need is more extended personal religious activity among preachers and members, promoted and utilized by the various means of grace in use and methods of operation, a holding fast to the spiritual life, the doctrines, the economy, the liberality and active benevolence of the Methodist Episcopal Church, which are, indeed, suited to the Germans as well as to all classes of mankind.

German Methodism has a great task to perform in America as well as in Germany, in spreading scriptural holiness among those who are sunken in infidelity and rationalism, indifferentism and formalism, and in provoking the sister denominations to a more thorough and extended effort of Christian labor for immortal souls. A great work is being done in Germany. Already we number 68 itinerant preachers, 59 local preachers, 9,444 full members, 2,377 probationers, 372 Sunday-schools, 1,522 officers and teachers, and 18,716 Sunday-school scholars. A great future evidently lies before Methodism in Germany. Religious liberty now prevails through nearly all the German Empire and Switzerland, and a large increase of Methodism in Germany may be looked for in the next ten years. Not a few German immigrants coming to America are already in full sympathy with German Methodism and heartily enter into its ranks.

The success of German Methodism in the future depends upon a pentecostal anointing, which will increase the spirituality, strengthen the zeal for the right, give courage and vigor against sin, and multiply the work of conversions of souls, and the sanctification of believers. May the whole Church be imbued with this power !

ART. V.—THE RELATIONS OF THE CHURCHES AND
MR. GARRISON TO THE AMERICAN ANTISLAVERY
MOVEMENT.

[SECOND ARTICLE.]

III. *The period of intense and more decisive organized effort, (1832–63,) from the organization of the New England Antislavery Society, January 6, 1832, to the consummation of emancipation, under the proclamation of President Lincoln, January 1, 1863.*

Mr. William Lloyd Garrison was confessedly a conspicuous actor in this period. His advent into public life was at an opportune moment. While many friends of the slave were waiting and praying for some providential way to be opened for the liberation of the oppressed multitudes, Mr. Garrison reached manhood, and caught inspiration from the examples of the English antislavery reformers, brilliant with omens of approaching success. On January 1, 1831, he issued the first number of the "Liberator," and three years and a half later emancipation was an accomplished fact in the British West Indies. Under the influence of such inspiring events Mr. Garrison boldly proclaimed his distinctive thesis of immediate and unconditional emancipation. Following in the wake of British antislavery reformers, and ignoring the radical difference in the constitutional possibilities of the two governments, he uncompromisingly, severely, and bitterly maintained a line of antislavery action, which necessarily separated many good, discreet men from affiliation with him.

It was impossible for them to see any way in which immediate and unconditional emancipation could be effected. They deemed his policy unwise and impracticable, hurtful and perilous to the best interests of the slave. But, with him, to be

non-Garrisonian was to be pro-slavery, deserving of implacable denunciation. We shall see him oftentimes practically working against the cause he sought to promote.

But even the Garrisonian antislavery societies grew out of the religious sentiment and the Churches. Nearly all of the twelve persons who organized the New England Antislavery Society, in January, 1832, were members of the Evangelical Churches. From the pen of Mr. Oliver Johnson,* the youngest of them all, then an editor of a religious paper, a member of Dr. Beecher's Church, and a candidate for the ministry, we learn the religious relations of each. Robert B. Hall was a theological student, and a member of the Essex-street Congregational Church. Arnold Buffum, the first president of the society, was a Rhode Island Quaker, who had traveled in England, and was acquainted with Clarkson and Wilberforce. William J. Snelling was a journalist. John E. Fuller was a business man, and a member of Dr. Beecher's Church. Moses Thatcher was the editor of the Boston "Telegraph," and pastor of the Congregational Church at North Wrentham. Joshua Coffin was the gentleman honored in Whittier's lines, "To my old School-master." Stillman J. Newcomb was an earnest religious man. Benjamin C. Bacon was a religious young man, *employé* in the office of the American Education Society. Isaac Knapp was Mr. Garrison's partner in publishing the "Liberator." Henry K. Stockton was a printer by trade, connected with the Boston "Telegraph." Nearly all were religious men connected with Evangelical Churches.

Mr. Garrison's religious position at that time deserves fuller notice. His later religious views having undergone considerable change, and excited diverse inquiries and comments, it is a matter of considerable interest to state in detail his earlier religious convictions, under the influence of which he entered upon this great movement.

Those who knew him well, in his earlier years, have said that he possessed a nature deeply religious, "a positive genius for ethics," unusual keenness of moral perception, an invincible moral courage, and "sympathy for the unfortunate that scorned the limitations of race, color, or clime." On coming to Boston, in 1826, at the age of twenty-one years, he was recognized as

* "Christian Union," August 12, 1874.

soundly orthodox, and was a devout worshiper in Dr. Lyman Beecher's Church. He was not a communicant, but had great reverence for God, for Christ, and the institutions of Christianity. "His views," says Oliver Johnson, "were neither Rationalistic nor Liberal, but soundly orthodox. The Bible was his constant companion, the armory from which he drew the weapons of his warfare. No clergyman or theological professor was more familiar with the Old Testament or the New than he was. The Hebrew prophets, Christ and his Apostles were his model reformers, and his faith in God and the moral law was scarcely inferior to theirs." *

His interpretation of Christianity was eminently orthodox, and he relied upon revivals of religion as the hopeful instrumentalities for the liberation of the slaves. In 1831 he declared, in the "Liberator," that "nothing but extensive revivals of pure religion could save the country from great plagues and sudden destruction;" that religious conversions are scriptural occurrences; that "the kingdoms of this world can never become 'the kingdom of our Lord and his Christ' independently of great revivals;" that "if the present revivals be (as we trust they are) the fruit of the Holy Spirit, we pray that they may embrace the nation," etc.

Mr. Garrison was also at this time a strict observer of the Sabbath,† and "would no sooner have gone to the post-office

* In the "Liberator," (April 12, 1831,) he said: "*The Bible! The Bible!* how shall we subdue the obdurate heart, and awaken the seared conscience, and successfully impeach the criminal conduct of slave owners; how shall we operate upon public opinion, and call into vigorous exercise the moral energies of the nation, and establish justice throughout our borders, and break down the middle walls of partition which separate man from his fellow-men; how shall we preach deliverance to the captives, and the opening of the prison doors to them that are bound, and transform the benighted and suffering slave into an enlightened and happy freeman, and the haughty master into a familiar friend—how shall we accomplish this, and more, without the Bible? . . . Take away the Bible, and our warfare with oppression and infidelity and intemperance and impurity and crime is at an end; our weapons are wrested away, our foundation is removed; we have no authority to speak, no courage to act."

† In the "Liberator," in 1831, appeared the following sonnet from his pen:

"THE SABBATH-DAY.

"Faint prototype of Heaven, blest Sabbath-day!
Emblem of an eternal rest to come;
Emancipator from vile Mammon's sway,
At whose approach a noisy world is dumb;

for his letters and papers, or taken a walk for recreation on that day, than he would have committed a theft."

His antislavery career was the legitimate outcome of a heart profoundly stirred with deep religious convictions, and all his early compeers derived their impulse from the same source. New laborers, inspired by the same feelings, came forth through the successive years of this great agitation, representing the piety and the philanthropy of pure Christianity.

Under the leadership of prominent representatives of the Churches other antislavery societies and several antislavery papers were soon started. The "Emancipator" was established in New York city, in March, 1833, by Hon. Arthur Tappan, under the editorial supervision of Rev. Charles W. Dennison. In October following, in response to a call issued by Rev. Joshua Leavitt, the New York City Antislavery Society was organized; and on December 4 the American Antislavery Society, in Philadelphia, the latter holding its first anniversary meeting May 6, 1834, in the Chatham-street Chapel, N. Y. In June, 1835, the New England Wesleyan Antislavery Society was organized in Lynn, Mass., by about seventy ministers of the New England Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church. The following month the New Hampshire Conference of the same Church organized a similar society. These are a few of the leading societies constituted at this early period, and which, in the course of eight years, numbered more than two thousand, with two hundred thousand members. Of the persons participating in the organization of the American Antislavery Society and in its first anniversary, more than one third were ministers of the Gospel, and two thirds of the remainder were either lay officials or private members of the Churches. As early as 1832, Rev. Beriah Greek, Professor of Sacred Literature in Western Reserve College, Ohio, published four stirring antislavery sermons; and in 1833 Rev. Elizur Wright, another

Unerring regulator, sacred pledge;
 Best friend and soother of the poor and weak;
 A resting-place in our drear pilgrimage,
 Where soul and body may refreshment seek;
 If thou were blotted out, our moral sun,
 The huge eclipse would dress the world in gloom;
 Confusion dire would seize on every one,
 And peace, love, order, find a hasty tomb;
 Then would oppression reign, then lust rebel,
 Then violence abound, and earth resemble hell!"

professor in that institution, published a powerful essay against slavery.

The first antislavery meetings encountered violent opposition. Hissing, mobs, peltings, personal abuse, and social ostracism followed the reformers. The New York City Antislavery Society was driven from its place of meeting, and the celebration by the American Antislavery Society, on July 4, 1834, was broken up. The house of Lewis Tappan was sacked, and the churches and homes of colored people were assaulted and damaged. In August, 1834, a fearful riot raged three nights in Philadelphia, and similar outrages were perpetrated elsewhere. Cruel and dastardly assaults were made upon Abolitionists, countenanced, and often excited by men of position and wealth, and sometimes by members of Churches. The public journals were vehicles of scandalous accusations against the reformers, misrepresenting their purposes, motives, and acts. Churches and public halls alike were often closed against them, and they were made to feel that they held property and liberty, if not life itself, at the mercy of excited, lawless men. It was, indeed, a reign of terror. Rev. Orange Scott, a presiding elder in the Methodist Episcopal Church, while delivering an antislavery address in Worcester, Mass., August 10, 1835, was assaulted, and his notes seized and torn to pieces by a mob, led by a son of an ex-governor of the Commonwealth. In the same year Rev. George Storrs, another Methodist minister, while lecturing in New Hampshire, was arrested by a deputy sheriff, on the charge of being "a common rioter and brawler." Soon after, at another antislavery meeting, he was again arrested and dragged from his knees, while Rev. Mr. Curtis was in prayer. A meeting of an antislavery society, composed of some of the most cultured ladies in Boston, was broken up in October, 1835, by a mob composed of "gentlemen of property and standing," the mayor and marshal declining protection. On the same day Mr. Garrison was seized, led with a rope around his neck, and his clothes were torn from his body. The mayor * finally interposed, rescued him, and lodged him

* In 1837, Massachusetts' most classic orator and governor warned the abolitionists that the agitation of the slavery question would be regarded as "an offense against the peace of the Commonwealth, which might be prosecuted as a misdemeanor at common law."

in jail to save him from fury. These are a few of a long series of outrages, in which the mobbing of Hon. George Thompson, the eminent English philanthropist, the assassination of Lovejoy and Bewley, and the martyrdom of Torrey and John Brown were conspicuous.

The action of the Churches and the ministry during this period has been severely censured. The clergy were accused of backwardness, and even positive opposition. It was said that some had to be dragged into the service, if they rendered any aid. In the autumn of 1830 Mr. Garrison made several efforts to obtain a church * or a hall in Boston in which to deliver three free antislavery addresses. After many unsuccessful personal applications, he advertised in the "Courier," but no Church in Boston responded to his appeal. This was before the publication of the "Liberator," and fifteen months before the New England Antislavery Society was organized. Mr. Garrison's religious views were not then distrusted, but he was known to be "soundly orthodox," and a regular worshiper at Dr. Lyman Beecher's Church. Failing to obtain a church, a society of avowed infidels, organized in Boston by Abner Kneeland, having control of Julien Hall, in Milk-street, offered it gratuitously to Mr. Garrison, and it was thankfully accepted.

But this was only the beginning of a long series of adverse movements by religious bodies, against this great reform. Many Christian men of positive antislavery principles turned their backs upon the Garrison societies, while others filled their mouths with apologies for slaveholding, and others still stoutly and learnedly defended the institution from the Bible. The Protestant Episcopal Bishop of a New England diocese belonged to the latter class. Another, the president of a New England college, declared that slavery was not only a positive institution of revealed religion, but also compatible with the law of love. A Boston minister, visiting the South for his health, pictured slavery in a rose-colored hue, and a learned theological professor, in a treatise, called the higher-law doctrine a heresy, and advocated the duty of returning slaves to

* *Per contra*, it may be said that Jesse Lee and other early Methodist preachers could not obtain the use of churches for religious services. For several successive weeks he sought in vain to get a church to preach in, in Boston.

bondage. The moral jargon increased, and the opposition grew fiercer, hotter, and more implacable.

The American Churches became deeply stirred, and appropriate action was taken in many Conferences and Associations, while in others the action was sometimes reprehensible.

The Friends, who inherited and cherished their earlier anti-slavery testimony as a precious legacy from their fathers, after the Missouri Compromise contest, in common with other Churches, felt the general stupor, and were disinclined to attack slavery. This spirit manifested itself particularly among wealthy Friends engaged in the manufacture or sale of cotton, and in other commercial pursuits. "The Quakers in New England," said Oliver Johnson, "as a body, instead of welcoming the anti-slavery movement and giving it encouragement, set themselves firmly but insidiously against it, generally refusing to open their meeting-houses for antislavery lectures, preventing their members, as far as possible, from uniting with the antislavery society, and sometimes dismissing those who were independent enough to co-operate with the Abolitionists." There were honorable individual exceptions. But many of those included in Mr. Johnson's censure were persons whose only fault was that they did not pronounce the Garrisonian shibboleth.

The Congregational Churches, wholly a northern body, and consequently without ecclesiastical entanglements with the South in any organic form, were embarrassed and often seriously compromised by the influence of prominent members engaged in the manufacture of cotton, or connected with slavery, in commercial, social, or political relations. Nevertheless, it was well represented in the struggle. Revs. Amos A. Phelps, of Boston; William Goodell and Joshua Leavitt, of New York city; S. S. Jocelyn, of New Haven; and David Thurston, of Maine, were in the antislavery field as early as 1833, attending and actively participating in the organization of the American Antislavery Society in Philadelphia, in December of that year. Rev. Mr. Thurston was for many years one of its agents, and Rev. Messrs. Phelps, Leavitt, and Goodell, were editors and agents for many years, in the service of antislavery societies. As early as 1837, fully one third of the Congregational ministers in Massachusetts were enrolled members of antislavery societies.

"The antislavery society in Amherst College, in 1834, had 76 members, of whom 70 were professors of religion; 30 of them had consecrated themselves to the foreign missionary work, and 20 to home missionary service in the West. In 1834 the trustees of Lane Seminary (Cincinnati) prohibited the open discussion of slavery by the students, and four fifths of the students withdrew from the institution. A number of them, including Theodore D. Weld,* Henry B. Stanton, and Ichabod Coddling, became at once antislavery lecturers, and went from State to State defending the rights of the slave. The breaking up of the classes in Lane Seminary led to the organization of the theological department at Oberlin, and in this great reform Oberlin took an early and prominent part. Mr. Finney refused to become president of a college unless colored students were allowed to enjoy its privileges. The Hon. Salmon P. Chase was wont to ascribe his elevation to the United States Senate to the influence of Oberlin.†

"So far as Congregationalism is concerned," says the editor of the "Congregational Quarterly," it should be remembered that the leading Garrisonians, Henry C. Wright, Parker Pillsbury, and Stephen S. Foster, imbibed their antislavery sentiments, but not their fanaticism, from Congregational sources, for they were originally Congregational ministers or candidates for that office. . . . I freely acknowledge that the Church did not do its whole duty. In our own denomination the prominent ministers, particularly, seemed to be unduly subject to commercial influences. Still the true picture, although it has dark shades, is luminous and attractive."‡

The Free-will Baptists, located almost entirely in the North, kept clear of the evil, and were decided in their protests against it, on account of which the New Hampshire Legislature, for many years an ultra-Democratic body, refused to grant an act of incorporation for their publishing house.

* While Mr. Weld was holding a series of meetings in Steubenville, Ohio, he noticed a young lawyer in his audience, evening after evening, taking notes. At the close of his last lecture the young man came forward and introduced himself, remarking, "I came here resolved to answer you, and have taken notes of every lecture; but you have converted me." That young lawyer was Edwin M. Stanton, and thus God raised up for Mr. Lincoln's administration a fit Secretary of War.

† "Congregational Quarterly," 1876, p. 554.

‡ Ibid., p. 553.

The Protestant Episcopal Church, extending through the South, every-where maintained extremely conservative ground. Through all the antislavery agitations, and even during the late Civil War, her ministry, in their pulpits and ecclesiastical assemblies, studiously avoided the question of slavery, and all politico-religious matters. As the result, a considerable number of conservative, "South-side" politicians, disturbed by what was stigmatized as "political preaching" in other denominations, united with that Church, which tended to make it still more conservative.

The action of two other large denominations will be sketched more at length. The Presbyterian Church had many sharp contests on this question. In 1833 the Synod of Kentucky, after discussing for two days, with much spirit, a resolution declaring slavery within its bounds a great moral evil, inconsistent with the word of God, indefinitely postponed the subject; whereupon Rev. R. J. Breckenridge left the house, declaring, "Since God has forsaken the Synod of Kentucky, Robert J. Breckenridge will forsake it, too." The following year an able committee was directed to prepare a plan for the instruction and future emancipation of slaves. They reported the next year, recommending gradual emancipation. But the committee were in advance of the Synod, and their report failed of approval. Under what was characterized as "Northern aggressions," "inflammatory periodicals," etc., a reaction set in, and the prospects of emancipation became less hopeful. Slave laws were made more stringent, and Sabbath-schools for the slaves were suspended.

The subject of slavery was brought to the attention of the Presbyterian General Assembly in 1836, by the report of a committee, appointed the previous year to consider certain petitions and memorials. The majority recommended that no action be taken on the subject. The minority report proposed certain resolutions strongly opposed to slavery. After a variety of motions and propositions, the whole subject was indefinitely postponed by a vote of one hundred and fifty-six yeas to eighty-seven nays. Twenty-eight members protested against the decision. The excitement was very great during the debates.*

* "History of the Presbyterian Church in the United States," by Rev. E. H. Gillett, D.D., vol. ii, p. 524.

Very decided expressions followed this session of the Assembly, by the Southern press and the Southern Presbyteries. A member of the Assembly, in the Southern "Religious Telegraph," said, "I hope that another such Assembly will never meet but once again, and then only with full and delegated powers amicably to separate," the editor adding, "A crisis has come; if there can be no compromise, division must be tried." The Presbytery of Concord, N. C., said, "Rather than surrender the truth or perpetuate the present distracting agitation, we shall feel bound to submit to a division of the Church." The Presbytery of South Carolina said, "The parties ought to separate;" the Synod of Virginia said, "One thing that presses with peculiar force on the Presbyterian Church in the South is the spirit of abolition;" and the Charleston Union Presbytery (S. C.) declared that, "As the relation of master and slave is a civil institution, it is one on which the Church has no power to legislate."

A purely ecclesiastical question, in regard to the benevolent "boards" of the Church, with which the slavery question became complicated, hindered and embarrassed their action. A compromise quieted the South and prevented a rupture; but it was accomplished on the humiliating condition that slavery was no more to be allowed to disturb the General Assembly. Thus the South for some years shaped the policy of the Church.*

Subsequently the agitation was renewed. Year after year memorials and overtures were presented, eliciting warm and extended discussion, and resulting in action which failed to satisfy the more zealous antislavery men of the North, and excited dissatisfaction at the South. The antislavery sentiment of the Church was increasing, as was evident from the utterances of the General Assembly; but its official action, under the preponderating desire for unity, continually exposed it to criticism from radical reformers at the North and from apologists for slavery at the South.

In 1853 it was felt that "the Church" must come unto some unity with itself on the question of slavery. In response to overtures, both from the North and the South, the

* "History of the Presbyterian Church in the United States," by Rev. E. H. Gillett, D.D., vol. ii, pp. 526, 527.

Assembly proposed that the facts concerning the relation of the Southern Churches to slavery should be reported the next year; but the measure was denounced as inquisitorial. In 1856 a committee, appointed the previous year, reported on the constitutional power of the General Assembly over slave-holding in the Churches under their care, which, though adopted after a prolonged discussion, was offensive to Southern members. The South complained; and in 1857 the Presbytery of Lexington, Ky., gave official notice to the Assembly that many members of its Churches, as well as a number of its ministers and elders, held slaves "from principle" and "of choice," believing it to be right according to the Bible, and the Presbytery itself sustained them in their position. Had the Assembly desired, it was no longer possible to evade the issue. By a vote of one hundred and sixty-nine yeas to twenty-six nays, a report was adopted, which presented a summary history of the action of the successive Assemblies on the subject of slavery, and which "disapproved and earnestly condemned" the position of the Presbytery of Lexington, as opposed to the established convictions of the Church, and tending to mar its peace, seriously hinder its prosperity, and bring reproach upon Christianity. The report also called upon the Presbytery to review and rectify their position because "such doctrines and practice" could not "be permanently tolerated in the Presbyterian Church." Twenty-two members, representing the Southern Churches, and identifying their own case with the Lexington Presbytery, protested that this action "degraded the whole Southern Church," and was "the virtual excising of the South." Returning home, the protestants were sustained by their Presbyteries, and the result was the withdrawal of the Southern Churches under the care of the Assembly, and the formation of the United Synod of the Presbyterian Church. "Thus," says Dr. Gillett, "before political convulsions had occurred to rend the Church *through the State*, the body represented by the Constitutional General Assembly had defined its position, had attained internal harmony, and had thrown off an incubus, which, for years, had oppressed and crippled its energies." *

* "History of the Presbyterian Church in the United States," by Rev. E. H. Gillett, D.D., vol. ii, pp. 555-559.

This division was soon followed by another. A very considerable portion of the strength of the Presbyterian Church was within the limits of those States which seceded from the Federal Union in 1861; and "upon the Assembly of that year the long-deferred question pressed with the weight of an avalanche." The Assembly indicated its loyalty by appropriate resolutions, declaring its repugnance to a rebellion instituted in the interest of slavery, which were passed by a vote of one hundred and fifty-six yeas to sixty-six nays. The result was the secession of the Southern Churches and Presbyteries, and the formation of the Southern General Assembly.

The first movements against slavery in the Methodist Episcopal Church, in this period, were made in the New England and New Hampshire Conferences, under the leadership of Rev. Orange Scott in the former, and Rev. George Storrs in the latter. When Rev. Wilbur Fisk, D.D., in the New England Conference, in June, 1834, offered resolutions in favor of the Colonization Society, Mr. Scott moved to lay them on the table, which was carried after a stormy debate. In January, 1835, Mr. Scott commenced a long series of articles on slavery in the "*Zion's Herald*," (Boston;) and, on the 4th of February following, an "Appeal" to the Church on the subject of slavery appeared in the same paper, over the signatures of LeRoy Sunderland, Orange Scott, Abram D. Merrill, Shipley W. Wilson, George Storrs, and Jared Perkins. On the 8th of April a "Counter Appeal" appeared, written by Rev. D. D. Whedon, and signed by Wilbur Fisk, John Lindsey, Bartholomew Otheman, Hezekiah S. Ramsdell, Edward T. Taylor, Abel Stevens, Jacob Sanborn, and H. H. White. In June the New England and New Hampshire Conferences organized antislavery societies,* and made arrangements to circulate Wesley's "*Thoughts on Slavery*," and other documents. Thus was re-opened the antislavery agitation in the Methodist Episcopal Church.

* By invitation, the Hon. George Thompson, an English Wesleyan local preacher, preached a powerful sermon before the New England Conference, from Ezek. xxviii, 14-16. The North Bennett-street Methodist Episcopal Church was opened to Mr. Thompson, on fast day, for a sermon; and also for a meeting of the Ladies' Antislavery Society, which Mr. Thompson addressed; which acts, at a time when Mr. Thompson was every-where denounced, were highly commended in the "*Liberator*."

Then followed, in rapid succession, a long series of exciting events: the address of fourteen Baltimore ministers, and the report of the Ohio and Kentucky Conferences, disapproving of abolitionism; the address of Bishops Hedding and Emory, September 10, 1835, to the ministers and members of the Methodist Episcopal Church within the bounds of the New England and New Hampshire Conferences, expressing great solicitude on account of the excitement occasioned by agitating the subject of "immediate emancipation;" the address of Dr. Wilbur Fisk, one of the purest and best constituted minds in the Church, on the eve of his departure for Europe, in a similar style; the establishment of "Zion's Watchman," in New York city, January 1, 1836, devoted especially to the cause of abolition, with LeRoy Sunderland as editor; the resolutions of the Baltimore and New York Conferences, strongly condemning abolition and the "Watchman;" the presentation to the General Conference, at Cincinnati, (May, 1836,) of petitions from New England signed by 200 ministers and 2,284 laymen, praying for action against slavery; the censuring, by that body, of two of its members for attending and addressing an abolition meeting in Cincinnati; the passage of a resolution disclaiming any "right, wish, or intention to interfere with the civil and political relation between master and slave, as it exists;" the attempt of the Southern members to elect a slaveholding Bishop, contrary to the established policy of the Church; the exciting scenes in 1837 over the slavery question, at the New England and the New Hampshire Conferences, and in Methodist antislavery conventions held in Utica and Cazenovia, N. Y., and Lynn, Mass.; the action of the New York Conference, the following year, calling to account two of its members for attending the Utica Convention; the issuing of the "Wesleyan Quarterly Review," in 1838, by Rev. Orange Scott, for the fuller discussion of antislavery questions, and Mr. Scott's arraignment, by Bishop Hedding, at the following session of the New England Conference in Boston; the arraignment of LeRoy Sunderland, by Rev. Dr. Nathan Bangs, for a similar cause; the discussion of the famous "Plan of Pacification" and questions of "Conference Rights," in 1838 and 1839; the extreme pro-slavery utterances of Southern Conferences, declaring that "slavery, as it now exists in these United

States, is not a moral evil;" and the starting of the "American Wesleyan Observer," a new antislavery paper, in Lowell, Mass., Nov. 7, 1839, edited by Revs. Jotham Horton and Orange Scott.

These events, occurring between 1834 and 1840, show the intense aggressive spirit of opposition to slavery in the Methodist Episcopal Church, and the no less determined resistance to antislavery action by Southerners and Southern sympathizers. During these six years the Church was agitated by the most exciting contests ever known in her history. The South threatened to divide the Church, and many at the North, fearing it, sought to avert the calamity. But the antislavery sentiment steadily increased.

The General Conference of 1840 was in harmony with that of 1836—the last of the retrograding series, where the downward tendency of conservatism touched bottom. The action of the Missouri Conference, condemning a minister of maladministration for receiving the testimony of colored persons against white persons, in a church trial, was approved; and, by a vote of seventy-four to thirty-six, this Conference declared that "such a practice is inexpedient and unjustifiable in those States where colored persons are not allowed to testify in trials at law." But the most remarkable action was taken upon a memorial from Westmoreland, Va. The Conference affirmed that ownership of slave-property, in States and Territories where the laws do not admit of emancipation or permit the liberated slave to enjoy freedom, constitutes no legal barrier to the election and ordination of ministers to the various grades of office known in the ministry of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and cannot, therefore, be considered as operating any forfeiture of right, in view of such election and ordination.

These concessions, contrary to the time-honored policy of the Church, aroused attention, and augmented the immense antislavery force in process of development within and without the ecclesiastical lines. The tide turned in 1840, after which no more concessions were made to the slave power. The "Wesleyan" schism, in 1842, in which about twenty traveling elders and five thousand members seceded, chiefly on account of the relation of the Church to slavery, contributed somewhat to this end.

When the General Conference met, in 1844, it found on its hands a great question to settle—whether the Bishops should be allowed to hold slaves—Bishop Andrew having become a slave-holder by marriage—the first instance in the history of the denomination. The Northern members contended that the episcopal chair must be kept free from this evil, as it always had been, and that he must, therefore, resign his position. His friends pleaded, protested, and threatened division if he was not let alone. But the Conference, by a vote of 110 to 68, declared that he must desist from the exercise of his office. The result was the secession of a large number of Southern ministers and members, and the formation of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South.

The new body was at once fully committed to the institution of slavery, theoretically and practically. But the antislavery sentiment had triumphed in the General Conference. The restriction put upon colored testimony in 1840 was also repealed. In 1848 the General Conference rescinded the resolution on the Westmoreland petition.

Sixteen more years of contest remained before the unequivocal rule against all slave-holding could be enacted by the necessary three-fourths vote of the General Conference. In 1860 the chapter on slavery in the Discipline was strengthened so as to embody this exclusive principle, and four years later the specific rule was adopted by a vote of two hundred and seven to nine. The Civil War, occasioned by Republican triumphs, achieved by the prayers and suffrages of antislavery Church members, aided the final solution.

It is hardly necessary to trace the antislavery struggle in the Baptist Church, so similar to those already sketched, which culminated in the division of the denomination in 1845, and the organization of the Northern and Southern Baptist Conventions. Nor have we space to enter into the details of the humiliating compromises of various benevolent boards.

In the course of these agitations another movement took place, one of the most painful to record, because of the bitter and destructive spirit it engendered.

I have no disposition to detract from any credit due to Mr. Garrison as an antislavery agitator. His peculiar talent made him conspicuous, and left a deep impress. But the time came

when the Garrison party diminished in numbers and in influence; and the antislavery cause was carried forward, not merely without his aid, but even in spite of his hinderance. He possessed an extraordinary power of vituperation, and his philippics were terrible irritants. "He prejudiced the minds of good men against the antislavery cause, while the political movement, which ultimately proved the successful one, ever, after 1838, met with his opposition." *

In less than five years from the organization of the first society under Mr. Garrison, the American Antislavery Society numbered 1,350 auxiliaries, existing in every free State, except Indiana and New Jersey, and its annual receipts reached \$45,000. But, notwithstanding this rapid progress, he became impatient, and his intensely radical spirit, panting for still more radical reforms, repelled his best tried friends. He forgot that he drew his first antislavery breath from the Church; that his best supporters were the people of the Churches; that of the persons participating in the organization of the American Antislavery Society and its auxiliaries, and those attending the antislavery anniversaries and conventions, full one third were ministers, while more than half of the remainder were communicants of the Churches; that three fourths of the antislavery agents and editors were clergymen; that Hon. George Thompson, with whom he had communed so closely, was a Wesleyan local preacher; that his ablest adherents and *confrères* were Rev. A. A. Phelps, Rev. Joshua Leavitt, Rev. William Goodell, Rev. Nathaniel Colver, Rev. Baron Stowe, Rev. Orange Scott, Rev. Jotham Horton, Rev. Samuel J. May, etc.; and that, instead of a decline, there was a steady growth of reform sentiment and activity in the Churches; all these things and many more he forgot; he abhorred and denounced the Church and State, and sought their overthrow.

In a Fourth-of-July address, at Providence, in 1837, he frenziedly declared, "I stand forth in the spirit of prophecy, to proclaim, in the ears of the people, that our doom as a nation is sealed;" adding, "If history be not wholly fabulous, if revelation be not a forgery, if God be not faithless in the execution of his threatenings, the doom is certain and the execution thereof sure. The overthrow of the American Con-

* Editor of the "Congregational Quarterly," Oct., 1876, p. 552.

federacy is in the womb of events. . . . The corruptions of the *Church*, so-called, are obviously more deep and incurable than those of the *State*, and therefore the *Church*, in spite of every precaution and safeguard, is first to be dashed in pieces." *

Mr. Garrison and his intimate friends were soon intent on other reforms. "Anti-church," "Anti-ministry," "Anti-sabbath," "No Government," "Woman's Rights," etc., were the watch-words. Standing alone on their individual merits, these reforms could get no hearing before the public; therefore it was attempted to "sift them in" upon the antislavery reform.†

The ultraists pleaded‡ that both the ecclesiastical and the political organizations failed to grasp the question of slavery as its importance demanded; that the slave power was aggressive, arrogant, mandatory, and grasping; that Church after Church had looked on with little interest, often using their influence rather to quiet abolitionists than to harm slavery; that politicians were afraid to attack the monster in the halls of Congress, and quailing statesmen cowered before the bowie-knife and revolver. Under such circumstances, these champions of reform became impatient, bitter, vindictive, and desperate. Out of this feeling the "Comeouter" movement arose, dividing the opposers of slavery into two parties.

The "Comeouter" party, led by the "Liberator," edited by Mr. Garrison, opposed the American Church, not merely the pro-slavery part, but the Church itself, as the bulwark of American slavery, and consequently an institution that could not be reformed, and, therefore, to be abolished before slavery could be reached. The ministry, as dumb dogs (D.Ds.) that would not bark, were placed in the same category, and must go with the Church. The Sabbath was denounced: all days were to be regarded alike. The Bible received a liberal share of abuse, "the non-resistants" discarding its authority as a standard of appeal. It was a stench in their nostrils, because slave-holders and their apologists perverted it to sustain slavery. Reason and conscience were above the Bible. The

* "The True History of the Late Division in the Antislavery Societies," p. 8, 1841.

† Ibid., p. 15.

‡ For some of the facts connected with the origin of the "Comeouter" movement the author is indebted to a letter in the Boston "Daily Advertiser," June 9, 1873, by J. W. Alden.

Old Testament was rejected, as of no authority whatever, and the New, also, when it confronted their theories. These topics were forced upon the antislavery meetings for discussion and indorsement, and special meetings were called, and their doings published in the "*Liberator*," as antislavery literature.

Another obstacle in the way of emancipation was the Constitution of the United States. Human governments, they affirmed in general, were "of the devil," and the United States Constitution, in particular, was a "covenant with death, a league with hell." It was a sin to vote under it, even to free the slave, because their tender consciences could not approve the act of voting. Slave-holding politicians for fifty years had construed the Constitution in favor of slavery, and proslavery divines had done the same thing with the Bible. Inasmuch as the Church, the ministry, the Sabbath, the Bible, and the United States Constitution all lay in the way of the abolition of slavery, they must be removed before slavery could be reached. "The antislavery movement, at the start, favored the use of the elective franchise in behalf of the slave;" but in 1838 the Massachusetts Antislavery Society, under the lead of Mr. Garrison, "was made to abandon its own original doctrines on the subject of political action, and became subservient to the promotion of the dogma of non-governmentism."

These views caused a division and a new organization of antislavery workers. From that time Mr. Garrison's influence declined, and the sphere of his operations was narrowed to a small, dwindling circle* of sour, wrangling spirits, while the great movement, to which his earlier labors contributed an impulse, rolled on in widening circles, under other and wiser leaders.

* Mr. J. W. Alden says: "From the time of the division, in 1839, the '*Liberator*' party bent its energies to the abolition of certain institutions we have already named, but American Chattel Slavery was *not* on that catalogue. That must wait and the slave must toil on in bondage until all the others were destroyed. God's institutions were not thus to be destroyed, and the '*Liberator*' dug its own grave, in its insane attempt to thwart the divine purposes of the Creator. The Constitution of the United States, which was said to be 'a covenant of death, and a league with hell,' was not *abolished*, but *amended*, so as to wipe out the *construction* put upon it by the slave power and the non-government party, of which the '*Liberator*' was the organ as long as it lived. . . . Indeed, Mr. Garrison rendered more service to the slave power by his opposition to the voting abolitionists, during the *two last* decades of the struggle, than he damaged slavery by his advocacy of emancipation in the *first* decade."

The division occurred in the Massachusetts Antislavery Society in May, 1839, and in the American Antislavery Society the year following. By packing the business meeting of the latter society, in 1839, with Massachusetts delegates in sympathy with Mr. Garrison's peculiar views, equal in number to nearly one third of all the votes cast, the Woman's Rights and Non-government party triumphed. In 1840 this victory was made sure by transporting, by special steamboat arrangements, several hundred women from Boston and vicinity to New York to vote in the meeting. The party opposed to the peculiar dogmas of Garrison withdrew, and organized the American and Foreign Antislavery Society* in May, 1840. In Massachusetts, where the split occurred the previous year, the new party was organized as the "Massachusetts Abolition Society," under the leadership of Rev. Amos A. Phelps. The party was chiefly composed of evangelical antislavery Christians of all denominations, who believed in using the ballot-box for the purpose of freeing the slaves. Its paper, "The Abolitionist," was edited at first by Rev. Mr. Phelps, then by Elizur Wright, Jun. Subsequently its name was changed to the "Free American," and was edited by Rev. Charles T. Torrey. Agents were sent out and auxiliaries were formed. Antislavery churches opened their pulpits to the agents, and those who would not commit themselves to antislavery action were glad to part with antislavery members, who formed Churches on the basis of non-fellowship with slave-holders. But no evangelical Church, however antislavery, received the approbation of the other party. While this work was going on "the scattering system" at the polls was abandoned, and the "liberty party" was organized in 1840.

* The following were some of the prominent persons in the new organizations opposed to Mr. Garrison: the Tappans, James G. Birney, Gerrit Smith, H. M. Stanton, T. D. Weld, Rev. A. A. Phelps, Rev. J. Leavitt, Rev. C. T. Torrey, Rev. A. St. Clair, Rev. O. Scott, Rev. D. Wise, Rev. J. Horton, Rev. J. Porter, J. G. Whittier, William Jackson, Judge Jay, William Goodell, Thomas Morris, Edward Benham, Elizur Wright, Jun., Rev. David Thurston, James Z. Gibbons, Rev. David Root, Alvah Stewart, Esq., Rev. C. P. Grosvenor, etc. Mr. Goodell says: "While these divisions produced a strong sensation in New England and in the sea-board cities, the sound of them going across the Atlantic awakened kindred responses among the abolitionists of Great Britain. The blast died away, like a Massachusetts nor'easter, as it traveled westward, spending its strength before it had reached the valley of the Mohawk, and was scarcely felt beyond the waters of Lake Erie."

About this time "The Emancipator," which had been started in New York city, was removed to Boston, and united with the "Free American," with Rev. Joshua Leavitt, D.D., and J. W. Alden, as editors and proprietors, while Rev. George B. Cheever, D.D., and Rev. William Goodell, published the "Principia" in New York.

Those Christian men who did not unite with the antislavery societies were doubtless conscientious, of high character and intelligence, and not wanting in true sympathy for the slave. Some could not approve the impracticable measures of the reformers. Others, from taste or principle, disliked such associations, and felt that they could not be held responsible before the public for either the policy or the opinions advocated by the radical agitators. Deeply abhorring slavery, and desiring to do something for its removal, nevertheless Mr. Garrison's doctrine of immediate emancipation seemed impracticable and impossible. They also shrank from contact with violent and denunciatory persons, who scornfully repelled prudential suggestions or more moderate measures.

On the other hand, other Christian men enjoyed the reform associations, even the stormiest scenes, organizing, leading, and sustaining the meetings vigorously, imparting to the cause its most reliable and influential support, tempering it with their presence, inspiring hope and confidence in the darkest moments, and securing the divine blessing by their prayers.

From the beginning to the close of the movement the Churches were largely represented * by the ministry and the

* It is difficult to do justice to the numerous toilers in this work of reform. But at the risk of overlooking many whose names deserve mention, the following may be specified in addition to others already given: Messrs. Isaac T. Hooper, Robert Vaux, Evan Lewis, and John G. Whittier, Friends; Messrs. Lewis Tappan, Elizur Wright, Jun., Robert Purvis, Dea. Ebenezer Dole, J. W. Alden, James G. Birney, Ephraim Lyman, Gerrit Smith, Wendell Phillips, etc., communicants of evangelical Churches; Revs. C. W. Dennison, George B. Cheever, D.D., S. H. Cox, George Bourne, S. S. Jocelyn, Baron Stowe, Nathaniel Colver, Cyrus P. Grosvenor, S. L. Pomeroy, H. G. Ludlow, O. Wetmore, E. M. P. Wells, Thomas Williams, John Frost, Daniel De Vinne, James Floy, D.D., James Porter, D.D., Phineas Crandall, Daniel Wise, D.D., Luther Lee, D.D., L. C. Matlack, etc., ministers of evangelical Churches; and Professor Follen, Theodore Parker, Rev. W. E. Channing, D.D., and John Pierpont, of the Unitarian Church. Mr. Wendell Phillips did not espouse the cause until the martyrdom of Lovejoy, in 1837. Gerrit Smith, originally an ardent Presbyterian, continued in sympathy with the colonization movement until 1835. He attended the Utica Convention that year, protesting that he

laity, usually constituting a large majority, and often seven-eighths of the working force. Of 146 delegates whose names appear in the annual report of the American Antislavery Society for 1838, the year before the division, 50 were ministers, nearly all of them belonging to "evangelical Churches." It was so every year from 1833 and onward until the division. And yet in the "Liberator," in 1837, Mr. Oliver Johnson said: "The antislavery car has rolled forward thus far not only without the aid, but against the combined influence, of the ministers and Churches of the country." Could any state-ment more completely ignore the real facts up to that time? Rev. Amos A. Phelps, of the Congregational Church, was regarded by many as "the head and front of antislavery move-ments in Massachusetts, doing more solid work than almost any other person."* Revs. Joshua Leavitt and William Goodell were little behind him, and some will place Rev. Orange Scott, of the Methodist Episcopal Church, on a paral-
 lel with him in effective, self-sacrificing labors. Statistics ex-ist showing that, in 1837, the antislavery societies in Massachu-
 setts numbered 19,206 members, equivalent to one in thirty-six
 of the whole population of the State, while of the 792 minis-
 ters in the State, 367, or almost one half, were enrolled mem-
 bers of these societies. Of the fifty-six agents employed by
 the American Antislavery Society prior to 1837, forty-three
 were ministers.† Thus, in this unpopular period of the agi-

was "no abolitionist;" but the mobbing of the convention converted him. He did not break with the Church until 1843. Theodore Parker was uncommitted to the movement until the Mexican war, or about 1846. Hon. Salmon P. Chase es-poused the cause in 1841.

* "Watchman and Reflector."

† The "Liberator" (Nov. 3, 1837) said: "A very large proportion of the anti-slavery agents in the field are of the orthodox faith, aye, and ministers too, or those who are preparing for the ministry—the exceptions, we believe, are rare." "In 1838 Mr. St. Clair, an agent of the State Society, said that the 'orthodox' constituted 'nine tenths of the abolitionists in the State,' and about the same time a leading member of the Boston Committee avowed the intention to keep the control of the antislavery movement in the hands of the church-hating minority, and simply because he disliked the religious views of the majority. This 'major-ity' was evangelical. At the same time, while but *one in eight* of the Unitarian clergy in this State were members of antislavery societies with the plan of immedi-ate emancipation, or abolition, more than *one in three* of the 'orthodox' Congrega-tionalists, and *two in three* of Baptists and Methodists, were members."—*Watchman and Reflector*.

tation, while the ministers were one in five hundred of the whole population, they were one in five of the front ranks of this reform. And yet Theodore Parker, who espoused this cause nearly ten years later than the date under consideration, was wont to exclaim, "When did the Christianity of the Church ever denounce a popular sin?"

And whence came the antislavery martyrs but from these Churches? Rev. Elijah P. Lovejoy, (1837,) Charles T. Torrey, (1846,) John Brown, (1859,) and Rev. Anthony Bewley, (1860,) who laid down their lives in devotion to antislavery principles, were of evangelical Churches. The imprisonment and inhuman branding (S. S., *slave stealer*) of Captain Jonathan Walker, of Massachusetts, at Pensacola, in 1840; the mobbing of Dr. Bailey, editor of the "National Era," Washington, D. C., in 1848; and of Dr. John S. Prettyman, editor of a Republican paper in Delaware, in 1859; and the murderous assault upon Hon. Charles Sumner, the incorruptible senator, we honorably notice and give due rank; but Thomas Garrett, (1848,) who suffered in Delaware; Rev. John G. Fee and Miss Delia Webster, in Kentucky; Revs. Daniel Worth and Silas M'Kenney, in Texas; Rev. Dr. Nelson and Messrs. Thompson and Burr, (students for the ministry,) and Work, in Missouri; and Rev. "Parson" Brownlow, in Tennessee, well-known victims of slave-holding vengeance, were ministers or communicants of evangelical Churches, no less devoted to the cause of the slave.

A writer of a political tract, over the signature of Junius, (supposed to be Calvin Colton, whom no one will charge as too "evangelical,") said: "Nearly all the practical abolitionists, and, with scarcely an exception, all the abolition preachers, lecturers, and missionaries, are religious men. Religion everywhere is the high and holy sanction relied upon to enforce the doctrine."

Mr. Oliver Johnson, whose severe arraignment of the Churches in the "Liberator," in 1837, has been quoted, at a more recent date, in the "Christian Union" of May 7, 1874, under the mellowing influence of later years, said: "The antislavery movement originated in the deepest religious convictions, and derived its main impulse from the spirit of Christianity in the hearts of its champions. It is important to affirm this, because efforts have been made in certain quarters

to justify or excuse the hostility to the movement of the great body of ministers and Churches in the country on the ground of its alleged 'infidel' character and tendency. On this point history must not be perverted nor the truth concealed."

Rev. James Freeman Clarke * said, "If the Churches, as organizations, stood aloof, being only 'timidly good,' as organizations are apt to be, the purest of their body were sure to be found in this great company of 'latter-day saints.'" Again,† "Nevertheless, from the Christian body came most of those who devoted their lives to the extirpation of this great evil. And Mr. Garrison always maintained that his converts were most likely to be made among those whose consciences had been educated by the Church and the Bible."

Hon. George Thompson, in his celebrated debate with Rev. Dr. R. J. Breckenridge, of Kentucky, on slavery, in Glasgow, 1836, said of the American antislavery reformers: "They are universally men and women of religious principles, and, in most instances, of unquestioned piety. He had never known any benevolent enterprise carried forward more in dependence upon divine direction and divine aid than the abolition cause in the United States."

The Garrison party, withdrawing from all political relations, and diverted in purpose by complex social and skeptical hobbies, became a small contracted sphere that could not grow, notwithstanding the most assiduous efforts to bring to their platform every thing that could draw and impress an audience. Many attended their anniversaries to witness the gladiatorial sport, for they were fierce tournaments. But the movement did not expand. It lacked moral cohesion, was repellant and chilling rather than attractive and vitalizing.

"Their orators were of every kind, rough men and shrill-voiced women, polished speakers from the universities, stammering fugitives from slavery, philosophers and fanatics, atheists and Christian ministers, wise men who had been made mad by oppression, and babes in intellect, to whom God had revealed some of the noblest truths. They murdered the king's English; they uttered glaring fallacies; the blows aimed at evil often glanced aside and hit good men. Inevitable was, perhaps, the too-frequent staple of their argument;

* "North American Review," Jan., 1875, p. 81.

† *Ibid.*, p. 55.

and any difference of opinion would be apt to turn their weapons against each other. The Church militant often became a Church termagant." *

But the newly organized party, retaining the doctrine of political action against slavery, formerly advocated by Garrison, gradually grew. Hundreds of ministers and thousands of the laity left pro-slavery Churches and organized Churches on a strict antislavery basis. Ministerial antislavery conventions were held, and Christian antislavery conventions, large influential bodies, and wholly by the anti-Garrison party. Simultaneously with them, and mutually contributing to each other, started the Liberty party, (1840,) the Free Soil party, (1848,) and the Republican party, (1854,) each the successor of the other, and all the outgrowth of the action, in and out of the Churches, of the antislavery party opposed to Mr. Garrison's peculiar hobbies. Messrs. Smith, Birney, Stewart, Green, Chaplin, Torrey, and Goodell, nearly all of whom were active in these Christian antislavery conventions, were the organizers of the Liberty party; and Mr. Goodell was for several years editor of the paper supported by this party in New York. So also the organ of the Massachusetts Abolition Society became the organ of the Liberty party in Massachusetts.

Rev. D. D. Whedon, LL.D., who has been a close observer and active participator by pen and voice in this great movement, from about 1832 onward, in his Introduction† to Dr. Matlack's forthcoming "History of Methodism and Slavery," appreciatively says: "When Garrisonianism rang out its 'fire-bell in the night,' there were millions unprepared for its peal and doubting the certainty of its sounds. The movement was started by men who had little at stake in the existing order of society, and the alarm was felt by the great body of those who had much to lose in a coming convulsion. The great aggregate of the weighty, wise, and good, stood in the opposition. They believed that slavery was a moral and political evil; but they also believed that somehow it was temporary, and that rash measures would both perpetuate the evil and produce other evils of incalculable magnitude. But as the battle

* Rev. James Freeman Clarke, D.D., in "North American Review," January, 1875, p. 54.

† The writer was kindly favored with advance sheets of the Introduction.

waxed warm, and the slave-power, in self-defense, became bold and announced a claim to perpetuity and even supremacy, thousands after thousands felt compelled to join the antislavery ranks, and to demand, first, the limitation of slavery, and finally to claim its immediate extirpation.

"But the abolition of slavery was not a moral achievement, but a war measure. Had the slave power stood solid, yet calm, maintaining its silent position, and making no aggressions, slavery would, to all appearance, be standing at this hour, perhaps the stronger for the opposition."

No one can question this position, and it deserves more serious consideration by those who ascribe the emancipation of the slaves in the United States to Mr. Garrison.

A few collateral facts should be added to complete the story. The culminating events of the antislavery movement and the emancipation of the slaves, in the nature of the case political measures, effected by civil agencies, in which our greatest and best statesmen acted honorable and conspicuous parts, was not accomplished without the permeating and extensively controlling influence of the Protestant Churches, as represented by their membership in the Republican party. The preponderating numbers of this great party defeated slavery extension in the Territories, elected a Republican President, provoked the South to rebellion, and thus created the exigency in which emancipation was proclaimed. It is believed that the Protestant denominations, through their communicants and adherents, furnished the chief part of the moral strength of the Republican party. The ecclesiastical conferences, associations, and conventions throughout the North, from 1850 to the close of the Civil War, passed numerous resolutions bearing upon national issues, such as the compromise measures of 1850, the Fugitive Slave Bill, the Dred Scott Decision, the Kansas and Nebraska schemes, etc., sustaining, by overwhelming majorities, the politico-moral issues which entered into the movements of the Republican party; and, in most of the Northern States, three fourths of the communicants and adherents of these Churches, and in some localities, nine tenths of them, acted with that party, constituting its most influential and reliable supporters. Sermons, addresses, and prayers innumerable, by the Protestant clergy,

echoed the deep religious convictions of the Christian public. Piles of sermons* against the Fugitive Slave Bill, the Kansas atrocities, and other cognate topics, delivered between 1845 and 1865, have been collected in the public libraries for future reference. The Republican party was emphatically the party of the highest moral and religious sentiment.

The Congressional records show numerous petitions and remonstrances of individual Churches, of ministers and ecclesiastical bodies, bearing upon these great questions. The religious press entered into the contest, conspicuous among which was the "Independent," edited by Revs. Leonard Bacon, D.D., J. P. Thompson, D.D., R. S. Storrs, D.D., and Henry Ward Beecher. "Uncle Tom's Cabin," and kindred works, imbued with fervid religious sentiment, moved the masses. The very boldness of the projects of the slave power awakened revulsion and intensified antislavery action. Memorials, numerously signed by clergymen from the Middle and Western States, poured into Congress, and one hundred and twenty-five separate remonstrances within a few months came from the ministers of the six New England States. There came a mammoth memorial, two hundred feet long, bearing the names of three thousand and fifty New England clergymen,† so ingeniously engrossed as to preserve the original signature and heading of each petition, protesting "in the name of Almighty God," against the proposed extension of the domain of slavery in the territory of the United States. On its presentation to the Senate, Hon. Edward Everett apologetically alluded to it as "a somewhat voluminous document." Hon. Stephen A. Douglas characterized it as "informal and monstrous," and Hons. John M. Mason, of Virginia, and Mr. Butler, of South Carolina, poured out their indignation against the political parsons, and prognosticated evil omens from such participation in political action by the Christian clergy. Hon. Samuel Houston, with characteristic magnanimity, declared that he saw

* The beautiful volume of "National Sermons," by Rev. Bishop Gilbert Haven, covering a period of about fifteen years, is a fine specimen of these discourses, and of great historic value.

† This idea originated with Mrs. H. B. Stowe, who suggested it to Rev. Henry M. Dexter, D.D., editor of the "Congregationalist," through whose agency the heading was prepared at a meeting of Boston ministers, and the names were obtained. None except the Roman Catholic clergy refused to sign it.

in the paper nothing informal nor monstrous, and that "this memorial, signed by three thousand and fifty ministers of the living God, is evidence that the people are deeply moved." And Hon. Charles Sumner, then fresh in his seat in the Senate, thanked the ministers for their interposition, adding: "In the days of the Revolution, John Adams, yearning for independence, said, 'Let the pulpits thunder against oppression,' and the pulpits thundered. The time has come for them to thunder again."

I have thus endeavored, in a faithful manner, and with as much detail as my limits will allow, to sketch the relations of the religious bodies to the antislavery reform. The legislation of the Churches was sometimes unfortunate and even reprehensible. Majorities opposed and retaliated against the agitators. Men of undoubted piety cast their influence against the abolition movement, because of the legal difficulties in the way of emancipation. They felt compelled to conservative action. This produced friction; and bitterness, complaint, and denunciation followed. Thus the attitude of the Churches, out of whose bosom the reform sprung, was seriously crippled.

In so radical and extensive a movement, where the evil to be removed was a system venerable for age, intimately interwoven with great civil, social, and financial interests, and entrenched behind constitutional provisions, the progress was necessarily slow and difficult, occasioning impatience and censoriousness. Numerous ecclesiastical schisms—results not easily reached in bodies cemented by powerful, social, and religious bonds—and clearly showing how powerfully the antislavery sentiment became arrayed against the accursed system of slavery, were effected in the largest denominations in the land. Radical measures, intense appeals, and uncompromising speech abounded in the contest. They were necessities. Strife and opposition were inevitable, calling for redoubtable moral heroes. Whatever of human frailty appeared can be forgiven, but the sad effects which followed the unfortunate embarrassments of the Churches cannot be forgotten, nor the fact that, nevertheless, the germ, the impulse, and the best strength of the movement sprung out of the Churches.

ART. VI.—THE WESLEY MEMORIAL VOLUME.

The Wesley Memorial Volume; or, Wesley and the Methodist Movement, Judged by nearly One Hundred and Fifty Writers, Living or Dead. Edited by Rev. J. O. A. CLARK, D.D., LL.D. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. J. W. Burke & Co., Macon, Ga. J. B. M'Ferrin, Agt., Nashville, Tenn. L. D. Dameron & Co., St. Louis, Mo. 1880.

To writers outside its own communion Methodism has furnished themes and materials for books, reviews, and essays without number. Churchman, dissenter, and skeptic alike have found it a most inviting and fruitful field for inquiry, criticism, and speculation. It is safe to affirm that no religious movement since the days of the apostles has, in the same length of time, been more generally and thoroughly discussed. From every conceivable stand-point, and in every diversity of spirit, its character, methods, and results have been subjected to critical analysis and comment.

Many writers of the class referred to have manifested a Christian friendliness toward Methodism; but not all. It is not the fruitfulness of the field alone that has enlisted the interest and engaged the research of some. But the movement has assumed such proportions, such are its achievements, and it is entering as such a potential factor into contemporary history, that they cannot ignore or lightly dismiss it. Fidelity to truth, and the sense of common justice in mankind, imperatively require that it be taken due account of by the secular as well as the religious historian, by the philosopher as well as the theologian. And any one who undertakes to give a general survey of the great moral forces now at work in the world must give prominence to Methodism, or else incur the opprobrium of bigotry and prejudiced partiality.

While Methodism is thus winning its way to a place in the general literature of the age, it is also creating a literature of its own of by no means insignificant merit. It was born in the midst of literary surroundings, of the heart and brain of literary men quickened into reproductive energy by the baptism of the Holy Ghost. Its literature was the support of its infancy, the stronghold in which it abode in safety. It has kept pace with its growth, and to-day covers the entire field of its multifarious activities.

In his philosophic analysis of Methodism, Isaac Taylor defines its first element as "the waking up of a consciousness toward Almighty God, which gave a meaning" to the terminology of the Church, and transformed its dead formularies into living verities of the most solemn significance. The feeling awakened was different not only in degree, but in kind, from any thing the soul had experienced before; it was "as if a lost rudiment of the moral nature had sprung into activity." In such an awakening of the religious consciousness all the powers of the soul are stirred by new impulses, and the entire man is lifted into a new and higher life. From this higher plane there are new views of truth and duty, of privilege and destiny, and, as a result, quickened thought and intensified moral sensibility. The immediate fruit, in a well-ordered moral constitution, is religious enthusiasm; and thus Methodism becomes, philosophically, "Christianity in earnest." Nothing less is to be expected than that its earnestness should embody and manifest itself in all the varied forms of Christian enterprise, and that it should avail itself of every admissible agency within its reach in the prosecution of its mission. A Methodism without its presses and books, reviews, monthlies, weeklies, tracts, —a literature adapted to the condition and wants of all classes —is not the Methodism portrayed by Isaac Taylor, or described in the aphorism of Chalmers. Methodism is a life, an active, energetic, joyous life in Christ, and as such will have its literature along with other modes of manifestation, just as naturally as the tree puts on its foliage and brings forth its fruit.

Lord Bacon said, concerning books, that "Some are to be tasted, others to be swallowed, and some few to be chewed and digested." It is not unlikely that in the great mass of Methodist literature there are many books that properly belong to the first and second of these classes. There may be no poison in them, but there is no aliment, neither milk for babes nor strong meat for men. A taste is all that they deserve, and is all-sufficient for the earnest seeker after soul food. Or if there be nutriment in any of them, it is in a solution so dead that there is not a sparkle on its surface, and so weak that the babe may swallow it. But, on the other hand, there are "some few" at least that have real, permanent worth. They are full of pure, vigorous, healthful thought, and are "profitable for doctrine,

for reproof, for correction, and for instruction in righteousness." They awaken thought, panoply the soul with truth, enlarge its conceptions of divine things, awaken in it new and grander aspirations, and furnish "the man of God unto all good works."

The book whose title appears in the caption of this article belongs to the last-mentioned class. It is food for mind and heart, both substantial and savory. To taste it merely will not satisfy, but only whet, the mental appetite; to swallow it entire would be a feat scarcely possible to the most voracious literary gormand; nothing less than the process of deliberate chewing and digestion at leisure will develop its admirable qualities and secure the full benefit of its nutritive forces. It is a book that may be *read* as a delightful and profitable entertainment for the passing hour, but one that must be *studied* in order to a just appreciation of its intrinsic excellence and real significance.

Methodism is indebted for this valuable contribution to its literature to the scheme inaugurated in 1875 of building the Wesley Monumental Church in Savannah, Georgia, "the only city in America in which Mr. Wesley had a home and a parish." This movement received the official indorsement of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, at its General Conference in 1878, and the Rev. J. O. A. Clark, D.D., LL.D., was accredited as its agent. The connectional and ecumenical idea was fundamental with the originators of the enterprise. It was this specific feature more than any other that won for it the official approval of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. It is of this idea that Dr. Clark is the representative. He "was appointed, commissioned, and sent to the various Methodisms of the world to solicit the co-operation of them all." While in England, in prosecution of his mission, he conceived the idea that such a volume as that now given to the public would aid in "building the 'Monumental Church,' help to illustrate the life work of John Wesley, and bring the various Methodisms of the world into closer union and fellowship." And if the movement were to accomplish nothing more than the production of this volume, it would be an achievement well worth all that it has cost.

The plan of the work is unique. It is composed of between

forty and fifty essays, each essay complete in itself and independent of the rest. The subjects of these articles were chosen by the editor, as were also the writers, who, for the most part, are representative men in the various branches of the Methodist family on both sides of the Atlantic. Among the contributors from other communions are such men as Dean Stanley, Dr. Dobbin, and Mr. Overton, of the Church of England; Sir Charles Reed, of the Independents of England; and Dr. De Pressensé, of the Reformed Church of Paris. Of course John Wesley and the Methodist movement is the general topic of the work. And, as might be anticipated, he is presented in every phase of his many-sided character and in every stage of his religious life; while the movement which he inaugurated is exhibited from the stand-points of history, theology, and philosophy, in its own character, in its relations to other organizations, and in its influence on the Church and the world in his own and subsequent times.

In such a work there must of necessity be great diversity of style, as well as inequality of merit in its articles. The former is not displeasing, and the latter, so far from operating a discount on the work, will rather enhance its value in the judgment of the intelligent reader. The writers are representative men. It is fair to presume that in the preparation of their articles they have done some of their best work, work which may safely be accepted as exponential of the mind and culture of the various branches of Methodism to which they belong. If so, then the reader may find here, and nowhere else in the same compass, data for an at least approximately correct conclusion as to the intellectual status of the different Methodisms relatively, and of Methodism as a whole. The student of leisure will go to original sources for information on this interesting topic; to the history, educational statistics, and literary products of these several communions; but, after all his research, his conclusion will not differ very materially from that of the judicious and discriminating reader of this memorial volume. It does not come within the purview of this article to enter the field of inquiry here opened, and deduce the inferences that might be suggested. It is enough to say that the exhibit of Methodist culture and literary excellence and ability is most gratifying, and will challenge

comparison with any similar production either within or without the Church of Christ. While all these essays are highly creditable to their authors and to the communions they represent, some of them are unsurpassed for purity, strength, classic beauty and elegance by any thing in the English language.

It will not be considered invidious if special mention be made of Rev. L. H. Holsey, Bishop of the Colored M. E. Church in America, and Rev. B. F. Lee, L.B., of the African M. E. Church, as contributors to this work. While the ecumenical spirit and plan of the editor required that the colored Methodisms should be represented, such representation is in perfect accord with the Christian sentiment and conviction of the age. Ecclesiastical ostracism, because of race or color, is in contravention of the fundamental principles of the Gospel. "There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus." The Church of Christ is an essential unity, and no member, or class of members, can lightly esteem any other member without dishonoring the Head. Dr. Clark, a Southern man by birth, education, and affinities, along with true Christian men every-where, stands squarely on this platform. That in the section to which he belongs there lingers much of the ancient feudal spirit, no one will deny. Nor will any reasonable man expect that spirit—the growth of centuries—suddenly to become extinct. But, on the other hand, men of honest, intelligent patriotism, to say nothing of religion, must and will rejoice in the intellectual and moral elevation of all classes of our population; and nowhere will *such* men rejoice more in the improved condition of the negro than in the South, the interests of which are now so largely dependent on his intelligent appreciation of the rights and duties of citizenship. In any tokens of his progress and enlarged capabilities all good men find occasion of profound satisfaction. And when Dr. Clark places Bishop Holsey and Rev. B. F. Lee in this galaxy of Methodism—the latter side by side with himself—he only gives tangible expression to a conviction of right which is deeply imbedded in the faith of the Christian men of the South, who, in common with such men elsewhere, rejoice that these representatives of the African race fill their places with such a high degree of credit.

A complete unity was an ideal scarcely realizable in the first and only work of this character that has ever been attempted. The indifference of some, the remembrance of by-gone feuds, and the remains of ancient prejudices in others, essential differences in ecclesiastical polity, strong Church predilections in all, and many minor difficulties, were in the way of the realization of such an ideal. On the contrary, there was a powerful influence favorable to it in the prevailing tendency toward unification in all religious bodies, especially those of the same creed. The Evangelical Alliance, the Pan-Presbyterian Council, the approaching Ecumenical Conference of Methodism, International Sunday-school Conventions and Christian Associations, are the fruit of this tendency, and at the same time the means of this growth. Aided by this spirit of the times, Dr. Clark has so far overcome existing difficulties as in an eminent degree to attain a grand unity. He has brought together representatives of well-nigh every branch of Methodism, and with them a goodly number from other communions, on a common platform; they meet in one common center and strike hands in Christian fellowship. There is an entire absence of the spirit of party—no unnecessary reference to denominational peculiarities—no assumption on the part of any of a superior claim as an exponent of Wesleyan doctrine and polity, and, if we except the paper of Bishop G. F. Pierce, of the M. E. Church, South, nothing from first to last that savors of controversy. While there is this beautiful harmony within, there is manifested no illiberality toward any that are without. There is no disparagement of any evangelical Church, and no resentful harshness toward the bitterest opponents of Mr. Wesley and the Methodist movement. In this oneness of spirit among these writers, in their exhibition of the traditional liberality of Methodism, and in the oneness of their completed work, is one of the most pleasing features of the "Memorial Volume."

As the venerable Bishop Simpson, in his brief Preface to the work, says: "Mr. Wesley was many-sided, and from many points of view his characteristics are worthy of record." No man has appeared in the history of the Church since the days of the apostles in whose character were so many, and such a diversity, of qualities in pre-eminent manifestation. Viewed from opposite stand-points and through different *media*, there

may have been apparent contrasts and contradictions. Indeed, it would be little less than marvelous if, through a life so long, of such vast and varied labors, and of such changeful circumstances, he had always appeared the same to every observer. Different characteristics would most naturally come into greater prominence under different conditions. From these special manifestations the unphilosophic would form their estimate of the whole character. Hence the great variety of opinions that men have entertained concerning him. Hence, too, the impossibility of forming a just and adequate idea of any of the great men of history from the records of any one chronicler. There are fourteen histories of Mr. Wesley extant. Each one of them is, no doubt, in many respects just; but no one of them is adequate; and for the simple reason that every man's work takes its coloring from that characteristic which from his point of view and from his peculiar mental structure impresses him the most strongly. It is scarcely to be expected that any one man should take that completeness and comprehensiveness of view necessary to the presentation of such a character in all its grand integrity. Each one of these memorial writers has devoted his powers of research and analysis to some one feature of his character or his work; in the synthesis of the whole, he appears as in no other single volume in any language—not yet, indeed, “in his whole round of rays complete,” but as one of the most magnificent figures in the history of the Church militant.

Science has not yet sufficiently established and defined the operation of the laws of heredity to enable us to measure the influence of ancestry on individual character. But that there is some such influence, and that, unobstructed by counter working forces, it will be a potent agency in molding the character and life of men, will not admit of reasonable doubt. Intellectual and moral traits, as well as physical excellences or defects, are often transmitted from parent to child, and in such prominence as to give tone and coloring to the entire history of the individual. In his admirable paper on “The Wesley Family,” Mr. Stevenson gives the lineage of the family for nearly a thousand years, and affirms that “in the annals of both England and Ireland the Wesleys have a place which marks them in successive generations as among the foremost men of the age for loyalty, chivalry, learning, piety, poetry, and music.”

How much these characteristics of his ancestry may have had to do in giving cast to Mr. Wesley's character cannot be determined; while, with Paul, he could say: "By the grace of God, I am what I am," it is not difficult to believe that that grace had been at work for a thousand years, originating, combining, and directing the forces necessary to the production of such a man at such a period in the world's history. Dr. Lipscombe, in the article on the "Providence of God in Methodism," says: "The cradle, the nursery, the parental home, were made ready for its advent." The providence that, by no merely "happy conjuncture of circumstances" prepared the place, likewise prepared the man. Methodism is often called "the child of providence," in the superficial sense of its adaptability to circumstances; it is so in the deeper, truer sense of being one of the developments of God's gracious administration, the preparation for which had been going forward through a series of ages. This view gives a profound significance to the fact that Mr. Wesley was born of such a long line of honorable ancestry. It reveals the hand of God, shaping events and directing the secret powers of nature to the working out of his great purposes in his appointed time.

In his beautiful portraiture of "John Wesley and his Mother," Dr. Potts says: "If God ever prepared a handmaid of his to be the mother of one specially commissioned and qualified to revive his Church, God surely raised up Susanna Wesley to be the mother and spiritual guide of the great reformer of the Churches in the eighteenth century." While much may perhaps be ascribed to the providence of God in his remoter ancestry, more, far more, is due to that providence which gave him such a mother. As God's instrument, she watched over his infancy, gave direction to the impulses and aims of his young life, chose for him and aided him in his studies, blessed him with her sympathies, prayers, and judicious counsels, and, more than all other human agencies combined, "helped to fit him for his wonderful destiny. She not only influenced her honored son as to his own character, but also stamped the impress of her discipline and doctrinal views upon the Methodist system."

In addition to inherited qualities, parental wisdom and piety, and educational advantages, there was a formative, disciplinary

influence at work of a different character. This was the type of religion then predominant in the Church of England—not the shameful irreligion of that Church, but that wherein consisted its religion. That it consisted for the most part in the observance of forms and rites cannot be denied. It was a baptized Pharisaism, as Archbishop Leighton testifies, “a fair carcass without the spirit.” While such a religion cannot save, it is easy to see how it may contribute to the greater efficiency of God’s chosen instruments. Mr. Wesley was to be the apostle, not of a new theology, but of a new life. Dr. Dobbin, of the Church of England, in his eloquent contribution on “The Ideas Wesley Developed,” gives especial prominence to these three: “The absolute necessity of personal and individual religion; the absolute need of spiritual influence to secure the conversion of the soul; and that the Church of Jesus Christ is a spiritual organization, consisting of spiritual men associated for spiritual purposes.” In order to the most effective enforcement of these great truths an experience of the insufficiency of formalism is an important prerequisite. Paul was a more powerful preacher of the righteousness of faith for having been “after the strictest sect a Pharisee.” And Wesley was only the more thoroughly prepared for his spiritual mission by his realization of the worthlessness of mere legalism, however comprehensive its exactions or absolute his compliance with them. The scholarly editor of the “Memorial Volume” describes Wesley in Savannah. It was there that his legalism culminated. There he voluntarily endured the greatest hardships. But, as Dr. Clark truly says, “The trials, persecutions, vigils, fastings, and perils in the solitudes of the wilderness, were necessary to form and develop the future revivalist and reformer for the great work to which God had called him.” By the fearful bondage of the letter he is prepared to witness with the greater power for the freedom of the Spirit.

It was while in Savannah, the scene probably of his deepest soul-struggles, that, in Mr. Wesley’s religious experience, it began to dawn toward a glorious spiritual day. “It was there,” says Dr. Clark, “his high-churchmanship received its deadly wound. He left Savannah a very different, a wiser, and a better man,” and a *converted* man, Dr. Clark believes, and argues forcibly to prove. But, if he was a converted

man, he did not know it; nor did he at any subsequent time identify any change wrought in him while in America as spiritual regeneration. The preponderance of evidence is in favor of the commonly accepted date and place of his conversion, namely, May 24, 1738, in a Moravian Society meeting in Aldersgate-street, London. He testifies that it was then, "while one was describing the change which God works in the heart through faith in Christ," that his "heart was strangely warmed." Whatever may have been his spiritual state hitherto, it was not until then that he received the Spirit of adoption, and "the joy of a free, full, present, and eternal salvation flowed in upon his soul."

A period of nearly ten years intervened between his ordination by Bishop Potter and his conversion through the instrumentality of Peter Böhler. These were years of prayerful, self-denying, and unshrinking devotion to duty; yet were they years not only of spiritual unrest, but of comparative failure in his ministry. But with the *strange warming* of his heart he entered into the sweet rest of faith, and a success, no doubt beyond any thing of which he had conceived, began at once to crown his labors. Henceforth the Spirit of the Lord God was upon him, and the Gospel as he preached it was "not in word only, but also in power and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance." He stirred the religious sensibilities of the people, and moved and melted the multitudes that flocked to his ministry as had never been done before. Mighty men had arisen in the Church before his day; mighty men were his contemporaries and colaborers; but for intensity of spiritual power, and, that best of all tests of its genuineness, the magnitude and permanency of spiritual results, he exceeded them all.

To those who are disposed to inquire into the secret of his power, the essay on "Wesley the Preacher," by Dr. Rigg, will be deeply interesting. He makes special mention of his clear, vivid, direct, and terse, but copious, style; of the tone and presence of calm, unconscious authority in both his manner and speech, and of the directness of his appeals to the consciences of men, and his impassioned earnestness of entreaty. In the paper of Rev. M. Lelièvre, on "Wesley as the Popular Preacher," will be found a similar analysis. He finds in Wesley's perfect frankness, his incisiveness of utterance, his logical

power, his simplicity, precision, and nervousness of style, and his directness of application and appeal, the constituents of his power. More comprehensive than either of these, and perhaps more satisfactory, is the analysis of Dr. Douglass. In the paper on "Wesley as a Revivalist," he maintains that, 1, his theology, 2, his spiritual life, 3, his style of preaching, and, 4, his power of organization, were "the elements which conspired to render him foremost of all revivalists whom the world had ever witnessed."

With such a combination of qualities, inspired by one impulse and consecrated to one end, it is not surprising that he had power with men. But add to this his divinely authenticated credentials as an ambassador of Christ, the attestation of the truth of his message by the Holy Ghost in his own experience, and the domination of his soul and life by what Mr. Overton calls "his master passion, the love of God and the love of man for God's sake," and it is no matter of astonishment that such signs and wonders attended his preaching, and that such multitudes were turned from the power of Satan unto God.

Excluded as he was from the Churches of the Establishment, he must either dishonor his commission or go out into the highways, entering wherever a door might be opened before him. He had a profound respect for authority, a genuine affection for the Church; but he could not hesitate, he must go, did go, and "mightily grew the word of God and prevailed." By the force of circumstances he became an itinerant. Bishop Pierce has portrayed "Wesley as an Itinerant." In one pregnant sentence he crystallizes the wonderful history: "He saw itinerancy in all its phases, tested all its capabilities, exhausted its trials, and, despite of its weariness, exposures, and privations, left it a legacy to his people." The beginning of his itinerancy, or, as Isaac Taylor has it, "The field-preaching of Wesley and Whitefield is the event whence the religious epoch now current must date its commencement."

His activity in sowing and reaping was equaled only by his diligence in garnering the fruits of his labors. To conserve, concentrate, augment, and guide the forces of the great movement, and accomplish the largest possible results for Christ and humanity, was his single aim. In the prosecution of this

aim, he exhibits a profound practical wisdom, a "genius for government," says Macanlay, "not inferior to that of Richelieu." In the paper on "Wesley the Founder of Methodism," Bishop M'Tyeire, after claiming for him a large share of the gifts of Fletcher, Whitefield, and his brother Charles, dialectician, orator, poet, adds, "He was all these and more. He was the organizer, the spiritual governor." There was little, if any, prearrangement of plans. He met emergencies as they arose, adopting such methods as the indications of providence suggested. He organized the undisciplined multitudes of his followers into Societies under what are known as the General Rules. For the instruction, reproof, exhortation, of both believers and inquirers, he adopted the class-meeting, making attendance on it a condition of membership in the Society. To such men as were willing to devote themselves wholly to evangelistic work he assigned fields of labor, removing or changing them, on a systematized itinerant plan, as the interests of the movement might require. Others, called to preach but not in circumstances to itinerate, he employed as lay preachers, giving them charge of the Societies, and authorizing them to preach in the communities in which they lived. Rev. Isaac P. Cook, writing on "Wesley and Lay Preaching," gives a history of this arm of the service, and presents clearly and strongly its relation to the itinerant ministry and its efficiency as an auxiliary. It was a great irregularity in the eyes of the clergy, but Mr. Wesley regarded it as providential. It began without his knowledge with Thomas Maxfield, a class-leader. At his mother's suggestion, before deciding to arrest the innovation, he went to hear Maxfield. After the sermon he said, "It is of the Lord; let him do what seemeth to him good. Who am I, that I should withstand God!" and forthwith lay preaching became a part of his system. Some of his most powerful fellow-helpers in the Gospel belonged to this class.

It was not originally, if ever, his intention to establish an independent Church; but with the materials that providence had put in his hands, the necessities of the work, and his genius for organization, such a result was scarcely evitable. Dr. Rigg, in his essay on "Wesley and the Church of England," says: "His whole soul revolted from the thought

of his people deliberately, for reasons assigned, and upon a manifesto of dissent and separation, severing themselves from the Church. If there were to be a separation, his determination through life was, that the separation should be imposed and forced upon, not sought or determined by, the Methodists." On the other hand, he adds that it seems to be undeniable "that the utmost divergence of Methodism from the Church of England at this day is but the prolongation of a line the beginning of which was traced by Mr. Wesley's own hand." Bishop Stevens affirms that the fatal point of departure "was the ordination of Coke and Asbury as superintendents of the American Societies in 1784," and that previous to that time "there was nothing in the views, or plans, or usages of the Wesleys which might not, without any wrenching or violence have been brought into harmony with the Anglican system." But there was in the Methodist movement something more than "views, or plans, or usages;" it was instinct with spiritual life from its center to its circumference, and in nothing but a separation could that life find scope for healthful growth and fruitage. Its tendency from the beginning was in that direction. The principle of independency was constitutional in the system; the system must perish or the principle must develop into a fact.

Mr. Wesley was too much of a philosopher, as well as a philanthropist, not to include education in his system of agencies for the elevation and salvation of men. Bishop Haven, writing of "Wesley as an Educator," after making mention of his educational work during his brief stay in Georgia, says it was after his return to England and his conversion that he "began to manifest his strong interest in education, not as some would say, second only to religion, but actually one with and inseparable from it." In 1740 he began his school at Kingswood, which "has expanded and been multiplied into colleges, theological schools, and academic institutions of every grade. To the establishment and encouragement of schools both secular and religious, he added educational, literary, and religious authorship. Reckoning his abridgments and compilations," says Dr. Punshon, "more than two hundred volumes proceeded from his fertile pen. Grammars, exercises, dictionaries, compendiums, sermons and notes, a voluminous Christian

library, a miscellaneous monthly magazine, tracts, addresses, answers, apologies, works polemical, classical, poetic, scientific, political, were poured forth in astonishing succession." And in all this work his single aim was to supply what he conceived to be some present demand. He was not a dreamer, or mere theorist, but eminently utilitarian in his views and plans. It was to the age in which he lived, to its intellectual and moral improvement that, under the impulse of a profound religious conviction, he gave his time and toil. And if any man has labored more earnestly for his generation, history has failed to record his name.

To him belongs the honor of having inaugurated the Sunday-school enterprise. All honor to Robert Raikes for the part he bore in the great work in England. But he was yet an infant when Mr. Wesley organized a Sunday-school in his Church in Savannah. Sir Charles Reed, in his contribution on "Wesley and Sunday-Schools," says that in 1736 "he had commenced the work which Raikes was permitted to accomplish in England more than forty years afterward." But even in England the Sunday-school work was begun by Hannah Ball, a Methodist, twelve years before Raikes engaged in it. "The very idea was suggested to his mind by Sophia Cook, another Methodist." To Mr. Wesley, therefore, as the indirect instrument, belongs the credit of the origin of this movement both in Europe and America. His active interest in it to the close of his life is abundantly manifested in his Journal and correspondence.

And into what field of Christian activity did he not enter? In almost every such field he was a pioneer. In the able paper on "Wesley and Methodism," Dr. Clark says, "The great enterprises of the evangelical Churches which have distinguished the last century and a half received their origin and impetus from his labors and zeal." This is a high claim, but it is substantiated by the facts. The first tract society the world ever had, and the first Bible society, the first Stranger's Friend Society, the first Medical Dispensary, he and his co-workers organized and operated. The great missionary societies of the world are traceable directly to him and his preachers. "The world is my parish," said he, and no uninspired man ever conceived and put in operation agencies so numerous, so compre-

hensive, far-reaching, and magnificent in their results. In the remarkable article, "Wesley and the Methodist Movement, Judged by Nearly One Hundred and Fifty Writers, Living or Dead," Dr. Clark has collected and skillfully arranged a great number of expressions of opinion concerning Wesley, and estimates of his character and work by men of learning in the Church of England, among Dissenters, among his own followers, and from the ranks of skepticism. No one sentence will express the concurrent testimony of all these witnesses more fully than these words of Dr. Dobbin: "A greater poet may arise than Homer or Milton; a greater theologian than Calvin; a greater philosopher than Bacon or Newton; a greater dramatist than any of ancient or modern fame; but a more distinguished revivalist of the Churches, minister of the sanctuary, believer of the truth, and blessing to souls, than John Wesley, *never*. . . . In the firmament in which he was lodged he shone and shines 'the bright particular star,' beyond comparison, as he is without a rival."

It is impossible to form any adequate conception of the influence of such a man, either on his own or subsequent generations. Mr. Overton says, "The world has at length done tardy justice to its benefactor;" but full justice can never be done until his benefactions are fully measured and appreciated. And if Southey is right in considering Mr. Wesley as "the man who will have produced the greatest effects centuries, or perhaps millenniums, hence," then the world will not do him full justice for centuries or millenniums to come.

No one has contributed more than he to the stability, order, and prosperity of the British Empire. Eminently loyal himself, the whole of his wonderful personal influence with the masses of his followers was in favor of subjection and fidelity to the powers that be. More potential than this was the profoundly religious sentiment which he awakened among the people, and the practical piety which he inculcated and illustrated. Even those who maligned and opposed him could not but feel the influence of his life and labors. That the Archbishop of Canterbury could openly pray that the blessing of God might rest upon him; and that the Bishop of London could say to him, "Mr. Wesley, may I be found at your feet in heaven," is evidence that the pulsations of the mighty move-

ment which was going forward among the masses were felt in the high places of both Church and State. While it was working a moral renovation in the governed, and developing their Christian patriotism, it was working a wise moderation in the throne. To Charles Wesley, Jun., King George III. said: "To your uncle (John Wesley) and your father (Charles Wesley) and to George Whitefield and the Countess of Huntingdon, the *Church* in this realm is more indebted than to all others;" and it may be truthfully added that to them more than to his own political wisdom, or the genius of his counselors, or the prowess of his arms, the *State* was indebted for its security and well-being.

That he and his collaborators wrought a revolution in the theological thought and teaching of his age cannot be questioned. It was at their hands that high Calvinism received the blow which drove it from the pulpits of the Establishment. They did more than *check* the prevalent Antinomianism—they lopped off its branches, cut down its trunk, and drew out and destroyed its roots. They sapped the foundations of that self-complacent Pelagianism which rested on the fancied moral ability and dignity of human nature. They demonstrated the worthlessness of a mere traditionalism, and indirectly, as Mr. Abbey says, "gave a death blow to the then existing forms of Deism." They did not preach any new Gospel. The truths they proclaimed were all contained in the formularies of the Church, "but they had become buried and fossilized in learned folios, and throughout Christendom they had but few living witnesses." With nothing but the accepted creed of the Church, they revolutionized the Church itself, and turned the world upside down. That Mr. Wesley was the father of the evangelical party in the Church of England may not be assented to by all. Some, indeed, claim that honor for Whitefield. Whatever its parentage, Mr. Gladstone affirms that it received its main impulse from Methodism. A Churchman, then, being witness, the arrest of the Romish heresy of salvation by the Church and its sacraments was largely if not primarily due to the Wesleyan revival. It gave to the doctrines of justification by faith alone and the witness of the Spirit, and to practical experimental religion, a place in the religious thinking and teaching of the times of first importance and

greatest power. This was the secret of its success. It was this that made it, as Mr. Leslie Stephen says, "by far the most important phenomenon of the eighteenth century," and gave it that reactive force "upon other bodies" which, he adds, "was as important as its direct influence."

Such are the relations of theology and psychology that changes or modifications in the former will work corresponding changes or modifications in the latter. Especially is this true of any modification of the conception of God, or of the human mind. That the Wesleyan conception of both God and man differed from that of Augustine, Calvin, Luther, and the Church of the eighteenth century, is a fact that will not be called in question. It is equally plain that that conception has entered into, and in a large degree leavened, all theological thought and teaching. That it should affect psychological inquiry and modify philosophic systems was but a natural and necessary result. A true philosophy must proceed, not as Augustine's did, from God manward, but from man Godward. It must have its foundation in a true analysis of the human mind. In the Arminian or Wesleyan theology more than in any other system, moral freedom is the predominant factor in the complex conception of man. It emphasizes also, not only the value of experience, or consciousness, but its authority as a witness to the phenomena of the inner life. How much the psychology of the present time is indebted for its healthful tone to the Wesleyan emphasis of these two doctrines it is impossible to determine. But that to it belongs in a large measure the credit of the liberation of both philosophy and religion from the blight of necessitarianism will not be doubted. Some future history of philosophy will mark the Wesleyan period as the beginning of a psychological as well as religious epoch.

The fact that Methodism thus modified doctrinal systems that had all the prestige of antiquity, and were accepted and defended by the genius and learning of the greatest men the Church had produced, is sufficient evidence that it was not merely emotional in its origin. It embodied principles that were in profounder harmony with the religious consciousness of men, and therefore mightier, than the ancient beliefs. Those beliefs had survived the shocks and vicissitudes of centuries: that they should be displaced or modified by a sudden outburst

of emotion is as inconceivable as that the granite boulder should be dislodged and ground to powder by a dash of spray. Emotion is ephemeral in its manifestations, and uncertain in its operation and issues; one hundred and fifty years have witnessed no abatement of the forces of Methodism, nor obliteration of any of its original distinctive characteristics. Isaac Taylor assigns fifty years as "the extreme limit of the personal energy and influence" of the originators "of those revolutions that mark the history of the human mind," and adds: "Never hitherto has any new impulse, or any strenuous moral movement, been taken up and carried forward by the sons and successors of its originators, in the same mind, or with the same, or with nearly the same, singleness of purpose." He affirms also that the peculiar relationship of Methodists of the present day to "the fathers and founders of their communion appears, to the eye of the impartial by-stander, to be made up more of what is technical, or conventional, than of what is substantial in a purely religious sense." Mr. Taylor does not define *substantial* for his readers; but it may be assumed that as a philosopher he used the term to denote that which was original and essential in the Methodist movement—its underlying, originating, and formative principles, without which it could not have been. If this was his meaning, then it may be shown that he made his assertion without a careful analysis of the facts of Methodist history. In "what is technical, or conventional," there may have been divergences; in what is *substantial*, Methodism has preserved its unity and identity.

Its doctrinal basis has undergone no change. No stone placed in its foundation by Mr. Wesley has been removed; none has been added. Watson's "Institutes" is but a systematic development of the theology of Wesley's "Sermons" and "Notes." Advance have been made in philology and biblical criticism, in history and philosophy; but the theology of William Burt Pope, D.D., a magnificent compendium of which is given in the article on "Methodist Doctrine," rests squarely on the foundation laid by Wesley, and is of a piece with the superstructure reared by Watson. And in all the branches of the Methodist family, however much they may differ in polity, there is but one faith. Individuals differ on questions of speculative theology, or in those intellectual speculations which have

reference merely to the manner of explaining that which is fundamental; but with respect to that which is essential there is not nor has there ever been any serious divergence. Nor has there been any change of opinion with respect to the relative position and importance of the doctrines of Methodism in its system, either theoretically or practically. The doctrines which Mr. Wesley emphasized are emphasized to-day—not, it may be, with the same constancy, but with a strength of conviction no less complete and controlling.

Doctrine is the subsoil on which rests experience. As the former has maintained its integrity through all the history of Methodism, so has the latter. Bishop Foss has written eloquently of “Wesley and Personal Religious Experience.” Such experience he characterizes as “the grand formative principle of Methodism; its central, uniting, explaining idea, without which it could not have been.” That there have been changes of opinion and practice with respect to some of the conventional means whereby experience may be developed is undeniable. But as to experience itself, the privilege of its enjoyment, and the importance of enjoying, cultivating, and maturing it in order to the strength and force of religious character and life, Methodism has suffered no relapse. It is written in its latest as well as its oldest books; it is preached from its thousands of pulpits in city and country no less truly than by Wesley himself in the Old Foundry, or on Moorfield Common; and it is enjoyed in its preciousness and power by multitudes to-day as really as by any of those who through his preaching believed on the name of the Son of God. Justification by faith, the witness of the Spirit, peace, joy, rest, triumph in Christ, the cleansing of the soul from all sin by the blood of the cross, are now, as then, facts written in the spiritual history of thousands.

Experience is the soil out of which comes the life with all its activities. “Christ in you the hope of glory,” is the inspiration of Christian toil, self-denial, endurance, and devotion. The joy of the Lord is the strength of his people—their strength for work and for suffering. This experience in Wesley unfolded itself in a life unexampled in activity and fruitfulness since the days of Paul. Indeed, that great apostle was not more abundant in labors than the apostle of Methodism. John

Wesley laid all his powers on the altar; Paul did no more. Both alike counted all things but loss for Christ; and neither sought any higher honor or knew any deeper joy than to glorify Christ and do good to men. And Methodism from that day until now has not been wanting in lives of like devotedness. Many a follower of Wesley is as thoroughly consecrated as he was, and is as pure in life and in all manner of conversation. The fruits of righteousness are as abundant and no less perfect now than then. What work of Wesley for the elevation and salvation of men has not been taken up and vigorously pressed forward by his sons? The mantle of Elijah may not have fallen on any single Elisha; but his spirit has been breathed into a multitude, and their aggregated forces have wrought results of which he never dreamed. When he went to his reward Methodism counted 550 preachers and 140,000 members—the astonishing fruit of about sixty years' toil. To-day it numbers over 50,000 preachers, 8,000,000 communicants and 12,000,000 hearers, or about one sixtieth of the human race! Six years before his death he said of his people that they "walked by one rule, knowing religion is holy tempers; and striving to worship God, not in form only, but likewise in spirit and in truth"—words equally applicable to the great mass of his followers now.

Doctrine, experience, and life—these comprise all that was substantial and essential in the Methodism of the fathers and founders of the communion; and in the possession of these, in their original integrity, the Methodism of the present demonstrates its oneness with that of the past. Nor "is it going forward now, commingled with other moral forces, and having its own abated," as Taylor suggests. It is quickening, modifying, and assimilating all other evangelic forces. It has swelled the ranks of other communions directly by thousands, indirectly by hundreds of thousands. It has relegated doctrines once most prominent in the instructions of the pulpit to merited obscurity. It has breathed life and kindled a holy enthusiasm where before was nothing but the rigidity of a dead orthodoxy, or the delusion of a self-complacent formalism. But the process from first to last has been one of assimilation, and not of abatement or loss of its own inherent and distinctive forces. It has methodized others without unmethodizing

itself, and thus given to evangelical Christendom its mightiest impulse to a grand, complete spiritual unity in Christ.

One in doctrine, experience, life, and aims, there may be, and ought to be, genuinely fraternal relations established and maintained among all the branches of the Methodist family. Consistency demands it; the honor of Christ and the mission of Methodism demand it. While unitizing others, Methodism within its own household should "keep the unity of the Spirit in the bonds of peace." The coming Ecumenical Conference is an omen of a closer union and a deeper fellowship. The "Wesley Memorial Volume" points in the same direction; and the WESLEY MONUMENTAL CHURCH, while commemorating the past, will stand as a perpetual memorial of the brotherhood of the Methodisms of the world. A godspeed to all the agencies and movements "which make for peace" and "love unfeigned!"

ART. VII.—THAKOMBAU, CANNIBAL AND CHRISTIAN.

The King and People of Fiji. By REV. JOSEPH WATERHOUSE. London: Wesleyan Conference Office.

THE beautiful islands forming the subject of Mr. Waterhouse's deeply interesting book have been the scene of one of the most signal triumphs ever achieved by the Christian religion. They are one hundred and fifty in number, of which one hundred are inhabited by a population variously estimated at from one hundred and fifty thousand to three hundred thousand, the two largest being Viti Levu, (Great Fiji,) eighty-five miles by forty, and Vanan Levu, (Great Land,) ninety-five miles by thirty. Of all the Polynesians the Fijians were addicted to a most inveterate cannibalism, and had, in consequence, become characterized by an almost ineradicable and hopeless ferocity, when, less than fifty years ago, they received for the first time the visit of a Christian missionary. In 1835 a prudential agreement was come to between the Wesleyan Missionary and the London Missionary Societies, whereby the former were left in sole possession of the group for Protestant missionary work. The Rev. Messrs. Cross and Cargill were the first Wesleyan missionaries, who were succeeded by Messrs. Hunt, Calvert, Waterhouse, Lyth, Williams, Hazlewood, Wats-

ford, Wilson, and others. The complete triumph of Christianity over heathenism cannot be said to have been gained for twenty years after the establishment of the mission; for, although considerable success had attended the arduous labors of the heroic missionaries, it was not till 1854 that Thakombau, the King of Bau, embraced Christianity. For his conversion unfaltering efforts had been put forth, the missionaries believing, as the sequel proved, that the renunciation of cannibal heathenism in favor of Christianity by one of immense personal authority, irresistible force of character, and overpowering military reputation, would be attended with immediate and very decided results favorable to the Christianization of the entire people.

Formerly the two Fijian powers were centered in Verata and Rewa, towns of Viti Levu; subsequently there rose into power an independent and warlike kingdom known by the name of Bau. Bau had its sacred king, *Roko Tui Bau*, (the revered King of Bau,) who was relieved from all warlike engagements, but held to be bound to uphold religion, and especially to maintain cannibalism. After him came another monarch, *Vunivalu*, (the root of war,) the military commander and State officer. These two kings were advised by *Tunitoga*, who was also their spokesman. As the guardian of all the daughters of the kings and chiefs, he was the State match-maker, and disposed absolutely of all the young chieftainesses in marriage. Next in the social scale were the *Bete*, the priests, and the *Matanivanu*, the royal messengers. To Bau, the priests said, had the gods given the pre-eminence among Fijian kingdoms, which was accordingly known by the title of the "God-land," and regarded by multitudes with feelings of deep religious veneration. Good fortune awaited it, and, as was meet, the sacred city attained an enviable prosperity. To its distant provinces paid the tribute of handsome women and spacious canoes, so that Bau came to glory in its female beauty and its magnificent fleet. The island became crowded as the permanent dwelling of an increasing and influential population, building for themselves large and spacious houses, without partitions or upper rooms, in an irregular and crowded fashion. Thirty heathen temples reared their showy heads ornamented with white cowry shells; but

no resting-place for the dead was deemed necessary, save the royal mausoleum, for the earthen floors of the dwelling-houses were regarded as furnishing a sufficient separation of the dead from the living. Three market-places had been provided, which, in addition to the purposes of trade, were used in furtherance of general intercourse, and as human slaughter-houses. Distinguished among the islands for its warlike and commercial superiority, it has become equally celebrated for its devotion to the rites of a cannibalistic religion. The sound of the drum is the signal for a feast on human flesh; and old and young run together to gaze on a naked victim just clubbed, then dashed against a stone in front of the temple, prior to being cut up and divided, if possible before life is quite extinct. Or if still alive, he is thrown into an oven and partly cooked. If decapitated, the children eagerly contend for the head to play ball with it, and a superstitious mother begs a morsel of skin with which to rub the lips of her little one as a sacred preservation of her child's health. The decease of a husband must be honored by the death of his widows. First painted, dressed, and caressed, they are strangled by suffocation, preferring death to remarriage, that they may avoid harsh treatment, on rejoining their lord, for having displayed so little affection as to remain long on earth after his death. A sick man or woman felt to be burdensome is sure to be partially suffocated, then buried alive. Tokens of respect for a deceased chief must be supplied unstintedly, so that placed in a row over the door-way of his former dwelling as many as twenty fingers, amputated from as many individuals, may be counted.

Over this flourishing and religious "God-land" Tanoa reigned, to whom, in 1817, the young Prince Thakombau was born. Unrestrained jubilations attended his birth, not moderated by the death of his mother a few weeks after. The queens of Rewa nourished and feasted him; feasted him on being for the first time washed in water from the sea, when he first turned over of himself, and when first he showed he had strength to creep. As he grew he became tyrannical and audacious. "Does he wish to take an airing? A man must carry him on his shoulders. Is he inclined for sleep? The women must fan him, and soothingly press his untired feet. Is he angry with his nurse? He may strike her. Does he

quarrel with his playmate? He may bite, strike, or maim with impunity. Does a slave accidentally interrupt his pleasure? He may fearlessly draw his bow and send an arrow at the intruder." Without any provocation, his father would cause large numbers of men to be killed and eaten. In visiting an island he would refuse to land until assured that a sufficient number of men had been killed to do honor to him; while on launching his canoe for any distinguished visit or important adventure, he would cause a number of bodies to be prepared beforehand, in time to have it launched by being dragged over them into the water. Under such a training the youthful Thakombau (now known by the name of Sern) grew up a blood-thirsty monster. How far his cannibalistic whims and fancies had been indulged may be gathered from his requiring on one occasion, while yet a youth, that the tongue of a rebel chief should be cut out while yet alive, which he devoured raw, gayly chatting and joking the while with the mutilated man, whose entreaties for a speedy death he answered by prolonged, cruel torments, finally satisfying his savage hunger by having him cooked and eaten.

Such was Thakombau, who, though not yet king, his father being still and for many years after alive, had already gained immense power, when, in 1835, the Rev. David Cargill, M. A., and Mr. William Cross invaded Fiji in furtherance of His warfare whose weapons are "not carnal, but spiritual." Soon discerning the premier position in rank and influence to which Bau had been advanced among the islands of the group, Mr. Cross formed the design of commencing a mission there, if he could but gain the consent of the young prince. The answer given to the request to be allowed to reside in his dominion was, "It will be most agreeable to me, if you think well; but I will not hide it from you that I am now engaged in war, and cannot attend to your instructions, or even assure you of safety." The missionary concluded, in the face of such an answer, that it would be unadvisable to enter upon his mission; a conclusion that would probably be the more speedily come to from the fact that the cannibal king and his attendants were at the same hour glutting their ferocious appetites upon the cooked bodies of the two rebels, those of two others being yet in the native ovens for the further gratification of their

hyena-like propensities. Subsequently, however, it was found that Mr. Cross had, through ignorance, given offense to Thakombau in thus deciding. The answer it appeared was intended to express permission to take up his residence in Bau, though, of course, the missionary did not so interpret it. Thakombau wished to be regarded as having displayed remarkable condescension in granting permission at all; and that it should not be made use of, he interpreted as distrust of his ability to protect him from his own enemies, or else distrust of his promise. He conceived himself slighted, and for fifteen years resisted appeals from other missionaries for the same privilege.

Eighteen months after, the missionaries in the other islands of the group having become seven in number, a second application for permission was made, this time to Tanoa, Thakombau's father, who, partly from fear of his son, refused it, alleging, "The island is small, the people foolish. I fear they will take your property from you. Water and fire-wood are difficult to obtain." With characteristic courage Mr. Cross answered: "The smallness of this island, the distance of food and water, are not difficulties to me; as for the people, I do not fear them. I fear no one but God; and if you will only give your consent, I will be in Bau in three days." The king now gave an unqualified refusal, and the missionary turned away to Viwa, a beautiful island two miles from Bau. Tanoa, however, permitted the missionaries to pay occasional visits to his island, and would have built them a mission-house but for the stern opposition of his son, which, on one occasion, found expression in the menacing words to one of the missionaries, "When you have grown *dalo* on yon bare rock, then I will become a Christian, and not before." Meanwhile, his evil determination gained strength by cannibalistic indulgences. By strategy he caused one hundred natives of Namena to be massacred, and their bodies taken to Bau, where they were cooked and eaten. To accompany these to the land of spirits it was deemed necessary to strangle eighty women. At the same time that Thakombau became more active and determined in warfare, he developed a finished refinement in torture. The "Wesleyan Missionary Notices" supply the following revolting illustration in connection with the Namena massacre: Two men, unfortunately taken alive, after being doomed to death,

were ordered to dig a hole in the earth for the purpose of making a native oven, and were required to cut fire-wood to roast their own bodies. They were then directed to go and wash, and afterward to make a cup of the banana leaf, which, from opening a vein in each person, was soon filled with blood. This blood was drank in the presence of the sufferers by the Kaba people. Thakombau then had their arms and legs cut off and eaten, some of which were presented to them. He then ordered a fish-hook to be put into their tongues, which were drawn out as far as possible, and then cut off; these were roasted and eaten, amid the taunt, "We are eating your tongues." As life was not extinct an incision was made in the side, and the bowels taken out; which soon terminated their sufferings.

Along with all this was a most superstitious reverence for the Fijian deities. Thakombau's great anxiety to secure their approbation showed itself in launching a canoe, when, an accident having happened, he offered no less than twenty-one human sacrifices to appease their wrath. But his absorbing occupation was war. From the vessels calling at Fiji he purchased neither clothing nor food, but muskets, cannon, powder, balls, lead, and spirituous liquors. One Jackson, who at this time paid a visit to him, thus records it in Ruskin's "Islands of the Western Pacific:"

Thakombau having asked me to cast him a thousand balls of lead for his muskets, I agreed, and went to his house, where I was surprised to see upwards of twenty chests of different sorts with a good many china trunks, forty or fifty pigs of lead, and upward of two hundred kegs of powder. I asked where he got all these things from. He said he considered himself very badly off, and wished some *beché-de-mer* vessels would come so that he could make up his standing quantity of powder, which he said was six hundred kegs, with pigs of lead in proportion. He also said he had five thousand muskets, but that he had distributed them all but a few among his people. He then gave me a bunch of keys and told me to unlock the chests, and I would find every thing requisite for running the bullets. I found three or four large bullet molds, all of American manufacture, of brass, to run a dozen balls at a time, together with pots, ladles, and every thing else. I soon completed my task and gave him satisfaction. He asked me to stop in Bau with him, his father and brothers, and consider it my home; that I could go to any part of the Fijis I thought proper, and yet be under his pro-

tection; and by and by, when a vessel came, he should buy a cask of rum and we should drink it together. He appeared to me at first to be a very good fellow, and, in fact, he was so to me, but I was not long of discovering him to be a great tyrant to his people.

Thus Thakombau grew to be a monster warrior, the terror of all Fiji. Yet missionaries did not abandon him, nor permit themselves to be awed into silence by his rapidly acquired influence. One day the Rev. John Hunt ("the apostle of Fiji") obtained an interview with him, and finding him in a pacific mood, felt encouraged to converse with him, after making his request for permission to allow a missionary at Bau, as follows:

Thakombau. If I am first to become a Christian among my people, I shall be first in heaven, shall I not?

Hunt. If you love God the most, and serve him the best, you may have a higher place in heaven.

Thakombau. But Namasimalua has become a Christian. Have you given him glass windows for his new house, and English carpets for his floors, and have you sent to England for a vessel for him? He gets no riches because he has renounced heathenism.

Hunt. We do not come here to give riches to those who become Christians, but to tell you about God and Jesus Christ, that you may love him, and your souls be saved.

Thakombau. Then I will not become a Christian. What will become of the bodies of those who have been eaten, and of those who have been buried? Will they rise again from the dead?

Hunt. Your body, the bodies of all those whom you have eaten, and the bodies of all who are in the graves, will rise again at the day of judgment; and if you and they have not repented you will all be condemned and cast into hell-fire.

Thakombau. Ah, well! it is a fine thing to have a fire in cold weather.

Hunt. I shall pray for you with a good mind, although you treat the subject so lightly.

Thakombau. Go on with that.

A short while after this interview Thakombau became greatly enraged on learning that his companion in arms, Varina, chief of Viwa, with many of his people, had accepted Christianity, and determined on taking revenge. Arriving at Viwa for that intent, he ordered Namasimalua, Varina's counselor, into his presence, who obeyed, showing his respect by creeping into the house on hands and knees. "Split his head with an ax!" cried the savage Thakombau, as Namasimalua approached him. At this moment Mr. Hunt's voice was heard, in pacific,

respectful terms, saying, "My love to you, sir!" The missionary's object in securing a diversion and gaining time was accomplished, and the opportunity taken to induce the monster to abandon his cruel purpose. All the day warriors, armed with clubs and muskets, were arriving, but so effective was the pleading of the missionaries that, as the numbers increased the purpose wavered, until the admission was made, "We came to kill these people, and we cannot lift a hand!" Under the shadow of night they quietly withdrew to Bau, acknowledging that "the Christian's God was too strong for them." Passing through the bush to the canoes, many of the Viwans, whom they had come to destroy, carried for them the clubs which had been brought for the death-dealing work.

Hitherto unimpressible, the untamable monster was now giving signs of contrition. In 1847 Rev. Walter Lawry, General Superintendent of Wesleyan Missions, visited Fiji, and found him, upon the whole, favorable to the mission. Mr. Lawry said of him that war and feasting upon human bodies was his delight; but that he even went so far as to promise that he would one day abandon heathenism and embrace the Gospel; a promise which Mr. L. regarded as to some extent sincere because he had ceased to blaspheme the Christian religion, as had been his habit formerly. He also, about this time, took an amusing method of evincing an evident respect for it, by punishing a woman of his household who, having first embraced Christianity and afterward apostatized, offered in mockery to preach a sermon, and made a beginning; but the king hearing her, peremptorily stopped her, saying, "You shall not ridicule the *lotu* here. Religion is true, and a weighty matter, not to be trifled with." To this remonstrance he added punishment in a novel fashion. Standing near was a huge *bêche-de-mer* pot, which he ordered his attendants to turn over upon the woman, under which, coiled and cramped, she remained in terror all night, not daring to stir until orders for her release were given by Thakombau himself. The personal influence of the Rev. John Hunt over him was also of a very favorable character. It is quite evident that Thakombau regarded Mr. Cross as his personal enemy, because of the affront he ignorantly gave him in refusing to take up his residence at Bau on first seeking permission to do so. In an interview, which lasted four hours,

the powerful chief vehemently asseverated that he never would become a Christian. "But your children will," said Mr. Cross. "They shall not," was the immediate reply; "for I will, on my death-bed, enjoin them not to change their religion." To Mr. Hunt, on the contrary, he gave great heed, allowing him to hold regular divine service on the Sabbath in Bau, and even giving permission to one of his children not only to embrace Christianity, but likewise to receive religious instruction at his hands. "We are at war," said he to him on one occasion, "and cannot attend to Christianity at present;" and on another, "You can go to any part of our dominions, but we at Bau shall not become Christians at present." The different relations of Messrs. Cross and Hunt to this self-willed and ferocious chief very clearly show the great value to a missionary of a personal influence which shall operate favorably to his work; and in the case of the latter there can be no doubt that the power for good he had brought to bear upon Thakombau while living was increased when, in 1848, he ceased from his labors, and, as he did so, left as his dying message the instruction: "Tell the king that I love him. I entreat him not to forget his oft-repeated promise to me that he would become a Christian. Tell him that religion is profitable." Before Mr. Hunt died, Thakombau acknowledged the secret of his power over him to have lain in his amiable and self-sacrificing disposition, by the remark he once made when speaking of him, "He is a loving man." That was the conquest of the missionary over the cannibal; the conquest of the Gospel every-where—*love*.

But submission was not yet. Hunt's influence was personal, at the same time that it was in favor of Christianity. Yet there were many reasons to the proud and cruel monster why he should not place himself under the latter. He was Fiji's great chief; history told of no greater; and if he were not a god already, he would become one at his death. But the Christians regarded him as a mere man, not over good at that. Then, again, they would not assist him in his wars; and as the natives of other islands became Christian, they told him they could not give him the assistance in warfare which he had long ago regarded as beyond any question his. That they should refuse to fight for him was as preposterous as it was aggravating. Accordingly, he rightly concluded that as the Fijians

abandoned the faith of their fathers he became a sufferer by the loss of political and martial influence. His pride could not brook this, and he resolved upon the extirpation of all the natives who had become Christian. The missionaries and their families—thanks to the influence of the departed Hunt—were to be spared, but all the native disciples were to be put to death. War was declared and actually entered upon, and the entreaties of the missionaries against it treated with contempt. It happened that at the time (1851) a Tongan chief with three hundred men was at Bau. The missionaries besought his influence with Thakombau, and in the consequent interview he informed the latter that he would feel called upon to defend them if he judged their lives to be imperiled by the war. Thakombau, fearing a contest with Tongans as well as the Christian Fijians, saw it to be politic to bring warlike operations to a close, and although siege had been laid to Dama, it was raised and peace proclaimed. At the same time he cursed both the missionaries and the Tongans, secretly vowing to carry out his bloody designs at a more opportune season.

In the same year a further step in advance was taken. One Sabbath in March the Rev. Joseph Waterhouse was conducting divine service in a house when he was greatly alarmed by a shower of stones upon it, which he thought for the time would bury him. As soon as possible most of the congregation fled in terror, among those remaining being a chief of rank, whose indignation found vent in the exclamation, "Am I a pig, that I should be stoned?" But the stoning had been done by order of Thakombau himself, and when the courageous Waterhouse learned this he determined to accuse the tyrant of it. In company with the Rev. J. Calvert, another devoted missionary—who at the time trembled for his friend's safety—he dealt faithfully with the persecuting king. In spite of his denial of it Mr. Waterhouse reiterated the charge, and threatened the judgments of heaven upon him if he persisted in opposing the work of the Lord. The king listened with astonishment, and the faithful missionary, encouraged by the evident embarrassment of his unwilling listener, followed up his reproof by making a threefold demand: 1. That he should receive a missionary; 2. That he should allow public worship at Bau every Sabbath; 3. That he should declare freedom of con-

science in matters of religion. Says the missionary : "Thakombau was thunderstruck, and I immovable. At last he yielded, and the day was apparently gained." But, as yet, not really gained. Though a site had been granted and preparations made for the erection of a church, the native priests, in the course of a few weeks, persuaded the king to reverse his decision. For this breach of faith Mr. Waterhouse expostulated with him for a couple of hours, but in vain. Finding it impossible to induce him to return to his promise, he concluded the interview by reminding him that they two, and the native priests who had influenced him, would one day meet before the judgment-seat of God, to which the contemptuous king replied in derision, "O ! I suppose a vessel from the other world has arrived in England. You seem to be well up in information from the day of judgment !" Often reproved, he was yet too much of a rebel against God to submit.

It was at this time that a papal bishop visited Fiji, and tried to induce Thakombau to receive a French Romanist missionary. The friendship of the king was solicited by the presentation of a couple of muskets, but the request, which it was hoped the present would be likely to extort from the warrior, was sternly refused. Alluding to the failure of the Protestant missionaries to obtain their long-sought permission, the bishop inquired of the king how it was that it had been denied them. Receiving a negative reply, the bishop vouchsafed the information that "the Virgin Mary was keeping Bau for the Catholics, and that when Thakombau became a Catholic he would have to order the Protestants to change their faith." The king's ready rejoinder was, that the bishop had better be gone and leave him and his city to the care of the Virgin, and to come again when she had converted them !

Tanoa, Thakombau's father, did not die until December 8, 1852, when the latter became king in title, as he had for many years been in every other respect. The death of a king was an occasion when heathen rites could not possibly be dispensed with, however hesitating the attitude of Thakombau had become toward the heathen religion. The old man died with the faint inquiry on his lips, how many would be strangled to accompany his spirit to his fathers ; and the son determined that his royal parent should not be unhonored in his death, and so

subject to the reproaches of all Fiji. The Rev. John Watsford, who happened to be, at the time, the only missionary near to Bau, at once made his way to the royal residence, only to learn, as he feared, that Thakombau had given orders for the performance of the usual bloody custom. Says Mr. Waterhouse :

The principal widow was a lifeless corpse, with the strangling drapery round her neck. A second was in the midst of death, her strangulation being effected by the prince himself and his companions. Two or three were pulling the cord on either side, while a lady of rank, forgetting her Christianity in her desire to honor her royal relative, pressed down the covered head. Just as the third was making her appearance Thakombau recognized the missionary. "How now!" exclaimed the prince. "Refrain, sir," said Mr. Watsford, with tears in his eyes and compassion beaming from his whole countenance. "Two are already strangled; let them suffice; spare the remainder. I love them." "We also love them," replied Thakombau. "But there are only a few—only five. But for you missionaries many more would have been strangled." The third lady then bade farewell to her relatives and knelt down. The cord was then adjusted, the covering thrown over her, and she died without a sound or struggle. Two others followed. All this was effected without the slightest noise, hurry, or confusion. A stranger might have supposed it to have been a wedding of the living rather than of the dead. Yet [continues Mr. Waterhouse reflectively] the voice of conscience made itself heard. For several days Thakombau was frequently engaged in talking about the departed women, and expressing his wonder whether mankind will know each other in the eternal world."

Still the king continued his cannibalistic and warlike pursuits; but, as if the judgments were overtaking him, to bring about his humiliation preparatory to his accepting the Saviour, he had to contend with the rebellion of a portion of his subjects, and sustain the loss of Bau by fire. Hoping to find him in a somewhat softened mood, the Rev. Messrs. Lyth, Watsford, and Waterhouse obtained an interview with him, to press once more upon him their offer of a missionary. But, proud and contemptuous as ever, he refused the permission as before, telling the deputation that no missionary should ever reside at Bau, though his habitation were merely an empty oil-cask. The missionaries, however, did not relax their importunities, but on every suitable occasion renewed them. The proud warrior's successes in war were not so frequent as of yore, and a series

of reverses of various kinds overtook him in rapid succession for the next two years. On October 30, 1853, Mr. Waterhouse obtained another interview, at which the long-delayed consent was granted to him, after a promise had been made to the Rev. James Calvert to the same purport a few days before. The following conversation passed between Mr. W. and the king :

Mr. Waterhouse. As you, sir, are now willing to build a mission-house, and have sent for me to reside at Bau, I have come to report my arrival.

King. 'Twas Mr. Calvert's mind, not mine.

Mr. Waterhouse. Don't trifle with me, sir. Mr. Calvert brought your message to me, in consequence of which I have come.

King. No, no; not my message, but his own.

Mr. Waterhouse. Impossible! But what am I to do?

King. Do? Go and live at Viwa for the present.

Mr. Waterhouse. Chief, listen to me for a few moments. You have frequently befooled the missionaries. For years we have listened to you, and have kept a missionary uselessly waiting until you would build him a house at Bau. We can be played with no longer. I, myself, have left an island where your countrymen, though heathens and cannibals like yourself, love and respect me as a missionary; the dead have been given me for burial, and the lives of many been spared at my intercession. I know that you will not be very ready to follow their example, for you told my father that you would destroy and kill as long as your life lasted. But if you will build me a house, though I may labor without success, yet I will reside with you, and endeavor to do you good.

King. Very well; don't be angry. Go to Viwa, and when we are at leisure we will build your house.

Mr. Waterhouse. Angry I am not, as the king well knows. But I reprove you publicly on the present occasion, as private expostulation has failed. Please oblige me with a house in which to deposit my books, furniture, etc.

King. Bau is quite full; we have no room. Go to Viwa.

Mr. Waterhouse. I must now respectfully but firmly inform the king that he must be pleased to furnish me with a shed for my goods, and also to send a canoe to the vessel for the said goods, or I shall be compelled to return to Ovalau to-morrow. The king cannot have forgotten that the goods belonging to the missionary Watsford were brought to Bau, with the king's full consent, who then refused to allow of the landing of the same. To guard against a similar mishap, the king must be pleased in this instance to dispatch his own men to the vessel, more especially as the brig is six miles distant.

King, (inwardly agitated, but endeavoring to maintain an outward composure.) Don't talk like that. Perhaps the Manilla man would lend his store hut to you.

The missionary's effects were landed at the command of the king, and temporarily stored in the building referred to him, and a house afterward built on the Bauan summit. The erection of this house was largely due to the influence of the queen over the king in the missionary's favor. Henceforward, divine service was conducted twice every Lord's day in the mission-house. The missionaries' efforts for the conversion of Thakombau were now seconded by a letter from the Tongan King George, who strongly advised him to become a Christian. His principal queen, Adi Samanunu, used her influence to the same end, though exposed to much ridicule from most of the favorites of the regal harem, who taunted her with wanting to escape the strangling which would take place at the death of her lord; while others accused her of the design of securing him to herself as his sole wife, and for that reason desired him to become a Christian. Soon came the decision. On April 27, 1854, the missionary had a prolonged interview with him, and faithfully and affectionately dealt with him as a sinner before God. The Lord had evidently been at work by his Spirit upon the proud savage's heart, for he wept profusely before his faithful reprover. "Will not God cast me off," he tearfully inquired, "if I call upon his name whom I have so ill-treated?" Then, with a spirit of meekness never before displayed by him, he announced his decision to accept the offers of God's mercy; and the missionary, excited with thankfulness and joy, left him. The day following, at a full meeting of the chiefs and governors from adjacent towns on the mainland, the king announced his decision; and at a meeting of his male relatives and principal chiefs on the following day, it was resolved that the religion of Christ should be substituted for that of their fathers. Bales of native calicoes were opened and distributed among those who wished to clothe themselves, and provision was shared out among those who intended to renounce heathenism.

That was a memorable Sabbath that followed, April 30, 1854, but it is fitting that Mr. Waterhouse should himself describe its services:

It was one of Fiji's loveliest cloudless days. Early in the morning the mission family arrived from Viwa, including Mr. and Mrs. Calvert and their children, and Mr. E. P. Martin, whose hearty and praiseworthy labors in the printing department have

greatly enriched all Fiji. The word was passed to "beat the drum." The sound thrilled the hearts of all. The two great wooden drums of Fiji—known to the natives by the name of "the publisher of war"—had never before been used but to congregate warriors and cannibals. Their sounds had often betokened death to the living captives who awaited the strong arm of their human butchers to relieve them from their awful suspense; their piercing "pat-pat-pat" had resounded when two hundred victims were piled in a heap, and had rolled as an accompaniment at all the bloody orgies of Bau. These drums are now beaten to assemble those who were willing to enroll themselves under the banner of the Prince of peace.

The place set apart for the public service was the large dwelling (one hundred and twenty feet by thirty feet) known as the Strangers' House. In front is the Bau assembly grounds, in which the reviews are generally held. At the back are a number of ovens for cooking human flesh, now filled up, it is hoped, forever. Near these is a large tree on which are notched the number of those who have been cooked and eaten; it is covered from top to bottom with these mementos of Fijian disgrace. Close by are the evergreen shrubs where certain portions of the eaten parties were hung as ornaments, and were now removed for the first time. This was the spot where the message of love to God and to man was now publicly proclaimed. The king, preceded by his gray-headed, long-bearded family priest, first entered the dwelling. About three hundred chiefs, women, attendants, and children, followed the ruler. His own children sat in the front, his wives and sisters, the other women of rank, and all the females, on the right hand; the king and all of his sex occupied the left. The change in the people was very striking. All had clean faces and were suitably clad. True, the long beards of the men and the well-dressed heads of hair of both men and women remained; but the congregation was orderly, serious, and attentive. Previous to the commencement of worship, the chiefs respectfully removed their snow-white turbans.

The Revs. James Calvert and Joseph Waterhouse were the preachers who delivered God's message of mercy to sinners with profound and conflicting emotions. The next day family prayer was established in many of the natives' houses, and on the following Sabbath three hundred more embraced the Christian religion. The despoiling of the heathen temples and the destruction of trees in the sacred forests were works accomplished not without fear and trembling on the part of those natives to whom they were committed. Langa, the god of rain and of fine weather, found a place in the mission house, whither he was borne in triumph. Public day-schools for

teaching reading and writing were at once commenced, at which some of the young men learned to read in three days. So rapidly was heathenism renounced that by June 1 more than a thousand had placed themselves under the religious instruction of the missionary.

As might be expected, Thakombau did not escape persecution and annoyance from his enemies, in bearing which he acknowledged that he deserved death for his great crimes, and evinced a humble and teachable disposition, though it was some time ere he could display a forgiving spirit toward his implacable foes. By the advice of Mr. Waterhouse he at once gave himself to the initiation of a scheme of political reform formed upon a Christian basis, though he rejected all proposals in favor of constitutional government with the characteristic remark, "I was born a chief, and I will die a chief." In 1870-71 an attempt was made to set up a sort of native European government, but it proved a failure. Since then, however, Fiji has become a dependency of England which has been ably presided over by Sir Arthur Gordon, who, at this writing, is being removed to New Zealand.

Thakombau having become a Christian, the one formidable obstruction in the way of Christianity triumphing over Fiji no longer barred the way, and now there gather every Sabbath one hundred thousand natives to hear the word of life. The Fijian group is one of the Gospel's greatest triumphs, and with the certainty of effect following cause, commerce has begun to tread with vigorous steps in the wake of religion. To those who once knew Fiji as unclean and cannibal, the change is marvelous. They remember that the first greeting given to some of them was a chuckle of delight as cannibal fingers tested their fitness for the oven; now they witness law, order, religion, and trade, exerting regnant powers where life had no respect shown it. Twenty-three years ago, Missionary Wilson, running short of bread and shoes, had to take a voyage one hundred miles out and one hundred miles back with the result of a "stone of flour and a pair of old shoes that might have belonged to the Gibeonites." Then there was neither merchant nor trader nor store. In 1878 Fiji's shipping amounted to twenty-three thousand one hundred and eighty tons, trading in goods to the value of £329,573. To Fiji herself, to the Australian colonies,

and to the British Empire the gain has been beyond all estimate in both material and spiritual interests, and it is no boast to say that that gain is the result of the Wesleyan mission work there, upon which so signally rested the enriching blessing of the Most High God.

ART. VIII.—SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES AND OTHERS OF THE HIGHER PERIODICALS.

American Reviews.

BAPTIST REVIEW, April, May, June, 1881. (Cincinnati).—1. Testimony of the Mesopotamian Monuments to the Reliability of the Sacred Scriptures; by Rev. G. E. Lesson. 2. The Acta Johannis—the New Edition by Prof. Zahn; by Prof. H. M. Schaffer. 3. Commerce and Literature; by W. Carey Crane, D.D. LL.D. 4. What Latitude of Belief is Allowed by the Doctrine of Inspiration; by Rev. O. P. Eaches. 5. Balthazer Hubmeyer; by Rev. W. W. Everts, Jun. 6. Theism; by Wayland Hoyt, D.D. 7. Thomas Carlyle; by Rev. Philip L. Jones.

CUMBERLAND PRESBYTERIAN QUARTERLY, April, 1881. (Lebanon, Tenn.).—1. Ministerial Education; by Prof. S. T. Anderson, D.D. 2. The Supernatural; by S. H. Buchanan, D.D. 3. The Possibilities of Faith; by Rev. S. L. Russell. 4. Tobacco; by Prof. J. I. D. Hinds, Ph.D. 5. The Presbyterian Alliance and the Cumberland Presbyterian Church; by Prof. R. V. Foster. 6. Theopneusty; by Rev. C. P. Duvall. 7. H. M. Irwin's Criticism on "Mosaic Jurisprudence;" by Hon. R. C. Ewing. 8. Prof. James M'Greggor, D.D., on the Cumberland Presbyterian Confession of Faith; by Prof. S. G. Burney, D.D. 9. Notes.—Christ's Miracles, Spurious Zeal, Catechetics, Revivals; by Prof. R. V. Foster. The Eldership.

LUTHERAN QUARTERLY, April, 1881. (Gettysburgh).—1. Feasibility of a Service for all English-Speaking Lutherans; by Rev. Edward T. Horn, A. M. 2. The Origin of Royal Government in Israel; by Prof. Dr. G. H. ShooDe. 3. Luther's Doctrine of Predestination and the Holy Scriptures. Translated from the German by Rev. G. F. Behringer. 4. The Stability of the Church; by Rev. John Brubaker, A. M. 5. Moral and Religious Education in Connection with Intellectual; by Rev. Professor J. W. Richard, A. M. 6. The Predestination Controversy; by Rev. Adam Martin, A. M. 7. The Supernatural Element of the Bible: Its Nature, Necessity, and Importance; by Rev. P. Rizer. 8. Baptism: Thoughts Suggested by the Ninth Article of the Augsburg Confession; by Rev. J. R. Dimm, A. M.

NORTH AMERICAN REVIEW, April, 1881. (New York).—1. Reform *versus* Reformation; by Judge Albion W. Tourgee. 2. The Thing that Might Be; by Mark Pattison. 3. Religion in Schools; by Bishop B. J. M'Quaid. 4. The Ownership of Railroad Property; by George Ticknor Curtis. 5. The Historic Genesis of Protestantism; by John Fiske. 6. The Telegraph Monopoly; by William M. Springer. 7. Henry Wadsworth Longfellow; by Anthony Trollope.

JUNE.—1. Our Future Fiscal Policy; by Hugh M'Culloch. 2. The Patrician Element in American Society; by George B. Loring. 3. A New Phase of the Reform Movement; by Dorman B. Eaton. 4. Shall Americans Own Ships? by Prof. W. G. Sumner. 5. The Color Line; by Frederick Douglass. 6. The Ruins of Central America. Part VIII; by Désiré Charnay. 7. Vaccination; by Dr. Austin Flint. 8. The Right to Regulate Railway Charges; by J. M. Mason. 9. Prehistoric Man in America; by Prof. Edward S. Morse.

PRESBYTERIAN REVIEW, April, 1881. (New York.)—1. Inspiration; by Prof. A. A. Hodge, D.D., and Prof. B. B. Warfield, D.D. 2. The Prevalent Confusion and the Attitude of Christian Faith; by Prof. Ransom B. Welch, D.D. 3. The Book of Discipline in a Revised Form, as Proposed by the Assembly's Revision Committee; by Rev. Edward P. Humphrey, D.D., LL.D., and Prof. Alex. T. McGill, D.D., LL.D. 4. Mormonism; by Rev. Robert G. M'Niece. 5. Charles Hodge; by Prof. F. L. Patton, D.D., LL.D.

PRINCETON REVIEW, March, 1881. (New York.)—1. Evolution in Relation to Materialism; by Joseph Le Conte, LL.D. 2. A Moral Argument; by John P. Coyle. 3. The Historical Proofs of Christianity; by George P. Fisher, D.D., LL.D. 4. The Study of Anglo-Saxon; by Prof. Theodore W. Hunt. 5. The Argument Against Protective Taxes; by Prof. William C. Sumner. 6. The Reasonableness of Faith; by Principal Shairp, D.C.L.

MAY.—1. Practical Uses of Electricity; by Charles A. Young, Ph.D. 2. Christian Metempsychosis; by Prof. Francis Bowen. 3. The Silver Question and the International Monetary Conference of 1881; by President Barnard, LL.D., L.H.D. 4. On Causation and Development; by President M'Cosh, D.D., LL.D. 5. The Sculptor and His Art; by John F. Weir, N.A. 6. The Regulation of Railroads; by Prof. Lyman H. Atwater, D.D., LL.D. 7. On the So-called Science of Religion; by William D. Whitney, Ph.D., LL.D.

UNIVERSALIST QUARTERLY, April, 1881. (Boston.)—1. The Sin Against the Holy Ghost; by T. J. Sawyer, D.D. 2. Certain Phases of Our Growth; by Rev. G. M. Harmon. 3. Lessing's Theological Opinions; by Orello Cone, D.D. 4. The Power and Progress of Universalism; by Rev. Henry Blanchard. 5. Mrs. Judith Murray; by Rev. Richard Eddy. 6. New Testament Synonyms; by Nehemiah White, Ph.D. 7. A Restatement of the Temperance Problem; by Rev. E. A. Perry.

QUARTERLY REVIEW OF THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH, SOUTH, April, 1881. (Nashville, Tenn.)—1. The Bar: Its Ethics and Characteristics. 2. Janet on Final Causes. 3. The Drama. 4. God in History. 5. Miracles. 6. The Revised New Testament. 7. The Wesleys of the Nineteenth Century. 8. The Catacombs of Rome.

NEW ENGLANDER, March, 1881. (New Haven.)—1. Historical and Personal Reminiscences of the Spanish Revolution; by Prof. William I. Knapp. 2. The Personality of God; translated by W. Haskell, Ph.D. 3. Miss Bird's Japan and Yezo; by Prof. S. W. Williams. 4. Ireland as it is; by Prof. William M. Barbour. 5. The Life of Dr. Charles Hodge; by Prof. Timothy Dwight. 6. Preaching to the Boys and Girls; by Rev. James G. Merrill. 7. The Evangelical Hymnal; by Rev. Edward W. Gilman, D.D.

MAY, 1881.—1. Pre-adamites; by Rev. Joseph D. Wilson. 2. Shakespeare in the Opinion of the Seventeenth Century; by B. C. Burt. 3. The Jewish Question in Europe; by Prof. S. H. Kellogg, D.D. 4. The Sunday-school Library; by Rev. O. A. Kingsbury. 5. The Wines of the Bible; by Rev. T. Laurie, D.D. 6. A Lesson for England: an American Anti-rent Excitement, and How it was Quelled; by Oliver E. Lyman, Esq. 7. Thomas Carlyle; by Rev. William M. Barbour.

The Article on Pre-adamites, by Mr. Wilson, is an admirable discussion of an important subject, introducing some new and valuable points. It answers Dr. Winchell's book with great success, but with entire courtesy. It takes up the argument as based in archæology, ethnology, linguistics, Egyptology, and Scripture, and deals with it concisely but effectively.

In regard to Professor Whitney's Calaveras' skull, the sole fossil piece of humanity upon which Dr. W. founds an argu-

ment, Mr. Wilson, (in addition to Mr. Southall's discussion of that specimen in our last *Quarterly*,) furnishes the following statements :

This "find" is a human skull taken from a shaft near Angelos, one hundred and fifty feet deep in the gold-bearing gravel; the shaft pierces five beds of lava and other volcanic matter. Professor Whitney, who obtained this skull for the museum of California, has no doubt of its great antiquity. As late as 1878, in a lecture delivered at Cambridge, Massachusetts, he re-affirmed his conviction that it belonged to the Pliocene epoch. At the time it came into Whitney's hands it was still embedded in its gravelly matrix. "In the skull and about it were found other human bones, including some that must have belonged to an infant. The skull was not inferior to those of existing races. Its organic matter was almost entirely lost, and the phosphate of lime was replaced by carbonate of lime."

Several circumstances raise a suspicion of the extreme age of this skull. The gravel in which it is found is a surface deposit "covering the face of the country" in some regions, and therefore a man of the present day might leave his skull in it. "But it was found under one hundred and fifty feet of lava." True. And how long a period would it take a volcano to deposit that amount of lava? Within the present century volcanoes have deposited as much as six hundred feet of lava in a single eruption. The important question is not, How thick is the lava, but how long has it been *in situ*? The United States geological survey of the Territories, 1871, 1872, declares that "the effusion of the basal is a modern event, occurring for the most part near the commencement of our present period, after the entire surface reached nearly, or quite, the present elevation." Volcanoes still exist in the Pacific region, and from recent signs at Pike's Peak and elsewhere it is not improbable that this generation may witness eruptions in many old craters whose fires have been supposed extinct. Earthquakes are not uncommon in California, and the hot springs, which are numerous, are looked upon by geologists as "the last of a series of volcanic events." So that the thickness of the lava above the Calaveras skull shows nothing but that the bones were deposited before any white man visited those regions. As for the "gravelly matrix," any bones deposited in the gravel where the warm waters of a geyser may percolate to them, will become incrustated with a "gravelly matrix." All along the Illinois River bones, brickbats, and even bits of wood may be found cemented to the river pebbles by carbonate of lime.

The absence of gelatinous matter in bones is a criterion of age only when all the chemical circumstances are known. The Pacific slope has been, until very recently, the scene of violent volcanic action. The geysers and hot springs, still numerous in

that region, are but the dying embers of fierce chemical action. Were those Calaveras bones subjected to the chemical action of geysers? Were they immersed in the boiling water of hot springs? Were they calcined by the molten lava flowing over the gravel in which they rested? If "yes" is answered to any of these questions, then the animal matter may have been extracted as quickly as in a modern kitchen or glue factory.

These considerations show on how slender evidence the antiquity of the Calaveras man is hung, and when there is added the confession of the miner, one Brier, who took the skull out of a cave and placed it in the shaft for the purpose of hoaxing a geologist, it must be admitted that this last survivor of the vast army of Pre-adamic remains may as well be gathered unto his fathers.—Pp. 283-285.

Mr. Wilson gives a fresh revision of the geology of the Nile delta, which, if tenable, seems to expunge very conclusively the tall chronologies of the Egyptologists. That delta is composed simply of the sediment brought down by the Nile from Northern Egypt, poured into the Mediterranean so as to form made land far into the sea. The amount of that sediment, vast as it is, is capable of a very fair scientific measurement. The rate of the accumulation of the sediment can also be approximately estimated. We can tell, then, how old Egyptian soil is. Lanoye, in his "Rameses the Great," as noticed in a former number of our Quarterly, gives 4,500 years B. C. as the period at whose commencement Egypt began to be inhabitable. Our present reviewer, under the light of the examinations made by the French and English naval officers preparatory to the constructing the Suez Canal, elaborately ciphers out a new result. His conclusion is that "prior to 2320 B. C., therefore, there was no delta, and, of course, there were no inhabitants in Lower Egypt. The Mississippi River began building its delta at the same time. There is good reason to believe that the Danube began forming land at the same time, and doubtless the same geological convulsion accounts for the present location of all these rivers."—Pp. 300, 301.

If the following statement, drawn from Herodotus, is sustainable, it is very important :

A study of his [Herodotus'] journey to Memphis makes it plain that the coast of the delta was thirty-three miles south of its present position. A line drawn thirty-three miles inland from the present coast divides the alluvial land nearly in the middle.

About as much land has been formed since Herodotus' time as was formed before. He visited Egypt 440 B. C., a little earlier than half way back to 4,200 years ago.—P. 301.

These views, if established, would produce a fearful crash of the stately structures reared by Manetho and his modern followers. And the reviewer well adds :

If these calculations are correct, it is evident that a reconstruction of the already much-revised system of Egyptian chronology will be necessary. The most recent and most moderate estimates of the Memphite dynasties places their rise at 2400 B. C. But at that time the site of Memphis was under water, and for many years after the whole narrow valley of the Nile, as far south as Thebes, was a swamp, just as Herodotus says it was. The suspicion begins to dawn that perhaps Prof. Seyffath is right when he tells us that our interpretations of the hieroglyphics has been a blunder from the first. Egypt is ancient, but Egypt is not older than the deluge.—P. 301.

The article closes with the following very suggestive paragraph :

In concluding this paper we draw attention to the calculations of Faà de Bruns, professor at Turin, (*Les Mondes*, 1863,) on the rate of increase in the human family. As is well known, France is the only country possessing accurate statistics of population extending back two hundred years. During that time France has suffered from devastating wars, from famine, and from epidemic disease. Neither immigration nor emigration has greatly disturbed the normal rate of increase. Fortunately, therefore, the only available statistics are of the country which is more nearly a microcosm than any other. Taking, then, the average annual increment in France, and applying it to the whole human race, it will be found that six persons will increase to 1,400,000,000 persons in 4,211 years. 1,400,000,000 persons was the estimated population of the world in 1863, and 4,211 years before A. D. 1863 brings us to 2348 B. C., the common date of the flood.—P. 303.

The article on the Jewish Question in Europe unfolds a curious state of affairs. A general alarm is felt through Teutonic Europe, extending even into Slavonic Russia, at the growing intellectual ascendancy of the Jewish race. The Jews are becoming masters in finance, in education, in politics, and even in religion. They rule over the bourse, and are the bankers of Europe. They fill, out of proportion to their number in the State, the universities. They outstrip the Gentiles

in authorship. They rule in popular journalism, and are thereby the promoters of democracy, communism, nihilism, and anarchy. They are becoming the industrial upper stratum, crowding the Teutons into a menial rank. Thus it is said, "All the lower forms of labor, in the workshops, the fields, the ditches, and the swamps, fall to the lot of the German element, while the constantly increasing Jewish element obtains enormous possessions in capital and land, and raises itself to power and influence in every department of public life."—P. 335. Their professional predominance is thus illustrated: "At the post-mortem examination of a body lately there were present the district physician, the lawyer, the surgeon, and a fourth official, all Jews, and none but the corpse was a German."—P. 340. How they thrive and rule by the liquor trade is thus described :

More than a sixth part of the Jews in Russia live by means of the liquor trade, as is admitted by the Jews themselves. The same is true of the Jews in Roumania and all the Slavic lands. . . . With the liquor trade usury goes hand in hand. "As the result," we are told, "it is a fact which can no longer be denied that the population of the remote districts of Russia, Austria, Hungary, and Roumania, are only the nominal possessors of the soil, and for the most part quite strictly cultivate the land only for the Jews, to whom they have mortgaged their lands for their liquor debts."—Pp. 335, 336.

There is an equal alarm in the ranks of Christianity. The Jews, being masters of European journalism, employ that instrumentality with great effect in assailing Christianity in the most opprobrious style, and diffusing rationalism and open infidelity among the masses. To this is due, to a large extent, the dechristianization and demoralization of the times.

For all this alarm there seems ample proof that there is just ground. But to remedy the evil by proscriptive laws and the imposition of legal disabilities and disfranchisements is an obsolete method. Fair play is a priceless jewel. The proscriptive method is too much like the despotism of our American slave-holders, who prohibited negro education, and then made the negro's intellectual degradation a ground of enslaving him. Nor will it be a feasible plan to undertake to

trepan the Shemite in order to take out his surplus of brains. If the Jew can beat the Gentile he is entitled to the premium. Right it is to make public exposition of his growing ascendancy and reveal the great danger of his success. But the true and final method for Japheth is to rouse to a higher level his energy and beat them in the contest. The late Rev. Phineas Rice, a member once of our New York Conference, sometimes said things that were witty and wise. Bishop Hedding said to him in open Conference, "What have you to say, Brother Rice, to this charge?" "What is the charge, sir?" "They say," pursued the Bishop, "that you preach over the people's heads." "Then let them elevate their heads, sir," responded Phineas. And so when we are told that the Teutons find the Jews mounting over their heads, we respond, "Let them elevate their heads then."

But it seems a singular problem that no such Shemite ascendancy prevails on this side of the Atlantic. We count rarely a Jew among our millionaires, statesmen, scholars, journalists, or other eminent ranks. Subjected to no disabilities, he attains no popularity or ascendancy here. Is this because the American Jew is inferior, or because the American Teuton is superior, to the European? Modesty forbids our affirming the latter, tenderness to the humble forbids the former. We leave the query unanswered.

It needs no Shemites to render our American journalism irreligious or unchristian. Gentile semi-infidelity amply does the deadly work in our leading metropolitan periodicals. Our daily presses pour cataracts of sarcastic skepticism into the bosom of our families. It is a wonder that, in spite of the reckless ribaldry spread before the eyes of our children, there remains with them so much Christian faith. The Christian preacher comes but once a week; the newspaper theologian comes perhaps seven days a week; and it is a wonder he does not undo all the pulpit does. Of the Christian preacher the world requires, justly, holiness of life. Otherwise his gospel is pronounced false. But the newspaper theologian may be as loose in life as in creed, and his reckless rant goes for sweeping truth. It diminishes nothing of the force of a newspaper pronouncement on the highest points of eternal interests that the writer is a rowdy.

BIBLIOTHECA SACRA, April, 1881. (Andover.)—1. The Serpent Tempter in Oriental Mythology; by Rev. William Hayes Ward, D.D. 2. Two Isaiahs, or One; by Rev. William Henry Cobb. 3. The Sabbath: Did the Early Fathers Hold that the Fourth Commandment is Abolished? by Rev. William De Loos Love, D.D. 4. The Nature and Object of Penalty; by Rev. William W. Patton, D.D. 5. The Fundamental Laws of Belief; by Rev. Charles F. Thwing. 6. The Syntax of *וְיָ*; by the late Rev. Robert Hutchesson. 7. Note on Acts xi, 26; by Rev. Frederic Gardiner, D.D. 8. Does the Preface to Luke's Gospel Belong also to the Acts? by Prof. Lemuel S. Potwin. 9. Remarks of Jonathan Edwards on the Trinity; by Edwards A. Park. 10. Theological Education.

In the first article Dr. Ward furnishes an interesting discussion of the relations of ancient serpent symbols to the Mosaic history of the temptation, especially as revealed by the late discoveries in archæology.

That archæology seems to disclose two forms of animal being somewhat related, the Griffin or Dragon and the Serpent. Lenormant recognizes only the former, which he asserts symbolizes chaos, and denies the appearance in archæology of the latter, and so any indication of the temptation. Lenormant's view is: "The Chaldean mythologers called the power of disorder and evil Tihamti, or Tiamat, the Deep, who was not a serpent at all, but a griffin, with the jaws of a lion and the talons of an eagle; and with them the attack of Bel-Merodach upon the Dragon was not so much in punishment for the temptation of man as it was to represent the warfare of light and order upon darkness and chaos."—P. 209. Dr. Ward brings us proofs that additional to the chaotic griffin there are to be found traces of the Edenic serpent.

This duality is very interesting. The battle between Bel-Merodach and the Griffin we would say symbolizes Gen. i, 2. "The earth was without form and void, and darkness was upon the face of the deep," and that is the terrible griffin; "and the Spirit of God moved upon the waters," and that is Lord Merodach subduing the monster. With our Moses, however, as a monotheist there is no *battle* between Elohim and Chaos. Rather it is Elohim *brooding* over the abyss, generating order from confusion. Second, as the griffin form symbolizes the work of *creation*, the serpent form symbolizes Gen. iii, 1-15, *fall and redemption*. The first is the work of Elohim, the second of Jehovah-Elohim. It is the true archæological existence of the latter that Dr. Ward maintains. He thus indicates at once his view of the source whence reliable

information can be obtained, and the real agency by which the cosmogonic narrative was brought into Hebrew possession :

It is to Chaldea, and Chaldea only, that the Bible itself seems to direct us for light on this subject. Genesis begins with Shinar, as it ends with Egypt. Abraham comes from Ur of the Chaldees, and must be thought of as bringing with him the lore of Chaldea. The two rivers that we can recognize which surrounded Eden are the two between which lies Mesopotamia. The first event recorded after the Flood is the destruction of the Tower of Babel. The four kings who fought against five in the Vale of Siddim came from beyond the Euphrates. It was Bel-Merodach, Bin, Sin, Hea, and Ishtar, the gods of the Babylonians, that were the gods of Terah and Nahor, "the gods whom your fathers served beyond the flood," to whom Joshua bade the people return if they would not serve the Lord. The remarkable discovery by George Smith a few years ago, of a Babylonian story of the Deluge, very like that told in Genesis, gives us reason to believe that other parts of the earliest Mosaic history of the world were as familiar to the Chaldeans as to the Jews. Jewish and Christian writers had preserved an account of the Deluge said to have been written from national records by the Babylonian priest, Berosus; but it was easy to assert and difficult to disprove that it was merely the Hebrew story carried to Babylon at the Captivity. But we now possess the very tablets, laid away nearly a hundred years before the Captivity in the royal library, and which are indorsed as copied from others a thousand years older still, written in the Assyrian cuneiform characters, on which is recorded the complete story of the Ark, the destruction of men and beasts, the deliverance of Xisuthrus, the sending out of the birds, the resting of the Ark on a high mountain, the sacrifice, and the divine promise. There is considerable reason to believe that the old Chaldeans also possessed legends of the creation of the world and of the confusion of tongues, corresponding more or less with the accounts given in Genesis. We might, then, look, with some reasonable expectation of finding it, for a legend of the temptation of our first parents by the serpent which will illustrate the Mosaic story.—Pp. 215, 216.

Does not our author assert too strongly the *exclusiveness* of the Chaldean source? Dr. Geikie, in his "Hours with the Bible," elsewhere noticed, adduces from Wilkinson an Egyptian figure of a serpent's head being pierced by a goddess, and an Indian Krishna treading on a serpent's head.

Dr. Ward furnishes three leading Assyrian engravings in which the Edenic serpent *may* be recognized. The first presents a tree with two human figures plucking the fruit, with a serpent

in the rear. That we consider a clear case, and is confirmed by the Egyptian figure above mentioned. Of the other two engravings given we are not so fully convinced. The one is a long wavy figure, which may be merely an elongation of the griffin, rising into apparently a griffin's head, and representing by its impressive undulations, perhaps the chaotic *abyss*. We should then have the symbolization of Gen. i, 2, with which, however, the struggle of redemption with moral disorder may be blended, confusing the two great battles into one. The third figure is clearly griffin and not serpent, and is not a strong confirmation. A significant point is made by our author, namely, that the serpent is a malignant being among the Semitic and Aryan peoples only, but is a good deity among the Turanians.

Dr. Ward, with most scholars, derives the Tiamat or personification of chaos in the Assyrian archæology from the Tehôm "waters" or *abyss* of Gen. i, 2. It would seem then that a term, lying in the bed of the Hebrew language and the Hebrew narrative, is taken by polytheism and formed into a symbolical name of a symbolical figure representing the chaos. Does not this suggest that the polytheistic name is a derivation from the Mosaic, and that the Mosaic is the primitive document? We mean not that the document is truly original with Moses; but provisionally supposable to be derived through Abraham from the antediluvian monotheistic Church, through perhaps the patriarch Shem. It may then be a translation from an earlier language, of which the Hebrew and Arabic are twin daughters. And the poetic rhythm and style of the Chaldean records, as well as that of the first chapter of Genesis, strongly confirm the theory that that wonderful composition is truly an antediluvian PSALM OF THE CREATION.

Dr. Ward thus concludes with a careful recognition that our Ophiology is as yet very much in a provisional state, waiting for further disclosures to decide how fully it confirms the historic character of the Mosaic narrative of the Fall:

I hesitate to claim for these Chaldean myths that they do any thing more than illustrate the Bible account. There is too much yet uncertain to allow us to claim that they confirm it. The form of these myths is not so self-evidencing as to allow us to settle off-hand that they represent nothing more than mere myths, either like the Vedic, which sees a serpent in the storm-

cloud, or like the Mazdean, which, occupied with great moral problems, and no longer with the phenomena of the sky, looks at evil and disorder under the form of a serpent hostile to Ahuramazda. Their form is not really inconsistent with the faith of those who prefer to regard them as the perversion through tradition of a great historical fact at the beginning of the history of the human race. We need a clearer notion of the myths of the various great families. We need to understand what is the ethnic relation of Turanian to the Hamitic races. We need also to be able to answer more certainly the question whether, as would seem from the language in which these myths appear, they have a Turanian origin, or whether they can belong to the extremely early Shemitic eruption over Mesopotamia from the Persian Gulf. This, however, it seems to me, must be recognized as a fact, that there had been somehow developed, and had become perfectly familiar in Mesopotamia, at a period centuries anterior to the time of Moses, as far back as the age ascribed to Abraham, stories perfectly parallel to those of Moses, which in form are purely mythical; and that, therefore, the burden of proof will rest upon those who regard the Mosaic stories as historical to prove that the earlier Chaldean stories had an origin different from other myths. This they will not be slow to attempt; and Dr. Tyler Lewis, in an able discussion on the Chaldean Deluge, which ought to be rescued from the columns of the New York "Times," in which it is now lost, has indicated what would be the direction of the argument.—Pp. 229, 230.

English Reviews.

BRITISH QUARTERLY REVIEW, April, 1881. (London.)—1. Congregationalism. 2. Our Salmon Fisheries. 3. The Masora. 4. Mr. Hardy's Novels. 5. Schlie-mann's Iliad. 6. The Bane of English Architecture. 7. The Irish Land Question. 8. Independency and the State.

LONDON QUARTERLY REVIEW, April. (London.)—1. South African Confederation. 2. The Father of Penny Postage. 3. Sacred Music. 4. Kant's Philosophy of Experience. 5. Are the Chinese a Religious People? 6. St. John Chrysostom. 7. Ruskin's Letters to the Clergy. 8. The Latest Commentaries on St. John's Gospel. 9. Mr. Carlyle.

WESTMINSTER REVIEW, April, 1881. (New York.)—1. Kant's Moral Philosophy. 2. Lord Campbell's Memoirs. 3. The Origin of Religion. 4. The Persian Empire. 5. Electoral Reform, Electoral Bribery: The Ballot. 6. Thomas Carlyle: His Life and Writings. 7. Should University Degrees be Given to Women?

LONDON QUARTERLY REVIEW, April, 1881. (New York.)—1. The Revolutionary Party. 2. Literary Life of Lord Bolingbroke. 3. The Speaker's Commentary on the New Testament. 4. Thomas Carlyle and his Reminiscences. 5. Russian Land Laws and Present Proprietors. 6. Sir Anthony Panizzi. 7. Endowments of the Church of England in 1880 and 1880. 8. Ministerial Embarrassments.

The English reviews indicate that in the highest literature of England no very profound homage is paid to CARLYLE.

Both the Edinburgh and London Quarterlies have rigidly critical articles on his intellectual character and his literary value.

The following passage was received after the writing of our book-notice, on another page, and it shows that our view, though subjectively original, has been anticipated elsewhere :

Carlyle's popularity is mainly owing to his eccentricities, and an eminent French critic, M. Scherer, maintains that they are the result of calculation. "The author delights in odd, rude, uncouth phrases, odd exclamations, interrogations, apostrophes to actors on the scene, to the reader, to heaven, to all things. Nothing can exceed the abuse he makes of the words of God, Infinite, Eternity, Profundity. It is true that he gives them an air of youth by putting them in the plural; he says the Immensities, the Silences, the Eternal Veracities, etc., etc. It is needless to say, this mixed part of prophet and buffoon, these labored eccentricities produce less the effect of a conviction or a nature than of the desire to attract attention."

M. Scherer justifies this view by the cold reception of the "Life of Schiller," which was written in ordinary English, and he shows that the change began with "Sartor Resartus," which first brought Carlyle prominently into notice. "Thenceforth, at all events, the writer takes to a manner which has the double advantage of being easier than the purely simple one, and of piquing the curiosity of the public. 'Our own impression is that he slipped or 'drifted' into this manner imperceptibly, led on, no doubt, by the growing demand for what he would call the 'shoddy' article and the injudicious praises of friends. His admirers, especially his lady admirers, have a great deal to answer for. Bearing in mind that his world was a little world, a microcosm, we might apply to him what was said of Voltaire, "Enfant gâté d'un monde qu'il gâte." The deification of force is not a manly doctrine. It commends itself more to women than to men. It is conscious weakness clinging instinctively to strength.—P. 208, 209.

The following passage narrates Carlyle's onset upon one of his devoted admirers in America :

Emerson, the celebrated American, was well-known as an abolitionist. When he came to England, Mrs. Procter took him, at his own request, to see Carlyle, who immediately introduced the subject of slavery and said: "God has put into every white man's hand a whip to flog the black." Emerson made no reply.—P. 207.

The following passage indicates the value put upon the accuracy of Carlyle's recollections of the opinions attributed by

him to his intimates in regard to other eminent characters. It confirms our doubt of his recollection of the words of Edward Irving expressed in our book notice.

Wilberforce fares quite as badly, if not worse, for Wordsworth is introduced as adopting and expressing the opinion Carlyle had formed concerning him: "One of the best-remembered sketches (almost the only one now remembered at all) was that of Wilberforce, the famous Nigger philanthropist, drawing-room Christian, and busy man and politician. In all which capacities Wordsworth's esteem of him seemed to be privately as small as my own private one, and was amusing to gather. No hard word of him did he speak or hint; told in brief firm business terms, how he was born at or near the place called Wilberforce, in Yorkshire, ("force," signifying torrent or angry brook, as in Cumberland?) where, probably, his forefathers may have been possessors, *though he was poorish*; how he did this and that of insignificant (to Wordsworth insignificant) nature; "and then," ended Wordsworth, "he took into the oil trade," (I suppose the Hull whaling,) which lively phrase, and the incomparable historical tone it was given in—"the oil trade"—as a thing perfectly natural and proper for such a man, *is almost the only point in the delineation which is now vividly present to me*. I remember only the rustic picture, sketched as with a burnt stick on the board of a pair of bellows, seemed to be completely good; and that the general effect was, one saw the great Wilberforce and his existence visible in all their main lineaments, but only as through the reversed telescope, and reduced to size of a mouse and its nest, or little more!"

If Wordsworth neither spoke nor hinted a hard word, his sketch of Wilberforce has evidently been distorted by Carlyle's habitual cast of mind into a studied depreciation. It is incredible that Wordsworth could have spoken of Wilberforce (who inherited a considerable fortune, was educated at Cambridge, and entered Parliament soon after he came of age) as *poorish*, or as having taken to the oil trade; and the intensely low-bred, low-minded allusion to it may pair off with Howard's "disgust at the grocer business."—P. 207.

EDINBURGH REVIEW, April, 1881. (New York.)—1. The Oxford School. 2. Egypt Bound and Unbound. 3. The Song of Roland. 4. The Public Life of Mr. Herries. 5. River Floods. 6. The Pellagra in Italy. 7. Reminiscences of Thomas Carlyle. 8. Darwin on the Movements of Plants. 9. Schliemann's Ilios. 10. Local Debts and Government Loans.

The Edinburgh article on Carlyle is superior in style to the London, but not less severe. It opens with the following generous, though qualified, and, on the whole, just tribute to the best qualities of Carlyle's earlier writings:

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—36

Carlyle's contributions to the "Edinburgh Review," the article on "Burns," the article entitled "Signs of the Times," and the article entitled "Characteristics," are not inferior to any of his later works, and may be said to contain the pith and marrow of them all, without the blemishes of a corrupt style and the paradoxes of an unsettled faith. It is, and will ever remain, the honor and glory of Thomas Carlyle that he contended without ceasing for what he termed the *dynamical* energy of the human soul in opposition to the tendencies of a *mechanical* age. His whole work was an indignant protest against the materialism of modern science, and an assertion of the spiritual dignity and duty of man. He poured forth a torrent of scorn and invective against the vulgar passions and motives which degrade society; he poured forth in a perpetual anthem his veneration for the higher powers to which he attached all that is noble, heroic, dutiful, and true in human life. The mode of thought, expressed in highly rhetorical and eccentric language, and enhanced by a strong northern dialect, a rugged aspect, and blunt manners, gave him the demeanor of a mystic, or, as some said, of a prophet. His influence over the younger generations of this century became considerable; his works which had not found much acceptance when first written, became popular; and his authority has extended beyond the circulation of his writings. Doubtless, then, he proclaimed, or was supposed to proclaim, either some new truth to the world, or some old truth in a new and striking form.—P. 239.

The following shows Carlyle after that memorable year of his "conversion" given in our book-notice :

Mr. Carlyle was at war with all the tendencies of his own age, and all the social elements that surrounded him—the best as well as the worst. The spirit of inquiry and investigation was to him but another name for a disease of the human mind. What are "the Improvement of the Age, the Spirit of the Age, Destruction of Prejudice, Progress of the Species, and the March of Intellect, but an unhealthy state of self-sentience, self-survey; the precursor and prognostic of still worse health?" All heroism, he said, departed from this country, if not from this earth, with the last of the Puritans in the seventeenth century. The whole life of society is carried on by drugs. All our institutions are shams. Parliamentary government is the worst of shams. The idea of government by the voice and will of numbers is a preposterous delusion. What is called "the people" is a multitude of fools. The only real ruler of men is the tyrant who has strength or cunning to grasp and retain supreme power. Slavery is a natural institution, since it is based on the evident superiority of the white race over the black. Force not only governs the world, but it absorbs and extinguishes the rights of those who presume to resist it. All these propositions

may be found in Mr. Carlyle's writings, or may fairly be deduced from them. They might serve as an apology for the most execrable forms of oppressions. They are absolutely opposed to the spirit of freedom, to the active sympathies of humanity, and to the respect due to the independent opinions of the humble and weak. It has ever been to us a matter of surprise that a writer whose works are distinguished by principles more cynical than Mandeville, and more tyrannical than Hobbes, should be regarded with enthusiastic admiration by numbers of persons who profess advanced liberal opinions in this country, and even in the United States. The net result of Mr. Carlyle's political opinions would seem to be that a government of Bismarcks or Gambettas is the perfection of statesmanship.—P. 241.

The following illustrates the absolute want of consistency in his so-called opinions :

With strange inconsistency he will exclaim at one moment : "Truly it may be said that divinity has withdrawn from the earth, or veils himself in that wide-wasting whirlwind of a departing era, wherein the fewest can discern his goings. Not Godhood, but an iron ignoble circle of necessity embraces all things; binds the youth of these times into a sluggish thrall, or else exasperates him into a rebel. Heroic action is paralyzed, for what worth now remains unquestionable with him?"

And then, ten pages further on in the same essay: "Truly every-where the eternal fact begins again to be recognized that there is a godlike in human affairs; that God not only made us and beholds us, but is in us and around us; that the age of miracles, as it ever was, now is. . . . He that has an eye and a heart can even now say, 'Why should I falter? Light has come into the world; to such as love light, so as light must be loved, with a boundless, all-doing, all enduring love.'" And the passage concludes with a magnificent exhortation to conquer and create uncreated and unconquered continents and Eldorados, since from the bosom of eternity shine for us celestial guiding stars.

Each of these paragraphs bears the stamp of Carlyle's fervid eloquence; but placed side by side they openly contradict each other, and neither of them is rational or exactly true.—P. 243.

The Eighth Article brings to view the results of the *studies in the growth of plants* by that wonderful observer of nature, CHARLES DARWIN.

The Reviewer agrees with Mr. Darwin as to the real action of plants in growing, but decisively differs with him in his surreptitious attempt at obliterating the distinction between plant action and animal action. Mr. Darwin insinuates analo-

gies tending to identify plant life with animal intelligence. The Reviewer first states the true nature of plant movement, showing that it is all mechanical; being, in fact, caused by the incoming of new force and substance in the process of growth. Plants, Mr. Darwin shows, "circumnutate," that is, nod about, and with the tip of their radicle adapt themselves to conditions of warmth, light, and softness of adjacent substance. The Reviewer replies:

But animals do not circumnutate. Their movements are of a strikingly different character from the nodding and staggering gyration which is here pointed to as the primary process in the plant. The stems, roots, and leaves are thrust out in consequence of the interstitial deposit of new material in the growing textures, and the extending shoots assume a spiral form of advance because the thrust is exerted more on one side than on the other. The onward projection is thus essentially a process of growth from the addition of substance, and all the irregularities in the halting progress are immediately ascribed to a purely physical cause, the swelling or increased turgidity of the tissue at the point where the sidelong thrust occurs. The only circumstance that at all warrants the assumption of a resemblance in the strongly contrasted processes is the fact, which Dr. Darwin has brought prominently into notice, that the mechanical impulse of the disturbing influence originates not at the spot upon which the effect of that impact is transmitted by an intermediate agency seated in the organization of the plant. He is obviously aware that this is the strong point of the argument for resemblance which he suggests, as in one notable paragraph he says, "But the most striking resemblance is the localization of sensitiveness, and the transmission of an influence from the excited part to another, which consequently moves." The effect here alluded to is, no doubt, very remarkable, and well deserving of the further examination which it will assuredly receive at the hands of physiologists. But it can hardly be conceived to be strong enough to support any comprehensive hypothesis of the identity of vegetable and animal movements. Dr. Darwin himself says, "Plants do not, of course, possess nerves or a central nervous system." But he then deprecatingly and somewhat significantly adds, "And we may infer that with animals such structures serve only for the more perfect transmission of impressions, and for the more complete inter-communication of the several parts."—Pp. 258, 259.

The line between intelligence and volitional action in the animal, on one side, and the merely mechanical action under growth forces in the plant, is drawn by the Reviewer at length

and with great clearness and beauty. For this purpose he selects the lowest known form of animal life, the *Amœba*.

The creature is found most commonly in the slime which collects upon submerged or floating objects. It is apparently destitute even of a skin, and it has no internal organ of any kind. It is simply a small mass of animated jelly, possessing the power of streaming half coherently about under some mysterious and apparently spontaneously exerted impulse. When first placed upon the glass slide of a microscope, it presents the aspect of a small, round, transparent mass; but finger-like processes soon begin to be pushed out from the pulp in various directions, somewhat after the manner of the horns of a snail. Some one of these having at last fixed itself to the glass, the rest of the mobile jelly rolls over the attached part, and then begins to push out other processes. The *amœba*, in reality, travels along the glass in this grotesque shambling way. By the mere flow of its half-coherent living substance, it not only changes its form, but shifts its position. If, during its Protean shambling progress, it comes in contact with any fragmentary morsel suitable to be turned to account as food, it spreads itself over the fragment until it envelops it within its own substance, and in that way extemporizes a digestive cavity or stomach, where the morsel soon gets dissolved and converted into living protoplasm. Indigestible matters, which cannot be so turned to account, are dismissed by a reversal of the process; the fluent jelly loosening its grasp, rolling itself off, and so leaving them behind as it moves away in some other direction.

This microscopic changeling of Ehrenberg is an object of the very deepest interest to physiologists, because it is a typical specimen of the raw material of animal life presented to observation in its simplest and least-disguised form. Although a mere lump of animated jelly, without any trace of specialized organization, it yet manages to perform several of the most important operations of animal life, accomplishing, in its organless state, results which, in the more highly endowed animals, are performed only through the instrumentality of an elaborately complex and diversified apparatus. It extemporizes, in the rudest, but nevertheless most effective way, actions which are essential to its lowly form of existence. Its fluent pulp serves it in the place of limbs. It turns its own flesh into a stomach, and secretes a digesting juice round its entangled prey. It assimilates and appropriates food, and turns it into mobile living substance like itself. It consumes its own pulp by the wasting efforts of its movements. It reproduces living lumps like itself by breaking up into fragments, and above all *it breathes*, not through the specialized appendage of lungs, but throughout its entire gelatinous mass. The air permeates its naked or skinless pulp, and oxygen is appropriated and carbonic acid generated and expelled. It is oxidized, or burned, so to speak, and its

powers of shambling movement, of digesting food, of elaborating secretions, and of performing other allied operations, are as essentially a result of that combustive oxidation as the flame of a candle is the result of the burning of its stearine or wax. This process of oxidation, or faculty of breathing, indeed, constitutes its claim to the distinction of being "animated." The word simply implies that it possesses *anima*, or breath. This, then, is radically the difference to which it is our purpose to draw attention. Plants move because they grow. The circumnutation which Dr. Darwin discovers at the bottom of the movements of the plant, is an effect of growth. It is due to the elaboration and building up. Wherever it is manifesting itself, carbon is in process of being fixed, and oxygen in the process of emancipation and discharge. But the animal protoplasm—the basement of animated flesh—moves because it is in process of combustive destruction, which is the exact opposite of elaborating construction. Heat is appropriated in the case of the vegetable movement, and rendered latent as one of the constituents of the accumulating structure, and as an implement of cohesion. The sunshine is actually put to the work of holding together the constituent elements of the molecules of the enlarging mass. Heat is set free, in the case of the animal movement, as a supply of energy or power capable of doing work, and in the breathing animal, as a result of the dissolution and destruction of the cohesive integrity of previously built-up molecules.—Pp. 259, 260.

ART. IX.—FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.

THE CONVENT SCHOOLS IN BELGIUM.

SOME astonishing disclosures have just been made in Oudenarde, regarding the utter depravity of both teachers and pupils in the school of a convent bearing the dubious title of "Good Works," (*Bonnes Œuvres*.) For some time the attention of the correctional police has been called to the rumors regarding those having the establishment in charge, which has been a rival of the secular schools of the government. An investigation proved the guilt of about thirty teachers of complicity in indecent outrages on the girls, and of violence and cruelty in their general treatment. The revelations made on the witness-stand were simply frightful; not isolated acts, but a studied and systematic practice of the basest crimes committed in a large educational establishment, and one of the first schools of Belgium; teachers and pupils seemed alike to indulge in the most obscene orgies—depravity reduced to a veritable system. This Convent of "Good Works" (*sic!*) is the mother-house of the order, and here the young novices go through their training; and the "*Flandre Libérale*" is our authority for saying that this "congregation" has ex-

tended its propaganda not only throughout Belgium, where it has eleven houses, but also in Holland, where it has six, and even in America.

These disclosures have set the authorities at work against other "congregations" of like stamp which they have discovered. Public indignation is intense throughout Belgium, and in Ghent the Bishop was compelled to close the boarding establishments, and only take day scholars, who would be there simply in study hours. The diocesan authority must have known of much of this abuse, for a clerical journal confesses that the difficulty is not of yesterday, and that a more prompt solution of it would have prevented much trouble. The Bishop helped as many as possible of the brothers to escape, and the most of them have crossed the frontier into Holland, where they find shelter in the affiliated establishments. In Belgium, as in France, the members of the religious orders nearly always succeed in avoiding punishment by retreating for awhile, and then returning under another Church name; and these are so much alike and so general that it is quite difficult to distinguish them, and detect their bearers as former criminals. This utter depravity of the convent system of popular schools, proved before a court of justice, must do much toward breaking up these pesthouses in the rural districts of Belgium, where they sow vice as weeds. And in view of these disclosures it is astounding that their supporters can have the brazen impudence still to oppose and embarrass the communal schools in all possible ways, under the plea that they are "Godless schools," in which the children learn nothing but vice and immorality.

THE GERMAN ULTRAMONTANES.

Under their indefatigable leader, Windhorst, the German Ultramontanes seem determined to annoy the government, and prevent rather than aid in restoring pastors to the parishes left unprovided for by the deposition of the recalcitrant bishops. After a recent tirade on the parliamentary floor on the part of Windhorst, the Minister of Public Worship brought out some significant figures to show that matters in Catholic Germany are by no means as bad as they are painted. The entire number of parishes in Prussia for 8,800,000 souls amount to 4,804; of these 1,108 were without regular pastors, with a population of 280,000. But even this gap has been largely filled by the compromise laws lately passed, and in some regions in active and successful operation, notwithstanding the opposition of the party of the Center, which seems to prefer discord and disintegration to harmony and affiliation. 445 parishes have been already supplied through the operation of these laws, with a population of 1,900,000. The parishes now reported as not being well or fully supplied number 150, with 170,000 souls. According to this showing there is therefore now but a small percentage of the parishes without religious privileges. With this view of the case the spirit of exaggeration in the Catholic party has done a good work in greatly magnifying their persecution. The Minister of Public Worship has again and again expressed an ardent desire to settle the troubles and arrive at a condition of peace; but with a persistent

opposition to the State authorities this is not easy. If the controlling Catholic circles could only see that such means will never lead to any thing profitable, and will certainly never coerce the State into any humiliating measures, they might be induced to cease bickering, and join in mending the fragments of churches and parishes now left as a wreck of the struggle. It is now understood that the Papal authorities are no longer in sympathy with those irreconcilables.

THE ANTI-SEMITIC PERSECUTIONS.

The fearful agitations against the Jews in Germany are now bearing their fruits in Russia and other semi-oriental lands in excessive personal violence, which cabinets and rulers will vainly try to quell. It seems to be manifest destiny that periodical outbreaks of violence against them shall have their course, notwithstanding all theories to the contrary. When the Jews are allowed the full exercise of their talents under liberal rule, the story of Joseph, the son of Jacob, who became privy-counselor to Pharaoh, and finally ruler of Egypt, finds its counterpart in Christian Europe, where many men of Jewish birth or origin have arrived at the premier's chair. The most noted one of these was Beaconsfield, a descendant of the Spanish Jews driven from their homes by the persecutions of the Inquisition; and, though generations removed from those fathers in Israel, the Jewish spirit is manifest in his statecraft and his pen. Other noted statesmen of Jewish origin or birth may be found scattered over the Continent. France had Fould, the renowned financial minister of Napoleon III., Cremieux, the liberal statesman, lately deceased, and Gambetta—for it is claimed that he is by origin an Italian Jew. In Prussia, the late Minister of Agriculture, Friedenthal, was of Jewish extraction, as is the present Minister of Justice, Dr. Friedberg. The two recently retired Austrian ministers, Unger and Glasser, were of the Jewish line, and the gap has been filled by Baron Haymerle, the new Austrian Chancellor of State, whose parents turned from the Jewish to the Christian faith. Haymerle began his career as a revolutionist, and in 1849 was condemned to death. The present Emperor pardoned him, and in a few years he entered the civil service, and rose so rapidly from post to post that last year he took the place of Andrassy. The Finance Minister of Baden is a Jew in faith. Thus Jewish genius is avenging itself for the humiliations of the past, and hoping, by the help of Providence, to win back all it has lost. And thus the Jews in every sphere of life are hoping, while their enemies are fearing.

ART. X.—FOREIGN LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.

ILLUSTRATED BIBLE STORY.

THERE is a veritable *furor* in Germany in the line of Bible illustrations as a means of popular instruction, as is proved by the success of "*Römheld's Illustrierte Biblische Geschichte*," that has already passed through several editions, though recently published by Velhagen & Klasing, of Leipsic. The present generation is a difficult one to preach to. The church is well-nigh deserted, at least by the male portion of the community; and those who sit under the droppings of the Gospel are much inclined to criticise and argue. And the most simple and attractive homilies are not favorite reading in the modern family. The great success of this book is, therefore, a literary event, as it professes to be "the sacred Gospel, in sermons for all Sundays and sacred days of the year, narrated and explained to the people." The author is a plain country pastor of a little village; but he has learned to be concise, clear, and forcible in his narrative, and preaches the *Gospel* of the Saviour rather than *about* the Gospel. And still more, he has learned how to narrate the gospel story in the simple language of his people, and adapt it to their circumstances, so that it becomes a living and present history, and the events themselves stand out in bold relief before his congregation. This is the secret of his influence rather than any peculiarity of style or originality of expression. Römheld, with these rare qualities, seeks to make this book a Bible story for the elementary schools of Germany, and he certainly has met with rare success thus far. This is accounted for by the fact that he for a time was a practical teacher, himself under the guidance of one of the most renowned pedagogues of the land; this gives him easier access to the teachers, and a readier acquiescence to his methods. The principles that he lays down for imparting these truths are a treasure of pedagogic wisdom, and his methods a useful key to the popular work. He makes a careful selection of his narratives, dropping Job, for instance, and taking Daniel in the Lion's den, the Centurion of Cornelius, etc. The narratives are sometimes shortened, so as to contain the cream of the event, retaining all the original spirit and coloring, with omission of whatever might perhaps make it too lengthy to secure the undivided attention of the child. Other narratives have been expanded and explained more fully for the same ulterior purpose. All through the work the object is to secure the expression best adapted to effect the purpose of lasting impression on the young mind, so that the story shall be interesting enough to secure the return to it without urging from the teacher. But all through the story the woof is the word of God; that is, Jesus Christ is the real purport of Holy Writ, and thus in the Old Testament the story is of Christ and the Gospel eventually. From the beginning to the end this important relation of the Old to the New is used with care and fidelity. The

author has been careful to avoid any doctrinal teaching; the narrative is to speak for itself, and the doctrines taught are those to be deduced from the divine words. These impressions are heightened by a judicious choice of illustrations from the best collections and the most faithful artists of the day in biblical picturing, Carolsfeld, Richter, Jäger, and Schnorr. We need hardly say that German evangelical Christians are giving the work a hearty approval because it may prove a welcome and admitted messenger to the popular schools where no other would gain admission from its merits so much as from authority. The Germans still see the necessity of teaching the Bible to the young in the secular schools, and wisely, instead of excluding it from these Christian scholars, are trying to make it so welcome that it will be invited.

A noble man and pure critic thus speaks of the book to his countrymen: "We congratulate the elementary schools with all our heart at the acquisition of this masterly manual of Scripture teaching, and we wish that it might not be confined to the common school; for biblical teaching it is quite as well adapted to the gymnasium, the scientific schools, and those for our daughters, as it is for the school of the people. And, finally, it is a book for the house and the family, and where it does not gain entrance to the schools let the mother look to it that it at least has a warm welcome in her domain; she can find no better assistant in introducing to her children the cardinal points of Scripture history so that these will remain with them through life." We have purposely lingered on this subject to show our readers the thought that still lies heavily on German minds, amid the rush of all sorts of books circulated to lessen the love of young hearts for the pure Bible teaching as it is in the Saviour's life, and the history that foreshadows and portrays it. It is encouraging that there is still a popular leaven in the Fatherland that may leaven the lump.

SCHNORR'S BIBLE IN PICTURES.

In the same general spirit, and because of its harmony, we allude to the above classical Bible-work, which has become a great national treasure of biblical art. When this great enterprise was started German publishers were inclined to hold aloof from it. But George Wigand took the enterprising author and artist by the hand, and amid the doubts and fears of his compeers, helped him to the execution of some of the finest specimens of woodcut engraving in the annals of their trade. Very soon the leading spirits of that guild gathered around him, and now he was assisted by Flegel, Gaber, Graeff, Aarland, and other notabilities of the craft, whose careful execution of the ideas of the author have helped him to produce a masterpiece of the first rank. The publisher spared no labor nor expense in his part of the work, and spent a modest fortune in the drawing and engraving of the blocks. In order to make these "Bible pictures" accessible to the poor as well as the rich, cheap popular editions have been placed on the counters beside those bound in the height of luxury. Each of these pictures is

provided with a short explanatory text in German, which has lately been extended to the French and English, and the last venture is a polyglot edition, with the text in fourteen languages. So famous a work as this could not fail of the honor of a reproduction. The most important of these is by the house of Didot & Co., Paris; it is entitled, "*La Sainte Bible par Salmon*." In this the entire number, two hundred and forty sheets, are splendidly reproduced by the heliograph process. As a curiosity we may mention in this connection that the complete Bible has been reproduced by a firm in Holland, in the original size, through what is called lithographic impression, and it is so well done that none but an experienced eye can distinguish it from the original. Full success has crowned these great exertions. The sale, counting the single sheets, each with an engraving, amounts up to the present time to about five millions. The printing is all done by single sheets, and the sale mostly occurs in this way, as special sheets and subjects are most frequently demanded by the public. The publishers generally keep two hundred thousand on hand, and daily sales send forth into all the world this word of God in pictures.

AN IMPERIAL HYMN BOOK.

The Prussian hosts in the last war with France went into battle with the war-cry, "With God for King, and Fatherland!" and when victory was won the venerable leader was the first to order a grand "Praise God!" from all his children; for even the Catholic regiments caught the spirit, and soon learned to sing with their comrades the hymns of Luther. The emperor still wants his army to sing these stirring anthems, and has bidden a conference to meet at Eisenach (a fitting spot) to draw up for it an "Evangelical Hymn and Prayer Book." It was a happy thought to give to the sons of the Fatherland that are still gathered under its flag the best that could be procured of the rich mine of German sacred song, that is now the common property of all, to the end that their common faith might grow strong in times of peace. The poetic power of the German nation in this species of literature is an eloquent testimony of the true Christian heart that beats outside of the limits of all dogmatic strife and jealousy.

The hymns of Germany reflect the noblest conceptions and loftiest strivings of the people, and the day is now past when the choice ones shall wander about the land, like lost children, singing the lays of home. They are to gather about one hundred and fifty others for his army hymn book, and he bids the conference of Eisenach make the choice. The variety of hymnals in evangelical Germany has been very great, no less than sixty in one province of Prussia. This has led the people to desire a selection, and thus this measure is popular throughout Protestant Germany. If the conference has a happy inspiration in the selection, this new collection will doubtless become popular throughout the land, and its introduction into the army may lead to its adoption on the part

of many Churches. It is proposed to have cheap editions, so that schools, charitable institutions, and religious associations of a general character may be induced to adopt it, as well as German families. It will be accompanied by a choral, with about eighty of the most cherished melodies of the German Evangelical Churches. A very pretty thought is that of an imperial birthday hymn to head the collection, and this has been submitted to the authorities for their judgment; the emperor himself will doubtless have a voice in the matter. It is by Julius Strum, and breathes a beautifully patriotic and religious spirit, alluding to their noble chief, and the fact that, by the help of God, he has united his people in the face of their enemies, and done all to the honor of his name, (*Zu Deines Namens Ehre*), which is the refrain of each of the four verses.

ART. XI.—QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE.

Religion, Theology, and Biblical Literature.

The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. Translated out of the Greek: being the version set forth A. D. 1611. Compared with the most ancient Authorities, and revised A.D., 1881. Printed for the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, Oxford, at the University Press, 1881. Long Primer, crown 8vo. All rights reserved.

The History of the Bible: including its Canon, Genuineness, Authenticity, and Inspiration; as also the Ancient Versions and the Famous Manuscripts; a Special Account of the Early English Versions and Revisers, and the Authorized Version of King James; the Reason for and History of the New Revision; the Principles of Revision, and Conditions. With full index. By the Rev. L. T. CHAMBERLAIN, D.D., Norwich, Conn. 12mo, pp. 47. The Henry Hill Publishing Company, Norwich, Conn. 1881.

The quiet corps of scholars who so patiently and faithfully toiled through long uncompensated years in the revision scarce imagined to themselves what a commercial sensation they were preparing—what a commotion in the sale of the first editions, and what a tumult in the columns of our daily seculars. And the momentous inference arises that the Bible has not lost its power. It stirs men on both sides of the Atlantic as it never stirred men before. Men, to whom it was apparently a buried book, betray an interest in its pages which slept in their minds unknown, perhaps, even to their own consciousness. We have almost written the conclusion that there is more religion in our world than we had imagined. The prophets of our day, who, inspired by their own wishes, are predicting the downfall of Christianity, will evidently die without the sight.

And there are queries and quandaries in the popular heart. There are some disturbances, well known to scholars, many of

them noted in our commentaries, yet new to the readers of solely the English text. The disappearance of the laceration of the text into separate verses and chapters, the division by paragraphs demanded by the sense, the removal of the figures to the margins, and the printing the poetical quotations in a poetical form, changes which would have been disturbing fifty years ago, are easily welcome now. That little revolution will never go back. But how about tearing off the sublime doxology from the Lord's Prayer and tucking it into the margin? How about a great many forms of expression which thought has consecrated as part of the Bible, and that yet have been ruthlessly substituted by some "human" interpolation?

Now we think it should silence a large amount of complaint to call to mind the great fact that it is a question of TRUTH. Does the revision come more nearly than the old version to the *truth* of the original autographs of the sacred penmen? This is the proper form of the question which the Christian people are now putting to the biblical scholarship of the day. And to that question there can surely come but one unanimous answer. Whatever exceptions can be taken as matters of taste and association, there can be no doubt that the revision is very greatly superior to the old as a presentation of the sacred writings to the English mind. And this to so great a degree as to overbear all other considerations, so that to prefer the old is to prefer at least the less true, if not the untrue.

This question of *truth* regards first the original text, and then the English text of the revision. And when the people ask, Is the revision made from a purer text than that of King James? To that no scholar can withhold a strong affirmation. There is something beautiful in the enthusiasm with which for a century or so the closeted biblical scholars have hunted for and collated manuscripts, and the toil, intellect, and rigid and pure-minded criticism with which they have chastened the text of the copies back into an approximate identity with the apostolic autographs. Here is new truth as opposed to old mistake. A truer Greek Testament is now Englished for our use.

And, secondly, to the question of a more accurate translation of this more accurate text, there can, in *truth*, be but one reply. There is, indeed, one translation which we consider a great blemish, namely, the phrase "evil one" in the Lord's Prayer. In regard to this, as well as the doxology, we advise that the old form, being preserved in our Discipline, should be used in the

public service. The substitution of *love* for *charity* in Corinthians is made in every commentary, is necessarily made in every sermon on that text, and should unquestionably be made in a revision.

We fully indorse the changes by the American revisers, relegated by an Appendix, and wish they had been wrought into the text. It would have been simply a preference of *new truth* to old *untruth*.

The newspapers seem to say that the English public mind rejects the revision. We cannot quite believe that there will be a permanent rejection. It would be a curious duality if the old should be the standard in England and the new in America. The cautions, however, given by the authorities of the Church against an adoption of the new into the public service sporadically by individual clergymen before it has been accepted by the legislation of the Church, is just and wise. Similarly no minister of our own Church should adopt it before the authoritative action of our General Conference.

Hours with the Bible; or, The Scriptures in the Light of Modern Discovery and Knowledge, from Creation to the Patriarchs. By CUNNINGHAM GEIKIE, D.D., author of "The Life and Words of Christ." With illustrations. 12mo, pp. 500. New York: James Pott. 1881.

Dr. Geikie's book wonderfully exemplifies what a world of fresh biblical illustration of Genesis has been flung up by modern research. Some fields, especially the physical science department, present difficulties to be obviated; others, especially archæology, furnish powerful confirmations of the sacred record. With regard to the difficulties coming from the doctrines of genetic evolution and of palæontology, it would, indeed, seem that they are diminishing, as if tending to vanish away. In archæology even the piles of parallel illustration are in a somewhat provisional state, affording apparent ready application in proof, yet needing further discovery and critical treatment. But what verifications of the earliest biblical documents crowd upon us! The Mosaic cosmogony is found to be Abrahamitic and primitively Shemitic; for we find that it accords with a blurred parallel account primitively existing in Assyria and Chaldea, whence Abraham emigrated. Then, in the Egyptian part of the Pentateuch, Egyptology finds the writer at home in Egypt at the age of the narrated events. Then, passing from Egypt into the desert, we find his tracks, as followed by modern travel, distinctly traceable,

with all the surroundings his narrative presupposes. That there should be difficulties, our mind almost demands. But the surplus of confirmation is overwhelming, and the general historic truth and clear, simple integrity of the record, are safe beyond all possible impeachment, whether coming from the heavy lore of German criticism, or from the brilliant rhetoric of a Robert Ingersoll.

Of the various publications issued to illustrate and confirm Genesis from the modern researches Dr. Geikie's is fullest, latest, and most erudite. His list of authorities consulted in all the languages of western Europe fills four pages. Among his authorities we find our learned contributor Southall, but miss our brilliant deceased contributor, Tayler Lewis. The present volume, the first of a series, extends from the cosmogony to the decease of Joseph, the last event before the Exodus.

Six chapters are devoted to the cosmogony in its various aspects, and the geological age of the world, two to the creation of man and the Edenic history, and three to the antiquity of man and his primitive condition. Then come the beginning of the race and the deluge in three chapters; the table of the nations and the openings of natural history in two chapters. Thence, narrowing the view to the Messianic race, we have the commencement of the Hebrew nation in one chapter, three very fresh and excellent chapters on Abraham, and we close with one chapter on Isaac and his sons, and a final chapter on Joseph, rich with remarkable illustrations, drawn from secular sources, of the successive events of his life. Upon the whole work we note a few points.

Dr. Geikie favors the belief that the art of writing came from the antediluvian age, transmitted through the ark, bringing with it our most valuable primitive traditions. To this source we may, doubtless, trace the commencing chapters of Genesis.

He calls attention to a significant fact that seems to give a very severe blow to the theory of the Jehovistic-Elohim documents. The Assyrian tablets give these supposed different narratives in one continuous document.

We have good authority for saying there were temperance societies in Egypt, composed at least of the priests, who imposed temperance principles on the kings. "A despot is not easily kept within bounds, however it may have been with the particular Pharaoh whose beverage in the cup-bearer's dream was only grape-juice fresh from the cluster. But that this is a literally correct trait of Egyptian life has been curiously illustrated by a

text discovered by Ebers in the inscriptions of the temple of Edfu, in which the king is seen standing, cup in hand, while underneath are the words, 'They press grapes into the water and the king drinks.'—P. 465. This demonstrates that Egypt had two kinds of wine, the fermented and the unfermented. It suggests that *the product of the vine* in Luke xxii, 18, as used at the Lord's Supper, was fresh grape-juice. The ingenious sophism that Pharaoh's drinking such juice was "only in a dream" should not be repeated.

The whole work is, within its range, an invaluable popular commentary and a fund of matter for the work of the commentator.

Commentary on St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans. By F. GODET, D.D., Professor of Theology, Neuchatel. Translated from the French by the Rev. A. CUSH, M.A., Edinburgh. Vol. II, 8vo, pp. 434. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 38 George-street. 1881.

The large and stately treatises on Romans of the present day have so uniformly come from the Augustinian side that our highly dogmatical friend, Spurgeon, has come to claim that the Epistle belongs to the Calvinists alone, and that an Arminian is guilty of an impertinence, if not of grand larceny, in taking possession of the Epistle for comment. It is, therefore, refreshing to receive from the Continent of Europe a magnificent exposition from an eminent biblical scholar, taking what we might almost call the Wesleyan positions. Nor is the pleasure diminished by the fact that the work comes by the Edinburgh route, through which such liberal evangelicism seldom travels.

Professor Godet's name has already been introduced to our readers through the "Quarterly" from our notice of his New Testament "Studies." We have also used his aid in our comment on Rev. xiii with good effect. The present work is characterized by its scholarly mastery of the ground, its rich biblical tone, its great lucidity and vivacity of style.

We have only space to indicate his position on a few leading doctrinal points. On the seventh chapter he maintains with great conclusiveness the thesis that the Ego of the closing passage is an unregenerate struggler after righteousness. On viii, 15 he notes that "the apostle has proved the fact of our being sons or children, first by the filial feeling produced in us by the Spirit, and then by *the direct witness of the Spirit himself*." This important postulate of a true and deep Christian experience he defines briefly but explicitly, and clearly as any Wesleyan need

ask. On viii, 28-30, his views are admirably stated, and his doctrinal position is thus: "Wherein consists the divine predestination undoubtedly taught by the apostle in this passage? Does it, in his view, exclude the free-will of man, or, on the contrary, does it imply it? Two reasons seem to us to decide the question in favor of the second alternative: 1. The act of *foreknowing*, which the apostle makes the basis of predestination, proves that the latter is determined by some fact or other, the object of this knowledge. It matters little that the object is eternal, while the fact, which is its object, comes to pass only in time. It follows all the same from this revelation that the fact must be considered as due in some way to a factor distinct from a divine causation, which can be nothing else than human liberty. 2. The apostle avoids making the act of *believing* the object of the decree of predestination. In the act of predestination faith is already assumed, and its sole object is, according to the apostle's words, the final participation of believers in *the glory of Christ*. Not only, then, does Paul's view imply that in the act of believing full human liberty is not excluded, but it is even implied. For it alone explains the distinction which he already establishes between the two divine acts of *foreknowledge* and *predestination*, both as to their *nature* (the one, an act of the understanding, the other of the will) and as to their *object*, (in the one case faith, in the other glory.") We need hardly say after this that his exposition of the ninth chapter is orthodox after the Wesleyan-Arminian standard.

The Truth of Scripture in Connection with Revelation, Inspiration, and the Canon.
By JOHN JAMES GIVEN, Ph.D., Professor of Hebrew and Hermeneutics in Magee College, Londonderry. 8vo, pp. 370. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1881. [Scribner's Edition. Price, \$3.]

Our Londonderry professor displays much of the Irish fluency of speech and liveliness of genius, with a good degree of scholarship, and now and then a jet of true originality. Celtic genius, it is well-known, with its rich imagination is capable, also, of a sharp-edged metaphysic.

The volume is tripartite; discussing the three great topics, Revelation, Inspiration, the Canon. The treatment of Revelation from its necessary brevity can touch only on great leading individual topics; mountain-tops that project as islands above the surface of the great sea. They are well selected, often handled with a fine dexterity, and that of miracles, especially, with subtle insight.

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—37

On Inspiration he corroborates (p. 304) a view, which we have heretofore advanced, that the reality of the original inspiration of the sacred writings was attested, say in the New Testament, not only by the apostolic characters of the authors and their own consciousness, but by the collective inspired character of the Christian Church which received them. So long as the remains of the Pentecostal outpouring of the Spirit survived in the apostolic Church, so long as the gift of miracles and the discerning of spirits existed, so long was the Church divinely capacitated to collectively discriminate not only between the truly apostolic and unapostolic teaching and teacher, but between the inspired and uninspired utterances of the apostles themselves. Over the early selection of the canonical documents the great Head of the Church held special guardianship, and specially guided the mind of the Church. Our canon stands on the basis of the double inspiration of the writers and of the Church; the former speaking and the latter confirming. And this may serve to solve the difficulty often raised from the mistake of Peter at Antioch, and from the probability that many a letter was written by Paul and other apostles that never entered the canon. See our commentary on Gal. ii, 11-21; 1 Cor. xi, 16; xiv, 33.

There are, as special features of this volume, an able and very conclusive defense of the Solomonic authorship of Ecclesiastes, and a summary of the discussion, so deeply now agitating the Church of Scotland in the matter of Professor Robertson Smith, in regard to the canonicity of the Book of Deuteronomy.

We quote the following fresh and pertinent illustration of what is sometimes called "the double sense" of Scripture: "Who does not know that Spenser, in his *Faery Queen*, while celebrating certain personified virtues, alludes in a manner unmistakable to certain distinguished personages, so that Sir Artigael at once represents *Justice* and *Lord Grey*; Duessa, *Fulsehood* and the unfortunate *Queen of Scots*; the Red Cross Knight, both *Holiness* and the *Church*? while Spencer's own letter to Raleigh clearly states the plan as follows: 'In the *Faery Queen* I mean Glory in my general intention, but in my particular, I conceive the most excellent and glorious person of our sovereign the Queen (Elizabeth) and her kingdom in Faery Land. And yet in some places I do otherwise shadow her; for, considering she beareth two persons, the one of a most royal queen or empress, the other of a most virtuous and beautiful lady, this latter part in some places I do express in Belphebe.'"

The Incarnate Saviour: A Life of Jesus Christ. By Rev. W. R. NICOLL, M.A., Kelso. 12mo, pp. 388. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1881. 1

Both in the externals of paper, print, and margins, and in the transparency, and often the eloquence of its style, this is a beautiful book. Among the many biographical delineations of the Saviour, the specialty of this is claimed to be that it designs to present the conception of Christ in his incarnate unity, so that we may think of him as the divine pervading the human. And in the matter of miracles, they are not viewed so much as proofs of the revelation, but simply as an integral part of Christ's divine self-manifestation. This is a valuable conception, and capable of a very comprehensive statement. The manifestation of the Son of God may in fact be called the only miracle, and all other miracles are but sparkles from that one great conflagration, attendants upon and truly parts of it. It is the one antithesis to nature. The antecedent miracles of the Old Testament were premonitory sparks of that divine Presence; those of the New Testament were its direct effects and issues. If the Divine must come not only into the physical, but the human world, there must be an incarnation; if he is to be transcendently human, there must be the sublimest of suffering and death; if he must die and yet be manifest as divine, there must be a resurrection and an ascension.

A History of Christian Doctrines. By the late Dr. R. R. HAGENBACH, Professor of Theology at Basel. Translated from the Fifth and Last German Edition, with Additions from Other Sources. With an Introduction by E. W. PLUMMER, D.D., Professor of Divinity in King's College, London; Examining Chaplain to the Archbishop of Canterbury. Vol. II, 8vo, pp. 466. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 38 George-street. 1880. [Scribner's specially imported edition, price \$3.]

The present volume of this valuable work covers the great and important historic space between the death of Origen and the establishment of Protestantism, extending from A. D. 254 to 1720. It, therefore, portrays the rise of systematic theology, producing gradually the formation of the scholasticism of the Middle Ages and finding its termination, or at least its downfall, in the *Renaissance*. The author divides the contents of the volume into three periods: the Age of Polemics, or discussion; of Systematic Theology; and, at the Reformation, of Polemico-Ecclesiastical Symbolism.

It is a matter of great interest, as well as a necessary equipment for a veritable theologian, to trace the progress of Christian thought through the Christian ages. That thought flows like a mighty Mississippi through nearly two millenniums. If the im-

mediate details sometimes present puerilities or eccentricities, yet the great body of doctrine, being the doctrine which forms that Christianity which has created so wonderful a Christendom as we have, is as a whole so grandly consistent in its substance and so majestic in its flow as to raise a profound and rational wonder. The great outlines of doctrine, held by the Greek, the Roman, and Anglican Churches, wonderfully coincide, forming an orthodox system, excluding temporary heresies, and enabling us to feel a security in being based upon, or, at least, not wandering far from, the fundamentals of the general Church. Hence a hearty mental embracement of Dogmatic History is a great regulator of our individual faith, giving us stability of belief, and enabling us to view new inventions in theology with a healthful skepticism.

Able as this work is, and standing practically almost alone for the student of our day, we view it as in some degree provisional. History, like commentary, is often colored by the spectacles of the historian; and quite often the hues of Hagenbach's glasses are thrown upon his pages. A history with a different, if not a neutral, tint, will, we trust, some day appear, rising from a different theological quarter.

The Angels of God. By LEWIS R. DUNN, D.D., author of "The Mission of the Spirit," etc. Small 12mo, pp. 295. New York: Phillips & Hunt; Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

Within the limits of Scripture mainly Dr. Dunn brings together the various indications that form our idea of the angels. It is an attractive subject, appealing to our higher powers of imagination, and furnishing to the writer ample scope for beautiful thought in beautiful words. He unfolds to our view their origin, form, powers, names, orders, number, and employments. Then he discusses the dark and weird topic of the fallen angels, Satan, demons, and demoniacs. There are those among us who ask, How is it that in our day the angels have so gone up into the upper heaven that they are never seen? And in the present current supernaturalisms, including not only the phenomena of spiritualism, but the system of second sight, wraiths, and apparitions, they are never matters of even imaginary experience at the present day. Probably the angels do not associate with such company. But, in the matter of a purer and more blessed experience, Dr. Dunn gives us cheering mention of angelic revelations to dying saints even in our own day.

Circumstantial Evidences of Christianity. By DANIEL CAREY. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe; New York: Phillips & Hunt. 1881.

The common method with writers on the "Evidences" is to connect their argument with some particular theory of inspiration, and to identify the truth of Christianity with the verbal infallibility of the Bible. To some thinkers, however, it seems to be becoming the preferable view that Christianity depends not on the formal perfection of the record, but on the substantial truth of its leading facts. The work in hand is written from this standpoint. The author finds certain undoubted facts in the history of both the Old and the New Testament which find their explanation only in the essential truth of the Christian system. The work is not profound enough for scholars, but would be useful for its own class of thinkers.

The Christ. Seven Lectures. By ERNEST NAVILLE. Translated from the French. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1880. [New York: Scribner's specially imported edition. Price \$2.]

The idea of these Lectures is that Christ is Christianity, and that all discussion of the divinity of Christianity must center around Christ himself. Christ is presented in the several relations of Teacher, Comforter, Redeemer, Legislator, and Lord. The aim is to show that in all these relations Christ appears as something new and divine. There is a break of historical continuity and a corresponding historical effect, which can be accounted for on the assumption that a new life had come down from above. The argument is briefly presented, owing to conditions of the lecture-plan, but it is in the highest degree suggestive and valuable.

The Brotherhood of Men; or, Christian Geology. By REV. WILLIAM UNSWORTH. Published for the Author at the Wesleyan Conference Office. London. 1881.

The author aims to expound the duties of the Christian as a member of society. An extreme individualism and subjectivism have prevailed in religious thought and have largely banished the idea of social duties from the popular mind. All the more necessary is it to insist upon the fact that society itself is a moral institution, and that the moral task must include the effort to make all social and political forms and relations concrete expressions of moral ideas. Ethics claim not only the inner purpose, but also the whole realm of outward manifestation. The book in hand will be found useful in giving one an idea of the work required and of its difficulty and importance.

Young Workers in the Church; or, The Training and Organization of Young People for Christian Activity. By Rev. T. B. NEELY, A. M. With an Introduction by Bishop MATTHEW SIMPSON. Small 12mo, pp. 218. New York: Phillips & Hunt; Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

This is a small but spirited book on a great subject. There are few problems of greater practical importance than that of bringing the Church of Christ into a spirit and state of general and individual activity and enterprise. This is the true hope of the world for spiritual success and ultimate salvation. Mr. Neely's book is an admirable contribution to this end. He means business not only for a whole, but for every individual member of the Church not incapacitated. He has studied the subject in its minute details and practical bearings. He aims not only to quicken the spirit, but to show the way. It is a book for pastors, for officials, and especially for every young person entering the Christian life.

Christianity's Challenge, and some Phases of Christianity, submitted for Candid Consideration. By Rev. HERRICK JOHNSON, D.D. 12mo, pp. 269. Chicago: Cushing, Thomas, & Co. 1881.

With something of the air of an official *champion* Dr. Johnson takes stand on the summit of the pedestal of Christianity, and issues his "challenge" to the opposing hosts. He is a positive aggressor; puts them on the defense, and threatens them with rout. Based upon Christianity's book, Christianity's Christ, Christianity's definite gospel, a Christianity above failure, a Christianity presenting the alternatives of eternal death and eternal life, he affirms that Christianity is the highest source of happiness, and the surest guide in the business of life. The argument is bold, impressive, and well sustained. The book would be a fine present to be put into the hands of any thoughtful but wavering person.

The Golden Dawn; or, Light on the Great Future, in this Life, through the Dark Valley, and in the Life Eternal, as seen in the Best Thoughts of over three hundred leading Authors and Scholars. Illustrated. By Rev. J. H. POTTS, Editor of "Christian Advocate," Detroit; author of "Pastor and People," etc. 8vo, pp. 608. Philadelphia and Chicago: P. W. Ziegler & Co. 1880.

In spite of its somewhat sensational title, Mr. Potts has given us a valuable book on the most momentous points of human destiny. His topics are, in series, Death, The Dying, Immortality, The Millennium and Second Advent, The Resurrection of the Dead, The General Judgment, The Punishment of the Wicked, and The Reward of the Righteous. On these themes he has, in successive chapters, brought together a selection of the best thoughts

of eminent thinkers, so that we have the doctrines of the Church, expressed in choicest language, by her best expositors, on the final things. It will be interesting and salutary reading for both theologians and popular readers.

The Methodist Office Bearer, June, 1881. Terms, 60 cents a year in advance. 8vo, pp. 96. Detroit, Mich.: Methodist Book Depository. John Willyoung.

The issuing a periodical devoted to the discipline and organic operations of our Church was a happy thought, and, well carried out, may produce many valuable results. To our ministers it brings information, suggestions, and reminders, well calculated to stimulate and direct in practical action. The present number embraces valuable paragraphs on the General Rules, the Articles of Faith, the work of the ministry and of the officary, and Sunday-schools. The enterprising editor, Rev. J. H. Potts, has done it up externally in fine taste, in a form well-fitted for binding, and suggesting that its volumes will be a future depository of ecclesiastical facts and principles.

Philosophy, Metaphysics, and General Science.

Island Life; or, The Phenomena and Causes of Insular Faunas and Floras; including a Revision and attempted Solution of the Problem of Geological Climates. By ALFRED RUSSEL WALLACE, author of "The Geographical Distribution of Animals," etc. 8vo, pp. xvi, 522. New York: Harper & Brothers.

It is well known that Mr. Wallace might justly dispute with Mr. Darwin the honor of having originated the now very famous theory of development by natural selection. As an author he became known by his work on the "Malay Archipelago," and (in 1870) his "Contribution to the Theory of Natural Selection;" and, about four years ago, he gave to the world his two substantial volumes on "The Geographical Distribution of Animals," a work worthy to be placed alongside of those of Darwin and Lyell in the field of biological and geological research. The present volume is, as the author tells us in his Preface, designed to be supplementary to this last-named work, and to be of a more popular character. It may be regarded, however, as in fact a more deliberate and matured expression of Mr. Wallace's views as to the origin of the present island faunas and floras of the globe—the tracing back of them to their original ancestors, and an explanation of how they became *what* they are, and *where* they are. The

appearance of a South American species in the far-off islands of the Indian Ocean, or of the plants of Great Britain in the island of Japan, was naturally pointed to by the opponents of evolution as an insurmountable objection in the way of that theory. They found the barn-owl (*Strix flammea*) in countries the most remote from each other; the osprey, or fishing-hawk, at once in Brazil, South Africa, the Malay Islands, and Tasmania; and the raven extending from the Arctic regions to Texas and New Mexico, as well as to India and Lake Baikal in Asia. We and they were naturally driven to infer that the same specific form had, on the theory of development, been produced in different parts of the world. Yet more perplexing is it to find two species of the serpentine amphibia, *Cæcilia oxyura* and *Cæcilia rostrata*, in the Seychelles Islands, and, at the same time, one of these species on the Malabar coast, and the other in West Africa and South America. We find the same fact illustrated in connection with the dispersion of plants. Identical plants appear in Scandinavia, in India, in New South Wales, in New Zealand, and in Iceland. Thirty-nine species of the plants of New Zealand are identical with species found in Europe, and there are eleven species common to New Zealand and South America.

Lyell and recent English geologists got over these difficulties by boldly affirming that during the vast periods of geological time the existing continents and ocean-basins of the globe have, more than once, changed places, and that continental areas have stretched across the widest seas. But Mr. Wallace joins issue with the school of Lyell on this point, and undertakes to prove, by incontestable facts, that the existing continents were outlined from the beginning, as long ago taught by Professor Dana, and that the waters have rolled over the "deep unfathomed caves of ocean" from the most remote period. It becomes necessary, therefore, for Mr. Wallace to explain the wide distribution of genera and species on other grounds; and this he undertakes to accomplish, in part, by showing that, while there was no continental extension between two such remote areas, for example, as Madagascar and the Malay Archipelago, there has existed in times, more or less remote, a *chain of considerable islands* connecting Southern Africa and Southern Asia. Even this would involve upheavals of the ocean bottom to the extent of a thousand fathoms.

We have in this connection an incidental discussion of the existence in tertiary times of the supposed *Lemurian continent*

between Madagascar and the Indian peninsula. By many arguments, and especially appealing to the results obtained by the recent deep-sea soundings, it is shown, that no such continental area existed in tertiary times; and the significance of this becomes apparent when we remember that it is on the existence of this continent that many evolutionists rely in order to connect man with the lower animals. It is in the rocks of this sunken continent, they allege, that we should find the missing links between man and the apes, if we could have access to its paleontological treasures; for here, they tell us, was the special *habitat* of the anthropomorphous apes. With the annihilation of this fancy, and in view of the entire absence of all such links in the tertiary beds of the existing continents, the advocates of the derivation of man from lower animal forms are left entirely without any *evidence* of the fact; and there the matter rests. Mr. Wallace, it is well known, has never pushed the theory of development so as to include our *homo sapiens*.

The first part of the present work applies itself to the establishment and mapping out of the different "zoological regions;" the "Palearctic," the "Ethiopian," the "Oriental," etc. The author then proceeds to show that the existence of these zoological provinces is the necessary result of the "law of evolution"—tracing the origin, growth, and decay of species and genera. The next subject considered is the means by which the various groups of animals are enabled to overcome the natural barriers which often seem to limit them to very restricted areas, and what are the exact nature and amount of the changes of sea and land experienced by the earth in past ages. The author then takes up the consideration of the set of changes—those of climate—which have probably been agents of the first importance in modifying specific forms and in the dispersion of animals. Three chapters, in this connection, are devoted to the Causes of Glacial Epochs. Here the author finds only two explanations suggested, which seem tenable; and while adopting generally Mr. Croll's views as to the causes of the "glacial epoch," he introduces certain limitations and modifications of that theory. From this examination the important conclusion is reached that the alternate phases of precession—causing the winter in each hemisphere to be in aphelion and perihelion each 10,500 years—would produce a complete change of climate only where a country was *partially* snow-clad; while, whenever a large area became almost *wholly* buried in snow and ice, as was certainly the case with Northern

Europe during the glacial epoch, then the glacial conditions would be continued, and perhaps even intensified, when the sun approached nearest the earth in winter, instead of there being at that time, as Mr. Croll maintains, an almost perpetual spring. With regard to the existence of glacial epochs in earlier times it is shown that Mr. Croll's views are opposed by a vast body of facts.

The general conclusion is reached that geographical conditions are the primary cause of great changes of climate, and that the radically different distribution of land and sea in the northern and southern hemispheres has generally led to great diversity of climate in the arctic and antarctic regions. It is only in recent times that the great northern continents have become so completely consolidated as they at present are, so as to shut out the warm water from their interiors, and render possible a wide-spread and intense glacial epoch. But this great climatic change was actually brought about by the high eccentricity which occurred about 200,000 years ago. It is, thus, the *concurrence* of the astronomical causes with the geographical revolutions which has resulted in bringing about glacial conditions. The glacial age lasted, we are told, about 120,000 years, and closed about 80,000 years ago.

Mr. Wallace proceeds then to one of the most interesting discussions in the volume—geological time as bearing on the development of the organic world. Geologists in the past have generally represented that geological time had to be measured by hundreds of millions rather than by millions of years. We believe that Mr. Darwin estimated that the denudation of the weald alone demanded more than 300,000,000 of years. Geologists have dwelt continually on the slowness of the processes of upheaval and subsidence, of denudation, and of the deposition of strata; while, on the theory of development, as expounded by Mr. Darwin, the variation and modification of organic forces is also exceedingly slow. Most geologists regarded the estimate of Sir Charles Lyell, of 240,000,000 of years since the Cambrian period, as very moderate; and Mr. Darwin, in his "Origin of Species," remarks, that before the Cambrian period commenced long periods had elapsed—probably far longer than the whole interval from the Cambrian age to the present day. Professor Huxley has expressed himself in terms equally strong as to the enormous periods which are required for the development of the higher forms of life; and Mr. Wallace remarks, that, according to these views, "the date of the commencement of life on the earth

cannot be less than 500,000,000 of years." On the other hand, physicists pointed out that the earth must once have been too hot to support life; while the friction of the tides is checking the earth's rotation, and this cannot have gone on indefinitely without making our day much longer than it is. A limit is therefore placed to the age of the habitable earth; and it was argued that the time so allowed was much too short for the long processes of the geologists and biologists. Mr. Wallace undertakes to demonstrate, that no such enormous periods are required. The rate of denudation, he says, has been recently approximately measured; and if, then, we take the *maximum* thickness of the *known* sedimentary rocks to represent the *average* thickness of *all* the sedimentary rocks, and we know also the *amount* of sediment carried to the sea, and the *area* on which that sediment is spread, we have a means of calculating the *time* required for the building up of all the sedimentary rocks of the geological system. The mean rate of denudation over the whole earth is about one foot in three thousand years; therefore the rate of *maximum* deposition (deposition going on as compared with denudation in the ratio of 19 to 1,) will be at least nineteen feet in the same time; and as the total *maximum* thickness of all the stratified rocks of the globe, according to Professor Haughton, is 177,200 feet, the time required to produce this thickness of rock, at the present rate of denudation and deposition, is only 28,000,000 years—a considerable reduction on Lyell, Darwin, and Huxley.

The author then proceeds to the discussion of a series of typical insular faunas and floras, with a view to explain the phenomena they present, and in a number of chapters passes in review the faunas and floras of the Azores and Bermuda, St. Helena and the Sandwich Islands, the British Isles, Borneo and Java, Japan and Formosa, Madagascar, Seychelles, Mauritius, New Zealand, etc.

We have rather undertaken to present to the reader an outline of Mr. Wallace's views than to criticise them. We will only remark that a great deal of the book is mere *speculation*.

We need only add that the Messrs. Harper, in bringing out this very valuable work, have gotten it up in their most attractive style.

S.

Religion and Chemistry. A Restatement of an Old Argument. By JOSIAH PARSONS COOKE. 12mo., pp. 331. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. 1880.

The first edition of Professor Cooke's volume we welcomed from the Scribner press twenty years ago, and we rejoice to see this

re-issue, revised in subordinate points, brought down to the latest data of science, yet identical in spirit, purpose, and form of the original argument. Most persons are prone to hold chemistry to be as destitute of religious interpretation as arithmetic; but under Professor Cooke's treatment the acids and the alkalis, the oxygens and the nitrogens, all primordial nature, speak articulately for God.

The Atheism of the present day, assuming the eternity of the properties and laws of matter, claims that all the phenomena of our cosmos are explained without the need of an antecedent Mind. Professor Cooke shows that it is in the very sum total of these properties and laws that we must recognize Plan; the existence of which can be solved by nothing but antecedent Mind. And this touches upon the peculiar skeptical effect of the exclusive pursuit of natural science upon the scientific intellect. The scientist's task is to make his deductions solely from premises within the bounds of physical nature. All thought of supernatural interposition is to be excluded. Nay, the assumption of supernatural causation has so often led astray from true natural causation that he has often grown impatient of the thought of a supernatural, and even of a God. Now Professor Cooke's view well works a remedy for this impatience. It finds Plan, Design, Mind, in the *primordial endowing of matter with its laws and properties*, and thus secures the existence of primordial Mind and yet leaves the scientist full range for his unobstructed deduction of natural phenomena from natural causations. This by no means excludes the recognition of a Design in the infinitely varied special adaptations in every part of nature, but rather elucidates and confirms them. When we recognize Design in the primordial we will readily see that all the specialties are provided for, and we have a grand view of *the whole* as a sublime Unit. So that when we are sarcastically asked, Is india rubber made for us to rub out pencil marks? Is the quill put into the wing of a goose for us to write with? Are lamp-black and oil purposely endowed in order to make printer's ink? we reply very promptly, Yes. Divine prescience foreknows the minutest needs of free agents, and divine predestination adjusts the properties of nature by a Plan which (as Pope says)

Binding nature fast in fate
Lets free the human will.

In tracing the divine Plan which reigns throughout the primordial system, showing how oxygen and water and carbon and

nitrogen, play their respective parts in the drama of nature, our professor displays great freshness and lucidity of style. Seldom have the fascinating mysteries of nature been laid open more clearly to the popular eye. Albeit you know little or nothing of chemistry, open the pages of his book with an eager mind and you will wonder, when you are done, how much you do know of the various windings by which nature adapts herself to an infinite variety of apparently casual needs. You are delighted to find the slightest minutiae of life fastened by threads of infinite length back to the Primordial Origin.

One spurious reconciliation of science with Scripture by the professor we must, however, reject. He makes science accord with the doctrine of the resurrection of the body by really expunging that resurrection from the Scripture, and substituting a something else which is not a resurrection. Surely the creating and interpolating a new body in place of our mortal and dying body is not a resurrection of the dying body. And really so far from his successfully refuting the doctrine of a true resurrection, we can find in the professor's own beautiful words the most striking scientific illustration of our doctrine. Says he, "Are you aware that the brilliant gem you prize so highly [the diamond] is the same element as these black coals? The diamond is simply crystallized carbon." Now our mortal bodies are as the charcoal, and our resurrection bodies are as the diamonds. A charcoal could be transformed particle for particle by mere rearrangement into a diamond. So a dead human body could be divinely transformed, particle for particle, by mere rearrangement into a glorified body. In the transformation of the charcoal to the diamond, the diamond is the same with the charcoal in substance, it is different in properties and powers. So in the resurrection the glorified body is the same in substance as the dead body; it is different in properties and powers. It is *alter et idem*.

Our professor then goes on to unfold that wonderful "allotropism" so-called; wonderful to even scientific men; by which the same substance or aggregate of particles, undergoes by a change of arrangement a new set of properties. His unfoldings are all to our point. Carbon may be either charcoal, graphite or diamond. Our bodily resurrection similarly is simply an "allotropism." At his transfiguration the body of Jesus underwent an allotropic glorifying change. It was the same in substance in that glorification as it was in its normal state. It was *alter et idem*. The dead body of our Lord underwent a similar allotropic change.

The material frame put on immortality and ascended, a glorified body, to the right hand of God. Nor should a writer who so splendidly portrays the glorious possibilities of matter as our author stumble at even this apotheosis of the God-man's body.

The professor holds the resurrection to be contradiction to the scientific fact that our bodies are changed in substance at least once a year. This year's body is entirely new; similar in form but different in substance from last year's body. But the successional changes in the body do not affect the question so long as we admit the great principle of the indestructibility of matter, and understand that it is the frame which dies that rises again. And here again we find not contradiction but illustration. Just as this year's body takes the last year's body and carries it into a formal continuance, so the resurrection goes to the body that has died, takes up its particles, and carries it into a glorified continuance. There is corporeal continuance in both cases; continuance by identity of form and variation of substance in one case; continuance by identity of substance and variance of properties in the other case. In both cases we have a continuance with a variation; an *idem* and an *alter*. There is, indeed, in the allotropism of the resurrection a long break; an interval in which the charcoal is scattered to the four winds and has to be re-collected when the diamond change is ready. That interval is a violent, and, as we may say, an unnatural one. It was introduced by sin. In his higher unfallen nature man would have passed, unchanged in substance, into his transcendent state. He might have *grown* into the now resurrection state by a gradual "allotropism," and that allotropism, like the allotropism so well described in nature by our author, would have been a change not of corporeal particles, but of corporeal properties. And so at the coming of Christ the living undergo a *change*; not merely by a substitution of new bodies, but by putting upon their "mortal" the properties of "immortality." It will be what our professor well understands as an "allotropic" change.

We have elsewhere (in our note to 1 Cor. xv) put a question which we here repeat; repeat with emphasis, because it has never been answered; and we believe has no answer. When the undressed spirit is to appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, all, even our professor, admit that it is to be invested with a body. From the surrounding universe the elements must collect in corporeal accretion around that spirit. *Why, then, under the power of God, may it not be the elements of that frame which was*

dissolved at death, which shall again form around that same spirit, just as easily as any other elements? Our professor has not in his Lectures unfolded the wonders of Magnetism. Had he done so we should have thence drawn another illustration of the molecular identity of the body at death and the body of the resurrection. Between the soul and its forsaken molecules there may exist a quasi-magnetic attraction. At the sublime instant, every individual particle, whether at the farthest pole, or at the antipodes, feels the irresistible draw and in an eye-twinkle assumes its proper place in the new incorporation. And, in obedience to this final attraction every particle of one body at death may be secured or withdrawn from incorporation with another dying body; so that all resurrection bodies shall be separate and individual. This spiritual magnetic attraction is not more wonderful than gravitation. It is not more wonderful than the various specific cohesions that hold each body in organic unity; not half so wonderful as those powerful, infinitely varied, elective affinities so vividly described in these Lectures.

Our professor excels in quotation of beautifying texts, but not in his application of proof-texts. Thus he says, "the apostle declares that this body is not the body that shall be." Certainly not, we reply, for it now "is" charcoal, and it "shall be diamond." "Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God;" no more than charcoal can adorn the queen's coronet. "This mortal must put on immortality;" but, according to the professor, "this mortal" is to be scattered through the universe and abandoned to eternal dissolution. It is never to have resurrection. The "immortality" is to be worn by a newly created body that never was "mortal." But he omits one text often quoted by deniers of the resurrection: "God giveth it a body as hath pleased him;" namely, it "hath pleased" God to "give it" a diamond "body," instead of a charcoal one.

Historical Studies in Church Building in the Middle Ages. By CHARLES ELIOT NORTON. New York: Harper & Brothers.

In this work Prof. Norton, one of the few accomplished art critics in America, presents a most interesting historical account of three of the chief Italian cathedrals, those of Venice, Siena, and Florence.

In the first chapter he traces the outlines of social and artistic changes which marked the so-called dark ages, the transition period, between classical and Christian civilization. He then gives an account of the civic, social, industrial, and artistic life

of the three republics of Venice, Siena, and Florence, showing how all the elements of civilization in these great mediæval cities found their concrete crystallization in the cathedrals of those cities. The principle of the union of Church and State which Constantine imposed upon the Roman Empire was continued in all the kingdoms, republics, and free cities which arose upon the ruins of the empire in the occident. The Christian Church was one in faith and organization. National life was intense, amid the turbulence of the Middle Ages, to a degree and with a subdivision which seems strange to us in modern times. Italian cities, the spires of whose cathedrals were in sight of each other, and whose bells re-echoed the call to divine service on holy days, cherished as bitter mutual hatred as do the Russians and the Turks at the present time.

Before the *Renaissance*, even more universally than during that period, a native and natural love for art pervaded all mediæval society. Art thus assumed new and original forms. It was a genuine growth, not a forced exotic production. The love of the beautiful, the intense devotion to the Church, which was not entirely free from worldly ambition and passions, and the pride in the individual life of the cities, all found a common meeting ground in the cathedral churches. Here also the distinguished patriotic dead were buried, and thus family ties and affections were bound to the central religious edifices of the cities; and the history of a cathedral in an Italian city is thus almost a history of the city itself, or of the republic of which it is the capital. The historian, the artist, and the cultured traveler in general, all find in these venerable edifices most thrilling records of human achievement in art, religion, and arms, and delight in unending returnings to these monumental shrines.

Professor Norton has selected three cathedral churches which represent fully as well as any others in Italy the mode of erection and growth of these edifices. For it is to be remembered that few if any of the great churches of Italy or Europe have been completed upon the plans of the original designs. The centuries that passed from the laying of their foundation stones to their completion witnessed many variations in the fortunes and weal of the cities, and great changes in the artistic spirit and manner. The mode of variation in architectural style of these three great cathedrals is traced with delicacy and force. The change of design for the covering of the Cathedral of Florence, the bold work of Brunelleschi in building the *Renaissance* dome

over the Gothic vaults, the friendly rivalry among artists for the commission for the gate of the Baptistry, and described with skill and power, giving firm insight into the spirit of the stirring ages when the arts achieved so great and memorable triumphs. The noble pulpit of the Cathedral of Siena, the tower of Giotto in Florence, the mosaics of St. Mark's, also are portrayed with a masterly hand.

Professor Norton does not venture a decisive opinion as to the cause or motive of the irregularities of construction in the dome of the Cathedral of Siena, but inclines, rather too strongly, we think, to the view that they were intended to produce refined æsthetic effect. The irregularities in the Italian churches differ so greatly from the refined variations of time in the Parthenon, that we think they can only be attributed to the imperfect construction, notwithstanding the fact that the results are, in some instances, exceedingly picturesque. The errors in inorganic, unconstructive decoration in the Italian Gothic churches are pointed out with clearness. This and other errors in many of the great structures of mediæval times should receive careful attention from American architects, who are so often inclined to copy or imitate whatever has been done in other ages in art, as if all is alike good, because done in a former age.

As a whole this work by Professor Norton is one of the most valuable original American contributions to critical, artistic literature, the department in literature which is the most meagerly represented in this country. The author would confer a favor upon the public by continuing his investigations and writings in this direction, and giving a similar treatment to the Cathedrals of Milan, Pisa, and Orvieto, and to the churches of Assisi, Padua, Verona, and other Italian cities. c.

The Relations of Science and Religion. The Morse Lecture, 1880, connected with the Union Theological Seminary, New York. By HENRY CALDERWOOD, LL.D., Professor of Moral Philosophy, University of Edinburgh, author of "Relations of Mind and Brain," etc. 12mo, pp. 328. New York: Robert Carter & Brothers. 1881.

In his dissertatory parts, on general principles, Dr. Calderwood is prolix and prosy; but when he comes to facts he discusses them acutely and effectively. He is especially excellent on the subjects of spontaneous generation and the relations of brain to mind. Striking is the fact that the brain of the highest apes approach nearest to man, while their intelligence is inferior to that of bees and ants, which have no brain at all.

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—38

History, Biography, and Topography.

The Antislavery Struggle and Triumph in the Methodist Episcopal Church. By Rev. L. C. MATLACK, D.D. With an Introduction by Rev. D. D. WHEDON, D.D. 12mo, pp. 379. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

Doubtless the Philadelphia Conference, many years ago, when the mild-spoken and courteous young Matlack presented himself for admission, took him to be a malleable sort of a gentleman. It was such a surprise to find this supposed man of wax to be a man of steel, that in disgust at his metal it gave him a walking-paper. He walked, but in due time he returned. And now, in the same spirit of gentle firmness, he presents us the history of the great cause which steeled him to temporizing proposals. A new generation has arisen which needs the rehearsal of that great conflict and the part which our Methodism acted in its drama. Elliott's monumental work, "The Great Secession," is a storehouse of facts and documents well worth preservation; but its magnitude, as well as its termination before the death of slavery, leaves ample demand for a brief, clear, and impartial history of the entire revolution. This Dr. Matlack has well done. There are many who should master this history, and there are few who take up the work who will not feel drawn by its fascination to its *finis*.

A first chapter gives the origin and nature of slavery, and narrates the period of war by Methodism against it in America, which terminates in 1800. Next the period of the Methodist toleration of slavery, not without agitation, down to 1836. Then follow chapters of struggle and awakening, closing with the Southern secession in 1844. Then chapters of antagonism, victory, and final extirpation. In a "glance at other Churches" the verdict over the whole is, "The comparison of records is largely in favor of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Forty years of unqualified condemnation of slavery, alternated by twenty years of indifference or toleration, is succeeded by twenty years of antislavery conflict, which ultimate in extirpation." That memorably adopted word EXTIRPATION, almost prophetically placed upon our record by the fathers at the beginning, unchangeably maintained through the darkest hours of the invading foe, and beaming out in the day of victory, suggests that our testimony, though through a long interval asleep, was never dead.

Though rejected and proscribed by the Church of his choice,

Dr. Matlack did not, like Garrison and his immediate sympathizers, think it necessary to renounce his religion. Among the original Methodist abolition leaders, so far as we can recollect, the only such apostatizer was Leroy Sunderland. Probably the Methodist leaders had such internal consciousness of the reality of their own religion that they were not overthrown by the shortcomings of others. In our reminiscences of the contests in our New York East Conference the names of the leaders on both sides are still mentioned with unchanged veneration. The "Conservatives" were the elder class, and have all departed; such as Nathan Bangs, Heman Bangs, James H. Perry, and John Kennaday, pure and noble men. The antislavery leaders, Floy, Curry, Hatfield, Inskip, Woodruff, are all, save the first, still with us, and the honors of the Church bestowed upon them are proof of her estimate of the victory.

Dr. Matlack has been mistakenly accused of historical mistakes. He does not fail "to note the unwritten law, that the episcopacy must be kept free" from slavery. He states that "law" fully and explicitly, page 155, as source of the great crisis which divided the Church.

The nature of the action of the General Conference of 1844 in regard to the secession seems to us to be correctly stated by Dr. Matlack, namely, as a plan to take effect only in case the South seceded. He does, indeed, state that the motion for appointing the committee proposed that it "devise a constitutional plan for division." But, when he states the "plan" actually devised, he repeatedly states its conditional character. Thus he says: "A plan was presented by them to be adhered to '*in the event of a separation.*'" "All these things were *conditioned* upon the occurrence of a state of things indicated thus: 'Should the Annual Conferences in the slave-holding States find it necessary to unite in a distinct ecclesiastical organization.'" His whole narrative shows that the separation was *understood to be*, and really *was*, the voluntary act of the South alone; though he might have pointed out more explicitly the care then taken to throw the whole responsibility upon the South. It was not "a plan of separation," but a plan for our action after the South had made the separation.

Our historian shows his fairness in the calm and clear manner in which he states the grounds taken by both sides. Our own views as varying from his, in some degree, are stated in an Introduction. But we unhesitatingly recommend the work as reliably accurate in all its statements of facts.

The book has an epic unity. It begins with an original sin and misery, passes through an era of darkness and struggle, and closes with the victory of Right. It abounds in pictures of martyr-like heroism, and even those who do not always see the wisdom of certain parts will indulge a sympathy for men who suffered for conscience' sake and in the cause of everlasting righteousness. The time has arrived, too, when large-minded Southerners, like Wightman, M'Tyeire, and Summers, will recognize the nobleness of this their struggle for freedom. They will see something besides "Pharisaism" in their stand against wrong, and clearly understand that what is called their "hatred of the South" was simply a moral abhorrence of an institution in the South which was the common enemy of both North and South. The night and the nightmare have passed; let us together rejoice in the morning joy.

Reminiscences, by Thomas Carlyle. Edited by JAMES ANTHONY FROUDE. 12mo, pp. 337. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The many faithful readers of our *Quarterly* will, perhaps, on casting a retrospective glance, recognize that if Carlyle has been an idol of ours our worship has been, as Mr. Huxley says, "mostly of the silent sort." Without denying him talent, or even a flicker of genius, and an extended reading, we have never dipped into the pages of his successive publications without a feeling that the *dip* was quite sufficient. We ever received the immediate impression that we were contemplating the elaborate performances of a most determined sensationalist. Life with us seems too brief and too serious to spend its responsible hours in waiting upon the harlequinades of a performer with whom truth or falsehood was indifferent so that his "high and lofty tumbling" should produce an effect.

Carlyle began his literary career with his "Life of Schiller," written in a comparatively pure English style. It was a style which, within the bounds of truth and sense, would have in time won him a reputation. But it brought no racketty notoriety, and he concluded to try his powers as a charlatan. His "Sartor Resartus" was the successful result of that effort. "England," he tells us, has a great population, "mostly fools." Few men had a better right to say that, for very few had more successfully demonstrated it. And so we may say Carlyle has a million of admirers, all, that much, fools; and we are not, like Judge Tourgee, "one of the fools." Finding that charlatanry won a sky-full of

public applause he extended his business in that line. From a riotous defiance of all the laws of propriety, good taste, and good sense, he proceeded to a reckless renunciation of Christianity and contemptuous outrages on Christian thought and feeling. Strange to say, these outrages received responsive applause from Christian quarters. At last, however, we seem to have come to something like a burst of this stupendous bubble. Carlyle has in these "Reminiscences" pictured himself with such repulsive truth that his worshipers finally revolt from the sight of their actual feticch. Not liking the outspoken truth of the book, they fall foul of honest Mr. Froude because he did not cover up the reality.

Our impression during long past years that Carlyle's charlatantry of style and thought was a deliberately adopted affectation we have found confirmed by the following curious confession :

He [Edward Irving] affected the Miltonic or old English Puritan style, and strove visibly to imitate it more and more till almost the end of his career, when indeed it had become his own, and was the language he used in utmost heat of business for expressing his meaning. At this time, and for years afterward, there was something of preconceived intention visible in it, in fact of real affectation, as there could not well help being. To his example also, I suppose, *I owe something of my own poor affectations* in that matter, which are now more or less visible to me, much repented of or not.—P. 61.

Carlyle's utter abandonment of Christianity is thus recorded. And note that in this rejection not only the doctrines, but the philanthropies of Christianity, and the humanities of the age, are alike repudiated:

This year I found that I had conquered all my skepticisms, agonizing doubtings, fearful wrestlings with the foul and vile and soul-murdering Mud-gods of my epoch; had escaped as from a worse than Tartarus, with all its Phlegethons and Stygian quagmires, and was emerging free in spirit into the eternal blue of ether, where, blessed be heaven! I have for the spiritual part ever since lived, looking down upon the welterings of my poor fellow-creatures, in such multitudes and millions still stuck in that fatal element, and have had no concern whatever in their Puseyisms, ritualisms, metaphysical controversies and cobwebberies, and no feeling of my own except honest silent pity for the serious or religious part of them, and occasional indignation, for the poor world's sake, at the frivolous secular and impious part, with their universal suffrages, their Nigger emancipations, sluggard and scoundrel Protection societies, and "unexampled prosperities" for the time being! What my pious joy and gratitude then was, let the pious soul figure. In a fine and veritable sense, I, poor, obscure, without outlook, almost without worldly hope, had become independent of the world. What was death itself, from the world, to what I had come through? I understood well what the old Christian people meant by "*conversion*," by God's infinite mercy to them. I had, in effect, gained an immense victory, and for a number of years had, in spite of nerves and chagrins, a constant inward happiness that was quite royal and supreme, in which all temporal evil was transient and insignificant, and which essentially remains with me still, though far oftener *eclipsed* and lying deeper *down* than then. Once more, thank heaven for its highest gift! I then felt, and still feel, endlessly indebted to Goethe in the business.—Pp. 142, 143.

Edward Irving's opinion of Methodism, echoed with double force from his own lips, is thus given:

I remember an excellent little portraiture of *Methodism* from him on a green knoll where he had loosely sat down. "Not a good religion, sir," said he, confidentially shaking his head in answer to my question; "far too little of spiritual conscience, far too much of temporal appetite; goes hunting and watching after its own emotions, that is, mainly its own *nervous system*; an essentially sensuous religion, depending on the body, not on the soul!" "Fit only for a gross and vulgar-minded people," I perhaps added; "a religion so-called, and the essence of it principally *cowardice* and *hunger*, terror of pain and appetite for pleasure both carried to the infinite;" to which he would sorrowfully assent in a considerable degree. My brother John, lately come home from Germany, said to me next day, "That was a pretty little *Schilderung* (portraiture) he threw off for us, that of the Methodists, wasn't it?"—Pp. 147, 148.

Chalmers pronounced Methodism to be "Christianity in earnest." What the opinions of Irving and Carlyle were, was of more consequence to themselves than to Methodism. But in regard to Irving's views we suspect that Carlyle has mistaken imagination for memory.

Cæsar: a Sketch. By JAMES ANTHONY FROUDE, M.A. 12mo, pp. 436. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

In Mr. Froude's eloquent "sketch" the man on horseback prances into view as a hero, a patriot, a benefactor, and a martyr. Even though a usurper technically, he was the best thing as ruler of which the age was capable. Society was standing on the brink of ruin, and Cæsar's sway established that imperial unity, which, resumed under Augustus, was perpetuated in a long imperial line through that protracted death of society which awakened to a resurrection in the modern system of Christian Europe.

Mr. Froude makes out a strong case; based on the universal unparalleled corruption and ferocity of the age. When, passing the boundary lines of Italy, Roman arms had reduced to subjection that wonderful cluster of ancient civilized races that bordered the Mediterranean, her generals and deputed governors of the conquered provinces made themselves millionaires by the most stupendous robberies, and brought to Rome the rule of venality. Statesmen, courts, even the Senate itself was purchasable. The prisoners of war were transformed to slaves, and, planted in Italy, drove out the yeomanry and covered the soil with a servile population. The populace of Rome itself, the democratic voting power, was a lazy and profligate mass, supported by largesses pillaged from the provinces, and ready to enlist for pay as the retainers of the leading demagogues. The demagogues themselves were generally ready to carry their ends either by bribery

or bloodshed as the exigency demanded. Of course there was a residue of honest and honorable householders, the *boni* to whom Cicero refers as his reliance for the safety and prosperity of Rome; but, from their very position and temper, this residue was timid and unable to cope with the unscrupulous and violent political gamblers. Even Mr. Trollope, in his "Cicero," soon to be noticed, admits that Cæsar and not Cicero clearly saw the inability of the existing system to continue.

Cæsar, through the earlier half of his life, was an accomplished civilian, and the becoming a soldier seems to have been a clear afterthought. He attained the consulship, the chief magistracy, and, with a practical and patriotic statesmanship, he passed a number of laws, celebrated as the *Julia Leges*, that struck effectively at the evils of the times. The year after his consulship he took to the camp, and occupied ten heroic years in bringing to subjection and order the northern tribal nations who had repeatedly menaced Rome with ruin. On his return he did his best to compromise with the Senate and Pompey. His persistent offers of peace, sustained by the efforts of Cicero, were persistently rejected by Pompey. Both Froude and Trollope agree that Pompey was an incompetent man, raised by a series of accidents to a position above his level. When Cæsar came across the Rubicon Pompey seemed paralyzed, and yet would accept no terms. He neither allowed peace nor efficiently prepared for war. The agonized Cicero looked on in dismay, seeing that Pompey had the right side but was securing its overthrow. The battle of Pharsalia was memorable, not as the greatest contest of the war, but as the field where a large number of the senatorial oligarchy were slain. That battle swept off the aristocracy of Rome very much as the Wars of the Roses swept the old Norman nobility of England, and as the French Revolution abolished the feudalism of France.

Cæsar then assumed authority with the exercise of the most enlightened statesmanship. Unlike the Mariuses and Syllas of former unforgotten days, he prosecuted no massacres or proscriptions. He walked the streets without arms or guards. So great had been his clemency, especially to Marcus Marcellus, that Cicero, in open Senate, declared to Cæsar that if any assault was made upon him the whole Senate would rush to his defense. Cæsar was preparing to start in a few days for the field to fight for the unity of the empire, when the converging dagger-points of thirty senatorial conspirators closed a life which, no doubt, would have been spent for the good of Rome.

Bad as "the man on horseback" intrinsically is, he may be the only, and therefore the justifiable, remedy for an anarchical age. Had Alexander the Great lived to accomplish his great plans for general improvement, despotic as he was, he would have been a benefactor of the race, advancing the progress of human civilization by several rapid degrees. Charlemagne's sword, reducing the barbarians of central Europe to peace, laid the foundations for the unity of Christendom. For us, of these United States, the only way of escaping the imperial rider is not by school-boy declamations against his character, but by cultivating a general intelligence, a pure political morality, and a universal unsectional peace, brotherhood, and unity. Sectional strife, especially over our Presidential elections, will infallibly call out the American Cæsar.

The Life of Cicero. By ANTHONY TROLLOPE. In two volumes. Small 12mo., pp. 347, 346. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Mr. Trollope's biography of the great orator is a labor of love. He is fully impressed with the wonderful blend of majesty and beauty in the character of his hero, and defends him in detail, and some will say even with some special pleading, against detractors.

In judging of Cicero in comparison with the other Romans of his day very much the same error occurs as is often committed in judging the Christian in comparison with the worldling; the standard is imperceptibly changed, and the worse is surreptitiously made the better man. The worldling is judged by the average worldly standard and the Christian by the ideal of Christianity. Hence in one positive immoralities are held as becoming, and the slightest foibles and short-comings are criminalities in the other. Cicero was historically the purest public man of his day; and hence he is tried by a standard of purity which would be absurd as a test of Cæsar or even Cato or Brutus. He wrote on morals, and hence he is required to be his own moral philosophy jumped incarnate out of its cover. His writings have been read by even modern thinkers with a malign hypercriticism; and, as Mr. Trollope well shows, have been subjected to flagrant misconstructions—specially so by Mr. Froude—to convict him of crime. As a whole, Mr. Trollope successfully shows that after correcting all calumnious charges and deducting for all short-comings and foibles, we have a most magnificent remainder, one of the noblest characters of antiquity, one of the truest pre-Christian Christians of the classic ages.

In estimating the character of Cicero what we have said in our notice of Froude's *Cæsar* comes to the front. The *boni* were the remnant of substantial citizens, uncorrupted by the incoming flood of depravity after Rome's conquest of Asia. For public safety and prosperity they looked to the restoration of private honesty and public patriotism. To them the old historic Senate was the very image of eternity, their sole safety amid vicissitudes. They dreaded all revolution, whether from incendiaries, like Catiline, or humane statesmanly despots, like Cæsar. As adherents of the Senate they have been called the aristocracy, but they might as well be called the democracy, for that name would be dishonored by applying it to the salable voting rabble of Rome, even more than when labeled upon the voting slums of New York. Of this class, and relying on it for support, the type and usually the head was Cicero.

The difficulty was that in these unscrupulous times the *boni* were necessarily timid and unpractical. The very problem before them was to "bell the cat," nay, to tame the tiger. Their very quietude of character victimized them. And it was impossible, amid the turbulent leaders of the day, to hold a supreme position as Cicero aspired, without an expert readiness to handle an army. He was an elegant porcelain vase rolling amid a variety of tumbling iron kettles, obliged to deflect his course or meet a collision and suffer a crash. He might, like Atticus, lead a life of quiet integrity, and let the world accomplish its own ruin according to programme; he might, like Hortensius, take first place in the first rank of advocates; he might, like Horace, turn to elegant literature; but if he must be a ruling statesman without being military commander, he *must* now and then veer his course, flatter a fool, or defend a knave. That far did Cicero temporize and trim. So far did he sink below the pure ideal. Very well; make subtraction, and see what a magnificent treasure of character remains. We sympathize with Mr. Trollope entirely in enjoying and magnifying this treasure; and we, in fact, object to our hero's being so perpetually put upon his defense.

In all the annals of forensic history was there ever a greater triumph, measured by *morale*, courage, and ability, than Cicero's prosecution of Verres? In boldly calling Verres to account he towered above the political level of his day. He had a bribed Senate for a court, Hortensius for an opposing advocate, and a most powerful corruptionist for a defendant. Yet so splendid

and heroic was his bullyism, that by the notoriety which his ability could give to the venality of the court before the Roman people, he cowed the Senate into rectitude, silenced the eloquent Hortensius, and drove the audacious Verres out of court. The speeches he prepared were thence not delivered but published; and they remain on record to-day, both as monuments of masterly ability, and as historic exhibition of the stupendous iniquities which the average Roman proconsul could commit in the province subjected to his arbitrary rule.

Why is it that that wonderful piece of pre-Christian Christianity, the "*Somnium Scipionis*," is so little brought out by scholars at the present day? Years ago we wrote a translation of it and published it in a Western periodical, but irrecoverably lost it. It was, doubtless, no great loss, since being done without aids save from the mere text, it was probably very imperfect. But why is it not edited and published as part of the curriculum? We would open the pages of our *Quarterly* to a well-prepared and annotated translation.

First Decade of the Woman's Foreign Missionary Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church: with Sketches of its Missionaries. By MARY SPARKES WHEELER. With an Introduction by Bishop J. F. HURST, D.D. 12mo, pp. 346. New York: Phillips & Hunt; Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

Mrs. Wheeler has presented us a gem of a book. The first decade of this Society is full of interest in itself and full of promise of a rich future. This Society, first proposed by a returned lady missionary, was started in 1869, amid inauspicious omens, with feeble beginnings and tremulous faith. It was grounded on the fact that in the East women are only accessible to women, and that consequently there must be a corps of women missionaries, with the further inference that women were the most proper agents to send them. Incorporation with the general Missionary Society was positively, persistently, and, we think, wisely declined, while harmony with it was earnestly desired. The Society aspired to and obtained the authorization of the General Conference. Its first missionary was appointed before the funds were raised, and, rather than fail of means for her support, it was bravely proposed by the ladies that they would walk the streets of Boston in calico to save the funds.

Mrs. Wheeler gives the roll and biographical sketches of female missionaries already sent to Asia by her Society. They are elect ladies. The deep experiences, alike yet varying, of each

and all, wonderfully evince that the whole is a divine movement, a sweet awakening from the blessed Spirit. That in each secret heart an inspiration should be moving, calling for a life consecration to the mission work, simultaneously with each other, and with the spirit that organized the work, seems to be a divinely concerted plan. The young mind may indeed be stimulated by a certain romance of missionary life; but that glamour soon disappears, either when the time of action arrives, or when the repulsive scenes of heathen life, and the weary details of mission duty, are really reached. Not so with these elect. Their hearts are there; the sight of dying heathenism deepens their sympathy, and "love esteems no office mean." "Don't go home," said Miss Thoburn to her visiting friend Mrs. Chandler, of Baltimore, "to excite sympathy for me. I am happy in my work. I am busy here, and *we all feel so*. Our work lies here, and when sickness comes, and we turn our faces homeward, *we leave our hearts behind*." Nearing the coast of Asia, Miss Sigourney Trask writes: "The actual work of my life is soon to begin. I am *so* glad it is at hand. I do believe every feeling, faculty, and possibility of my nature is consecrated a living—I do not like to say sacrifice—a living energy to accomplish the mission God has given me among the Chinese." 'Bound in spirit,' said Paul; under bonds of the Spirit I go. This bondage is my liberty, the bonds are my joy and strength. I am grateful, but a *life*, not words, must show the gratitude that makes my spirit sing." It was no ordinary spirit that could so "sing," and no ordinary pen that could so record the spirit's song. And so says the well-remembered daughter of David Dallas Lore: "My heart has been enlarged since reaching India. I have loved people always, ever so many, but now it seems as if *I truly love souls*." Surely these elect ladies are priceless gems which America gives to Asia. Mrs. Wheeler has nobly done her work as historiographer of the first decade of her beloved Society. May she live to record another more triumphant decade!

The Story of the United States Navy. For Boys. By BENSON J. LOSSING, LL.D. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

This work was prepared at the suggestion of Captain S. B. Luce, of the U. S. N., the commander of the training ship "Minnesota." The other training ships in the service are the "Constellation," "Saratoga," "Portsmouth," and "St. Louis." Last year there

were 1,152 boys under instruction, ranging from thirteen to eighteen years of age. The instruction is intended to prepare boys for sailors in the navy, and elevate the standard of naval life. The closing chapter of the book contains a full account of the system of training schools in Great Britain and this country. The book has been prepared with special reference to the class of boys entering the training ships. It is admirably adapted to persons of the required age, and an excellent book to place in the hands of boys who are tempted to read blood-and-thunder stories published in our flash papers and dime novels. Any thing which will wean our youth from these flesh-pots should be hailed by every parent.

The triumphs of American seamanship during the Revolutionary struggle over the great maritime power of Europe are narrated with thrilling interest. The colonial navy, like the patriot army, was extemporized. During the war for independence, or between 1775 and 1783, the United States had thirty-six vessels of war afloat, of which number only two survived the struggle. The glorious achievements of John Paul Jones and others furnish a brilliant page in our early history. Six hundred and fifty prizes, it is said, were taken into port besides those ransomed and destroyed. The pressure of the English commercial class had a powerful influence in bringing about the acknowledgment of our independence. The war of 1812, for the "freedom of the seas," was also signalized by grand naval achievements, which are described most graphically. The words of the dying officer, "Don't give up the ship!" which became the battle-cry of the young navy, cannot fail to thrill our American youth with patriotic aspirations. While the achievements of the War for the Union are fresh in the minds of the sires, they have become history to the sons. The great naval engagements are vividly pictured. We could wish that more books of this class were placed within the reach of our youth, so as to wean them from the Satanic literature that heroizes thieves and pirates.

The Life of George the Fourth: including his Letters and Opinions, with a View of the Men, Manners, and Politics of his Reign. By PERCY FITZGERALD, M.A., F.S.A. Illustrated. Large 12mo, pp. 921. New York: Harper & Brothers.

We think it was the first Alexander of Russia who said, "God must be merciful to kings, for they have great temptations." And besides, they are judged also by human history, which, growingly democratic, is growingly severe. Mr. Fitzgerald's

book is a sharp admonitory to the young princes of England how their corpses may be given over to biographic dissection, and hence how important it is to preserve a proper symmetry of character. But the Harpers' critic, we think, is seduced by the brilliancy of an antithesis to historic exaggeration when he tells us that George the Fourth was not only "the first gentleman," but also "the first rascal," in Europe. He was simply a dissolute gentleman about town, who continued, in spite of a ruinous dissipation, running through the whole round of drinking, whoring, gambling, racing, etc., to still maintain a social courtesy in life. He was kindly in feeling, honorable except when pushed by a hard exigency into a lie or a fraud, constant in heart, though not in conduct, to the victim of a morganatic marriage. He varied with his father, and our historian divides the blame equally between the two. He was married by State machinery to a disgusting German woman of dubious chastity, and sought for a divorce, to which, but for his own infidelities, he was probably quite justly entitled. We think there are hundreds, and, we fear, thousands, of as great rascals in New York city to-day. As a sovereign, George meant to be just, ruling as a constitutional king over his own realm, and cultivating justice and peace toward foreign nations. His vices were those of an impulsive young man, unchecked by authority, surrounded by seductions, with ample means of sensual gratification, with all his slightest aberrations conspicuous to the public gaze and exposed to the glaring light of history. He had graceful manners, a prompt wit, a good share of talent, a taste for art, an enthusiasm for building, and not one tendency to becoming a tyrant or a disturber of the peace of Europe. Will historians and critics allow us to pity while we condemn? What might, alas, have become of ourself had we been born a prince! Happily we are only an editor, and thereby entitled to the quasi-royal *we*.

Kemper County Vindicated, and a Peep at Radical Rule in Mississippi. By JAMES D. LYNCH, author of poems, "Robert E. Lee; or, Nerves in the South," "The Ku-klux Tribunal," etc. 12mo, pp. 416. New York: E. J. Hale & Son. 1879.

In a late *Quarterly* we referred to the Chisholm murder as a political crime, and a Mississippi friend sent us this book in disproof that it was either a crime or a political act. The book, as the very title shows, is written in an intensely partisan style. It opens with statements which we think historically untrue. Its style is highly rhetorical, yet it is written with a graceful ease.

It appears from a New York press heretofore unknown to us, neatly and correctly printed on poor material, disfigured with caricature cuts, and we have never seen it heretofore noticed by any of our periodicals. Our casual allusion to this manslaughter was, of course, under assumption of its notorious truth, without any preceding critical or judicial investigation. We have neither the materials nor time for such an investigation. We, however, in fairness to Kemper County, record the fact that the killing of Chisholm is professedly proved to have been the destruction of a villain in a non-political quarrel.

Politics, Law, and General Morals.

Our Brother in Black: His Freedom and his Future. By ATTIOUS HAYGOOD, D.D., President of Emory College, Oxford, Georgia. 12mo, pp. 252. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

The President of Emory College has given us what may perhaps be called an epochal book. At least it serves to mark, and aids to initiate, the transition to a better understanding between the two sections and the two parties in a dispute of a century in length. Will the terrible wound given to our free republic by the introduction of slavery at last be healed? It will be accomplished by the spirit and style of discussion, commenced so far as the South is concerned, by this book.

Dr. Haygood is, we are glad to say, a true Southerner. It is a bold, frank, free-spoken, yet candid and liberal Southerner whom we wish to hear, and he now, almost for the first time, speaks. He can see that even his beloved South can err, and he often gives a sharp retaliatory hit at the North. But we must tell him that he has not rebuked the North half as sharply as our "Quarterly" has done through all these past years. More fully than he have we chided our Northern "Pharisaism." We have denied repeatedly that emancipation took place as a great moral victory. We have shown how remarkably the warmth of our antagonism, beginning from Boston and ending in Charleston, coincided with latitudes and the degrees of the thermometer. The human nature of the North and the South, overlooking surface differences, is the same. There is a sort of truth in the maxim, "One man is as good as another, and a little better;" and we may add conversely, one man is as bad as another, and a little worse. When, therefore, Dr. H. lays the *flagellum* sharply on

the faults and vices of the North, with a serenely benevolent motive, we say, again and again, "Lay on, Macduff!" If you can whip us out of our wickednesses we will not even object to your "Pharisaism."

In his first four chapters Dr. H. surveys the negro population. It is more than six millions, is genial, lax, yet inclined to industry and susceptible of elevation. "It is here to stay," and cannot, as a whole, be colonized; nay, there are signs of a providence in their location as a great solution of the problem. In a few chapters more he contemplates the facts of their emancipation and enfranchisement. He claims that there is a "time element" fairly required for the South to come fully right, reminding us how recently the North had her anti-abolition riots and her demolition of negro schools. He passes then in his later chapters to the happy modes of solution of the great problem in the grand work of schools and Churches now going on, and hopes that the elevation of the American African will overflow to the regeneration of African African.

There are some points on which we take friendly issue with our author. We cheerfully agree with him that as slavery is dead we need not continue to fight over its grave or over its ghost. Our "Quarterly" said immediately at the close of the war, "Now let us, North and South, shake hands over the grave of buried slavery, and unite in elevating the freedman to manhood." But Dr. H. seems to us to impose too complete a silence upon us. So great an event as the existence and downfall of American slavery must be historically and morally discussed. Napoleon is "dead;" but whole libraries of history are pouring forth upon his life and character. Especially at the present time a discussion has arisen as to the part taken by the evangelical Churches in the abolition of slavery. Infidelity is reiterating the taunt that the Churches were silent against a great sin, and they are now rendering answer. These injunctions to silence we defied when slavery was powerful with Lynch Law in her hands; we are not likely to obey them now when that dark power has become one of the phantasms of history. Nor can we be silent when we behold the spirit of slavery still alive and acting now, North or South. But so far as concerns calling it up as a reproach upon men who are like Dr. H. seeking the time solution of the problem of humanity, we rejoice to impose silence upon our lip and pen. We give them our hearty right hand, and our purpose is to seek the best present and future good for all.

We must now touch a still more delicate point, and we assure all concerned we touch it not to reproach, but to show where the fault lies, and has lain in the past, in order to aid in bringing matters right. On page 95 Dr. H. maintains that the balance of suspicions and bad tempers between North and South has been about even. "Neither side has shown any great superiority of temper or penetration." Now we call Dr. Haygood's attention, for instance, to the behavior since the war of our two Methodisms. Every offer of conciliation, fraternity, reunion, has come from the North, repeatedly repelled by the South. Immediately at the close of the war the two New York Conferences sent their greetings to the Southern General Conference and were cavalierly treated. Our Bishops called a fraternal council with the Southern Bishops and were cavalierly treated. Bishop Janes and Dr. Harris went as delegates to the Southern General Conference and were cavalierly treated. And whenever a luckless Northerner spoke of "reunion," he was rapped over the knuckles and told that talk about "reunion" did not "tend to fraternity." Slowly and reluctantly the Southern General Conference consented to fraternity. All the honor of Christian fraternal advances seems to rest with the North. Again, the North sent her teachers and preachers south to do the work which scarce a man, before Dr. Haygood, has ever acknowledged to be a great philanthropic work. And this coldness was not the *result* of the fanatical overdo on the part of our missionary teachers, as Dr. H. desires to believe; it was antecedent. Unanimously did our brethren of the Church South, while doing nothing themselves, proclaim, through their press, that nothing should be done by others. Even the lamented Duncan, we think it was, as editor of the "Richmond Advocate," ridiculed the northern "school-marms," shamefully charged them with "ignorance," and declared that the North did not "understand the negro," and must have nothing to do with his education.

And turning to secular life we might show how in the North, since the war, while a Southerner is always received with unqualified cordiality, the South, and the Southern press, assumes, down to the latest dates, to prescribe on what conditions a Northerner may immigrate south; and under all the circumlocutions in which these conditions are phrased, is concealed the one absolute condition that he must vote the democratic ticket, or at least be not an active republican, and so "make trouble."

We might recall the fact that in the war the North was at first

beaten just because, while the South was arming, the North not expecting, was entirely unprepared for war. We might from before the war rehearse the well-known fact that the writer of these lines, or any other antislavery man, even in time of peace, could not have safely stood in the editorial office of Dr. Summers. Nay, to go back to the origin, when the South made up her mind to slavery she made up her mind to danger, suspicion, secession, and ultimate convulsion. She was her own nihilist; she placed the bomb and the volcano beneath her own feet. That state of "suspicion" she is now, we believe, fast recovering; and while we fully allow for a "time element," we believe that the briefer the "time" the earlier the return to peace and prosperity.

As offset to all these points Dr. H. will doubtless oppose the oppressions suffered by the South under "the carpet-baggers." "Carpet-bag government" in all our converse and correspondence with Southern friends we find to be the sore spot on the sensorium of memory. Now we have no difficulty in assuring them that the good people of the North, including the great body of honorable republicans, never intended any oppression by government agents, or any imposition of restrictions not needed for the safe reconstruction of our Republic in the South. For any tyranny proper we have no apology to offer. For any repressive force, not necessary to secure peace and insure loyalty, we have no approval. And now, having affirmed thus much, we must ask Dr. H. and others to put themselves into a fair historic position and spirit, and answer, conscientiously, a question or two. Was there ever in all the history of nations so great a rebellion—as our government had a legal right to view the secession—put down with so terrible an expenditure of blood and treasure, and yet finally closed up with so little penal bloodshed or infliction of any kind? Did ever in all history a government so soon remove all disabilities, and even put the rebel leaders in the councils of the nation? Did ever a great rebel section be put by the conquerors so soon into a possibility of actually themselves attaining control of the government itself? A true answer to these questions would, we humbly think, compel Dr. H. to say that so far from behaving badly, the magnanimity of the North is without a historical parallel.

In his bold and truthful sermon, "The New South," Dr. Haygood declares, if we rightly recollect, (we have not the copy at hand,) that the present condition of the South is in every material respect better than it was before the war. That is, both the

war and the carpet-bag did not keep the South as wretched as it was under the old oligarchy. That is, the carpet-baggers were not as repressive a tyranny as the slave-holders. But it was the South that inflicted the slave-power, the North the carpet-bag; and so the North has not been as oppressive upon the South—war, carpet-bag, and all—as the South has been upon herself.

On page 82 Dr. Haygood anticipates a union of the Southern black and white voters, and warns the North of some dread damage from the combination. It is a strangely Bourbon paragraph. For, *first*, such union would produce nothing more than we have already had, a “solid South.” Whether that solidity came from crushing, cheating, or absorbing the colored voter, or all together, it would not increase the Southern electoral vote, and very little the Congressional representation. But, *second*, Dr. Haygood’s mind in the passage seems to contemplate a permanent hostile sectionalism. It is a South against a North, in which the South will do some unknown damage to the North, at which the North had better tremble. We do not turn pale thereat. Yet we prefer a cessation of that execrable antithesis. We prefer to repeat the maxim, which we have twice or thrice propounded, and which we would like to stereotype into a proverb, and to which we invite the concurrence of Dr. Haygood and all other patriotic Southerners, that *there shall be no more antagonism, political or otherwise, between North and South than now exists between East and West.*

According to the best of our observation the good men of the South have recovered from the demoralizations of the war, and are awake and bravely active in the cause of temperance, education, law, and order. We have noted the movements in various Legislatures against intemperance and the carrying concealed weapons with pleasure. Statistics seem to show a most alarming amount of homicide in that section, which we anticipate will soon be greatly diminished. What is wanted is an increase of sympathy and union between the good men of North and South in behalf of social and national improvement. Especially is this co-operation needed in raising our politics to a higher moral plane. We need, as Dr. Haygood has well proclaimed, “to carry our religion into our politics,” and to render the political morals of all parties purer and less fiercely partisan. We need to be Christian and conscientious in caucus and at the polls. We need, as it is sometimes said here in the North, to “vote as we pray.” And this union is coming. North and South are fusing and blending, in railroad communications, in interchange of immense

annual visitations southward in winter and northward in summer, in business relations, and in Christian fraternity. And our experience is that when Southerners and Northerners cordially meet they see good reason to respect and love each other. Our worst antagonisms come from the sectional politicians; and the politicians are sectional because they expect to gain success by creating, appealing to, and riding, the local prejudice and passion. Let our good men spoil their game by scouting such passions and driving such prejudices out of the popular mind.

Dr. Haygood has nobly commenced this work in a style that smacks of independence and originality. He is in the prime of strength and manhood, and we augur that a noble future lies before him. It is a symbol of union that his book is issued from the publishing houses of both Northern and Southern Methodism. We wish we could order a million copies for each section.

Literature and Fiction.

Harper's Cyclopædia of British and American Poetry. Edited by EPES SARGENT. 8vo, pp. 958. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Cyclopædia of Poetry. Second Series. Embracing Poems Descriptive of the Scenes, Incidents, Persons, and Places of the Bible. Also Indexes to Foster's Cyclopædias. By REV. ELON FOSTER, D.D. 8vo, pp. 748. New York: Thomas Y. Crowell & Co. 1881.

There must be a great demand for English Anthologies which has to be met with such magnificent supplies as these two tall and corpulent octavos.

It takes nearly thirty octavo pages to furnish the index of Mr. Sargent's work, embracing authors' names and titles of pieces. What strikes us at a glance is the fact that while rich selections are made from the greatest masters of song, many of the brief master strokes here presented are from hands that never furnished but a performance or two. Mr. Sargent has arrested the fugitives and fixed them in no "durance vile." Of this he is aware, and he notes in his Preface how poets have multiplied during the present century. Poets generate poets, attuning the minds of their readers into a productive power. And the growing mass of poetry swells, like a coral continent, without limits.

Dr. Foster's volume complements the work of Mr. Sargent. While the latter ranges through the varied world of secular poetic literature, not indeed excluding the sacred, the former limits himself to the poetry inspired by the scenes, events, and

characters of the Bible. Our holy book is one great poem; for the ideality of religion is at once truth and poetry. The volume consists of selections from not only the "Sacred Melodies" of Byron and Moore, who have furnished some of the finest strains in this department, but from Milman, Montgomery, Browning, Longfellow; and, nearer home, specimens not unworthy of such a place, by George Lansing Taylor, Dwight Williams, and others. About one third of the volume consists of indexes to the compiler's Cyclopædias of prose and poetic selections, enabling the possessor to quickly put his finger upon any desired topic, passage, or author's name.

Index to Harper's New Monthly Magazine. Alphabetical, Analytical, and Classified. Vols. 1 to 60 inclusive, from June, 1850, to June, 1880. Compiled by CHARLES A. DUFFEE. 8vo, pp. 721. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Sixty volumes and thirty years of existence are themselves indices of eminent success for a magazine. The pecuniary results are not stated, but of their rich magnitude there is of course no doubt. An examination of the contents reveals the fact that the success has been honorably won by furnishing a vast volume of literature, of a *solid* as well as an attractive character, instructive to the scholar and the statesman, while gaining the attention of the million. By a hasty count we find of fiction, sixteen index pages; of poetry, sixteen pages; of history of current events and general history, fifty-five pages; of science, thirty-four pages. While we have sometimes wished that the funny chapter at the end were a little chastened, we must say that this big octavo indices a periodical without a rival in its class.

Political Eloquence in Greece. Demosthenes: With Extracts from his Orations, and a Critical Discussion of the "Trial on the Crown." By L. BRÉDIF, former Member of the Superior Normal School of France, Doctor in the Faculty of Letters at Toulouse, Rector of the Chamberg Academy, University of France, etc. Translated by M. J. MACMAHON, A.M. 8vo, pp. 610. Chicago: S. C. Griggs & Co. 1881. Price \$3.

We have never read a monograph on ancient politics with more zest than the present volume. Whatever high classical criticism may decide as to the profound accuracy of the author's views there is no doubt of his ability to give a fresh life to the scenes and men of the past. This arises from his keen insight into the history with a most modern pair of eyes, and a style of epigram and point, and pictorial vividness. The work is within the author's specialty as professor and devoted student of Demosthenes and Athenian politics for more than twenty years.

Foreign Theological Publications.

Gebhardt, Oscar v., und Adolf Harnack, *Evangeliorum Codex Graecus purpureus Rossanensis*. Litteris argenteis sexto ut videtur saeculo scriptus picturisque ornatus. Seine Entdeckung, sein wissenschaftlicher und künstlerischer Werth. Mit two facsim. Schrifttafeln (in Silberdr.) und (17) lith. Umrisszeichnungen. Leipzig: Giesecke & Devrient. 1880.

This codex was accidentally discovered last year by the above-named gentlemen while traveling in Italy for purposes of study. They had learned from Lagarde's edition of "Hippolytus" that it was reported in the sixteenth century that manuscripts of Hippolytus, Cyrillus of Jerusalem, and Dionysius Alexandrinus were preserved in S. Maria de lo Patire, an old cloister in or near Rossano, in Calabria.

They accordingly visited Rossano, eager to find and examine the said manuscripts for themselves, but only to be disappointed, neither cloister nor any trace thereof any longer remaining. They were then conducted to the residence of the Archbishop of Rossano, where, upon further inquiry, they were shown an old work, which, it is said, neither the archbishop nor any one of his forty-eight learned subordinates could read, not even determine so much as the language in which it was written. Messrs. Gebhardt and Harnack soon deciphered it to be an old codex containing the Gospel of Matthew complete, and all of Mark, excepting the last verses of the last chapter, (xvi, 14, seq.) It is supposed to have contained originally all four Gospels. It is written in beautiful silvered uncial characters, on fine purple-colored parchment, and is the only Greek codex of the Gospels hitherto known on such parchment, excepting the very fragmentary Codex N, to which it is closely related. In point of text it is preceded by Codex Vaticanus and Codex Sinaiticus, and ranks with AAI, but is more like Cod. D and *Itala*.

It consists of one hundred and eighty-eight leaves, 26 by 30.7 centimeters. The text is in double columns of twenty lines each. The words are written without accents, and are not separated. On the margin are distinctly marked the Canons of Eusebius. On eight of the leaves are finely painted representations of scenes, mostly taken from the history of the sufferings of Christ, in style resembling those of the Vienna Genesis Codex, and representing the transition period from ancient classical painting to that of Byzantine painting.

The present publication is simply a preliminary report upon this interesting discovery. The editors hope to give later a

complete description of the nature and condition of the manuscript and of the painting. Two plates, in silver type, on purple ground, accompany the work and present to the eye exact specimens of the text. It is also furnished with seventeen lithographed sketches of the miniatures. Through these, and the plates, one gets a very good impression of the appearance and age of the manuscript, and also of the character and style of the painting.

Paleographically considered, this codex may almost certainly be assigned to the sixth century, and although it may not be, for purposes of text criticism, of pre-eminent value, it is certainly a very important contribution to the history of Christian painting.

Miscellaneous.

Sermons to Students and Thoughtful Persons. By LLEWELYN D. BEVAN, LL.B., D.D. 12mo, pp. 209. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. 1881.

Master Missionaries. Chapters in Pioneer Effort throughout the World. By ALEXANDER HAY JAFF, LL.D. 12mo, pp. 398. New York: Robert Carter & Brothers. 1881.

Missionary Concerts for the Sunday-school. A Collection of Declamations, Select Readings, and Dialogues. Compiled by Rev. W. T. SMITH. 16mo, pp. 267. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. New York: Phillips & Hunt. 1881.

The Palace Beautiful; or, Sermons to Children. By WILLIAM WILBERFORCE NEWTON. 16mo, pp. 348. New York: Robert Carter & Brothers. 1881.

A Key to the Apocalypse; or, Revelation of Jesus Christ to St. John in the Isle of Patmos. By Rev. ALFRED BRUNSON, A.M., D.D. 16mo, pp. 215. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. New York: Phillips & Hunt. 1881.

Leaders of Men. A Book of Biographies specially written for Youth. By H. A. PAGE. 12mo, pp. 398. New York: Robert Carter & Brothers. 1881.

Wise Words and Loving Deeds. A Book of Biographies for Girls. By E. CONDER GRAY. 16mo, pp. 415. New York: Robert Carter & Brothers. 1881.

Sir William Herschel; His Life and Works. By EDWARD S. HOLDEN. 12mo, pp. 238. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. 1881.

English Map of Letters. Edited by JOHN MORLEY: Wordsworth. By F. W. H. MYERS. 12mo, pp. 182. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Anecdotes of Public Men. By JOHN W. FORNEY. Vol. II. 12mo, pp. 437. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Memoirs of Prince Metternich. 1778-1815. Edited by PRINCE RICHARD METTERNICH. The Papers classified and arranged by M. A. de Klinkomström. Translated by Mrs. ALEXANDER NAPIER. 12mo. Vol. I, pp. 728. Vol. II, 1815-1829, pp. 942. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Chautauqua Library of English History and Literature. Vol. II. *The Period of the Early Plantagenets.* 12mo, pp. 124. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

The Story of Helen Troy. By the Author of "Golden Rod," "An Idyl of Mt. Desert." 16mo, pp. 202. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Boys and Girls Playing, and Other Addresses to Children. By the Right Rev. JOHN CHARLES RYLE, D.D. 16mo, pp. 193. New York: Robert Carter & Brothers. 1881.

Who was Paul Grayson? By JOHN HABBERTON. Illustrated. Square 16mo, pp. 169. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The Lyceum Library, No. 1. The Two Kings; The White Rose of England; Five Stages in the Life of a Great Man; A Queen Who was Not a Queen. Paper cover. 8vo, pp. 44. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

Proceedings of the New England Methodist Historical Society at the First Annual Meeting, January 17, 1881. Paper. 8vo., pp. 24. Boston: Society's Rooms, 36 Bromfield-street. 1881.

Sixty-fourth Annual Report of the American Colonization Society. With the Minutes of the Annual Meeting and of the Board of Directors. January 18, 19, 1881. Paper. 8vo, pp. 28. Washington: Colonization Building, 450 Pennsylvania Avenue.

The Hour for Africa. An Address Delivered before the American Colonization Society. By JOHN L. WITHEROW, D.D. Paper. Pp. 12. Washington: Colonization Building. 1881.

Ingersollism Brought Face to Face with Christianity. Two Sermons Preached by J. H. CALDWELL, D.D. Paper. Pp. 47. Wilmington, Del.: The James & Webb Printing and Stationery Co. 1881.

The Opening of a World. Paper. Pp. 16. Washington: Thomas M'Gill & Co. 1881.

The Mountain Movers; Or, A Criticism of So-called Modern Miracles in Answer to the Prayer of Faith. By STEPHEN H. TYNG, Jun., D.D. Paper. 16mo, pp. 32. New York: The People's Pulpit Publishing Co. 1880.

Baptism. By J. DITZLER, D.D. 12mo, pp. 384. Louisville, Ky.: John P. Morton & Co. 1880.

Affinity no Bar to Marriage. By JOHN B. GALE. Paper. 8vo, pp. 77. Troy, N. Y.: William H. Young. 1881.

FRANKLIN SQUARE LIBRARY: *The Life of George the Fourth*; Including His Letters and Opinions, with a View of the Men, Manners, and Politics of his Reign. By PERCY FITZGERALD, M.A., F.S.A. In Two Parts. Part II, pp. 99.—*Memoirs of Prince Metternich.* Edited by PRINCE RICHARD METTERNICH. In Four Parts. Part II, 1773-1815, pp. 92. Part III, 1815-1829, pp. 101. Part IV, 1815-1829, pp. 94.—*From Exile.* By JAMES PAYN. Pp. 69.—*Beside the River.* By Katharine S. Macquoid. Pp. 68.—*The Miller's Daughter.* By ANNE BEALE. Pp. 65.—*The Chaplain of the Fleet.* By WALTER BESANT and JAMES RICE. Pp. 81. Paper, 4to. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Modern Anglican Theology. Chapters on Coleridge, Hare, Maurice, Kingsley, and Jowett, and on the Doctrine of Sacrifice and Atonement. Third Edition, Revised. To which is Prefixed a Memoir of Canon Kingsley, with Personal Reminiscences. By Rev. JAMES H. RIGG, D.D., Author of "Essays for the Times," etc. 12mo, pp. 552. London: Wesleyan Conference Office, 2 Castle-street, City Road; and 66 Paternoster Row.

Discourses and Addresses on Leading Truths in Religion and Philosophy. By Rev. JAMES H. RIGG, D.D., Author of "Modern Anglican Theology," "Essays for the Times," "National Education," "The Living Wesley," "The Churchmanship of John Wesley," etc., etc. 8vo, pp. 454. London: Published for the Author, Wesleyan Conference Office, 2 Castle-street, City Road; sold at 66 Paternoster Row, and Wesleyan Sunday-School Union, 2 Ludgate Circus Buildings. 1880.

Notice of Dr. Rigg's volumes will appear in our next Quarterly.

The American Conflict. A Household Story. Narrated in three volumes. 12mo, pp. 278, 279, 194. New York: Phillips & Hunt.

Literary Style and Other Essays. By WILLIAM MATTHEWS, LL.D. Author of "Getting On in the World," "Words: Their Use and Abuse," "Oratory and Orations," etc., etc. 12mo, pp. 345. Chicago: L. C. Riggs & Co. 1881.

The Chinese: Their Education, Philosophy, and Letters. By W. A. P. MARTIN, D.D., LL.D., President of the Tungwen College, Peking. 12mo, pp. 319. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The chapter on the Chinese *Renaissance* is the best in this excellent series of chapters.

Platonism versus Christianity. The Question of Immortality Historically Considered, with Special Reference to the Apostasy of the Christian Church. To which is Annexed an Essay on the Unity of Man. By J. H. PETTINGELL, A.M., a Congregational Minister, etc. 12mo, pp. 97. Philadelphia: The Bible Banner Association; J. D. Brown, Agent. 1881.

Christian Institutions. Essays on Ecclesiastical Subjects. By ARTHUR PENRYN STANLEY, D.D., Dean of Westminster. Author of "History of the Jewish Church," "Life of Dr. Arnold," "Sinai and Palestine," etc. 12mo, pp. 322. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881. (Stereotyped and printed by S. W. Green's Son.)

Fresh and independent, if not always unquestionable.

At the Threshold. Familiar Talks with Young Christians Concerning Doctrines and Duties. By Rev. ROSS C. HOUGHTON, D.D. Author of "Women of the Orient," etc. 12mo, pp. 138. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. New York: Phillips & Hunt. 1881.

An admirable book for the beginner in Christian and Church life.

Madame De Stael. A Study of her Life and Times. The First Revolution and the First Empire. By ABEL STEVENS, LL.D. In two volumes. 12mo, pp. 367. Vol. II, pp. 373. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

To be noticed in our next Quarterly.

Bible Terminology Relative to the Future Life. An Inquiry into the Meaning of the Principal Scriptural Terms Touching the Nature and Destiny of Man; namely, Soul, Spirit, Life, Death, Hell, the Second Death, Punishment, Everlasting Destruction, the Life Everlasting, Eternal; the Great Salvation, the Unspeakable Gift, Discarded Scriptural Terms. By J. H. PETTINGELL, A.M., a Congregational Minister, etc. 12mo, pp. 368. Philadelphia: The Bible Banner Association. J. D. Brown, Agent. 1881.

Hunting Adventures on Land and Sea. The Young Nimrods in North America. A Book for Boys. By THOMAS W. KNOX, Author of "The Boy Travelers in the Far East, Japan and China." "The Boy Travelers in the Far East, Siam and Java," etc. Copiously Illustrated. 8vo, pp. 299. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

A Short History of the Colonies in America. By HENRY CABOT LODGE. 8vo, pp. 360. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The History of a Mountain. By ELISÉ RECLUS. Translated from the French by BERTHA NESS and JOHN LILLIE. Illustrated by L. Bennett. 12mo, pp. 195. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

METHODIST QUARTERLY REVIEW.

OCTOBER, 1881.

ART. I.—HINDU ECLECTICISM.

ONE of the trials incident to missionary life in a semi-civilized country like India has scarcely had due prominence given it. The Indian missionary lives, like his brother worker in less civilized heathen lands, in what the late good Bishop Thomson very appropriately called "a moral pest-house;" and he has difficulties of a general character, arising out of human nature, current systems of belief, defective intellectual culture, a low type of morality, and various other sources, to grapple with. But he has some peculiar trials, and these begin as soon as he begins his conscientious preparation for his work. He has to study languages which, whatever might be said by the champions of philology of their affinity to his, are to him a jargon to be mastered with immense trouble. He has, moreover, to master a literature which is barren and uninstructional, a philosophy which bewilders rather than strengthens the mind, a mythology which is a tissue of puerility and obscenity, and systems of religious belief so corrupt that their ascendancy is the best proof that can be given of the Scripture doctrine of human depravity. Is it a wonder that, in the teeth of such a formidable mass of useless reading, a few missionaries have proved recreant, and taken to work less troublesome and apparently more productive?

The idea deserves expansion. Quiet and systematic study is a pleasure of the most refined, if not the sublimest, stamp, to

FOURTH SERIES, VOL. XXXIII.—40

a minister of the Gospel in a Christian land. His mind literally feasts and fattens on the graces of genuine poetry, the facts of reliable history, the verities of true science, and the truths of sound philosophy ; and even when he has, in the due discharge of his duty, to master current systems of errors, he finds them embodied, as a rule, in readable books, or propounded with some regard to approved rules of taste in composition and logic in reasoning. His reading is not only pleasant but profitable, and the more thoroughly he gives himself to it the more thoroughly he expands his mind and broadens his sympathies. His brother-worker in the vineyard of the Lord in Hindustan is very differently circumstanced in this, as in many other respects. Study is to him a painful rather than a pleasurable duty, and the result is often a burdened rather than an invigorated mind, a bewildered rather than an expanded intellect. The trouble he has to take in mastering foreign languages and making them his own is not without profit, is amply repaid by accessions of intellectual vigor, such as linguistic study is invariably accompanied with and followed by. But whatever study he applies himself to after having done this preliminary work is a wearisome task. If he wishes to study poetry, and through it to obtain an insight into the manners and customs of the people he has to deal with, he has to fight his way not only through extravagances of an exceedingly vicious style of composition, but through a heap of epigrams, anagrams, chronograms, and stuff such as his soul abhorreth. If history attracts him, he has, in order to glean a few sporadic facts of at best doubtful historical value, to wade neck-deep through the rubbish of mythology and fable. If philosophy is his forte, a tremendous mass of verbosity and logomachy, of sophisms and quibbles, before which those embodied in the wildest speculations of the Middle Ages are as specimens of correct reasonings, is before him ; while he can scarcely get a correct idea of the many-sided and hoary religion he has to understand, face, and overcome, except after being literally lost in the dreary wastes of an unnaturally developed and corrupt literature.

But what, it may be asked, has the missionary to do with such literature and such philosophy ? He has to preach Jesus Christ and him crucified, and his business is to fit himself by

rapidly picking up a foreign tongue for this work of paramount importance. Such assertions have been more than once ventured by men who, while earnestly engaged in doing good among a nominally Christian people, find time to elaborate beautiful theories on the best method of carrying on evangelistic work among the heathen. That the simple story of Jesus Christ and him crucified is, after all, the truth on which the regeneration of Christian and non-Christian lands, as well as that of individual souls, must ultimately hang, no sane Christian will venture to deny. This story, ever fresh, is inherently fitted to touch the dead heart into life and infuse vigor and vitality into effete nationalities and paralyzed civilizations. But a great deal of rubbish has to be removed, especially in heathen lands like our own, ere its legitimate consequences can be realized; and a patient and persistent study of false religions, and the complicated systems of false philosophy indissolubly associated with them, enables the missionary to throw out of the way those heaps of prejudices and errors which make it impossible for the simple story of the cross to reach and influence the heart. The theorists who think that modes of operation which have been successful among nominal Christians must needs be successful among the heathen, brought up amid time-hallowed systems of theology and philosophy, falsely so-called, have only to migrate from the one department of work to the other to be convinced of their error, and forced to exclaim, with redoubled vehemence, "Old Adam is too strong for young Melancthon!"

One of the many ancient books fitted to illustrate the peculiar trial to which attention has been called is the *Bhagavad Gita*, the precious book which may justly be represented as the fountain-head of Hindu eclecticism. The missionary can scarcely maintain any intercourse with the reading classes in India without hearing the work eulogized and extolled in the most extravagant terms possible. It embodies the loftiest flight of the sublime philosophy of Asia, and presents the cream, so to speak, of Hindu morality and Hindu religion. It is replete with doctrines which stand unrivaled in sublimity and grandeur, truths of a transcendental order set off by sentiments of an elevated type, and precepts which, if generally reduced to practice, would convert this sin-stricken world into a veritable

paradise. As regards its style, human tongue can scarcely describe its beauty and loftiness, while the man must be a consummate dullard who fails to see that it is a master-piece of correct reasoning as well as a model of composition. The missionary, moreover, finds these testimonials indorsed by learned orientalist, who, as a class, have the knack of perceiving beauty where ordinary mortals see nothing but deformity, excellency of arrangement and cogency of reasoning where others see nothing but confusion worse confounded. With bright anticipations, anticipations generated by recommendations both indigenous and foreign, he opens the book and enthusiastically begins its perusal, and, lo! his disappointment commences. Instead of an elegant style, he finds extravagances of diction from which even the worshipers of Dr. Johnson in his own country would recoil in horror. He sees incoherence rather than logical consistency, confusion rather than lucidness of thought, naked sophisms instead of convincing arguments, and crude notions and jarring sentiments agglomerated into a philosophy of the most heterogeneous and the wildest character, while the harsh transitions, incongruous metaphors, and tiresome repetitions he has to wade through would justify even a prostrating fit of homesickness on his part.

One must one's own self read this book in the original, or a literal, verbatim translation of it, such as Thompson's, which will be our itinerary or guide-book in our research into its contents, to be convinced of the soundness of these remarks. We do not expect the general reader—we mean the reader who has not made oriental literature his specialty—to indorse our criticism or to extend to the toil-worn foreign missionary the sympathy we have always felt for him; and we are afraid that our self-imposed task of setting forth the contents of this time-hallowed book may, after all, be thankless. But we must correct an error carefully tended and nourished by a class of philosophers in America, who are striving to naturalize the belief that the fundamental ideas of all religions are alike, and that an attempt to set up one religion on the ruins of others is unjust as well as uncalled-for. And we, therefore, raise the question, What is Hindu eclecticism? The proper answer to this question is furnished by the *Theology*, *Anthropology*, *Soteriology*, and *Eschatology* of the *Bhagavad*

Gita. Let us call attention to three departments of the book, or rather to the contents of the book, which, though presented in promiscuous heaps, without much regard to the advantages of a luminous, concatenated arrangement, may, by a not unnatural application of the laws of analysis, be classed under these heads.

To a correct appreciation of its teaching under these heads some account of the work itself, its origin, its relative position in Hindu literature, and its influence in the development of religious life in our country, is a *sine qua non*.

Some preliminary remarks of a somewhat historical character will, therefore, be first made. The *Bhagavad Gita*, or the Song of Bhagavad, or Krishna, one of the nine incarnations of Vishnu, appears in the *Mahabharat* as one of its multitudinous and grotesque episodes, one of those almost innumerable legendary tales to which, along with those enshrined in the *Ramayuna*, the peculiar excellences and defects of our national character are to be traced. It presents, in poetical language, a philosophical dialogue between Arjun, the most estimable of the characters depicted in that epic, and the above-named god, Krishna, who, in the form of man, acts in the humble capacity of his charioteer. The origin of this dialogue, or rather monologue, as Arjun appears more as a hearer than as a speaker, is set forth with poetic coloring and exaggeration. Arjun sees before him the two hostile branches of the tribe to which he himself belongs: that is, his own relatives and kinsmen, in battle array facing each other, and ready to plunge in dire conflict, and the sight sends a chill of horror into a heart distinguished alike by courage and tenderness. He is unnerved, his limbs become palsied, the hairs on his body stand on end, the blood of his heart is curdled, his head becomes dizzy, and the great consecrated bow in his right hand drops down as if from an arm suddenly struck with paralysis. He is unwilling to fight, to further schemes of self-aggrandizement by slaughtering his own kinsmen in cruel, fratricidal war, or to wade through the blood of his own relations to the unsubstantial and ephemeral glory of an earthly throne. He recognizes divine nature beneath the humble exterior of his charioteer, and anxiously inquires if, under the circumstances, he is not justified in retiring from the field before the clang of trumpets and the

clash of arms make retreat on his part dishonorable and cowardly. This question and others, which as his mind grasps one new truth after another he puts one by one, draw out of his divine interlocutor a series of discourses which, besides nerving him for the approaching conflict, open the eyes of his mind to a variety of mystic truths regarding his own personality, that of the being he is privileged to question, and the real, occult nature of the inanimate world around him. The immediate result of the conversation is a great change in his convictions. He sees truth both absolute and relative, shakes off his temporary weakness, rushes into close encounters, sweeps every thing before him, and maintains, amid scenes of courage and desolation, the character of a brave, all-conquering, but, at the same time, noble-minded and generous warrior.

But though mixed up in popular belief with the *Mahabharat*, and presented ordinarily as an incident of its great plot, it bears unmistakable marks of a much later origin. It is, in the first place, replete with references, both direct and incidental, to the varied schools of philosophy which flourished in India long after the stirring scenes of its Heroic Age had been enacted. The Sankhya philosophy is frequently referred to by name, and the author's predilection for or adherence to its fanciful cosmogony is discovered in unmistakable terms. The Yoga philosophy is the subject of a number of direct as well as oblique allusions, and its doctrine of emancipation consequent on hermit solitude, meditation, and penance, stands out in bold relief from its pages. And, lastly, the uncompromising pantheism of the Vedant, which is also named, is the underlying basis of all its characteristic thoughts and ideas. Again, the *Bhagavad Gita* sets forth the caste system, not in the crude, embryonic state in which it appears in the *Mahabharat*, but in the matured, fully developed state in which it appears in the Institutes of Menu, our national legislator, whose caste regulations have ruled India for ages untold. The essential difference between the four primal castes is herein dwelt upon with marked emphasis, and the duties devolved upon each, and carried down by the law of heredity from father to son, are particularized in such a manner that its composition posterior to the age of the compilation of the Institutes, and consequently to that of the *Mahabharat*, appears to be a certainty. And,

lastly, the Krishna cultus, with its mystic notions of *Bhakti*, or faith, is the most characteristic feature of this philosophico-religious treatise ; and no one with even a superficial knowledge of the history of Hinduism will venture to call in question the comparatively recent origin of this worship. When these chronological data are put together, the conclusion at which orientalists like Monier Williams have arrived, namely, that the book was written about the second century of the Christian era, or about the time when Greek eclecticism flourished at Alexandria, will appear irresistible.

The state of things which led to its composition by an unknown author, its ascription to the learned, versatile author of the *Mahabharat*, and its incorporation with that long epic, may be guessed rather than ascertained by proper investigation. The philosophical systems which had been elaborated and matured in the schools had popularized an ideal of piety which, though incompatible apparently with the business of life, has always proved peculiarly attractive to the Hindu mind, if not to the human mind in general. Intense contemplation in solitude, resulting in complete mastery over self, stoic indifference to the occurrences of life, painful or pleasurable, extinction of desire, holy calm, and imperturbable quiescence—such had been the standard of piety set up by the philosophical speculations of the varied schools of thought, of which the eclecticism of the *Gita* may justly be represented as an offshoot. And the more its excellence had been appreciated the more had a distaste for the avocations of life been created and a rush toward hermit solitude realized. Nor had the morbid hankering after the enjoyment of undisturbed meditation in sequestered places been confined to the higher order of society, to the sacerdotal and military castes ; it had come down from the apex to the very base of the social pyramid, and the industrious trader and even the vile serf had separated themselves from useful and indispensable toil, and swelled the ranks of devotees drawn away from the turmoil of busy life to the repose of severe contemplation. The social machinery, worked by the forces emanating from the caste system, had been unhinged, and a reaction against the results of philosophical speculation was needed to secure its or their harmonious operation. That reaction was initiated by the eclecticism of the

Gita, which not merely restated with emphasis the divine origin of the caste system, but made the duties enjoined by it essential to salvation. But the author of this ancient treatise, whoever he was, could not emancipate himself from the influence either of the philosophical speculations which he tried to work up into a composite system, or of the ideal of piety popularized thereby. And so he vibrates between conflicting sentiments, and ultimately upholds what at first he seems determined to oppose and counteract. The eclecticism of the *Gita*, like every other syncretistic movement, either in the history of philosophy or that of religion, proved a failure; but some of the ideas it popularized have continued to influence Hindu society ever since the period of its composition. Its attempt to work heterogeneous systems of philosophic thought into a homogeneous whole is scarcely appreciated even among people who would exhaust the vocabulary of praise in speaking of its literary merit and ethical purity and excellence. But its attempt to uphold the caste system and make the duties enjoined by it stepping-stones to the higher degrees of perfection attained only by quiet meditation in sequestered places, has proved a grand success, as we shall have an opportunity of showing. But the real excellence of some of the principles to which it has given currency cannot screen it from the charge of a lack of earnestness or laxity of principle which makes its speculations incoherent and its conclusions unsatisfactory. The lax accommodating spirit of compromise, the evil star, so to speak, of all systems of eclecticism, from the oldest of those which flourished in times of yore down to that which was recently transferred wholesale from Boston to Calcutta, is at once the most characteristic and culpable feature of this philosophico-religious treatise.

Having brought our notice of the state of things to which the composition of the *Bhagavad Gita* is to be traced to a close, we are at liberty to call the attention to

I. ITS THEOLOGY. The theology of the *Gita* is not merely tintured with, but is nothing more or less than the absolute pantheism of the Vedant. The difference is not to be traced in the creed of the systems, which, in its important features, is one and the same, but in the manner in which this creed seems to have been arrived at. The Vedant arrived at its unmiti-

gated pantheism through the pathway of judicious rejection, while the *Gita* arrived at the same goal through the pathway of a somewhat unnatural though dexterously effected amalgamation. The Vedant came to its grand idea of unity of substance by rejecting two of the three entities held by three of the foregoing schools of philosophic thought, while the *Gita* came to its grand idea of unity by merging these three entities into one substance. To explain this a little reference to the foregoing schools of philosophy, or rather to the principles inculcated in these schools, is necessary. Let us begin with the *Sankhya* system of Kapila, which is chronologically, perhaps, the first of the six systems into which philosophical speculation developed in India about five or six centuries before the birth of Christ. This system is dualistic, and it admits the eternal co-existence of two entities, the primordial, self-evolving form, called *Prakreti*, and the human soul, *Purush*. The primordial form, or nature in its original essence, passes through varied processes of evolution, gives birth to intelligence, egoism, the elements, both subtle and gross, the senses, and the powers of action, and finally the mind, called the eleventh organ, through which it entraps the soul, eternal and pure, and makes it miserable by begetting in it desire and aversion, such as necessarily lead to action. This system explains the phenomena of creation on thoroughly atheistic principles; and its rampant atheism led to its condemnation among a people more thoroughly religious than even the Athenians, whose fervor in religious matters was eulogized by the Apostle of the Gentiles. It was, therefore, supplanted by the theistic Sankhya of Patanjali, who to the two admitted entities of his atheistic predecessor added another entity, namely, God. This triadism was upheld by the two logical schools which evidently followed the Sankhya schools in the pathway of philosophical investigation; but, though fitted to satisfy the religious longings and aspirations of the Hindu heart, it was too complex to satisfy the generalizing tendency of the Hindu mind. And so it was made to shrink into monism under the auspices of the Vedantic school, which retained God and cast overboard the other two entities associated with him. But the pantheism of the *Gita* is not elaborated in this way. The *Gita* admits the existence of the three entities of the Sankhya philosophy of the theistic

type, and of the logical schools. The divine interlocutor, Krishna, dilates in the fifteenth chapter, as in many other places, on his identity with the world at large, but at the same time calls attention to the existence of two entities beside or rather in himself. Here are the words :

And I alone am known to be by all the Vedas, and I am the composer of the Vedant, and also the interpreter of the Vedas. These two spirits exist in the world, the divisible and also the indivisible. The divisible is every living being. The indivisible is said to be that which pervades all. But there is another, the highest spirit, designated by the name of the Supreme Soul, which, as the imperishable master, penetrates and sustains the triple world. Since I surpass the divisible, and am higher than the indivisible, I am, therefore, celebrated in the world and in the Vedas as the highest Person.

This extract shows how the triadism of the theistic Sankhya is made to consist with the monism of the Vedant. The divisible spirit is the essence of the soul, dwelling in the Supreme Spirit as his better or superior portion, and individualized in man—the undivided soul being but a portion of this element of the divinity. The indivisible spirit is the Prakriti of former schools, or essence of matter, which forms the inferior part of the divine nature, and which appears in varied forms in the objects of nature around us. These two entities which Vedantism casts overboard are merged in the all-embracing divine nature by the author of the *Gita*, according to whom the Supreme Soul is a compound of the essence of all individualized souls and the essence of all material phenomena. The Supreme Spirit is represented as evolving the world out of his superior element, and the souls of men out of his supreme element. The union, therefore, effected in the *Gita* is exactly similar to the union between the tiger and the lamb when the latter was in the former !

Pantheism thus elaborated is the theology of this philosophico-religious dialogue or monologue ; and innumerable are the passages in which the divine interlocutor, Krishna, represents himself as the original, essential, all-embracing, all-pervading Deity. The sublimest type of egoism with which even pantheism familiarizes us are tame in comparison with that which characterizes his discourses concerning his own mystic personality. All the figures and images by which the essential iden-

tity of the Creator with the creation is set forth in the sacred books of the Hindus, and which, moreover, give a peculiarly imposing aspect to their voluminous literature, are heaped upon him in these discourses. He represents himself as the luminous element of the sun and moon, the heat of the fire, the brilliance of the flame, the light of lights, and the radiance of all radiant objects. He represents himself as the sound of ether, the fragrance of the earth, the everlasting seed of existing things, the life of all living things, the father, mother, husband, forefather, sustainer, friend, and lord of the world. According to Monier Williams' somewhat free version he concludes his description of his own all-pervading personality, or rather essence, with these words :

. . . "I am its (world's) way and refuge,
Its habitation and receptacle.
I am its witness. I am victory
And energy; I watch the universe
With eyes and face in all directions turned.
I dwell as wisdom in the heart of all;
I am the goodness of the good; I am
Beginning, middle, end, eternal time,
The birth and death of all. I am the symbol A
Among the characters. I have created all
Out of one portion of myself."

This passage, so decidedly instinct with lofty egoism, gives prominence to the second of the fundamental ideas of the system of theology propounded in this book. It ought to be borne in mind that the *Bhagavad Gita* embodies an attempt not merely to reconcile jarring schools of philosophic thought, but to effect a union between philosophy and popular mythology. And so on the system of absolute pantheism evolved out of the dissertations of the schools we see grafted the theory of incarnation, expounded and illustrated in popular mythology. The speaker is not an ordinary emanation from the Deity, but the Deity himself in the form of man, and he calls himself, not only *Adhyatma*, the Supreme Soul; *Adhibhuta*, the Supreme Existence; *Adhidaivata*, the Supreme God; but *Adhiyajna*, the Supreme Sacrifice. The Hindu doctrine of the cyclic incarnation of Vishnu, the second person of the Hindu triad, is clearly set forth, and the object of these periodic manifestations of the Deity is mentioned, namely, "to establish

righteousness." The divine interlocutor not merely represents himself as an incarnation of God, not merely refers to his past incarnation, not merely dwells on the great object to accomplish which he comes down periodically in various forms from on high, but, at Arjun's special request, appears in his "celestial form." (Monier Williams' translation :)

"Endowed with countless mouths and countless eyes,
With countless faces turned to every quarter,
With ornaments and wreaths and robes divine,
With heavenly fragrance and celestial weapons,
It was as if the firmament were filled,
All in an instant, with a thousand suns
Blazing with dazzling luster; so beheld he
The glories of the universe collected
In the one person of the God of gods."

The last two lines are eminently fitted to correct the mistakes into which Mr. Thompson has fallen, of assuming that the personality of the Godhead is clearly set forth in the *Gita*. God is certainly spoken of in many places as a person endowed with attributes generally ascribed to the Deity, and even moved by infinite compassion to come down, in various forms, to establish righteousness; but the personality ascribed to God is merely a collection of the "glories of the universe." A consistent, coherent system of theology cannot possibly be evolved out of the jarring sentiments brought into one focus in the *Gita*, any more than a homogeneous body of speculative divinity or practical religion can be evolved out of the vaunted eclecticism of the nineteenth century—the eclecticism, we mean, which has been distilled from the writings of Theodore Parker at Calcutta, if not transferred wholesale. But the theology embodied therein settles down, after appearing in varied forms, into that pantheism which assumes the existence of an all-pervading substance rather than of an intelligent, voluntary Agent, as the foundation of existence in all its diversified aspects or modes.

II. The *Anthropology* of the *Gita* is in keeping with its theology, and, like it, vibrates between the transcendental notions of the schools and the coarse ideas embedded in popular mythology and religion. Man is represented as a union of body and soul, the former a portion of the indivisible material essence

in the Deity, and the latter a portion of his higher nature, the spiritual essence. The dualistic nature of man is set forth in the following extract, (Chapter XIII :)

This body, O son of Kunti, is called *Kshetra*. Those who know the truth of things call that which knows this (*Kshetra*) *Kshetrajna*, (knower of the body.) And know, also, that I am the *Kshetrajna* in all *Kshetras*, Bharat. That which is the knowledge of the *Kshetra* and *Kshetrajna* is considered by me spiritual knowledge. The great elements, the egoism, the intellect, and also the principle of life and the eleven organs and the five objects of sense—desire, aversion, happiness, and unhappiness, multiplicity of condition, reflection, resolution, (all) this is briefly denominated *Kshetra* with its passions.

Place this in juxtaposition with the following quotation from Chapter XV :

An eternal portion of me only, having assumed life in this world of life, attracts the mind and the five senses, which belong to nature. Whatever body the Sovereign Spirit enters or quits, it is connected with it by snatching those senses from nature, even as the breeze snatches perfumes from their very bed. This spirit approaches the objects of sense by presiding over the ear, the eye, the touch, the taste, and the smell, and also over the mind. The foolish do not perceive it when it quits the body, nor when it remains, (in it,) nor when actuated by the qualities it enjoys, (the world.) But those who have the eyes of knowledge do perceive it.

These two extracts set forth the author's predilection for and belief in the cosmogony of the Sankhya school, and his anxiety to infuse therein the pantheism of the Vedant. Indeed, the author does nothing more or less than transfer wholesale the cosmogony of the former school and substitute for its self-evolving material principle, *Prakriti*, the self-evolving spiritual substance of the latter school. The process of evolution remains the same, intelligence giving birth to egoism or consciousness, and through it to the subtle elements, namely, sound, feel, color, rapidity, and odor ; and the five organs of action, namely, the larynx, hands, feet, and the excretory and generative organs. And, lastly, the mind or the eleventh organ is created, and all the evils of life are realized through its ceaseless and malignant activity. The ultimate power of this series is, however, not the primordial form of materialism, but the spiritual substance of pantheism, with its consciousness and

varied mental powers potentially, if not actually, present in it. This spiritual substance, it must be borne in mind, appears in the *Gita* embodied as a rule in an all-embracing infinite personality with a twofold nature, the inferior element manifested in the various modes of material existence and the superior in those of spiritual life.

But how does the theory of cyclic incarnation, or of a series of incarnations culminating in Krishna, the divine interlocutor, consist with this view of pantheistic thought? Are we to suppose that the modern theory of incarnation, that we mean which makes the Lord Jesus Christ the crowning point of a graduated scale of incarnations, was anticipated in India upward of two millenniums ago? We have no doubt but that it was, though the theory does not appear stated with logical precision either in this book or any other work on Hindu philosophy and Hindu religion. How little has modern rationalism added to the results philosophical speculation displayed in ancient times! The theology of the *Gita* renders the essential unity of the human race a logical necessity, or an inevitable logical sequence. If all men are portions of the Deity, both as regards their bodies and as regards their souls, whatever difference we may notice among them must be a difference of degree, not a difference of kind. This irresistible conclusion is, however, evaded by the author. He is a Brahmin as well as a philosopher, and one of his main objects in the composition and circulation of this philosophico-religious treatise is to uphold the caste system in its fully developed form at all hazards. And so he cheerfully sacrifices logical consistency at the altar of the social god whose ascendancy must be re-established after the temporary confusion created by philosophical speculation. And he unhesitatingly maintains the essential difference between the recognized castes. The following passage shows that the division of labor introduced by that system is dependent, according to our author, on original propensities rather than on the mere accident of education:

The offices of Brahmins, Kshatriyas, Vaishyas, and Sudras, O harasser of thy foes! are distributed according to the qualities which predominate in the dispositions of each. Tranquility, continence, mortification, purity, patience, and also rectitude, spiritual knowledge, and spiritual discernment, belief in the ex-

istence of another world, comprise the office of a Brahmin, sprung from his disposition. Valor, glory, strength, firmness, ability in warfare, and also keeping one's ground, liberality, and a lordly character, are the office of Kshatriya, sprung from his disposition. Agriculture, herding of kine, and commerce are the office of a Vaishya, sprung from his disposition. Servitude is the peculiar office of a Sudra, sprung from his disposition. Each man who is satisfied with his office attains perfection.—Chapter XVII.

III. The last line brings us to the *Soteriology* of the *Gita*, a subject of paramount importance, inasmuch as we see reflected in it the notions of salvation now current among our countrymen. The soteriology of the *Gita* appears at first sight to have been a re-action against that of the schools, the jarring theories of which it endeavored to weld into a homogeneous whole. The watch-word of the schools was *quiescence*, but that of the *Gita* seems to have been *action*. The schools systematically opposed action, and represented it as the source of all our trouble. According to their teaching attachment to the world breeds desire, and desire breeds action, and action breeds merit or demerit, and merit or demerit brings in its train reward or punishment and a fresh transmigration, and all the evils associated with it. Action, therefore, with its antecedents and consequents, should be annihilated or superseded by meditative stillness and quiescence, ere the vexed spirit can be liberated from the thralldom of transmigration and merged into the material or divine essence as a drop in the ocean. The schools were certainly at loggerheads with one another on many of the fundamental questions of theology and science, but they were unanimous in denouncing action and upholding passive contemplation as essential to salvation, in the Hindu sense of the term; that is, absorption in the Deity. Moreover, this doctrine of the schools was by no means received by the people at large as a beautiful theory to be revolved in the mind for a few minutes and then quietly shelved. On the contrary, earnest souls from all ranks of society succumbed to its fascinating influence, separated themselves from needed work, betook themselves to hermit solitude, and wasted their energies in indolent meditation. To remedy this growing evil the *Gita* appeared, with its watch-word *action*, opposed to the passiveness and quiescence of the schools; and the arguments by which it

sustains its position are eminently fitted to influence for good even the contemplative Hindu, who looks forward to assimilation in the Deity as the *summum bonum*. Action, the *Gita* maintains, is inevitable. The devotee must breathe, his blood must circulate, the varied portions of his body must discharge their functions to enable him to give himself to that quiet and contemplative life which has such an irresistible charm for him. Moreover, he must eat and drink a little in order to sustain life, and this means action. Action, then, being inevitable, to denounce it as the cause of all our sorrows and discomforts, and attempt its extinction, is not true philosophy.

But action, the schools maintain, is fructescent, and must bear its fruit either in reward or in punishment, and thereby prolong the chain of transmigrations. The author of the *Gita* admits that action is fructescent, but he maintains that it is not invariably so. When action is performed with a view to rewards or punishments, that is, when action is performed with interested motives, it bears fruit, prolongs the chain of transmigrations, and perpetuates the misery of existence. But when action is performed without any regard to consequences its effect is salvation, not prolonged enthrallment. Not action in general, but action with interested motives, action from selfish desires and selfish aims, ought to be denounced. The necessity of action being admitted, the question rises, What course is action to take? Or, in other words, What are men to do to be saved from the misery of prolonged existence? The *Gita*, in reply to this important question, does not give an uncertain sound. Men are to perform the duties of their castes, nothing more and nothing less. The track chalked out for a man by the rules and regulations of his caste is to him the path of righteousness and salvation; and on it he is safe, it being absolutely impossible for him to go wrong while treading it patiently and perseveringly. "It is better to perform one's own duty, even though it be devoid of excellence, than another's duty well. He who fulfills the office obligated by his own nature does not incur sin. One should not reject the duty to which one is born, even if it be associated with error, for all (human) undertakings are involved in error, as fire is by smoke."

But the soteriology of the book, like its theology and its

anthropology, is involved inextricably in confusion, because the author, while determined to give prominence to some principles of a practical stamp, seems to have been unable to free himself from the fascinating influence of the ideal of piety held up by the schools — the devotee seated cross-legged or standing still and immovable beneath the outstretched branches of a shady tree, with his eyes fixed on the tip of his nose, his breath regulated according to fixed rules, his mind concentrated on one theme or object of contemplation, his passions and appetites not merely controlled but extinguished, his desires and aspirations subsiding into a holy calm, the serenity of his soul making him impassable or indifferent to hunger and thirst, heat and cold, pleasure and pain, and his entire self, separated from its accidental surroundings, merged into the Deity. No Hindu thinker, in the days of our author, however broad might be his thoughts, could contemplate this picture of tranquil meditation without being instinctively led to recognize its immense superiority to the bustle and turmoil of an active life. And so the author of the *Gita*, like the great Buddha himself, after flying from it for a moment, swung back to it with redoubled momentum. And its theory of salvation is the theory to which universal homage is paid in Hindustan to-day; the theory, we mean, which makes an inferior degree of salvation hang on *kanuayoga*, or the devotion of works, while salvation, in the fullest sense of the term, is only attainable through the pathway of *pryanyoga*, or the devotion of knowledge or hermit solitude and concentrated meditation.

IV. The *Eschatology* of the book need not detain us long. The Hindu doctrine of transmigration, with its ascending and descending series of animated bodies, innumerable births and deaths, terminating, after the slow cycle of ages innumerable, in absorption in the Deity, is the basis of all its speculations on this subject. It, however, recognizes one principle which should not be passed over unnoticed, namely, that a man's condition in the world to come is determined by his meditations rather than action in this life.

He who, remembering me at the moment of death, quits the body and comes forth, enters my nature, there is no doubt about that. Or again, whatever nature he thinks on when he abandons the body at the last, to that only does he go, O son of Kunti!

having been always conformed to that nature. Therefore think of me at all times and fights.

It is impossible to enumerate the superstitions to which this and other passages of the sort have given birth, or the various expedients adopted to direct the thoughts of the dying Hindu to the incarnation of Vishnu, who is the principal interlocutor in this dialogue. The Hindu father of the *Vaishnav* sect, or the sect which upholds the worship of Vishnu, in preference to that of any other god, to that either of *Brahma*, the first, or *Maheshwar*, the third person in the Hindu triad, gives names to his male children, such as may in the hour of death recall the Deity to his mind ; or he writes some of his hundred and eight names on his sacred garments and on his arms and on the palms of his hands, that his eyes may fall on them and bring up associations fitted to pave his way to heaven before they are closed forever. The immoral principle that man, however bad his life has been, will enter heaven if at the moment of death he repeats the name of Vishnu, is a legitimate deduction from such a passage, though perhaps the author and its compeers did not foresee the wrong use which has been made in subsequent ages of their unguarded statements !

We confess we don't rise from the perusal of this time-hallowed and extravagantly venerated book with a very high opinion of its contents. The devotee who, amid the enlightenment of the nineteenth century, represents God as the life of every living thing, from man down to the meanest worm, and the aggregate of all forces, mechanical, chemical, electric, and magnetic, as the sum total, in short, of all forms of life and all material agencies, may be in raptures when speaking of its teachings. The self-styled anthropologist, who throws overboard the supernatural element in Christianity, and represents it as a development of, or an outgrowth from, pre-existing religious ideas, may see in it a grand stepping-stone to the rapid progress made in subsequent ages in religion and morals. But we are ordinary mortals, with no pompous titles, and we cannot help representing its general teaching, theological and moral, as on the whole pernicious, even while we are not backward in recognizing the excellence of a few truths and principles scattered up and down among its miscellaneous contents. We have no hesitation whatever in affirming that this and other

books of the sort have, on the whole, been so many drags on, rather than incentives to, the progress of the world in religion and morals, and we fearlessly oppose this bold assertion to the sentimental talk which is unhappily gaining ground even in the Churches of Christendom.

ART. II.—SHAKESPEARE: HIS GENIUS AND TIMES.

To those who are in the habit of frequenting our great libraries there is nothing so utterly astounding as the immensity of those accumulations that cluster around two books—the Bible and the plays of Shakespeare. In 1879 H. H. Morgan, of St. Louis, published a *Topical Shakespeariana*, in which he gives a list of two thousand English books devoted entirely to varied discussions of the works of the Bard of Avon. This catalogue is exclusive of various editions, and is confessedly in no sense exhaustive.

A great poet has drawn a parallel between Shakespeare and the sea, and after reminding us of it, Swinburne says: "For two hundred years students have gone forth in every kind of boat to more fully explore this sea—majestic galleys steered by such geniuses as Coleridge and Goethe, and also the paltriest fishing craft." Every modest man will agree with him, when, dwelling on the figure, he continues to say: "The limits of this ocean, the law of its tides, the motive of its forces, the mystery of its unity, and the secret of its changes, no seafarer of us all may ever think thoroughly to know."* The writer of this critique ventures to launch on this ocean *his* little paper catamaran, not pretending that his frail craft, though boldly launched on the boundless sea, will be able, in any degree, to solve the enigmas which other and wiser voyagers have failed to unravel, but for the purpose of running through a portion of the fleet that has preceded him, making himself familiar with the log-books they have so reliably kept, and then laying his gathered treasures where they can be seen by eyes less favored than his own have been.

The literature of this subject, turning for a moment away from the sea, is an open vast prairie, with all its vast wealth of

* "A Study of Shakespeare," pp. 1, 2.

color. We go to every open or opening flower of comment, or of criticism, on which we can lay our discriminating fingers; we pluck whatever we can find of rare or unusual sweetness, and take away its richest perfume by an involuntary absorption that well-nigh intoxicates us.

There is something specially exciting, enriching, exalting, in the honey and aroma with which such erudites as Schlegel, Drake, and Taine have filled their beauteous nectar-bearing cups. It may be that some of the most startling sentences of these brilliant commentators may cling to us, as the silken fibers of the cotton plant might adhere to the homely burr dragged through a field of Southern beauty. If it be so, who has the right to accuse or censure? Who will presume to require us to tie a tag to each separate fiber, that it may be traced to the actual plant on which it grew. To give, in an article of this kind, to every thread its owner's name, would be literally

"To guard a title that was rich before,"

and that would surely be "wasteful and ridiculous excess." *

It is a singular and somewhat startling fact that there is no great English writer against whom a certain class of so-called religionists have cherished so much ill-grounded prejudice as against the author of the most charming and elegant dramas that ever dropped from a mortal's pen. Some thirty years ago a Methodist preacher was importuned to arrest the character of his immediate predecessor before his Conference. The distinguished man against whom the assault was directed had been educated at West Point, became a doctor of divinity, and when he died was a colonel in the Union Army. A string of charges had been drawn up, including various offenses, but all paling, as the accuser thought, before the enormity of the final culminating one, which was that he, a minister of the Church, persisted in privately reading "Shakespeare's theater plays!"

The prejudice of which this charge was a faint indication

* For the writer of this article to disclaim a scholarship, of which it were vanity in him to suppose himself even suspected, would be to invite from the really learned deserved contempt. He disclaims any attempt to ascend a tribune to which Ulrici, Schlegel, Coleridge, Hudson, and Rolfe have been exalted with merited honors. He does not assume to be a Shakespearian in any high sense. He only echoes the conclusions of acknowledged critics, yet at the same time he claims the right of uttering an opinion or two distinctively his own.

was much stronger fifty or a hundred years ago. John Newton, sometimes called "the pious"—the companion of Cowper, and the author of several favorite hymns—was a great letter-writer. In one of his epistles to a friend by the name of Bull he makes this humiliating confession: "If my good folks were to catch me reading Shakespeare, I would rather hide the book than offend them. For they, being no judges of Shakespeare, or of my motive for reading him, would be hurt if they saw a play-book in my hand. I would not wish them to look more favorably upon play-books than they do, or to think unfavorably of me on Shakespeare's account." There seems to be a great want of manliness in this willingness to hide the book; but allowance must be made for the narrowness and prudery of the circle in which he moved. What shall we say of the — (we dare not characterize them) who, on the death of Wesley, finding among his papers an annotated copy of our great poet, at once destroyed it, lest it should injure Mr. Wesley's influence among religious people? It was an act of ruthless literary vandalism, no matter how saintly the man that committed it. All healthy and true religion has suffered an injury thereby. Mr. Wesley's annotations were doubtless appreciative. They may have been, they doubtless were, remarkably laudatory. If they had not been, if they had been in any sense disparaging, they would never have been destroyed by his mistaken literary censors.

The prejudice of which the above narration is an illustration has not as yet utterly died out. There are those whose piety and good intentions no man can impeach who still think that it is an unwise, not to say a wicked, thing to spend time in reading this great master of the human heart. Such purists, no doubt, class him with Byron, Shelley, and Tom Moore. They regard him as entitled to a place on the same shelf as Rabelais, Smollett, and Sterne, and to make him a study as dangerous as would be the study of Tom Paine, Voltaire, or our modern Ingersoll. Of course this is all a mistake, and the best minds in the Church no longer hesitate to say so.

THEORIES.

Many and strange have been the opinions held regarding the great intellectual prodigy of the sixteenth century—nay, we

may say the greatest prodigy of all times and all lands. The most absurd of all is that which pretends to regard him as a *myth*. The actual existence of Shakespeare, and the incidents related concerning his life, are as demonstrably true as are any historical facts. The lives of Charlemagne, Napoleon, Lincoln, are not more true. We may have our doubts concerning Homer and Ossian; but it were idiocy to indulge in any so far as William Shakespeare is concerned. He is as real as are Macaulay, or Carlyle, or Eliot to the readers of to-day, and is far more so than will be Hartmann, or Emerson, or Mill when three hundred years shall have rolled into the great unknown.

A few half-demented aspirants to literary fame have labored hard to prove that Shakespeare's name was but a *nom de plume*, and that the actual name of the writer of the plays to which it was attached was Bacon; that, while his brain conceived and his pen wrote "Hamlet" and "Macbeth" and "Lear," and all the other wonderful tragedies and comedies that cluster round them, he was too modest or too cowardly to have his real relationship to such marvels known to his contemporaries or to the men of any age. There is a great deal of ingenuity and some sincerity apparent in the various lines of argument employed to sustain this—to say the least of it—extraordinary view. The style of Bacon is compared with that of Shakespeare. Parallel passages are quoted. Especial prominence is given to the fact that when Aristotle is quoted the same mistranslations occur. It is contended that Bacon was the only one man, fitted by culture and position, to write the dramas bearing Shakespeare's name. All these arguments, and with them every other, melt into dissipated mist before candid criticism. The Baconian delusion is a species of insanity, which, in its first and most distinguished victim—who, by a singular coincidence, bore the name she would so unjustly exalt—developed into a violent madness, justifying personal restraint.

James Freeman Clarke has dealt this delusion some masterly though semi-satirical blows. He reaches the conclusion that it would be easier to believe that Shakespeare wrote the works of Bacon than that Bacon wrote the plays to which the name of Shakespeare is attached. The argument on the other side has been put most admirably by Hudson. We have only space for the briefest outline possible. He elaborates the following

points: 1. Bacon's ingratitude to Essex was such as the author of *Lear* could never have been guilty of. 2. Whoever wrote the plays of Shakespeare was not a scholar. He had something vastly better than learning—but he had not that. 3. Shakespeare never philosophizes, Bacon never does any thing else. 4. Bacon's mind, great as it was, might have been cut out of Shakespeare's and never have been missed.

Mr. Swinburne says of the supposition that there was a *double authorship*, Shakespeare and some one else—which is assumed by some—that it is a position naturally impossible to refute. "It is the last resource of an empiric, the last refuge of a sciolist; a refuge which the soundest of scholars will be the slowest to seek, a resource which the most competent of critics will be least ready to adopt." Of a man clinging to such a theory he says, adopting the language of Touchstone,

"God help thee, shallow man!
God make incisions in thee! Thou art raw!"

In a line precedent, but which in its connection is not to be quoted on this page, he explains,

"Like an ill-roasted egg all on one side,"

and then goes on to say, "And raw such a man must remain for all his learning, and for all the incisions that may be made in the horny hide of self-conceit, to be pierced by the puncture of no man's pen;" which, notwithstanding its Carlylean obscurity, is a sentiment worthy of adoption by all.

Dr. J. Snider of Missouri, at a gathering of the Concord School of Philosophy last summer, assumed, with a mysticism that no man can be expected to penetrate, that *he* had discovered Shakespeare's secret. Up to this time but few were aware that Shakespeare had any secret other than that which attaches to all works of undoubted genius. The doctor says: "Shakespeare's dramas move in an ethical world. They portray a world of conflict, they mediate these conflicts and bring all colliding elements into harmony, returning the deed upon the doer." That Shakespeare's dramas do this is, indeed, unquestionably true. But this has never been "*a secret*." This is no discovery! After such a prelude the world—not

the Concordian, but the outside, world—was looking for some astounding revelation. But we say with Pistol:

“Hope is a curtail day in some affairs;”

and still more appropriately with Macbeth:

“Be these juggling fiends no more believed,
That palter with us in a double sense;
And keep the word of promise to our ear,
And break it to our hope.”

After all that was reported as having been said at Concord, the world knows no more of Shakespeare than Coleridge did a generation or more ago.

HIS STYLE.

Critics of the seventeenth century say of Shakespeare's style that it is “the most obscure, pretentious, painfully laborious, and absurd that could be imagined.” This opinion later generations have not indorsed. Modern criticism has come to a conclusion the very opposite.

Heine tells us that “The scene of his plays is the globe, eternity the period of the action of his pieces, and humanity his hero.” Goethe declares that “In Shakespeare nature is uttering her own oracles. My men,” says he, “are soap bubbles inflated by romantic caprice.” If I consult Carlyle this is what he tells me: “Shakespeare penetrates into immaterial things—far into nature, with his divine splendors and infernal terrors, his Ariel melodies and mystical Mandragora moans; far into art and artifice. Shakespeare knew innumerable things—what men are, and what the world is, and how and what men aim at there.” “Some one,” says he, “calls it [Shakespeare] The Grand Sacred Epos, or Bible of world history, infinite in meaning as the divine mind it emblems.”

The great historian Hallam has put these remarkable words on record: “The name of Shakespeare is the greatest in all literature. No man ever came near him in the creative power of the mind. No man ever had at once such strength and such variety of imagination. Comparing him with Homer, the tragedians of Greece, the poets of Italy, . . . one man has far more than surpassed them all. Others may have been as sublime; others may have been more pathetic; others may have

excelled him in grace and purity of language and have shunned some of his faults; but the philosophy of Shakespeare, his intimate searching out of the human heart, whether in the gnomic form of sentence or in the dramatic exhibition of character, is a gift peculiarly his own."

So our own Hudson. He says, with an authority from which no man desires to appeal: "His rank in the school of morals is no less high than in the school of art. He is every-where worthy to be our teacher and guide in what is morally just and noble and right, as in what is artistically beautiful and true."

Richard Grant White, with a rare insight, declares: "If the plague had not spared him, the Anglo-Saxon race would have lacked a certain degree of that elevation of mental and moral tone, and that practical wisdom, which distinguishes it among the peoples." He does not hesitate to say that he regards him as "a source of instruction more nearly priceless than any, except that which falls from the lips of Jesus of Nazareth."

"The highest glory of Shakespeare's poetry," says Prof. H. Reed, "is *its spirituality*. *It is full of the life of faith*." These words are so remarkable that we presume to italicise them.

The most brilliant and incisive of all the *critiques* on Shakespeare has, however, been written by a Frenchman. With rare analytical power he tells his countrymen, infatuated as he knows them to be with Corneille and Racine, that Shakespeare is "an extraordinary species of mind, perplexing to all modes of analysis and reasoning. All-powerful—excessive—equally master of the sublime and the base. The most creative that ever engaged in an exact copying of the details of actual existence; in dazzling caprice of fancy, in the profound complications of human passion. A nature poetical, immortal, inspired, superior to reason—so extreme in joy and pain—so abrupt of gait—so stormy and impetuous in his tramp, that a great age only could have cradled such a man."

"I have made," says Swinburne, the last witness we shall call, "the study of Shakespeare the chief intellectual business, and have found it the chief spiritual delight, of my life. He is a strong and subtle searcher of hearts, the just and merciful judge and painter of human passion. It is proverbially impossible to determine by selection the greatest works of Shakespeare. There is, unquestionably, however, no creation of his

that will bear comparison with 'Much Ado About Nothing.' Who [he asks] can speak of all things, or of half that is in Shakespeare—who can speak worthily of any? Shakespeare, to whom all things were better known by instinct than ever they can be by experience to other men."

As with every other great poet, and as with every other writer of mark in any of the walks of literature, Shakespeare has been charged with plagiarism. That he did take from other men, that he took from *all* men, in a sense to be explained by and by, is willingly, exultingly confessed. He from whom was taken was greatly enriched by the taking; for when returned, as returned they were, it was seen that the theft, unlike any other stealing, was a benefaction, not only to the man honored by the abstraction, but to mankind at large.

Shakespeare was born in 1564 and died in 1616. His life, therefore, embraces a period of fifty-two years. This covers the entire reign of Elizabeth and portions of the reigns of Mary and James I., Mary preceding and James following the Maiden Queen. Though this period was inclusive of what is called, so far as learning is concerned, "the Renaissance," it was, in fact, an age of great grossness and vulgarity. There had been civil wars. How natural, therefore, that Shakspeare should have to chronicle atrocious deeds! There is not in English literature a more appalling picture than one given us in "King Lear." The scene is in Gloster's castle. The actors Gloster, Cornwall, and Regan, Lear's daughter.

Corn. See it shalt thou,—never!

Fellows, hold the chair:

[*GLO.* is held down in his chair, while *CORN.* plucks out one of his eyes, and sets his foot on it.]

Glo. He that will think to live till he be old,

Give me some help:—O cruel! O ye gods!

Reg. One side will mock another; the other too.

[*CORNWALL* then tears out *GLOSTER*'s other eye, and, throwing it upon the ground, exclaims:]

Out vile jelly! Where's thy luster now?

Reg. Go thrust him out at gates, and let him smell

His way to Dover.

Eugene Sue, in his "Mysteries of Paris," has attempted to imitate this scene, but how poor the imitation!

It is true that at this time the ladies of the court studied

Greek, but the social condition of the people was low, almost beyond our conception to-day. Clergymen dressed in green and red and yellow, wore crisped hair, and walked in peaked and buckled shoes. "To meet a priest in those days was to behold a peacock that spreadeth his tail when he danceth before the hen." * They were immoral, and held in very low esteem. The people believed in witches, fairies, goblins. Every village had its ghost. Church-yards were haunted, as was the scene of every fatal accident, and, therefore, impassable. Nothing had such a charm for the common people as prodigies. They saw, or thought they saw, blue lights, corpse-candles, tomb-fires. They heard demoniacal voices. They attached great importance to charms and spells, and the telling of fortunes. Palmistry and the making of periapts was a profession; by the one, individual history was read in the lines of the hand, and by the writing and wearing of the other disease and calamity were warded off. Tumors were removed by nine strokes of a dead man's hand. Scrofula was cured by the touch of a king or queen. Ruptures were reduced by the sufferers passing through a young tree split for the purpose. Bodies were supposed to bleed at the approach of their murderers. Men were said to shudder when walking unconsciously over the ground destined to be their final resting-place. It was the Age of Superstition.

It has been objected that there are passages in Shakespeare too indecent to be read in mixed or refined society; that "his characters call things by their dirty names;" that "the talk of his gentlemen and ladies is full of coarse allusions;" that "they have a vocabulary as coarse as Rabelais, and that they drain it dry." It is said that "they kill, violate, poison, burn, and fill the stage with every abomination." To all of which it may be said, no wise man advocates the promiscuous reading of an unexpurgated edition. It is true, men were never depicted in such hideousness before, but it ought to be remembered that it was the hideousness of truth! Men did kill, poison, burn, just as he says they did. They were drunken, unclean, cruel. Shakespeare was only true to the times in which he lived.

The Bible was translated at about the same time that the

* Holinshed.

"*Tempest*" and "*Midsummer Night's Dream*" were written. It contains some passages which good taste, no matter how deep the piety of its possessor may be, declines to quote in every circle of society to-day. Coarseness was the fault of the age. Women of high rank wrote letters to each other and to men much worse than any thing that Shakespeare wrote. Johnson says, "Shakespeare is more agreeable to the ears of the present age than any other author equally remote." The pious, the revered Robertson, says of Shakespeare, "He is healthy; I pardon even his worldly coarseness." Swinburne, after mentioning "the fetid fun and rancid ribaldry of Pandarus and Thersites," speaks of Shakespeare's alleged imitation of Rabelais thus: "Shakespeare has hardly once or twice burned as much as a pinch of fugitive incense on the altar of Cloacina, the only Venus acknowledged and admired by such men as Swift, Smollett, and Carlyle. . . . He paints nature in its littlenesses, its weaknesses, its excesses, its irregularities, and its rages. . . . He exhibits man at his meals, in bed, at play, drunk, mad, sick. He does not dream of ennobling, but of copying human life, and only aspires to make his copy more energetic and more striking than the original. His characters have bad blood and a ready hand; they abandon themselves to their passions, and go just as their passions lead them. He knows by experience the manners of country, court, and town."

The introduction of a new theory as to Shakespeare's relation to the literature of all time should be done with becoming modesty in an age bristling with commentators and critics. The readers of these pages are the first to weigh the theory, and they must take the modesty for granted.

In every age prior to the universal diffusion of knowledge, especially prior to the invention of printing, there was always floating around among the people a vast amount of traditional wisdom. It was embalmed in story and in song. It was carried from place to place by minstrels and troubadours. Midway between the creation of the world and the birth of Christ we have one inspired interpreter of nature, and we have two men who, without the divine afflatus, gave expression to all the accumulated wisdom of the times that preceded them. This remarkable trio was Solomon, Sophocles, and Socrates. The divine inspiration of Solomon exalts him above the level of

this discussion. Sophocles was confessedly one of the world's greatest geniuses. He, however, has no special place in the argument. With regard to Socrates more must be said. It is known to all scholars that between four and five hundred years before Christ there was born to a sculptor in Athens a son to whom this name was given. He was not, at least in his youth, a studious man, and yet his name is likely to live as long as that of Solomon. He was a talker, a conversationalist. The street, the shop, the market-place and the exchange, were in succession his school, and any listener his pupil. He was a compound of logician and buffoon. He had a prophet's flaming heart and a brain of ice. In his physiognomy he was ugly beyond all compare. Starr King, by a few striking words, has made his appearance as palpable to our mind's eye as we have otherwise been made familiar with the features of George Washington. This marvelous word-painter tells us that "his head was as round as a pumpkin—was goggle-eyed in the sense that a lobster is; that he squinted; that his nose was a short, flat snub; that his mouth was wide and his lips thick; that his neck was chunky, and that he was as corpulent as an ideal alderman; that he was, in short, a cross between a Brahmin and a Satyr."

Yet this pug-nosed, chuckle-headed saint got together more knowledge than all the uninspired men that had preceded him. This "compromise between Pythagoras and Punch" gave to the world a wisdom in the possession of which it exulted for nearly two thousand years. At the end of this two thousand years, however, there was born in England, of humble, if not obscure, parents, a fair child, which developed into a man of royal mien, as symmetrical as the Adonis of whom he afterwards so sweetly sang. *He* added to the mental wealth of the world a wisdom surpassing that of Solomon and Socrates combined. The theory of the writer of this paper is that these three men were provided by a watchful and benevolent Providence to be the diligent conservators of all the floating and ungarnered wisdom of their day. They caught that wisdom as it dropped from the lips of the troubadour or from the lips of the border minstrel, as it was jestingly uttered in the stinging satires and biting repartees of professional humorists and hired clowns; they clipped it out of novels and humorous plays; they culled

it from the proverbial sayings of the common people, and from the well watched and loudly applauded utterances of courtiers and kings. They gleaned it from soldiers and sailors, from the hangers-on in courts of law. They made record of it as it was read by stately ambassadors from foreign lands, or as it was mouthed in martial orders from castle walls or fields of blood. They gathered it, at the risk of morals and of life, from way-side taverns, from gambling-hells, from sponging-houses, and from the prisons in which men languished away a lifetime to atone for petty debts. They treasured it as it fell in stilted phrase from ermined judge, or as it was mumbled by the humblest digger of the murderer's grave. They condensed all the vapors of romance—they crystallized the gold which men were trampling under their unheeding feet. They caught the gossamer threads that floated in the every-day life of men, and wove those threads into garments of wondrous beauty for all coming men and all coming ages to admire and wear. If piety was in the air, then were these conservators pious, and Solomon's thoughts were cast in a religious mold. If the age was stirred by great mental activity, and the thoughtful were talking of duty and morals, then Solomon and Socrates stamped their disputations with lofty words, calling their utterances philosophy, and giving them, by the richness of their rhetoric, a currency that outreached their own land and age, and which bids fair to outreach all lands and all ages.

Shakespeare, with a wiser, higher nature than had been bestowed upon any that had preceded him, did the most and the grandest portion of this eclectic work. He laid the Hebrew money-changer Shylock, the Greek cynic Thersites, and the Roman voluptuary Antony, under tribute, as he did men of every race and nation. He listened to the folk-lore of Denmark, to Boccaccio's stories of Italian life, to the love songs of the strutting Spaniard and the tawny Moor. He familiarized himself with translations from languages long dead, and read the current histories of the Norman, the Saxon, and the Celt. He gave expression to every thing that was worthy of being expressed. His work was not the embalming of dead bodies destined never to live again; it was the storing of seed having life in itself—the conservation of germinal truths destined, as by an eternal purpose, to make green and glad, lustrous, all the

accessible hills and pinnaced mountains of the future. In this light how utterly contemptible do all charges of plagiarism appear, with which pigmy men, with their little straws, have sought to pierce his coat of mail! In this light they sink out of sight, and they sink forever.

Shakespeare transmuted all that his acute ears heard, all that his penetrating eyes saw, all that his tenacious memory could retain, into ingots of silver which no use can ever tarnish—into diamonds which no length of time can ever dim.

“He was not of his age, but for all time.”

It may be said of him, in a higher sense than it could be said of Milton :

“His soul was like a star, and dwelt apart.”

ART. III.—POPULAR EDUCATION THE GENIUS OF AMERICAN INSTITUTIONS.

THE perpetuity of our free institutions, as well as the national prosperity and happiness of the people, can be best promoted by promoting the instruction and knowledge of the rising generation. Is it not manifest that of all the world the United States can least afford to neglect the general and thorough culture of its people? Circumstances have made this question at the present moment of the very gravest urgency. If we are in large measure what our fathers have made us, the next generation will be sure to be more or less fashioned by those who to-day provide and direct our systems of education. It is not enough that we have an immense territory or an immense population, but every acre and every man, where nature has been equally bountiful, should be the equal in productive power of any other acre or any other man. It is not enough that, with a population of nearly fifty millions, only about twenty-five thousand students annually find their way through any and all of the old literary colleges. It seems obvious that both colleges and common schools require the earnest attention and the most precious resources of all the States, as well as of the General Government. Without undertaking the entire control of the general subject, Congress may yet legitimately make a contribution so emphatic that no State will falter in generous co-operation. The light of the nation, as that of the sun among planetary states, should break forth as the greater morning light to rule the day.—*Speech of Hon. Justin S. Morrill, of Vermont, on Educational Bill in Senate of United States, Dec. 15, 1880.*

In his elaborate “*Essays on Republicanism in Europe*,” Emilio Castelar says: “One of the greatest benefits of liberty is its wealth of education, and one of the greatest benefits of education is the ability it gives to take account of existing facts in

all our political solutions." As does he, so do we, take the words *education* and *politics* in their natural and broad senses—the former meaning to lead out and develop, as also to instruct; the latter being used to designate the relations and duties of citizenship. To educated minds alone are productive and useful ideas spontaneous. "It is much easier," says Castelar, "to persecute gas and imprison a sunbeam than to persecute or imprison an idea." All science that throws any revealing and useful light on the history of man, on his place in the range of being, and on his relative position among his fellows, teaches that he is ennobled by true education. In an address made Jan. 14, 1881, to a delegation of colored citizens, General Garfield (then President-elect) said:

I noted as peculiarly significant one sentence in the remarks of General Elliott, to the effect that the majority of citizens, as he alleges, in some portions of the South, are oppressed by the minority. If this be so, why is it so? Because a trained man is two or three men in one in comparison with an untrained man; and, outside of politics and outside of parties, that suggestion is full, brimful, of significance; that the way to make the majority always powerful over the minority is to make its members as trained and intelligent as the minority itself. That brings the equality of citizenship, and no law can confer and maintain in the long run a thing that is not upheld with a reasonable degree of culture and intelligence. Legislation ought to do all it can.

This "culture and intelligence" are matters of vast importance to all our citizens. And yet they meet with organized opposition. Besides the deeply seated opposition in the South to the education of the masses of the people, the adroit, earnest, and persistent efforts of a large class of un-Americanized citizens, who are under the dictation of a foreign spiritual and semi-political power, tend to modify and to subvert our grand system of common schools, because they are well-suited to the enlightenment, the morals, and the civilization of the people, and to turn the educational and literature funds of the States into sectarian channels.

In no period of our colonial and national history have the demands of representative men and of cultivated society been more urgent than a high degree of intelligence and morals pervade all ranks of our citizens than in this, when immigration is flooding our centers of trade, our commerce, and popular ideas

with foreign ignorance, infidelity, and monarchical ideas—a condition of things that political demagogues aim to turn to partisan and sectional purposes, and sometimes to personal aggrandizement, and particularly since the enfranchisement of millions of the colored race. This inflow of two such elements into the body politic calls for wise and vigorous efforts to educate the masses of the people, and to assimilate them to the nation.

What we, in this paper, claim to be in accord with the genius of American institutions, has of late found expression in Congress, in what is known as Burnside's Bill, for the promotion by the country of popular education, in the Southern States particularly. The chief features of this bill are, (1,) that the proceeds from the sale of public lands and from patents shall be invested in bonds, the interest of which shall be appropriated to public schools; (2,) that for ten years the apportionment shall be according to the number of persons in each State, of ten years old and upward, who cannot read and write; (3,) that one third of the proceeds of the fund shall be given to endow colleges established under the Act of 1862, until each State has \$30,000 per annum for their support. These provisions are wisely conditioned on the maintaining by each State schools for all children (including the colored) between six and sixteen years of age, for at least three months of the year, and after 1885 for four months. This bill passed the house by a large majority, all the Republicans voting for it, as did some of the influential members from the South. No more important step for the prosperity, peace, and effective unity of the nation has ever been taken. It will grandly supplement, if not exceed, the power of the Peabody Fund.

Though amid fluctuations and the subsidence of zeal, it has ever been the policy of this nation—as clearly indicated in colonial history, in the Constitution of the United States, and in those of the several States, as it has also been of the Church, in harmony with the genius of Christianity—to foster the cause of education. Sometimes it has been limited to the comparatively few, that is, to the Christian ministry, to educators, and to the learned professions, but the general tendency has been to popular intelligence. Any exceptions have been for the purpose of keeping the common people and the servile race in

submission to aristocratic and designing men, whose aims were to rule the conscience and to extend the sway of political power. The aims of those thoroughly tinged with foreign ideas, who would unite the temporal and spiritual powers, giving to the latter the supremacy in education and in politics, have been furthered by a thorough and persistent assertion of authority over the votaries of priestly ecclesiasticism. In the other direction it was the study of masters and of legislators to keep the slaves in abject ignorance. And, after the lapse of years since their manumission and enfranchisement, the people who dominate in the South wisely yield to the popular demand because their political safety requires the education of all the citizens, black and white.

In the early history of the Church it was not so. Besides the "extraordinary teachers whom Christ employed to lay the foundations of his everlasting kingdom," as says Mosheim, there were, in the first century, such men as Clemens, Bishop of Rome; Ignatius, Bishop of Antioch; and Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna, who, though not *remarkable* for learning, yet employed their pens in the cause of Christianity and the education of the people. In the second century "the number of learned men increased considerably, the majority of whom were philosophers attached to the eclectic system." In the third century, and, we hold as susceptible of proof, according to the spirit and workings of Christianity, the cause of letters, philosophy, and education by degrees triumphed—a success that was largely due to Origen, who, a Platonist in early life, unwisely blended the tenets of that system with the purer and more sublime doctrines of the Gospel. The result was not wholly bad. Though the faith of some was thereby perverted and controversies arose therefrom, yet the increased tendency to free thought and wide erudition promoted not a little the cause of popular education, so that in the fourth century, and thence on until about the tenth, "Christians applied themselves with greater zeal and diligence to the study of philosophy and the liberal arts. The emperors encouraged a taste for the sciences, and left no means unemployed to excite and maintain a spirit of literary emulation among the professors of Christianity. For this purpose schools were established in many cities, libraries were erected, and men of learning and genius were nobly rec-

ompened by the honors and advantages that were attached to the culture of the sciences and arts." * It was not until the incursions of the barbarous nations into the western provinces, and the still later supremacy of the papal hierarchy, that ignorant men were elevated to civil and churchly offices, and the cause of popular education began to wane.

But from the time of the Reformation down through three centuries general intelligence has been rapidly and surely gaining ascendancy. Every year has developed some progress. Never in the history of the world had the sciences, philosophy, and letters a stronger hold on the hearts and minds of the people, nor a broader sway, than they now have. Whatever a few impracticable leaders in infidel clubs may say to the contrary, it is demonstrable that the present *status* of intelligence, education, and civilization is owing primarily and almost wholly to the inspirations and encouragements of Christianity. So true is this, that not only were the several schools and institutions of learning in all the world founded by Christian men, but the several Protestant Churches in all lands have ever made the founding of schools, the arrangement and classification of rude tongues, the translation of books, and the instruction of the people, among the very first matters of enterprise and labor alike in heathen and nominally Christian countries. They foster the cause of education at home and in newly settled regions.

For the idea of popular education we are indebted primarily to the Hebrews and early Christians. The Chinese and Arabian caliphs, Charlemagne, Alfred, Abelard, and Duns Scotus made large advances in general intelligence. The Lutheran reform, as above stated, gave great impulses to the cause, and made school-teachers honored co-laborers of preachers of the Gospel. The idea of popular instruction was brought to this country by our ancestors in the seventeenth century. Very early Massachusetts and Connecticut made it obligatory on parents to see that their children were taught to read and write, and were instructed in religion and morality. In the history of New England, the names of Ezekiel Cheever, Cotton Mather, Horace Mann, and Henry Barnard stand high as gifted and laborious laborers.†

* Mosheim's "Ecclesiastical History."

† Eugene Lawrence, in "Harper's Magazine," Nov., 1875.

Wishing to show the position and action of the more prominent Churches of this country on this subject, I briefly refer to them. Though after careful inquiry I have been unable to learn that the Congregational Churches have of late, or at any time, given a formal declaration of their sentiment on the subject of popular education, as we indeed might expect in these times; yet, from the long and well-known character and activity of those Churches, from the time of their organization in this country, July 20, 1629, under the general direction of Rev. Mr. Robinson both in England and in Holland, of Elder Brewster, who was a practical printer, of Governor Bradford, Rev. Mr. Skelton, their first pastor at Plymouth, and Mr. Higginson, their formally accepted and honored teacher, no one doubts the position of that denomination in reference to the educational interests of this country. Of Governor Bradford it is said, "he had acquired an excellent education, especially in the languages. He was master of the Dutch tongue, almost as of his vernacular dialect; the French was familiar to him; the Latin and Greek he most diligently studied; but, above all, he was learned in the Hebrew, because, as he said, he would see with his own eyes the ancient oracles of God in their native beauty."*

The original first colonists planted a Church, then a school, and in a few years founded a college as a pattern for the future. Harvard,† and Yale,‡ William and Mary, and Princeton Colleges are outgrowths of their spirit and labors.

In Massachusetts, where the spirit of the first settlers may yet be found, all presidents, professors, and tutors in the colleges, teachers in academies, and all other instructors of youth, were from the beginning required to use their best endeavors to teach the principles of piety, justice, and a sacred regard to truth. The law demands that instructors lead their pupils into a clear understanding of the tendency of these virtues to preserve and perfect a republican constitution, and secure the blessings of lib-

* Journal of the Pilgrims at Plymouth.

† Harvard University began Oct. 26, 1636, in an Act of the General Court of Massachusetts voting £400 for collegiate purposes. In 1638 John Harvard, from whom it is named, made to it a liberal donation of money and books.

‡ The project of a college in the colony of Connecticut took shape as early as the year 1700, when ten Christian ministers met in New Haven and organized for the purpose of founding a college. Incorporated the succeeding year under its present name, from Governor Elihu Yale, the donor of a valuable library, it was, in 1717, permanently located where it now stands.

erty as well as to promote their future happiness. The same principle entered into the laws which were passed in Connecticut as early as 1656; for it was enjoined upon all officers of government to see to it that every child "attain at least so much as to be able to read the Scriptures and other good and profitable books in the English tongue, and in some complete measure to understand the main grounds and principles of the Christian religion."*

The State of New York has an honorable record also. The early Dutch clergy were very commonly school-teachers, and a free school was early founded by the Reformed Dutch Church in the city of New York. As the opinions of the present age may be somewhat guided by a reference to the opinions of some of the leading men who contributed largely to make our country what it is, it may be well to state that as early as 1737, when a bill for appropriations for the maintenance of the public high school was before the colonial Legislature, such men as Livingston, Morris, Schuyler, Alexander, Verplanck, and Rensselaer advocated it. In 1753 William Livingston said, in reference to the founding of King's College:

The advantages flowing from the rise and improvement of literature are not to be confined to a set of men. They are to extend their cheerful influence through society in general, through the whole province, and, therefore, ought to be the peculiar care of the united body of the Legislature. . . . To enumerate all the advantages accruing to a country from due attention to the encouragement of the means of education is impossible. . . . Knowledge among the people makes them free, enterprising, and dauntless; but ignorance enslaves, emasculates, and depresses them. When men know their rights they will at all hazards defend them, as well against the insidious designs of domestic politicians as the undisguised attacks of a foreign enemy; but while the mind remains involved in its native obscurity it becomes pliable, abject, dastardly, and tame; it swallows the greatest absurdities, submits to the vilest impositions, and follows wherever it is led.†

Prior to 1760, and under the reign of George II., a corporation, known as "The Governors of the College of the Province of New York," was created. At the close of the Revolution, on a petition of the governors of this corporation, the Legislature erected the college into a university, empowered

* "Question of the Hour," by Rev. R. W. Clark, D.D.

† Report of Special Commission of New York State Assembly, 1879.

"to found schools and colleges in any part of the State, as may seem expedient to them." This Board of Regents, as it has since been called, inaugurated the system of common schools "for the purpose of instructing children in the lower branches of education" sufficiently to enable them "to transact the business arising from their daily intercourse with each other."

The foundations of the common-school system in this State were, however, laid in 1795 by Governor George Clinton. In his message to the Legislature he recommended "the establishment of common schools throughout the State." The suggestion was approved, and the sum of \$50,000 was set aside, to be divided among the towns and counties in proportion to the number of their electors.* From another source I gather the following provision in 1790 :

The sum of £20,000 shall annually be appropriated for the term of five years for the purpose of encouraging and maintaining schools . . . in which children of the inhabitants residing in the State shall be instructed in the English language, or be taught English grammar, arithmetic, mathematics, and such other branches of knowledge as are most useful and necessary to complete a good English education.†

This is the American idea, an idea that includes all men and is suited to the nature of our republic, as also to the needed qualifications of *all its citizens*. This system of education, modified for the better, remains to this day.

The time of the above-named appropriation expiring in 1800, another impetus was given to the cause of popular education by Jedediah Peck, of Otsego County, Adam Comstock, of Saratoga, and De Witt Clinton, who secured the passage of a bill by the Legislature in 1812, by which the school system was founded. In 1813 Hon. Gideon Hawley was appointed superintendent of public schools, and by his intelligence and energy for eight years brought the standard to a high degree of completeness.‡ In recommending the establishment of common schools in this State, Governor Clinton said : "The advantage to morals, religion, good government, arising from the general

* Report of Special Commission of New York State Assembly, 1879.

† Session Laws, 1795, chap. 75, sec. 1, cited by Prof. J. H. Hoose, Ph.D., in address, 1879.

‡ Eugene Lawrence, "Harper's Magazine," Nov., 1875.

diffusion of knowledge being universally admitted, permit me to recommend this subject to your deliberate attention."

One of the ablest representatives of education * in this State says:

Common schools are the offspring of Protestantism. We can have them because we are not under the dominion of the Pope. He has proved conclusively that Romanism is the enemy of common schools, of popular education in every form. Americans will not, if they are wise, put an institution that they love so much into the hands of its enemies. The glory of our system is universal education; that of Rome is universal ignorance.

Under the patronage of William and Mary, King and Queen of England, and under the general direction of the Episcopalians of Virginia, "William and Mary," the oldest of American colleges except "Harvard," was established nearly two hundred years ago. Chartered in 1693, it has a record of its students, including many of the leading men of this country, from 1720 to the present time. So dear were the educational interests to the colonists of Virginia that steps toward academic and popular instruction were taken as early as 1619, and, though thwarted therein, they continued to labor in behalf of the cause until their hopes were largely realized, and, had it not been for the institution and perpetuation of slavery, their efforts would, doubtless, have equaled those of other old States.† Says Hon. Justin S. Morrill: ‡

The subject of education was not slumbering even in those early days when Washington and Jefferson were prominent friends of both schools and universities, holding them to be indispensable to the success of our American political institutions. The celebrated ordinance of 1787 proclaimed that "schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged." This was an ordinance of the whole country, reaffirmed in 1798 by Congress after the adoption of the Constitution, and its obligations must be redeemed by the authority of the whole country, with the proceeds of the territory and property originally dedicated to this high purpose. Schools and the means of education can thus, and only thus, be forever encouraged.

In further evidence of the early educational *animus* of our countrymen, I refer to the beginning and growth of public

* R. W. Clark, D.D., in "The Christian World."

† Report of U. S. Commission of Education, 1872: J. E. Cooke, in "Scribner's Monthly," Nov., 1875.

‡ Speech in Senate of U. S., Dec. 18, 1880.

libraries. As far back as 1652 Hezekiah Usher began and thereafter successfully prosecuted the business of bookselling in Boston, Mass. In 1677 four other persons engaged in the same work there. In 1732 Benjamin Franklin started a subscription library, which he called "the mother of all the North American subscription libraries." In 1747 the Redwood Library was established, at Newport, R. I., by Abraham Redwood, who endowed it by a gift of five hundred pounds. In 1776 there were in the colonies twenty-six public libraries, aggregating about 43,000 volumes, and visited by hundreds of general readers and men of letters.*

The recorded sentiments of the Presbyterian Church may be seen in the following from "the Constitution" thereof, early adopted in this country: "It is recommended that the candidate [for licensure] be required to produce a diploma of Bachelor or Master of Arts from some college or university; or, at least, authentic testimonials of his having gone through a regular course of learning. They shall examine him on the arts and sciences, on theology, natural and revealed, and on ecclesiastical history."† Though this excerpt has but little reference to *popular* education, it shows the educational standard of that cultured Church, and its influence on the minds of the people. What is more significant, the College of New Jersey, now popularly known as "Princeton College," was originated by royal charter in 1746, and, by a more ample charter, it acquired, in 1748, the powers and privileges then held by the higher institutions of Great Britain. "Columbia College," another Presbyterian institution, was established in 1753.‡

Expressive of the views and spirit of the Church which, because it had its origin amid the influences of the highest style of educational forces, is deemed a strong opponent of Romanism and ignorance, as it is a zealous ally and promoter of popular education in this country, I here give outline evidences that no Church takes higher ground as to an educated ministry and an intelligent people than does the Methodist Episcopal. Not only are all candidates for the ministry, whatever their *status* of scholarship, required to pursue a course of study preparatory to licensure and to probation in Conference

* "Harpers' Magazine," 1877, p. 722.

† Confession of Faith.

‡ Report U. S. Commission of Education, 1874.

—which is, of course, an incentive in the cause of general education and thorough reforms—but all who desire admission to the full and regular ministry must pass a satisfactory examination on an extensive course of reading and study, running through four years. And now the matter of prescribing a course of post-graduate studies, to be pursued by such as desire, is urged for the sake of greater scholarship and efficiency. As might be expected, these men are required, in their ministerial relations, to give special attention to the instruction of children, and to enjoin the same duty on parents and guardians. And, what is true of no other Church in America, so far as this writer knows, she has incorporated in her “Book of Discipline” a section devoted especially to advices and directions for the higher education of youth. Among them are recommendations that each Conference have an academy or seminary under its direction, that four Conferences unite in the support of a college or university, and, in order that the people may be properly instructed in this matter, it is enjoined that “it shall be the duty of each preacher in charge to preach on the subject of education once a year,” and to “take one public collection annually in aid of the work of education.”

What strikes us as worthy of still greater commendation, this Church has, by formal resolutions adopted by her chief body, put herself openly and squarely on record in favor of the common schools of this country, in a form and manner that no other Church has done. She has placed herself in antagonism to the enemies of popular education in these few but weighty declarations :

Whereas, We have always, as a Church, accepted the work of education as a duty enjoined by our commission “to teach all nations;” and

Whereas, The system of common schools is an indispensable safeguard to republican institutions; and

Whereas, The combined and persistent assaults of the Romanists endanger the very existence of our common schools; therefore,

Resolved, 1. That we will co-operate in every effort which is fitted to make our common schools more efficient and permanent.

Resolved, 2. That it is our firm conviction that to divide the common-school funds among religious denominations for educational purposes is wrong in principle, and hostile to our free institutions and the cause of education.*

* Journal of General Conference, 1872, p. 441.

To show the agreement to these advanced steps of the representative men officially connected with the educational work in this country, I select the following by the Hon. A. E. Rankin, late Secretary of the Vermont Board of Education, namely:

I suppose it to be a fact that the State took into its own hands the management of the educational interests of its children because it felt that its own permanence and security depended upon the intelligence and virtue of its citizens. And no republican government can long stand if a strong and vigorous moral sentiment be not inculcated into the minds of its people, and the public conscience be not educated and enlightened. The history of the world shows that men devoid of moral principle can only be governed by force. . . . The nations of the Old World have borrowed the common school from us, but several of them have surpassed us in developing the resources of the system. The Prussians have a maxim that whatever you would have appear in a nation's life you must put into the public schools.

Forestalling and encouraging this state of things, the Constitution of the United States provides that, "Religion, morality, and knowledge being necessary to a good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged." Accordingly, all our State Constitutions recognize the rights of conscience and the duty of providing for the education of the citizens of the several States. It is an interesting fact that as early as March, 1775, a banner with the inscription "George Rex, and the Liberties of America," and on the reverse side "No Popery," was raised in the city of New York. And we deem it well that the representatives of the Republican party in the State of New York did, at the convention held Sept. 8, 1875, adopt the following resolution:

The free public school is the bulwark of the American Republic. We therefore demand the unqualified maintenance of the public-school system, and its support by equal taxation. We are opposed to all sectarian appropriations, and we denounce as a crime against liberty and republican institutions any project for sectarian division or perversion of the school fund of the State.

In further evidence of the policy of this nation Hon. J. S. Morrill, in support of the bill referred to in the early part of this article, declared that in 1858 he introduced into the national Senate "a bill providing colleges for each of the States," and though, for a special reason, it was vetoed by the President, yet only four years later a similar measure "became the law of

the land." The national aim in this direction is seen also in the establishment of schools for the advancement of agriculture and other industrial arts, as supplementary to and in harmony with classical institutions. He continued :

Universal education diminishes pauperism by opening avenues to labor, and by showing how money can be saved as well as earned. It makes more of social life, and there is less of crime to be supported and punished. It finds nobler fields of ambition than are fields of war, and cherishes human brotherhood. Under our form of government, swayed to and fro by universal suffrage, it becomes our gravest duty as legislators to take heed that all those who wield power at the ballot-box shall be fully informed of the high trust they hold, and of their duty to discharge that trust with fidelity to the whole country and to the sacred obligations of an enlightened conscience. All of our citizens must be raised to that intellectual and moral dignity which appreciates and accepts some personal responsibility to their country for their political privileges and for their appropriate exercise.

The senator declares further that the political and moral interests of the nation can be subserved only as "our school-houses as well as churches shall be wide open even to heathens, if here to stay, rather than our jails and houses of correction." Through immigration we are annually receiving large accessions to our population.

These tidal waves of drifting population will continue to flood our shores as long as men and women are attracted by our free institutions, by free homesteads, by free common schools, and by higher wages. Willing to labor, anxious to learn, as should be this adventurous host of comparative strangers to American institutions, shall we not plant both common schools and colleges among such a raw and relatively uninstructed multitude wherever it may be ultimately distributed ? *

Over and above these "foreign legions" from Europe and Asia there are the several Indian tribes, who, as experiment shows, can be educated, civilized, and made useful citizens. "Wards of the nation," they desire to live and work. Unable to educate themselves, and it being impracticable that the States and Territories in which they in greatest numbers have their reservations be to the requisite expense for their education, it becomes necessary that the nation provide the means. The same is true and more urgent in reference to the millions

* Senator Morrill.

of colored people recently set free and suddenly intrusted with a political power for which they are generally unprepared, and for which education and morality alone can prepare them. That this people can be taught and are eager for the rudiments of education is now acknowledged at the South, as it is patent to all. In an address to a delegation of colored citizens General Grant lately said :

I am glad to see in my travels the progress in education all over the country made by the colored people, even in the South, where the prejudice is strongest. It is rare to see a colored child lose an opportunity to get a common-school education. Education is the first great step toward the capacity to exercise the new privileges accorded to you wisely and properly. I hope the field may be open to you, regardless of any prejudice which may have heretofore existed.

At the meeting of the Army of the Tennessee, held at Des Moines, Iowa, 1875, he spoke similarly :

Where no power is exercised except the will of the people it is important that the sovereign people foster intelligence—that intelligence which is to preserve us as a free nation. The centennial year of our national existence is a good time to begin the work of strengthening the foundations of the structure commenced by our patriotic forefathers one hundred years ago. Let us all labor to aid all needful guarantees for the security of free thought, free speech, a free press, pure morals, unfettered religious sentiments, and equal rights and privileges to all men, irrespective of nationality, color, or religion. Encourage free schools, and resolve that not one dollar appropriated for their support shall be appropriated to the support of any sectarian schools; that neither the State nor the nation shall support institutions of learning other than those sufficient to afford to every child in the land the opportunity of a good common-school education, un-mixed with sectarian, pagan, or atheistic dogmas.

There is no doubt that the genius of our institutions, having such a marked history, is to be preserved largely by the intelligence and morals of the people through the agency of the public schools of the land. And it becomes us to look well to the character and style of the education we foster and offer to the wards of the several States and of the nation. What should be its chief characteristics is the special subject of the remaining pages of this paper. "That nation is best educated in which knowledge is the most diffused, in which the results of learning are within the grasp of the greatest number." By an

education suited to the masses we understand, therefore, such a leading out, such a teaching and developing of them in general, as will induce a performance of the duties of citizenship. Educated after this model, they cannot be easily subjected to the leadings of corrupt and designing men, but will be somewhat identified with the aims of a free people. General intelligence, a knowledge of men and things, and sound morality, constitute the real worth and usefulness of life. We give it as our settled conviction that they whose character is formed by intelligence and morality scarcely and seldom so far swerve from their early education as to contravene the grander purposes and duties of life.

This style of an education, fitting the people to their places, should be given to *all the wards* of this country. The provisions for what is called "compulsory education" should be earnestly and universally enforced. The children of foreigners among us, and our colored citizens, should share the educational as they do the political advantages of the nation. It is somewhat remarkable that not until after the first century of our national history are any enlarged educational advantages surely, though slowly, being offered to the freedmen of the South and to their race at the North. Under the inspiration and direction of Northern Churches and other benevolent societies, schools of all grades are being established. And the time will come when our colored citizens will proudly look back to the origin of the institutions that now rise for their enlightenment, as do the descendants of the colonists to our oldest colleges. The characteristics of sires are naturally somewhat reproduced in the ground-features of their offspring. As the solid strength of the Abrahamic and Anglo-Saxon races is found again in the genius and force of their descendants, so it will be in the citizens of this republic.

What are the chief ways and means of securing to the people this style of education? The early and late history of this republic, as we have in this paper outlined it, teaches that the universal education of the people, under the supervision of competent authority, is the only wise method, provided always that family and Christian instruction be given. This well-established fact brings us, unfortunately, into antagonism with religious bigotry and sectarian or ecclesiastical ignorance. It

is only by the ascendancy and maintenance of our Protestant and democratic institutions that these combined forces can be controlled or kept in check. "The triumph of one is the overthrow of the other. The modern Latin races, with their ignorant and superstitious people, their monks, relics, and shams, are rapidly sinking to decay, as is seen in Italy, France, Spain, Portugal, Austria, in Europe; in South America, and especially in Mexico, on our borders."* The Roman Catholic Irish seem to hold with greater tenacity to superstition and ignorance than do any other people that are in commercial intercourse with Protestant and intelligent countries. Our chief safeguard, therefore, lies in universal education under the sanctions of vital Christianity. And though it be a difficult thing to secure a strong hold or wide influence over this people, we may and should guard against them. Just now they are making persistent and special efforts to gain both power and numbers in the South. They are there organizing schools and Churches for the unsophisticated and easily moved freedmen—a people who, if left to their own choice, would more naturally go to the schools, churches, and other associations of their deliverers from bondage, and yet who, because of the intrigues of political ecclesiastics, may be so blinded and misled as to be perverted from the established institutions of the country. The freedmen take to education, to art, and to religion with an avidity and success highly gratifying and encouraging. Some are turning their attention to the learned professions. Give to them, as they desire, all the rights and privileges of citizens, and in a generation of time they will show themselves worthy their nationality. Our danger is less from them than from quite another people. European Communists, Roman Catholic zealots, and corrupt politicians, who openly show themselves inimical to popular education, as provided in our grand system of common schools, are the people to be guarded against. Our obvious duty, therefore, is to look wisely to the prevalent influences of our educational facilities.

First among these are our common schools. From the nature of things these are a vast power. They are adapted to promote the intelligence of the citizens, and to fit them for their several duties. They are not "godless," as is affirmed by

* Frouda.

some persons. The genius of our country, from its beginning, forbids it. A Christian atmosphere pervades the thinking, the literature, and the history of the guiding minds. The results are seen in the broad currents of religious thought, superior to the eddies that play on the surface. It is otherwise in papal countries. Even in Great Britain primary schools are less suited to promote general intelligence, enlarged freedom of thought, and a broad and uniform civilization, because they are chiefly parochial and denominational, than in this country. They foster the spirit of caste, against which Mr. Gladstone, in his attacks on papal ignorance and priestly domination, is dealing heavy blows. But the early history of our people, the extent of this country, the genius of its founders, are promotive of large ideas, general intelligence, and a wide-awake enterprise. Our institutions give to this nation a prominence that attracts representatives of the Orient here for the special purpose of studying our chief peculiarities, not the least of which are our institutions of learning, from the lowest to the highest. An education that is worthy the name is practical, intelligently and broadly so. The good sense and strong qualities, as of those who rise from rustic childhood to elevated and honorable positions of trust and power, aided by the instruction and discipline given in our common schools, are of more value in this country than are the ignorance and effete customs of the Old World.

But the strongest conservative force and chief element of an enduring civilization are the religious. Say what any body may, a Christian education is the ground element in a republican form of government. It should be begun and fostered in the homes of the people. Without detriment to secular education it should be a pervading force in all our schools. Without it no morality, no civilization, no culture, reaches sufficiently deep or high, nor lasts sufficiently long, to contribute much to the value of citizenship. The pulpit and school-room, the home and press, should be at one in promoting this style of education among the people. Our honored fathers did it; we should do it. "Every government, to say nothing of Churches, is bound to enforce education on every child. It ought to put the ballot-box behind every school-house, so that when a child comes to vote it shall do so through the school-

house." * Leon Gambetta, of France, said to President Thiers : " The salvation of France depends on the adoption of a thorough system of obligatory education." When this condition of things, both secular and religious, shall become general in this country, then its liberties will be secured, and the powers of ignorance, ecclesiastical intrigue, and European rationalism brought to America, will be held in harmless abeyance or subjection. And did the people of these United States understand and realize how persistent are the efforts of the many and subtle enemies of sound intelligence, pure morals, and universal education among us, they would hasten, we think, to guard against the danger, to strengthen and extend the appliances for which we here plead.

Believing what we have thus far said to be eminently true, particularly in reference to this country, where every citizen who holds the elective franchise is thereby an individual sovereign, a veritable factor in government, it seems of the utmost importance that they each and all be sufficiently educated to understandingly perform the duties of citizenship. We Americans are particularly proud of our State or national system of common schools, by which all the children may be so educated as to become intelligent citizens, capable of understandingly exercising the elective franchise.

If there is one thing which they are prouder of than another it is their national schools. The Roman Catholics do not like these schools. They insist on educating their own children; they intend, if they can, to apply the education vote to a denominational purpose, and in New York, and possibly in Boston itself, their numbers give them a chance of success. Nor is this the worst. In America, as in England and Scotland, they are making converts out of the Protestant communions. Weak, imaginative people, disturbed by theological controversies, are imposed on by the pretensions of a Church which sits so calmly in the midst of the confusion and claims exclusive possession of truth. . . . The Roman Catholic peasantry, who have flowed over into America, are poor, ignorant creatures, who care nothing for the Constitution, whose interests, so far as they have any, are in Ireland and in their creed, and who vote as their priests direct them. Why should such vices be allowed to exercise a preponderating influence in the American nation? " Universal suffrage," just now, is the American sovereign. †

* Rev. H. W. Beecher.

† Froude, in "North American Review," Oct., 1879.

This being a fact which cannot be reversed, it is of the utmost importance that the compulsory feature of the laws in some States be so carried out as that every child of school age shall receive a fair common-school education, such as is suited to the genius of our institutions. The distinctions of race should in these things be lost. Both native-born and foreign-born should, we think, be required to be able to read sufficiently to understand the duties of citizenship and what is involved in allegiance to government. Though the freedmen of the South are no longer regarded nor treated as "wards of the nation," much less of the several States within which they live, yet it does seem an imperative duty, as also a wise and sound policy, that the several States make the same provisions for their education, and also for that of enfranchised Indians, which they make for whites. And no doubt the Southern States can and should do more for popular education within their own bounds than they either have done or are now doing. For the education of freedmen the Churches at the South are doing very little, because they are influenced by political and caste prejudices. The public schools in which colored children can be educated are few, poor, and inefficient. The most that is being done is by the Churches and philanthropists of the North, and that chiefly for the education of those who design to serve as teachers or preachers.*

Without going here into the statistics, which are often given and generally known, it is clear, from the history of all republics, ancient and modern, and from the history of Churches as well, that a certain amount of knowledge, a certain degree of education, and, above all, of Christian morality, are absolutely necessary to the perpetuity and well-being of these United States.

It is, doubtless, true that many persons think or fear that universal suffrage is a mistake, and that because of it our nation must eventually yield to the influences of ignorance, luxury, and anarchy, which have destroyed other republics. Whether or not such fears are well grounded depends much on the character of the people. Popular suffrage is in this country a fixed fact from which there will be no receding, and it remains an imperative duty that intelligence, education, and good morals be also universal; else the suffrage should be restricted to

* Rev. Dr. Hartzell, "Methodist Quarterly Review," Oct., 1879, pp. 742-744.

certain qualifications, educational or property-possessing. The elements of danger must be somehow neutralized, a thing which can be done best by making a Christian education open to all and obligatory upon all.* Property qualification may be well. But, because of genius and skill, because of shrewdness and rigid economy, some men, who are both ignorant and wicked, dishonest and fraudulent, may be and often are freeholders. The being a taxable freeholder is, therefore, no further an indication of a fitness for all the rights and privileges of citizenship in a republic than being personally interested in the protection and control of property. But the rights and suffrages of a citizen are more than the rights and privileges of a man as man. Rapidly accumulating facts in reference to the multitude of foreign-born who are naturalized citizens, and in reference to an equal number of home-born and enfranchised freedmen, show that such a homogeneousness of character and condition, of rights and privileges, and of restrictions and control, as a Christian education gives, is necessary in order to the maintenance of the characteristic elements and features of this nation.

In bringing this paper to a close we cannot do better than to use the short and crisp address made by ex-President Grant at San Francisco, after his return from his tour of the world, and on the occasion of the reception given to him by the Board of Education and the children of the public schools of that city:

It is a gratifying sight to witness this evidence of the educational privileges afforded by this young city. The crowds gathered inside and outside this building indicate that every child of an age fit for school is provided for. When education is generally diffused, we may feel assured of the permanency and perpetuity of our institutions. The greatest danger of our people grows out of ignorance, and this evidence of the universality of education is the best guarantee of our loyalty to American principles.

* Report of Commission of New York State Assembly on Normal Schools, 1879.

ART. IV.—CHRIST AND OUR CENTURY.

THE invisible Christ confronts our day as the same intense reality that Christ visible presented to his countrymen eighteen hundred years ago. At that time he was to many a beautiful enigma, a perplexity of wonder and awe, but yet one who, despite of intellect unsatisfied and yearnings disappointed, kept a firm hold on love and adoration. No love was ever so sorely tried, no adoration so often driven by stress of circumstances to vindicate its tenacious fervor; and for three years this new pulse of life swelled and contracted, throbbed and quivered, under the pressure of that sort of uncertainty which is a providential element in our highest education. To others this mysterious stranger was an object of doubt and distrust. Not a few believed, or pretended to believe, that he was a deceiver, who was in league with "Beelzebub, the prince of devils." So, then, from the outset there was "a division among the people." The dividing line, at first faint and indistinct, became clearer. It grew broad and well-defined, until at last it was traced in ineffaceable blood. On the one side or other of this line men are still arrayed; and though Christ is hidden from the senses, he is none the less, but indeed all the more, the Christ of the Father to our instincts, whom each one has to accept or reject. This act of accepting or rejecting Christ is the most important a human being can perform. It determines his character, as estimated by the eternal ideal of character. It gathers into oneness all the issues of responsibility pertaining to his nature, endowments, and opportunities. Nay, more, it reaches beyond the individual, and, accordingly, when we speak of "Christ and our century," we refer to an interest which includes the family, the nation, and the race, and hence is supreme in its momentousness.

The earliest attitude in which we see Christianity is sublime. Before the Lord Jesus had a disciple or had attracted the least notice, he had a perfectly defined gospel, a religion of "glad tidings," a religion in its threefold aspect of "glory to God," "on earth peace," "good-will toward men;" and this system lay within his mind as to its precise scope and exact details just as it is in our day. Man's art is seen clearly enough in efforts

to modify its character and subject it to adaptations other than its divine Founder contemplated. This is in keeping with man's nature. And, furthermore, we may believe that Providence permitted this to occur, so that the imprint of the human hand might appear in startling contrast with the hand of Christ. When critics like Dennis and Warburton undertake to improve Shakspeare, the only effect on sensible men is to heighten the estimate of the dramatist's genius. Far more do we feel the folly of Platonists, ascetics, mystics, when they try to shape Christianity according to human fantasies of religion. In nothing has the intellect been more prolific than in this sort of ingenious conceit; and to what has it amounted? Only to a fuller disclosure of the instinctive symmetry of Christianity as it came from Christ. Its original form is its true form. And it was in this form—simple, unbefriended by worldly alliances, free from derogatory associations—that it rested calmly and prophetically on its own might. It saw the end from the beginning, because the one contained the other. Understand, then, that Christianity never proposed to adapt itself to man, but to adapt man to itself. Light is older than the eye. The eye was constructed to suit the light. Man was created for Christ, and hence Christ's religion was designed to fulfill the purpose of his creation by means of redemption. If so, then, this religion, because of its lofty ideal, would deal with man not as a mere inhabitant of the earth, but as a citizen of the universe. Much that it had to say to him would be only understood in part. The very dignity it put upon him would be turned against itself, while not a few of its worst enmities would spring from the fact that it treated him as "a little lower than the angels." Nay, more; just as the insane are often more violent against their nearest friends than against strangers, how could it be otherwise than that its extreme opponents should seek to rid the earth of its presence? Yet, in the certain prospect of all this, Christianity came forth from the provincial seclusions of Nazareth and challenged the homage of the foremost races of the world. It did this of choice. A prominent feature of its plan, from the first, was to touch the highest in man. And whereas all education and culture in other matters begin in the lowest connections of intellect with the senses, proceeding from the material to the sensuous, and thence in-

wardly to the imaginative and the reflective, it evoked at once the loftiest sentiments on the assumption that there was "a spirit in man," and "the inspiration of the Almighty" gave it "understanding." Therefore our statement that in the outset of its course the attitude of Christianity was sublime.

In entire consistency with this aim, we find the Lord Jesus opening his ministry by conversations with Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews, and soon thereafter with a woman of Samaria. Nationality and non-nationality are side by side. Immediately succeeding these incidents we see him working miracles in behalf of a Jewish nobleman's son and a Roman centurion's servant. Nationality and non-nationality emerge again into notice. Extremes in society are brought together, and the new rain from the rising cloud of mercy falls alike "on the evil and on the good." The best in each is addressed. Nicodemus is aroused by an appeal to his official position, the woman of Sychar by the quickening of her sensibilities, the nobleman by access to a father's heart, and the centurion by sympathy with his servant. The grouping around him goes on. Day by day witnesses an enlarging sphere, of which he is the center. The magnetic power moves freely and has no stoppage. Men hasten to him by instinct, and instinct in them is met by the utmost spontaneousness in him. Among the poor, the wretched, the outcast, his work chiefly lies, and this because suffering and sorrow open the shortest path to what is noblest in humanity. Whence came in no long time discussion, crimination, fierce hostility? For the most part from scribes and Pharisees, men of learning and influence, whose pride of intellect and vanity of office arrayed them against him. Intellect, unregulated by something higher, always tends to return into the senses, and to experience again, and even more fully, the sensations in which it had its birth; and intellect in Christ's day was sensational in its worst form. Three hundred years later, when Julian, who was no common statesman and philosophic thinker, opposed Christianity because it was not a philosophy to the intellect, but a faith to the heart, he followed the bias of all culture when it concentrates manhood in itself. Christ proposed to satisfy the intellect by means of the affections and through the avenues of the spiritual instincts. These were more open in the "common people" than in the cultivated class, and, therefore,

most of his ministry was given to them, for "they heard him gladly."

Whatever may be said against certain current forms of Christianity, A. D. 1881, it cannot be affirmed that Christianity itself has lost its original attitude of sublimity. It still speaks as of old to the primal instincts of the human spirit, and wherever it has foothold it has it on that ground and on none other. Christ in our century is the Christ of Bethlehem, Nazareth, and Galilee, and if he is anywhere "crucified afresh," it is in our metropolitan Jerusalems, that want a secular Messiah, and will have him only. The conditions of the question, "What think ye of Christ?" are not changed a whit. Admit all that is claimed for the material progress of civilization, nevertheless the fact stands that man has not added, by modern growth, a single instinct or any other kind of moral capacity to the old constitution of his nature. What we have done by science, art, literature, and political economy, has been development, not creation; and, moreover, most of the development has been in the interest of the sense-intellect and its gratifications. It has been education in its literal meaning of drawing out, not of adding to, the human mind. Characteristics of men, not of man, have altered. And while our definitions of trade, industry, government, have been re-written to suit modern ideas, the two changeless words in our dictionary are Christ and Man. So will they remain. For these are not liable to the reversals of experience nor to the revisals of more acute observation, but dwell above the fluctuations of the atmosphere, and, by virtue of hidden contact, have fast hold of the unseen and eternal.

Christ and man stand, then, precisely in the same relation that they did eighteen centuries ago, and they have been no more affected by time than the relative positions of the sun and the earth. Christ in our century is the Christ of the New Testament. Man in our century is the man of the New Testament. As then, so at present, they are face to face. Now, if any thing in Christ's life is clear it is that he put away from himself whatever might come between him and man. We know what these intervening objects are. Family blood, hereditary traditions, wealth, fastidious tastes, class habits, are insulators that hinder the free passage of the soul-current of

humanity from one to another. On the other hand, also, poverty, ignorance, and social insensibility are separators between man and man. Were these ever greater than in Christ's time? Was the distance between patrician and plebeian, between Pharisee and the "common people," ever more marked than in his day? From all such distinctions Christ held himself habitually aloof. He was not educated as an ordinary Jewish boy. He was constantly at variance with Sadducean civilization and Pharisaic religionism; and where he conformed to Judaism it was that of the pure Hebrew type, which we have instances of in the way he observed the sanctity of the Sabbath and the memorial feasts of his country. Obviously, this mode of life was not with him an accident. Circumstances did not shape its unique configuration. It was cast in the mold of the Virgin Mother's womb. And, accordingly, when he took his place, at thirty years of age, in the open world, the organic law of his being continued its omnipotent activity in fashioning every external fact of his life in correspondence with his interior nature. Thus it was that he came directly to the heart of man. All obstructions of birth, rearing, culture, conventional usages, having been kept out of his way, the access to human instincts was free and unimpeded. Is it less so now? If it be less, it is the fault of our century.

But before we inquire how far the century is blameworthy in this matter, let us look at the typical manhood that the Lord Jesus created in the midst of a civilization which had interblended Hebrew, Greek, and Roman constituents. The first fact to meet us is that the new type did not appear in his own earthly life-time. When he died on the cross, not a single individual on earth, not the beloved John, not his own mother, understood him. A strange period of forty days intervened between his resurrection and ascension. The marvelous biography that had recorded his incarnation, career, death, resumes its task without a pause. There is no explanation, no apology, no surprise, when the dead Christ re-appears and enters again on his work of instruction and tender fellowship with his disciples. The disciples themselves were amazed at his return, but the evangelists take pains to show that their amazement was due to forgetfulness of his words. On human grounds, such an act of intellectual daring as resuscitating a

teacher and completing his teaching ought to be deemed an impossibility. On the ground of Christianity, it is simple and plain enough. The death and resurrection of Christ were essential facts in the system, and he exemplified the facts while he unfolded the infinite truths which they contained. And in this semi-glorified state he was a Christ to the senses no longer after the former method of his existence, but "showed himself" at intervals, and was a Christ to the spirit. Its distinct characteristic was that of a *quasi*-spiritual dispensation. Pentecost was near by, and these forty days were the prelude to its wonders. Pentecost came, and this typical manhood, which had passed through its three stages of training under the Christ of Nazareth, the Christ of the forty days, and the Christ of the throne, reached its development.

And how humanly philosophic, in the light of inspiration, this method was! And how beautiful in that beauty which imagination, in its moments of deepest truthfulness, sees as far remote from earthly modes of thought and yet nearer than any thing earthly to the spirit's profoundest instincts! Putting out of view its religious significance and taking it as an intellectual method, we can conceive of nothing better calculated to give us what we so much need in this age, a clear insight into the laws of mind. Here we have "God manifest in the flesh." The same organs of observation are exercised as in daily life. People are "astonished" and even "amazed." This is human experience. Yet while the wonders are occurring, a directive power is noticeable, and its aim is uniform. Over every miracle a sovereignty is enthroned. The power acts, but the sovereignty acts also. The beneficence effects a certain end, and, at the same instant, the sovereignty asserts its control. The miracle is not a spectacle for the senses. It is not an excitement for the imagination and its co-related emotions. Instead of these, it makes its way toward the reflective intellect, nor does it stop there, but advances into the moral nature. Beyond doubt, it seeks the conscience and affections, and the enforcement which the sovereignty gives is not content till its force appears in conviction and sentiment.

Is not this the very ideal of the true method of thought? Add to it the further development of the forty days and of Pentecost, and what faculty has been unawakened? what func-

tion of a faculty unquickened? what recess of the hidden soul unvisited? what latency of the progressive spirit untouched? No problem connected with the management of mind was ever so complex and difficult as that which Christ had to consider, namely, *how the human soul could be taught and trained through the senses for the spiritual realization of God*. Eighteen centuries have shown us nothing which he did not know and act upon in shaping the typical manhood to which we have referred. Is it a law of mind that the two co-existent elements of perception and sensation are always in an inverse proportion? Most fully did he recognize it. Throughout his career his miracles were quiet, unobtrusive, and prefaced by a tranquillizing influence. Is it a law of mind that feeling should be calm in order to give a continuous support to intellectual energy? Without an exception, he observed this principle. Is it a law of mind that impressions should be repeated and that the mind itself should recall them so that the brain may educate the senses as well as the senses educate the brain? This was Christ's invariable course. Is it a law of mind that impressions due to external causes should recede in process of completion from perception to reflection, and thence inward till the whole nature has been traversed? And, meantime, is the imagination ever busy as a mediating force, harmonizing the faculties in their reciprocal activities no less than in adjusting sense and spirit in their mutuality? Take the Sermon on the Mount, the sermon recorded in the sixth chapter of St. John's Gospel, and the farewell discourse, and you see Christ's recognition of these laws of thought.

It is the highest, the most august, the most sacred recognition which these laws ever received. It cannot be identified with any thing Hebrew, Greek, or Roman. It is distinctively Christ's method. No one ever suspected that these laws existed in the human mind until he appealed to them, and by the appeal made men conscious of their existence. For instance, when Christ "*showed*" himself on the second Sunday night after the resurrection to the disciples, did St. Thomas imagine that there was such a law of belief as that on which he now acted? Discarding his own philosophy of evidence, which he was challenged to put in practice, he instantly exclaimed, "My Lord and my God." The instincts of his heart were reached,

and, in spite of his recent self, unbelief was changed to worship. Now, what we urge is that the philosophy of the mind, which Christ originated as a method of thinking and incorporated into a permanent system, is the philosophy that has the deepest roots in our century. It was this philosophy that in the first quarter of our century led the tremendous reaction against the French Revolution and has steadily advanced in its achievements.

Without doubt, our times have some very painful aspects. Vast numbers seem to be living in a world given over to the senses. Materialism never had such opportunities to gratify its myriad propensities. Myriad verily they are, and the modern world has grown big enough to give them ample scope. Infidelity has its powerful auxiliaries in science, literature, and politics, as these are taught and enforced by men whose talents and learning, along with their positions, secure them public attention. But what is the source of power in these auxiliaries? Not in themselves certainly, but in their connections with a stage of civilization and a transitional period of education that have thrown around them an air of importance. The importance is fictitious, not real; it is ephemeral, not permanent. Nearly all these questions have grown up on the physical side of our nature, and they are part and parcel of physical development. So, too, neuralgia has been greatly increased in the recent progress of civilization; nerves and brain have become far more sensitive; thousands of tiny fibers, once too insignificant to play any rôle in life, have assumed a sudden importance in the animal economy, so that now we can hardly have an eager thought or a fervent desire or an anxious care without the nervous system being more or less tortured. But the spread of neuralgia does not alarm us in behalf of Christianity, and why should Darwinism, physiology, and the data of ethics? The latter are just as much the effect of physical civilization in our day as neuralgia, only differing in this, that in the latter the nervous structure has been implicated, whereas in the former the mind has taken cognizance of certain phenomena and theorized about them in the mood of the times.

Let us not be misunderstood. We do not say that these questions are on the same level with neuralgia. What we do

say is, that they are the products of a material civilization, which, owing to various causes, has lately had a rapid and extensive augmentation of its forces. They have not sprung from the mind itself. No instinct of the soul called for them. They met no want of reason or conscience. Our relations spiritually to God, morally to man, had nothing to do with their origin. On the contrary, the animal man is the only party interested in their discussion. And we admit that this is an interest, because it is desirable to have exact ideas of man's place in the physical universe. At the same time we protest against the folly and evil of importing them from their native region into a domain where they do not belong. Starting from man's consciousness that he is a thinking, willing, and responsible being, and that this consciousness under the light of Christianity contrasts itself as an infinitude of evidence between his higher nature and the lower animality by which he is related to the outward economy of things, we may very advantageously inquire into man's connections with the physical universe. This great branch of scientific investigation has been neglected long enough, and we are now suffering the penalty of neglect. Our punishment has come in the natural order of events and under the authenticating seal of providence. Yet, nevertheless, there is a right way to pursue this inquiry and a wrong way. The wrong way seems just now to be in the ascendant. And the result is, the animal man is uppermost; and what essays he writes for magazines and reviews, what lectures he delivers, what poems and novels he creates! And what a fine creature this animal man is with the mimetic parrot, the noisy jay-bird, the stealthy snake, the royal lion, perfected in him.

This is one aspect of our century. For the first time in the history of the race, we have an approximation to the ideal of an animal man. Epicurus had the disabilities of heathendom. Horace lacked earnestness. Lucretius had to do much of his own thinking. Nero was a brute. Montaigne was a provisional doubter. Hume retired into the shades of metaphysics to indulge his subtle skepticism. Voltaire wrote with a gold ring from royalty, and Rousseau was a sentimentalist, "awearied of the world." But in the long run Time gives every thing a fair chance, and Time has been just to the animal man. And this animal man has reached—so we may suppose—his devel-

opment in our century, and wears the panoply of perfected power. He is not a sensual being. He is in no respect low and vulgar. Though made "of the earth" and therefore "earthly," he has been well made out of unparadised dust, and even the touches of soft hands, such hands as Miss Martineau's, Miss Bevington's, and George Eliot's, are traceable in his fashioning. In brief, he is the animal man, as the opposite of the spiritual man. If you recall Christ's typical man, as completed at Pentecost, and set this other typical man beside him, the breadth of contrast appears. Christ's typical man was like Christ. One of the first things he did was to imitate him by healing the lame man at the beautiful gate of the temple. A grand model is a grand inspiration, and the typical man of Christianity, appearing in one aspect in the impulsive heartiness of St. Peter, in another in the benignity and insight of St. John, in yet another in the sublimity of St. Paul, strove to conform to his model. But where is the model of this animal man? And what is it? A modern Plato could not find it among his archetypes.

Beneath all this, however, may not Providence be working in behalf of Christianity? The relations of man to the material universe, and through it to Almighty God as the maker, preserver, orderer of all things, as we have said, have been strangely neglected. Beyond question, the human race in Christian lands has reached a point in its advancement at which a much more liberal and comprehensive philosophy of our physical attitude and its connections is greatly needed. Stomach, blood, nerves, brain, mean a good deal more now than ever before. Social vices, and especially the sins of great cities, make an urgent appeal for consideration. Philanthropy requires a broader basis of activity. Above all, men have to be told what a common tenantry of the globe means, and how far-reaching sectionality and inter-nationality are with regard to race-unity. Pause a moment, and consider what an immense gain would accrue to education, and thereby to the interests of knowledge, if we had a mental physiology which would command general assent on the ground of ascertained facts. Metaphysics would then have its complementary science, or, rather, the two together would furnish a science of mind. How many religious disputes would such a science settle! Calvinism and

Arminianism run down their tap-roots into laws of the mind. So do Ritualism and Quakerism. Nor is it too much to say that Romanism and Protestantism rest on essential differences in intellectual philosophy. Let us not be thought extravagant if we affirm that a true system of mental philosophy, acknowledging the spirituality of the mind while approaching the study of it through the body, would make such a work as President Edwards' "Inquiry into the Freedom of the Will" as impossible as Mr. Buckle's "History of Civilization." For aught we know, Christianity may now be silently preparing to recover for itself the ground which an atheistic or a mere theistic scheme of philosophy is laboring to acquire. Providence has a vast force of miscellaneous workers, each set heedless of others, often self-absorbed, still oftener antagonistic, and the noisy Babel goes on with its confusion of tongues till Pentecost comes and every man hears in the tongue wherein he has been born "the wonderful works of God." Pentecost, thanks to God, is the ideal end of Babel!

Turn now to another view of this question. Many tell us that Christianity is "*moribund*." By what method of thought do they reach the alarming conclusion? They speak of the decay of reverence, of the wide unloosing of moral ties, of the want of respect for authority, and particularly the authority of public opinion, of the debauchery of national morality by the prostration of national conscience, and of the loss of the old beliefs. On this foundation they rest their convictions and announce the impending fate of Christianity. But it is no foundation at all. Jesus Christ our Lord did not build on any such basis, and, consequently, it is no basis for a criticism on the fortunes and historic prospects of his religion. Surely we should ask an artist in what light he meant his picture to be seen. Michael Angelo had a certain idea in his mind when he swung the dome over St. Peter's, and we ought to understand it. Shakspeare violated his usual method of dramatization when he wrote the "Julius Cæsar," and we should know the reason thereof before presuming to criticise the tragedy. In the instance of Christianity we are under yet more stringent obligations to get the right stand-point as preliminary to a true method of thinking. It professes to be a divine religion. By that standard of judgment it must be tried. Instead of this,

our prophets of evil take the unpromising appearances on the surface of society, and form their conclusions. They are prophets of the eye. Prophets of the eye may do for the weather, but they are not trustworthy in matters touching Christianity. Long ago a great prophet yielded to his eye, and, sinking under the weak tyranny, cried out: "I, even I only, am left." But in that disheartening day there were "seven thousand in Israel" who had not bowed unto Baal. At such a time "seven thousand" were enough to re-stock a depleted empire.

Among the depreciating critics of Christianity in our day Mr. James Anthony Froude is prominent. One of his genius, backed up by an intrepid spirit, always commands attention. His temperament is that of a warrior, his intellect that of a scholar, while his habit of thought is that of a student of affairs. Yet his mind runs in a groove of contrast, and beneath this energetic sense of contrast lies a theory of "Progress," always on the alert to show itself, and always imperious in its narrow logic. He falls into an antithesis as easily as Shakespeare's Brutus at Cæsar's funeral, and without the excuse of Brutus, who had really nothing to say. Mr. Froude has much to say, and he says it with uncommon force. With him the present is always antithetic to the past. Now, it is well enough to compare the past with the present, but better to have an ideal of the future when we would estimate the present. Rarely does it happen that a man can have his ideal in the past and not be its partisan. Sometimes, too, we find it necessary to be independent of our higher self, lest the subtlety of prejudice conquer us unawares. But Mr. Froude, honest and lofty-minded as he is, never detaches a favorite conception, like the "days of yore," from his intellect, and looks at it as something foreign. When he writes the "sketch" of Cæsar he shows statesmanship and learning. Neither Merivale nor Mommsen is his equal in vividness, in ease of grouping, and in strength of effect. Yet when he portrays Bunyan, while he displays very keen discernment of what may be called the intellectual philosophy of his marvelous experience, he fails to comprehend that deeper psychology in which the essence of his subject is contained. Under all the disguises of the seventeenth century, Bunyan was a precursor of the religious spirit

of our century. He was nearer our times than his own. The tender heart of humanity in "Pilgrim's Progress," escaping the trammels of creeds and confessions and vindicating our primal instincts, lifted him above the Puritanism of his period, and signalized the forthcoming era of Christian sentiment as the beautiful efflorescence of Christian principle. But this is precisely what Mr. Froude was unable to see. To illustrate this, we have only to give a remark of his when contrasting Bunyan's intensity of religious emotion with that of our day: "Conviction of sin has become a conventional phrase, shallow and ineffective even in those who use it most sincerely." This is downright extravagance. Thousands of men in our times have had just as searching and overpowering "conviction of sin" as the Bedfordshire tinker, only their sensational nerves were not as much disturbed as his, nor did they have his extraordinary genius to express it in images like those that leaped from the hot furnace of his heart.

Another of these sharp critics of the age is Mr. Ruskin. Of his sympathy with truth and goodness no man can have a doubt. Reverence for God, personal devotion to Christ's service, human love for human interests, are qualities so thoroughly intermixed with his nature as to come forth on all occasions. He cannot criticise a painting, describe a landscape, quote a stanza from Scott or Wordsworth, without his soul showing itself in some utterance of love and veneration beyond the object in question. Within the last forty years his services to Anglo-Saxon thought have been invaluable. And they have been so not simply because of knowledge imparted, and that, too, of a quality extremely scarce in books, but by reason of a personal spirit, quick to penetrate and pungent enough to stimulate one's faculties. One feels called, under his strong words, to be an observer of nature and a critic of art. The man always gets in front of the author, and at times throws back such a heavy shadow that the author quite disappears. Beauty never had a more devout expounder than he. The expounder is philosopher, poet, preacher, all in one. When we add that he occasionally puts on the old Hebrew prophet, and denounces from behind the shaggy mantle and the leather girdle, we mention what, in his complement of characters, never loses a chance to display itself in a fierce climax.

Hooker was a passion with Mr. Ruskin's early manhood, and he has imitated the great ecclesiastical thinker not a little—his judiciousness excepted. Jeremy Taylor comes back to us in him, on the whole, much improved. He has somewhat of Coleridge's amplitude of discursiveness, but he is pretty sure to keep his subject in sight, and also his reader—a virtue that Coleridge despised. Yet, most of all, he is John Ruskin, intellectually brave to the verge of romance, always ready, by step or stride or leap, to get in advance of his age, and loftily indifferent whether or not he has any following. While he has been one of the noblest teachers of righteousness this century has bred, he has been an apostle of art, and of art in its true sense and best uses. No man ever did a tithe of the work he has accomplished in showing the vital union between beauty and purity, and in this—the leading function of his life—his efforts command universal respect and gratitude. "Consider the lilies;" how well he has done it! Of all the commentators on Christ's Gospel he has gone most to the original objects, to the field and forest and mountain, and reverently pointed out where the Lord of nature laid his hand and left his smile. The remark of Isaac Taylor, that Nature, by her "diversities, her gay adornments, and copious fund of forms," allures the eye of man to draw him on to "the more arduous but more noble pursuit of her hidden analogies," he has illustrated with a scope of originality and a plenitude of resources uncommon among men who have trod the higher walks of genius.

Yet, with all his fine endowments, Mr. Ruskin has an unusual share of the frailty that depreciates the religious earnestness of our century. How a man like him can produce volume after volume with scarcely a warm word of commendation for the age is a mystery. In the "Modern Painters" the divine earnestness of the old masters is eulogized well-nigh to extravagance. Recently, however, his eye seems to have been busy finding morbid flesh for cauterization. If we have not had enough of this infirmity of talent in Thackeray and the later George Eliot, the Anglo-Saxon capacity to stand an attempted flaying is a charming testimony to the protecting mercy of its skin. Ridicule and sarcasm, as commonly used, are born of the lower nature of authors, and act on the lower nature of readers. They are of the animal intellect, refined

forms of the sting of the wasp and the fang of the snake. Unquestionably, it is sometimes necessary to employ them. But to make it a business to exercise art and ingenuity in this way is to wound, not to heal, to be smart not to be wise, to corrupt, not to purify. Mr. Ruskin, in his "Fors" and in the discussions on the Lord's Prayer, is full of fault-finding. Nay, more, he is often harshly censorious. It was a beautiful thing in him to write of "Moderation" as the "girdle and safeguard of all the attributes;" but, had he exemplified it a little more in his personal example, the lesson would have had its beauty enhanced. Writing of the life of the Middle Ages, he says that "it was interwoven with white and purple," while "ours is one seamless stuff of brown. . . . The profoundest reason of this darkness of heart is, I believe, our want of faith. There never yet was a generation of men (savage or civilized) who, taken as a body, so woefully fulfilled the words 'having no hope, and without God in the world.' A red Indian or Otaheitan savage has more sense of a Divine existence round him or government over him than the plurality of refined Londoners and Parisians." This is a masterpiece in the annals of literary dogmatism.

Others have written in the same strain. We cannot but regard it as utterly erroneous. Christianity is not "*moribund*," but is doing its work quite as fast and quite as well as could be looked for in a generation like ours. The evil in the world is confessedly gigantic. We see and know it. In an advancing civilization evil comes with great facility to the surface, and, relatively to the amount, the eyes that notice and the tongues that report it have very largely increased. How bad the world is the newspapers keep us well posted every morning. How good it is we are not quite as well informed. Outward life of all sorts is excessively demonstrative, and is feverish to have itself advertised. Meantime private life, while enlarging its sphere and multiplying its blessings, conceals itself from prying inspection. Christianity, thanks to God, does not imitate the daily newspaper. It follows the method of the family, and not that of the babbling thoroughfare. Its emblem is the dew falling in quiet benedictions. It "cometh not with observation." If so, how can we apply the measure of the sense-intellect to its workings, and take a census of its products as we

would of the population and its wealth? Its statistics are not within our reach, and never can be. Christian institutions endowed, hospitals erected, asylums opened, charities increased, sermons preached, Sunday-schools established, five millions of the colored people cared for, the amazing impulse recently given to the spirit of foreign missions, hundreds of thousands converted annually to God—these are, indeed, magnificent results, and they are occurring right under our eyes. But, notwithstanding all these things, we have here but a fragment of the glorious effects of Christianity in our century. The grandeur of Christianity is, that it can dispense with the attestations of the senses and the sensuous intellect. It is the heaven of almightiness, and, therefore, hidden. Only in one sphere is its sublimity fully exercised—the sphere of unconsciousness; and while the earth alternates its affluence of fertility and loveliness in successive seasons, and the stars move in visible splendor night by night across the vast spaces of the firmament, Christianity is content to exert its unceasing omnipotence where no eye can see and no voice can celebrate the majesty of its triumphs. And so evermore the miracle of Christ, with the two disciples on the way to Emmaus, repeats itself. Our eyes are “holden,” and the Infinite Glory walks by our side in the garb of a stranger.

ART. V.—THE EARLY ERRORS AND RECENT PROGRESS OF PHILOLOGY.

THE days of the Old Philology are numbered. Born almost too late to witness the death of its sisters, the other deductive sciences, and sole relic of their brood, it has passed through a green old age and lingering dissolution which are among the marvels of the century. Now that in the department of the classics we see at last all the old manuals which taught us in our school-boyhood that Greek was parent to the Latin either discarded, or rewritten in order to embody “the latest results of modern scholarship,” we may safely pronounce the dominion of mediæval ideas in philology over, and the succession of true linguistic science accomplished. The occasion suggests the following inquiries: What were the errors of the dis-

carded philology, and the reason of its strange persistence? What is the science of Comparative Philology, and how did it originate? These questions we shall endeavor to answer briefly.

It is a difficult task to revive the assumptions which formed the basis of an ancient science; but it is not hard to account for the rise of philology. It has, in fact, had many beginnings; and under the old conditions, or out of the reach of the new light, would create itself independently again in many an isolated brain. It did not grow up, like the other sciences, from accumulated traditions, nor was it propagated in a lineage of masters, but rather may be said to have perpetuated itself from its own ashes. All the outfit that was necessary for a discoverer in philology was a mind consenting to be curious about the origin of words and speech. No special preparation was called for, no mastery of predecessors' labors: all the requisite material was derivable from within. For the tendency to etymologize,—to push words back upon their reserves of meaning, is common to the learned and illiterate alike, and amounts to an instinct of the race. It seems to be accepted as an axiom by every mind that words contain within themselves some warrant for their existence, and, like coin, possess an intrinsic value in addition to that stamped upon their face. The man wholly unlettered, and slow to appropriate the language of books, displays this tendency in his so-called popular etymologies. When he hears long and unusual words that convey to his mind no meaning, he instinctively forces them into some shape self-explaining or at least intelligible, and capable of being remembered and put to use. To his ear asparagus is "sparrow-grass" or nothing, and perhaps equinoctial, "*au-tioneer*."* The man of literary tastes and culture, though in general content to accept the facts of his native language without inquiry, who perhaps never looks into his dictionary for a derivation, will yet, upon occasion, philosophize over the origin and inner meaning of some word which has impressed his fancy, and will probably experience a lively curiosity concerning the many correspondences he discovers in the languages he may chance to know. If his tastes are decidedly linguistic, or if he be drawn into the field of lexicography or some other

* A veritable instance, heard repeatedly by the writer from the lips of an illiterate native of New England.

especially philological labor, he will in time frame a theory of his own concerning the relations of the languages with which he has to do,—a theory which experience shows is likely to be different from all others ever devised, yet with them will surely be reducible to this assumption: that any given word in any language can be explained by some other word similar in meaning, form, or both, in some other language, living or dead. That the languages thus associated should be, or ever have been, spoken by contiguous peoples, or should have ever had the opportunity of mutual borrowing, is not thought of at all as a condition, the essential unity of all human speech being taken for granted with the rest. This common assumption—whether grounded on theological inferences, or an intuitional glimpse of truth, crude as the mediæval belief in the philosopher's stone, it would be useless to inquire here—is the sole basis of the philology now discarded.

The old scholars seem never to have encountered the suspicion that their principle was too broad. If they found a word in Chinese or Zulu similar in sound or meaning to an English or German vocable, they did hesitate to affirm that the two terms were identical, or that one was parent to the other. How it was possible for races utterly unlike in civilization, and separated for thousands of years from all possible contact, to borrow words from one another, they did not stop to inquire. They did not stop to think, moreover, that in many instances the older forms of the words compared were very unlike their present shape. There are even yet eminent investigators of the outlying languages of the world who refuse to be warned of the risk of inaccuracy here. If they find a word in an African or South American language, which, as often enough happens, has the same pronunciation as some word in English, and a meaning not irreconcilably diverse, they accept it at once as a case of identity, without taking the precaution of inquiring whether either or both of the words have changed in form since the earliest known records of the languages. We recollect how loath we were to give up the belief that *whole* was the Greek *ὅλος*: we had found this asserted in our earliest Greek vocabulary, and it was a most convincing etymology. But the primitive or earliest known Teutonic form of *whole* is *hails*, between which and *ὅλος* no such affinity would have been suspected.

There was, moreover, an almost utter ignorance in those early days of the laws of change and growth in language, which are as positive and unfailing as any thing in science. Thus it has been established that two kindred dialects, if entirely separated and without the conservative force of a literature and literary standards, can in a century become so dissimilar as to conceal all proof of kinship except to trained and expert examination. In the case of two languages thus dissevered and grown unlike, identity of form or meaning must be held as casual, and no relationship admitted until by tracing to first stages the original of each word is seen to have been identical in archaic form. In general, in etymology, mere resemblance must go for nothing, since the most direct and positive kinship will often be found to exist in words every way unlike. Nothing is to be admitted in derivation except on proof, which proof must consist in tracing words back through their history to their first occurrence or their source. If, for example, we wish to find the origin of the English plural *are*, which does not occur in Anglo-Saxon, instead of resorting to the Latin and fastening its parentage upon *eram*, which would not be worse than many of the hap-hazard etymologies, we should begin with to-day's English and follow the word back through old authors to its first appearance in the language. It will in this way be quickly proved of alien origin, represented in its oldest form by the Old Norse *erum*, and brought into English by the Danes. This recourse to the earliest monuments of a language, and the calling into service of its history to determine the derivation of its words, have given the name Historical Etymology to that branch of modern philology.

A moderate number of coincidences of form or meaning, moreover, was accepted as proof that the languages in which they occurred were similar or akin. But close comparison of all most any two languages, taken at random, will disclose enough accidental resemblances to afford such evidence; and the philologists were speedily confounded in a new confusion. There was no starting-point from which to begin the classification of the languages of the world; and without determining the families of human speech there was little hope of progress. For more than two centuries the maze grew wider with every newly acquired language, until in the discovery of Sanskrit the

key to the required classification was obtained, and the science of comparative philology established. It is a curious history, and will be given as nearly as may be from the beginning in the order of events.

Philology, though named by the Greeks, does not date its proper beginning from their era. They had too much contempt for the babblers (*βάρβαροι*) who constituted the rest of mankind, to compare speech with them; and Rome later, bent only on universal conquest and domination, cared little for the languages she displaced with Latin. The first philologists, therefore, do not appear until after the revival of learning. Essays at verbal etymology are here and there met with in Plato, Cicero, Varro, and the scholiasts, but hardly a glance at the broad field destined at length to be occupied by western scholars. To Theodore Bibliander appears to belong the credit of beginning the comparison of miscellaneous tongues. He published in 1548 a commentary containing a version of the Lord's Prayer in fourteen languages, and a theory of affinity in which he derives the Celtic dialects from Greek. This labor was quickly imitated and its comparisons extended by other scholars, so that by the end of the century the Lord's Prayer had been published in fifty different tongues. As the survey of the linguistic field advanced fresh correspondences were noted, and new explanations of the affinities they were supposed to prove attempted. Lipsius and others asserted a close relationship between the Persian and German languages, which was explained by the supposition that the former idiom had been produced by the blending of Greek, Latin, and German elements. But ere long the attention of philologists was drawn away from the task of linking together the various languages of the world to the negative one of explaining how they could all have been derived from Hebrew. The belief that this must have been the original speech of man had been found in the writings of the Fathers, who had derived it perhaps traditionally from Jewish sources, and was held by nearly all scholars of note. A small minority in the mean time put forth counter theories of the most diverse, and often of the most amusing, character. Goropius Becanus maintained that Dutch must have been the dialect of Eden, and, in a work published in 1580, attempted to show that the very names Adam and Eve were

self-evident compounds of Low-Dutch words. Other claimants of the honor were Pezron for the Celtic, Kempe for the Scandinavian dialects, and the Spaniard Erro for the Basque. But the orthodox had better grounds for their advocacy of Hebrew. It being admitted, as it then was universally, that speech was not a human instrument, but a divine gift to man, it was natural to conclude that it must have been imparted in the form of a complete and perfected language. What language could this have been if not the Hebrew, the language of the chosen race and the depositary of the oracles of God? In this reasoning they seem to have forgotten the Confusion, which, whatever the original speech, would have changed it beyond recognition. At any rate, the task of tracing the multitude of tongues so diverse to this Semitic source proved not only discouraging but endless. Every new language complicated the problem. Not even could the venerated Greek and Latin, the next languages in importance, be successfully referred to this original: the great skill and acumen with which one authority professed to have proved the descent were rejected by another no less eminent. At length, after several generations of zealous toil had been thrown away in the vain attempt to solve this false enigma, the time arrived for putting away the deductive method also from philology. The inductive system had already yielded rich results in other fields. It was the days of Newton and Leibnitz; and the latter philosopher, after compassing the whole circle of science, paused to inaugurate anew the department of philology. In a letter to Tenzel he called attention to the utter absence of proof that Hebrew was any thing more than any other language. He urged upon travelers the necessity of gathering the facts and vocabularies of all new languages they should chance to find, not only for the sake of philological material, but also as aid in solving the problems of ethnography, another scientific departure of this master-mind. In a letter written in 1713 to Peter the Great, he suggests the systematic collation of vocabularies and translations of the Lord's Prayer and Ten Commandments into the various obscure idioms of the empire. "This," he adds, "would increase the glory of your majesty, . . . and likewise, by means of a comparison of languages, enable us to discover the origin of those nations which have advanced from Scythia to other countries."

Leibnitz had inferred, from the small array of facts at hand, that the nations of Europe had emigrated from the East. He did not live to see his wishes accomplished. None of his supporters had his foresight or expectations, though the impulse he gave to research and comparison of dialects did not die out. Some time after his death his plan of collating languages was taken up by the Spanish Jesuit missionary Don Lorenzo Hervás, who, after many years of unremitting labor, published a catalogue of more than three hundred languages. This was in 1800. A few years before he had seen the first grammar of Sanskrit, the work of Fra Paolo di San Bartolomeo, just published at Rome, and was thus put in possession of some facts unaccessible before. Although with the key to the enigma of the western languages thus in his hands, Hervás failed to recognize its use, finding in the new language proofs merely that the Greeks had borrowed forms of speech from the farthest Orient. Meanwhile other laborers scarcely less diligent were executing the behests of Leibnitz. The advice contained in his letter to Peter the Great had lain neglected during the czar's lifetime, but now found acceptance with the Empress Catharine II. She not only favored the plan Leibnitz had sketched out, but entered also personally into the drudgery of its execution, and appears to have withdrawn from all business of state for the best part of a year, comparing languages and filling up tables of correspondences from all the languages of which she could obtain information. At length tiring of the labor, she consigned her mass of materials to Prof. Pallas, the naturalist, to be finished for publication. It was an ungrateful commission, hastily and perfunctorily executed (*invita Minerva*, as he confesses), the work appearing in 1787. It bore a rather pretentious title, *Linguarum Totius Orbis Vocabularia Comparativa*, considering that in the first edition only the Asiatic and European languages were compared. A few years later there were added several of the African and American dialects, amounting to two hundred and eighty in all. A still greater work,—the final of its class, and derived largely from the two preceding, was now projected, the *Mithridates* of Adelung and Vater. It filled four volumes, and was not finished until 1817. In plan it was essentially different from its predecessors, containing, instead of alphabetic

word-lists, a history and description of the various languages, with tables of correspondences and versions of the Lord's Prayer.

But, since 1784, the most important work was being done for philology in India. The task of reducing important languages elsewhere to grammar and comparison had long been prosecuted, but only the most barren and unsatisfactory results had been derived. The reason lay in the strange omission of Sanskrit from the close examination that had generally been given to other tongues,—Sanskrit, the only language capable of throwing light upon the others. In the year just named the Asiatic Society was founded at Calcutta, and the sacred idiom of the Brahmins began to yield its secrets. Sir William Jones was the first member of this famous coterie to perceive and declare its relations to the classic languages. A very slight examination was sufficient to reveal to him what had escaped Bartolomeo and the two or three priests who had studied the language before him, that this Sanskrit, with the Greek and Latin, had sprung from some common parent apparently no longer in existence: they were sister languages, dialects of the same family, and not derived from one another. It was scarcely less probable, he further observed, that the Celtic, Zend, and Gothic were descended from the same source. In point of literary merit he rated the Sanskrit as far superior to Greek and Latin, an opinion which later study shows was unduly influenced by the almost unrivaled sweetness and beauty of a single work, the *Shakuntāla* of Kalidāsa. This drama he translated into English, together with the episode of Nala, from the mammoth epic called the *Mahā-bhārata*, while other members of the society prepared translations of other Sanskrit classics, and compiled grammars from the voluminous works of native scholars upon that subject.

The necessity for the use of Sanskrit in the Indian civil service soon brought manuscripts and teachers to England to set up the study of the language there. After the death of Sir William Jones, in 1794, there was left no scholar in England apparently at all inclined to examine further into the kind or degree of resemblance borne by Sanskrit to its sister dialects. The part England was to perform for comparative philology seems to have been only to give the less venturesome nations

of Europe access to Sanskrit stores. Scholars from the continent were at once attracted to London to study the new language and make copies of its manuscripts, and among them two Germans, whose names are imperishably connected with the science of language they were to found,—Frederick Schlegel and Francis Bopp. Schlegel was the first to be heard from on his return, and in his “*Essay upon the Language and Philosophy of the Indians*” drew the almost obvious inferences which form the basis of modern philology, and formulated some of its governing principles. To the family of languages thus established he applied the name Indo-Germanic, derived from what he supposed were the antipodal limits of its spread. All this was but the work of the discoverer and pioneer. Bopp followed in 1816 with his “*System of Conjugation*,” in which he compared the inflection of the verb in the Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, Persian, and German languages. In this, though a most important work, Bopp but lays the foundation of the greatest name in philology. He afterward superseded it by his *Comparative Grammar of the Greek, Latin, Zend, Lithuanic, Slavonic, Gothic, and German languages*, which, in consideration of the fact that he had no predecessors from whom to draw, fairly eclipses all the discoveries and achievements made by other investigators in philology, and goes far toward establishing his fame as inferior to none other among all scientists. So firm is Bopp’s hold upon every side of his vast subject, and so clear and sagacious his perception, that only in minute particulars is his work defective, and can never be superseded. The first volume, which appeared in 1833, was the fruit of twenty years’ labor, and twenty years more were required to finish the whole work.

The attention of linguists, as we have seen, was early drawn to the close resemblances of form in many words observed in certain of the languages above enumerated. It is no wonder that their minds were filled with expectation : such correspondences could have sprung only from some remarkable fact of connection ; and this conviction spurred them to persevere in their gropings after its discovery. In the majority of cases where there was similarity of form there was also identity of meaning, as in these examples :

ENGLISH,	<i>brother</i>	<i>new</i>	<i>month</i>	<i>name</i>	<i>strew</i>
SANSKRIT,	<i>bhratar</i>	<i>nava</i>	<i>mas</i>	<i>naman</i>	<i>stri</i>
PERSIAN,	<i>brata</i>	<i>nava</i>	<i>maonh</i>	<i>naman</i>	<i>star</i>
GREEK,	<i>φρατήρ</i>	<i>νέος</i>	<i>μήν</i>	<i>ὄνομα</i>	<i>στρώννυμι</i>
LATIN,	<i>frater</i>	<i>novus</i>	<i>mensis</i>	<i>nomen</i>	<i>sterno</i>
GOthic,	<i>brothar</i>	<i>niuyis</i>	<i>mena</i>	<i>namo</i>	<i>straujan</i>
GERMAN,	<i>brude</i>	<i>neu</i>	<i>monat</i>	<i>name</i>	<i>streuen</i>
SLAVONIC,	<i>bratr</i>	<i>novu</i>	<i>meseci</i>	<i>i-man</i>	<i>stre</i>

Such instances of almost perfect identity of form and meaning in languages, separated by thousands of miles of space and thousands of years of time from the possibility of mutual borrowing, might be said to constitute in themselves sufficient evidence of kinship. But the many accidental coincidences which are constantly met with, in meaning as well as form, in words belonging to the most unrelated languages, require that the investigator find a likeness of grammatical structure also before admitting relationship or descent. Schlegel laid down this first principle of comparative philology, and demonstrated that in the comparison of languages really akin this evidence will never be wanting, and can never mislead; since, however much languages may borrow from one another's vocabularies, they can never borrow methods of inflection. Bopp illustrated this truth in his "Conjugationssystem" by comparisons of inflectional terminations like the following, in which the similarity is seen to be hardly less striking than before:

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
ENGLISH,	<i>bear-</i>	<i>bear-est</i>	<i>bear-eth</i>	ENGLISH,	<i>bear-</i>	<i>bear-</i>	<i>bear-</i>
SANSKRIT,	<i>bharā-mi</i>	<i>bhara-si</i>	<i>bhara-ti</i>	SANSKRIT,	<i>bharā-mas</i>	<i>bhara-tha</i>	<i>bhara-nti</i>
PERSIAN,	<i>barā-mi</i>	<i>bara-hi</i>	<i>bara-ti</i>	PERSIAN,	<i>barā-mahi</i>	<i>bara-ta</i>	<i>bara-nti</i>
GREEK,	<i>φέρω</i>	<i>(φέρει-σι)</i>	<i>(φέρει-τι)</i>	GREEK,	<i>(φέρω-μες)</i>	<i>φέρει-τε</i>	<i>(φέρω-ντι)</i>
LATIN,	<i>fero-</i>	<i>(feri-s)</i>	<i>(feri-t)</i>	LATIN,	<i>feri-mus</i>	<i>(feri-tis)</i>	<i>feru-nt</i>
GOthic,	<i>bai-ra</i>	<i>bairi-s</i>	<i>bairi-th</i>	GOthic,	<i>baira-m</i>	<i>bairi-th</i>	<i>baira-nd</i>
O. GERMAN,	<i>beru-</i>	<i>beri-s</i>	<i>beri-t</i>	O. GERMAN,	<i>bera-mes</i>	<i>bera-t</i>	<i>bera-nt</i>
CELTIC,	<i>biur-</i>	<i>bir-</i>	<i>beri-d</i>	CELTIC,	<i>bera-m</i>	<i>beri-th</i>	<i>bera-t</i>
SLAVONIC,	<i>bra-mi</i>	<i>bra-shi</i>	<i>bra-ti</i>	SLAVONIC,	<i>bra-mu</i>	<i>bru-te</i>	<i>bra-nti</i>

Such correspondences as these were found to run through the whole system of inflection, noun as well as verb; and nearer examination revealed every-where still more minute traces of original identity. Bopp continued his investigations with indefatigable zeal, and soon, re-enforced by the labors of other eminent philologists, proceeded to solve some of the most abstruse problems of the science. This half century be-

ginning with the date of Schlegel's "Essay" is the heroic age of philology. Almost every department was at once occupied, and with a genius and enthusiasm which we are already beginning to wonder at. One of the early questions which had arisen—that relative to the common origin of the verb-endings above given—was answered in a discovery which, in a sense, was the key to the whole Indo-Germanic system of inflection. These endings were found to be nothing less than the personal pronouns, which, as subject to the verb, had been placed after instead of before it, and at length compounded with it. A mere glance at the table shows this true for the singular. In the plural the pronouns were combined, *ma-sa* (*me* and *thou*) forming the needed *we*, *sa-ta* (*thou* and *he*) the second personal suffix, and *an-ti* (*he* and *he*, or *that one* and *that*) the third. Thus was here obtained a glimpse of the root-stage of the primitive Indo-Germanic speech, and of the beginning of its inflection. Words which stood in isolation and independent in the sentence, as in Chinese, had become compounds; then, through long use, the independent significance and value of one of them being lost sight of, it was degraded to a mere affix, and became an instrument of inflection. Every-where in the system of substantive declension Bopp found the fossil relics of extinct words; and, further, in the verb the signs of voice, tense, and mode were traced to words still preserved in Sanskrit or Greek. Finally, evidence was accumulated sufficient to require the conclusion that every syllable of all polysyllables in any of the languages of the family (including each descendant, and hence modern English also) is the representative of what was originally an independent word. From the monosyllabic stage to the full inflectional, composition had been the principle of growth. As for the time required for this development there were no safe grounds for computation; but the study of the languages of other families of human speech had furnished illustrations of the process. The Chinese was an instance of a language which had remained monosyllabic and isolating from its earliest history; but in the body of this speech there were found traces of the beginning of composition which had probably been checked at the outset, but would yet, perhaps, overcome the rigid traditions of the language in its own good time. In the Turkish and Japanese there was found an example of growth

by composition, checked at the point where each element used in inflection retained its early, independent meaning. This may be seen in the inflection of the Turkish verb, to love. The first person, *sever-im*, is not I love, but lover-I; *sever-sen* is lover-thou; while the third person is simply *sever*, lover. Thus in like manner for the plural, *sever-iz*, *sever-siz*, *sever-ler*. Here we see that the pronouns *im*, *sen*, *iz*, etc., are not mere suffixes or endings of inflection, but keep their value as in true compounds. In these languages there is proof that the further progress of inflection had been begun: there are forms in which the added syllables are little more than endings, containing no longer the independent suggestion of things, but only of relation. There is little doubt that this development would have gone on rapidly had not national success introduced the practice of writing and insured the foundation of a literature. All languages stop rapid changes, except of vocabulary, at the civilized stage, though each family has its own type and own limit of development. The Indo-Germanic languages show also that a type when once perfected may return upon its steps toward cruder forms, as is so often illustrated in geology. After the primitive or parent speech had perfected the wonderful system of inflection which Sanskrit so well preserves, it began to retrace the path of centuries. Each successive descendant dialect shows increased inflectional loss, until we have in the unborrowed or Anglo-Saxon half of modern English a virtual return to monosyllabism.

The old conjecture of a period when only the ultimate roots of speech were used was thus confirmed; and even these roots were in due time traced out and reduced to two ultimate classes, a pronominal and a verbal, the former including those roots used at will in the designation of objects, the latter names of attributes. It was little further that science could go in this direction, and the question of the origin of language and of the kind and degree of relationship borne by the different families of language to one another, was put off for a time. Meanwhile inquiries relative to the earlier history of the Indo-Germanic, or now preferably called Indo-European, dialects, were being prosecuted. Of these the Sanskrit was clearly the oldest, having preserved the system of inflection of the primitive language, whatever that was, almost unaltered. A glance,

such as we have taken above, in the way of comparison, was enough to show how widely each of the other languages had departed from the norm. In the eight cases of Sanskrit, which included a locative and an instrumental, one reads the cause of the double and triple functions of certain cases in Greek and Latin, and of the consequent confusion in their syntax. Sanskrit had preserved these ancient forms because it had ceased to be a living speech so early, passing out of use about 500 B. C., and from the accident of being a sacred language, and so guarded against change. Its inner sanctity proceeded from the circumstance of its being the depositary of the Brahmanic Scriptures, the four Vedas, which were compositions that had been handed down traditionally from a period long anterior to written speech. So sacredly had these treasures been preserved that the words and metric form had often been kept when the traditional interpretation had been lost. This was of inestimable importance, as the knowledge obtained by applying the aid of comparative philology could be accepted as undeniably authentic. The results obtained were surprising. Hardly a dogma or a practice of the modern religion of the Brahmins was found sanctioned or recorded in these old rituals, while in character and customs the patriarchal forefathers were shown to have been incomparably superior to their effeminate descendants. Many local references prove that this ancient people were newcomers into India, and were advancing from the north-west passes to the occupancy of the country. The period of this immigration could have been but little later than 2000 B. C.

Burnouf, in his researches with the Zend, found out the late companions of this wandering people. It had fallen to his lot to attempt the riddle of the Parsis. This people, Persian exiles in India since probably the tenth century, had been discovered to be worshipers of fire according to what purported to be the ritual of the Zoroastrian religion, and to possess sacred books written in a language they no longer understood. From these a translation that had long before been made into their more modern speech was in use among the priests. Manuscripts of these scriptures—the Zend-Avesta—were brought to Europe, but no scholar could decipher their forgotten secrets. In 1771 Anquetil Dupéron published a full translation, but from the version of the Parsis, and not from the originals. Fifty years

later Erasmus Rask, the eminent Danish scholar, established the fact that there was an intimate connection between the Avestan language and the Sanskrit; but it was reserved for the above-named French *savant*, Eugène Burnouf, to employ the Sanskrit more fully as the key. By applying certain discovered laws of phonetic equivalence, he speedily reduced the Avestan vocabulary to its Sanskrit counterpart, and read the original with ease. From the near resemblance of the languages there could be no question of the recent union of the Zoroastrian community and the people of the Vedas. Also the geographic references contained in the Avesta were unmistakably to Bactria as the place of its composition, a region significantly near to the path of Vedic emigration. The period of separation had been sufficient, but only through the rise of a great religious leader, to develop striking changes in the religion of the Persians. All other evidence, and especially that of the still near identity of language, showed unmistakably that hardly more than five centuries could have elapsed since the two peoples had swarmed apart from one another. For this was clearly the manner of their separation. The one people, grown so numerous as to cumber the soil, (the Vedic records show that still the principal wealth was cattle,) must needs disperse, and after filling a wider neighborhood for a time, wander in clans or sections out of mutual reach and knowledge. Thus, probably long before, the Greek and Latin tribes had become successively detached and wandered westward through Asia Minor, while still earlier, and from a position more interior and northward, the Celtic and Teutonic emigrations had moved forth. Here then was the explanation of the origin of dialects. There was no parent speech which had sent off portions of itself west and south, itself remaining to perish in old age upon the central plains of Asia. Rather, each migrating portion of the family bore away the same original speech, but, in isolation and under the influence of different circumstances, each changed it in a different way, until the long dissevered communities were as unlike in language as in national types and dress. The long array of evidence and argument by which it was proved that this change need not have been, and undoubtedly was not, greater than is now daily taking place in language, especially if unwritten, and that it was of the same character as each of us

is helping to make continually in his own vernacular by his discourse and writing, cannot be epitomized and must be excluded here. But it will be an aid to the understanding of the long process if we examine some of the changes undergone by these languages within the range of history. Sanskrit has given rise to three idioms, the Bengali, Hindi, and Mahratta, but by no other than a quiet and unconscious transformation. Instead of the ponderous and highly inflected Sanskrit which was spoken by the high-born and priestly caste, the lower classes and the women used a simpler dialect, the Prakrit, a kind of patois; and in time the latter prevailed as being the easier to speak, leaving the Sanskrit to the grammarians and the learned. This patois-Prakrit, with the Pali, which was a like simplified derivative of Sanskrit, can be followed through long centuries of development until we arrive at the modern period of the dialects just named. Latin, as we more familiarly know, has perished in a similar way, less cultivated and bookish idioms having sprung up beside it, which finally displaced it from sheer preponderance of usage. The Greek, on the contrary, has never ceased to be a living speech, though it has so far abandoned its ancient type that Homer and his co-worthies have had to be translated. But the best example of simple and undirected growth in language is afforded by the German, which, in addition to having been only in the slightest degree acted upon and altered by external influences, possesses an inner conservatism and inflexibility which have tended to minify the expected progress. Here we are also fortunate in having for comparison the fragments of Ulfilas' Gothic version of the Scriptures, made in the fourth century. The Mæso-Goths, whose language may be safely taken as representative of the speech of our Germanic forefathers of that day, had just settled upon the Danube under the protection of the empire. The following, from Matt. v, 38, of Ulfilas' version, would puzzle the profoundest German scholar, if unaided, to decipher: *Hausideduth thatei qithan ist, augo und augin, jah tunthu und tunthau*. "Ye (have) heard that it is said, Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth." In the transition there has been no violence, no conquest and engrafting of a foreign idiom, as in English; only a little more than a thousand years of natural, unconscious development or growth.

In the labors of etymology, which had now begun to be prosecuted according to the historical method spoken of above, it was observed that the liquids were generally found unaltered all the way from German back to Greek and Sanskrit, while the mutes had, for the most part, suffered changes. Upon closer examination these changes seemed to be restricted, each mute being shifted to a different order merely, never to a different class. Something of the kind had been observed before by Rask, the Dane, but had never been made to yield a principle. The principle was at length detected by Jacob Grimm, the great Teutonic philologist and lexicographer, and formulated into what will probably always be called from its discoverer "Grimm's Law." It simply declares the scale of change: a surd or smooth mute in Sanskrit, Greek, and Latin will appear in the Low German dialects (including English) as an aspirate of the same class, and in High German as a sonant or middle mute; an aspirate in the same primitive languages will be in Low German a sonant, in High German a surd; and, finally, a primitive sonant will yield for Low German a surd, and for High German an aspirate mute. To illustrate, *κῆρας* and *cornu* ought to show their *κ* and *c* in English in the form of *h*, as is the fact in *horn*. So the Latin *homo* is traced to the English *g(r)oom* (Anglo-Saxon *guma*, man); and *genus* will be *kin*. Or, to illustrate throughout the scale:

SANSKRIT.	GREEK.	LATIN.	GOTHIC.	ENGLISH.	OLD HIGH GERMAN.
<i>trayas</i>	<i>τρεῖς</i>	<i>tres</i>	<i>threis</i>	<i>three</i>	<i>dri</i>
<i>danta</i>	<i>δ-δοντ-</i>	<i>dent-</i>	<i>tunthus</i>	<i>tooth</i>	<i>zand</i>
<i>bhar</i>	<i>φῆρειν</i>	<i>ferre</i>	<i>bairan</i>	<i>bear</i>	<i>peran</i>

The words given above in the table on page 679, and especially the verb-endings in the table following, can also be brought into much nearer conformity by this rule.

The further studies of Bopp and the brothers Grimm in the Teutonic field were exceedingly fruitful. Among the many results established the brief compass of our sketch will allow the admission of only one. In the Gothic there was found a small group of verbs which still preserved a genuine reduplication, the same in significance and form as that of the Sanskrit, Greek, and Latin. The remainder of the so-called irregular verbs showed the vowel change which the Germanic languages still preserve, such as is seen in *sing*, *sang*, *sung*. Certain feat-

ures in this vowel change were peculiar, and led finally to the remarkable discovery that these verbs also were once reduplicated, and owed their change of vowel to contraction. This may be illustrated from the Anglo-Saxon, in which the former class of verbs in Gothic appear with vowel changes, namely: Gothic, *haldan*, hold, imperfect, *hai-hald*, I held; Anglo-Saxon, *healdan*, imperfect, *heöld*. Thus the so-called irregular verbs of English and German were proved to be the oldest and most normal in inflection. The "regular" verbs were found to be the result of composition—the inevitable resort of the Indo-European languages to supply loss and extend inflection with the preterit *did*, of the verb to *do*. If we return to the sentence above quoted from the Gothic, "*Hausideduth thatai*," etc., we shall see an example of this union. *Hausi-ded-uth* is demonstrably *hear-did-ye*, the *uth* being the regular termination of the second plural of the Gothic preterit or imperfect. In English the whole has been shortened to *ed* or *d*; in German, as required by Grimm's principle, to *te*.

Grimm began at once to make practical use of these discoveries in his great *Deutsches Wörterbuch*; but, strange to say, it was found impossible to make them otherwise useful to the public. The eminent scholars who were busy brooding over the classical languages shook their heads, and declined the trouble of hearing about the new discoveries, or of putting them to the proof. The old theory of the descent of Latin from Greek continued to be put forth, with always sufficient variation to make it, at least to its propounders, new; and prodigies of industry were wrought by men like Döderlein in tracing and calculating *a priori* the minute steps of derivation. Passow and Freund prosecuted their patient labors unassisted by the new light; and their works, translated and re-issued in this country, retarded, as by an eclipse, the rising dawn of a true philology. Our own venerated lexicographer of English, Noah Webster, from the same lack of a key to the classification of speech which had led to the collective waste of centuries of toil before the days of Schlegel, spent twenty years in the useless study of miscellaneous languages, in the fond belief that the etymologies he needed could there be mined. Enthusiastic scholars of Greek and Latin refined upon the old dogmas in their zeal, and notably Prof. Crosby, who, in his earlier gram-

mar, devised a beautiful system of upbuilding for the Greek, which he loved too well to suppose was not a primitive language. But at length the facts and teachings of the new science began to be received by the new generation of scholars. Learned societies sprang up and disseminated its truths and principles. Germany had at last been dawned upon by the true light of linguistic science, and it could not be long before the new day of truth would reach also our western shores. In 1860 Prof. Hadley published his adaptation of the Greek Grammar of Georg Curtius, which had been prepared upon an adequate basis of comparative philology. This was an innovation, and stood alone for more than a decade. Then followed a similar manual for the Latin, and American scholarship generally began to be revised. Now we have attained such progress that, probably, never again will linguistic authorship succeed among us, unless provided with the warrant of historic truth.

The progress of philology since the death of Bopp and Grimm has continued without interruption, and can be summed up briefly. The fields of labor have been more carefully surveyed, and it is now agreed where the boundaries must pass. There are three great divisions of language recognized: the Indo-European (Japhetic), the Semitic, and the Scythian or Turanian. The latter is not a family in any strict sense, but serves as a kind of temporary category for all languages of indeterminate relationship and origin. Labor thus far has been but sparingly bestowed upon this field; the Semitic and Aryan prove still the most alluring. Great achievements have not only been wrought by Pott and others in the department first entered by Bopp, but also by special investigators who have passed somewhat beyond the pale of abstract linguistics. Facts bearing with great positiveness upon ethnology have been established, and the beginnings of history have been pushed backward. The great clearness with which, as cannot fail to have been observed, central Asia had been suggested as the starting-point of Indo-European emigration attracted early attention. It was found that there were distinct Scandinavian and, probably, Celtic traditions of such westward march; and the Slavs, the youngest member of the Indo-Germanic family, had forced their way into the society of European nations within the cog-

nizance of history. One branch of the latter people, the Lithuanic, had brought with them, and were still speaking, a language which had changed so little from its primitive Asiatic condition as to rival even the Sanskrit in ancientness of type. It retained the eight cases of the primitive language except the ablative, the dual number, with much of its phonetic system and many of its radicals. In the verb especially was it well preserved. This was phenomenal; the resemblance of the Zend to Sanskrit was hardly less striking. From the Indo-Persian or Aryan branch was gathered further assurance,—indeed, positive tradition from the Brahmins. Finally, no small contribution toward determining the home of the Indo-European nations was obtained by the sifting of their vocabularies; and not only the latitude of their first home, but a glimpse of the primitive Japhetic civilization and mode of life. The different vocabularies of all the Indo-European languages were carefully compared, and all words and terms not found in each, or which were not clearly brought away by each emigrating tribe in its earliest speech, were cast aside. The residue, of course, represented in some degree what might be called the dictionary of the primitive speech; and the words included constituted an index of the thought and a gauge of the intellectual advancement of the race who spoke it. This people were thus seen to have advanced somewhat beyond the purely nomadic stage, as they lived in towns which were often defended with walls and in stationary dwellings fitted with firm doors. They broke the soil with plows, and gathered harvests of wheat and barley. Wagons were in use, and boats propelled by oars. Cattle were still their chief riches, war and combat their pastime. The captives taken in battle were enslaved, but woman was regarded as man's equal, and treated with respect. It was not a hot country where thus they lived, for winter was dreaded and spring hailed with gladness. The forests grew of the hardy oak, and the constellation of the Ursa Major was most conspicuous and admired. As to the longitude of this fatherland, it could only be proved that it was remote from seas—no name for ocean can be found, the country abounded in streams, and was in sight of mountains. There were found traces also of a traditional first man, and of a flood causing universal destruction, from which man alone escaped. Hence it has been in-

ferred by some philologists that the Aryan and Semitic peoples were once united, and the problem was accepted of eventually proving the identity by comparison of languages. Thus far, however, the attempt has been entirely unsuccessful.

With respect to the origin of language, it is only recently that inquiries have begun to be conducted in a scientific way. Only lately, indeed, have enough phenomena of the life and growth of language been collected to make such investigation possible. The old belief that speech was of divine origin,—probably a direct impartation to human lips, was long accepted. William von Humboldt was the first to point out that the miracle was no greater thus than if man were found to have been so endowed as to devise and fabricate it for himself. It is certainly a human instrument, and, considering the instinct and necessity of communication, no more remarkable than many known achievements of mankind. The necessity for shelter has led him to devise implements with which to build, and these he has improved from the rudest types in stone to the most intricate and complicated steel machinery. Every art has made like progress, and from equally rude beginnings. Science shows that language could have begun in a like simple way, and in like manner perfected itself, thinking only of supplying the present need, and never aiming to improve itself, yet constantly improving. There seems no doubt that children growing up together and denied all knowledge of their mother-tongue would gradually devise a system of vocal communication. Every child does almost as much; in his early essays at speech he invents names of his own for surrounding objects, which, being accepted at his value by others, become actual elements of language. If he could only find associates willing to continue their use with him, they would serve a lifetime as well as any terms of speech. For the old notion that it makes any difference to a child learning to talk what kind of language he hears, whether correct speech or patois, or that he would speak at all (much less the primitive language), if he were sequestered from all communication by spoken signs, was among the first to give way before actual investigation. The missionary's child learns the idiom of his adopted country as readily as the language of his parents, and with greater rapidity and ease if he chance to hear less of their conversation than of his

native nurse's. He will, however, try his hand at amending and extending both, until warned by the limits of intelligibility. He finds that, to communicate his ideas successfully, he must use terms familiar to other people. There must be convention in regard to the meaning and value of words and phrases; he must add his consent to the collective consent of the community that such and such a term shall have such and such significance. It is, in fact, this consent which makes language what it is; remove the convention, and it becomes a useless instrument. Each member of the commonwealth of speech not only consents to the labors of his predecessors in making and altering language, but is himself continually passing personal judgment of disfavor or approval upon certain empirical changes, and upon the admission of the new terms required by the growth of ideas and knowledge. Some of these will be embodied into living language by the preponderance of consenting suffrages, some will perish still-born upon the threshold of existence. Many curious illustrations might be cited, if space permitted, of the failure of well-devised terms, and of the success of others obviously inapt, through some freak of the popular fancy. This voice of the people may be folly, or it may be wisdom, but it is final. Each intelligent speaker is therefore not only a censor over the common speech: in his indorsement of the old and his judgment of the new, his activity is the same, if not in degree at least in kind, as that of an originator or adapter. And it must not be forgotten that the process of mastering one's vernacular, a thing never perfectly accomplished, and the acquiring of that habit of correct and dignified speech called style, require the constant labor of half a lifetime. The invention of the humble beginnings of speech which philology supposes, could not have been a more difficult process than is the mastery of the finished product, any more than the crude beginnings of the mechanic's art were more abstruse and difficult than the mastery of the accumulated and complex appliances of the modern artisan.

But how can speech have been begun without materials? How was it possible for those whose task it was to originate language, to construct roots from nothing? Philology recognizes the difficulty of these questions, which it does not profess itself, as yet, able to answer, but suggests a theory suffi-

cient to support its grounds—all the grounds it takes. For it does not deny the supernatural genesis of language, but, in the absence of evidence either way, only asserts the possibility of the human; and the latter view seems to commend itself to the thinking mind as the most reasonable and natural, the most in accord with the divine economy. The theory regarding the origin of the ultimate roots of language is that they could have been formed, at least in large measure, by imitation of natural sounds,—a process still in operation in all languages. Every child names objects independently in this way: his dog is “bow,” an engine “puff-puff,” and so on. The number of like onomatopoeitic roots, such as buzz, hum, bang, whiz, whirl, etc., which we constantly use and with perfect acceptance, suggests that we might multiply them indefinitely if our vocabulary should need replenishing. We should in that case make abundant use of analogy, both to bring objects and actions inaudible into relations with sound, as well as to extend roots directly imitative of sound-action into other meanings. Moreover, there is evidence to show that roots expressive of emotion can have arisen in their earliest form as interjections. These two processes, without being imagined to yield their utmost, can have furnished as many roots as are supposed to have been original in the primitive Indo-European language,—a number not exceeding a few hundred. It is, however, probable enough that the number of really original Indo-European roots was considerably less, and was gradually increased during the whole period of the growth of inflection, in the same manner as we know has been the case since until the present time.

But, though there is no little variance of opinion, we believe that philologists generally do not suppose a special root-creation for the Indo-European family. It is accepted as likely to be in time established that the ultimate roots of human speech were identical. We have already spoken of the attempts to bring the Indo-European and Semitic languages together; but the most careful examination has as yet brought to light hardly any thing more than may be found in the comparison of any two languages not known to be related,—resemblances which the unprejudiced philologer must consider accidental. To establish affinity between two languages or groups of languages there must be found traces of at least ultimate likeness in

structure ; if such occur, on the principle that the greater includes the less, single words may then be admitted to comparison. Only the most wholesale conformity in vocabulary can be allowed as having the least weight, if no structural resemblances are discovered. Such likeness to the Japhetic structural type, as is well known, is nearly wanting in the Semitic tongues. The fact of triliterality of verb-roots and inflection by vowel-insertion is as far removed as possible from any thing Indo-European. In the matter of word-comparison there are on the whole, perhaps, rather fewer coincidences than are usually met with outside of family boundaries. Furthermore, the Semitic languages are exceptionally steadfast and intolerant of change. There is the strongest reason for believing that their rigid and inflexible type resisted the common tendencies of growth as successfully before the historical period as we can see it has done since. This, as all agree, will carry present differences back almost to the infancy of the race. Philologists can only resort to the supposition that ages separate the era when the Japhetic and Semitic communities parted and the stage at which each language assumed its earliest historic type. But the interval between Sanskrit and English—more than four thousand years, and a period of immense growth and change—has not been sufficient to obliterate the evidences of Indo-European kinship ; while the task of connecting the ultimate roots of the two families meets with not the slightest encouragement or success. Surely there is in this the broad suggestion of some interference from without. Philologists, however, as true disciples of science, will have nothing to do with the Confusion. This is the first and only real conflict of comparative philology and Revelation ; a conflict fortunately confined, for the most part, to the mute scorn on the one hand of the scientists, and the mute record on the other. Let us hope that no voice will break the silence until time vindicates the truth. For it is not improbable that proof may eventually be discovered, if not of the once complete union of the radical elements of Japhetic and Semitic speech, at least of the arbitrary and violent partition of the outgrowth of these radicals. Meanwhile one cannot but be reminded that geology readily admits the theory of cataclysms and glaciers to account for otherwise inexplicable phenomena ; and one day

will science, when the meaning of "Nature" shall have been better comprehended, recognize the Confusion as no greater miracle.

We incline, therefore, to the view that philology will never approach much nearer to the beginnings of human speech. From the unclassified and miscellaneous languages of the world but small contribution can be expected toward the solution of this problem; for there is ample evidence that they have generally been subject to far greater changes than the Semitic and Indo-European. They have been longer in the process, many having still no written literature; and as for the languages of barbarous nations, they are observed sometimes to change beyond recognition in a century or two. But the future of comparative philology in other departments is full of promise. Phonetics, almost a science in itself, has advanced nearly to perfection in the present generation. The various vocal sounds capable of use in speech have been named and classified, and their correct formation and exact relations determined. With this apparatus the pronunciation of dead languages may be restored, and those newly discovered are reduced at once to writing. By its use, with the aid of comparison, the original alphabet of the primitive Indo-European pronunciation has been recovered, and the creation of later sounds explained. Like success may be predicted with the Scythian languages, when once they shall have received the requisite attention. It is probable, also, that most of these idioms retain enough of their primitive characteristics to be classified; and from this will doubtless emanate new light regarding the unity of the race and the early history of its wanderings. But for a long time yet will the chief philological interest cling to the Japhetic and Semitic families. The numberless Phœnician, Assyrian, and Sabeian inscriptions have important secrets to reveal, and the problems of mythology are multiplying. Finally, there looms up the possibility of tracing the decadence of primitive monotheism and the beginnings of idolatry—a transition which, from the testimony of the Vedas, can have begun scarcely earlier than the Indo-European dispersion.

ART. VI.—THE ELEMENTS OF THE LORD'S SUPPER.

THE Lord's Supper has supplanted the Feast of the Passover in the Jewish economy. If the Lord's Supper was part of the paschal feast that fact would have great force in determining what kind of bread was to be used in its celebration, and would decide what kinds of wine were permissible. If the supper was part of a common meal preceding that of the passover, then the bread and wine were not prescribed, but were such as were in common use in Judea at the time. In order to understand the import of the Lord's Supper the passover would necessarily come under our inspection, but more especially so if part of that ritual is still to be observed. For this consult Clarke's or Whedon's Commentary.

It is stated in chap. x, Treatise Pesachim, § 1: "... A person shall not have less than four cups of wine, even if they be given to him from the fund devoted to the charitable support of the very poor." In § 1, chap. iii, of the Pesach. it is stated: "The law concerning the due observance of the passover will be transgressed by using the following articles, namely, Babylonian בִּיתָה, (a mixture of moldy bread with milk and salt, used to dip food in,) Median beer, (made of wheat or barley,) Edomite vinegar, (made by the fermentation of barley and wine,) Egyptian zeithum, (the name of a medicine of Egyptian origin, mentioned by Pliny under the name of zythum; according to the Talmud it was composed of equal parts of barley, salt, and wild saffron,) etc." If there had been any article of *wine* in common use which could not be properly used in the passover, it would have been mentioned in this catalogue. The absence of any injunction, therefore, gives us to understand that the wine in common use, under the general term יַיִן, *yayin*, was used indiscriminately, while the benediction was pronounced using the general terms פֶּרִי הַצֵּמָח, *peri haggapen*, *the fruit of the vine*, in all cases, as in the Hebrew ritual of the present day. It is worthy of remark that the word תִּירוֹשׁ, *tirosch*, is never used in these benedictions for "*the fruit of the vine*," but the words פֶּרִי הַצֵּמָח, *peri haggapen*, have invariably been used from the earliest times. This is a parallel expression to that of the Greek γεννήματος τῆς ἀμπέλου, *gennematos tes ampelou*, *fruit of the*

vine, used by our Saviour, or perhaps the Syriac in the Peshito New Testament, *aldo dagpitho*, and the translation of the words "fruit of the vine," כַּתְּנִיבַת הַיֵּץ, *mitnubath haggephén*, signifying properly the growth or product of the vine. The words כַּיִין מְגִיטוֹ, *yayin megitto*, were used frequently to signify *new wine*, as opposed to כַּיִין יָשָׁן, *yayin yashan*, as in the Talmud, "Rabbi Jose said, to what may he who learneth the law from little children be likened? To one who eateth sour grapes and drinketh *new wine*; but he who learneth from the old men may be compared to one who eats ripe grapes and drinks *old wine*." The antithesis forbids that the words should be applied in any other way. I am not aware that the word כַּיִין מְגִיטוֹ, *megitto*, appears in connection with כַּיִין, *yayin*, as a descriptive qualification any where in the sacred writings, but as נֶזֶךְ, *gath*, signifies a wine-press, and the word occurs in the plural in Neh. xiii, 15, and is there translated *wine-presses*, it seems that this term כַּיִין מְגִיטוֹ, *yayin megitto*, was used to signify *raw wine, new wine, wine recently from the press*. The use of this figure of speech would likewise indicate that this article was not considered as possessed of much merit, or an article in common use.

While the Mishna is very explicit in the instructions for the observance of the passover, and in these instructions expressly includes wine, yet it is worthy of remark that the use of wine at the paschal feast was not enjoined by the law, but was sanctioned by the especial notice given to it by our Saviour in the institution of the Lord's Supper, so that, whatever position it may take as part of the type, it becomes part of the seal and memorial of our Saviour's sufferings and death. Being considered as part of a sacrificial offering and feast, however, such wine would be used as was commonly used at such feasts and sacrifices at the temple. Calmet says of נֶזֶךְ, *yayin nesi-kam*, the wine of libation, "That it was the most excellent wine poured on the victims in the temple of the Lord, or pure wine, because in libations they used no mixtures." In the command given for the perpetual sacrifice, morning and evening, (Exod. xxix, 39-42,) the wine is designated by the word כַּיִין, *yayin*, and in the directions given in the Hebrew rituals, the word שֶׁכַר, *shekar*, is used. This would indicate that the wine used in the perpetual sacrifice was possessed, at least, of

the generally received characteristics of wine; that is, it had gone through the regular process of vinous fermentation, since the word שֶׁכָּר, *shekar*, means invariably strong drink, and is so translated, not only in the Bible, but also in the "Prayers of Israel." In the command for the presentation of the first-fruits and the accompanying drink-offering, (Lev. xxiii, 13,) יַיִן, *yayin*, is again mentioned, thus indicating that the *general* wine of Judea must be tithed to the Lord, and must be thankfully received in his name, since there is no special instruction as to the kind of wine to be used. In the general directions given for the offerings of other sacrifices (Num. xv, 5) יַיִן, *yayin*, is again used to designate the wine for the drink-offering. In the general directions given for burnt-offerings in the continual morning and evening sacrifice, in Num. xxviii, 7, the word שֶׁכָּר, *shekar*, is used, and is rendered in our translation "*strong wine*," thus establishing the fact that *strength* was no bar to the offering of wine to the God of Israel. In the offering of tithes of first-fruits (Deut. xviii, 4) the word used for wine is תִּירוֹשׁ, *tirosh*, and in the blessings promised to those who fulfill this command, (Prov. iii, 9, 10,) תִּירוֹשׁ, *tirosh*, is again used in the expression, "And thy presses shall *burst out with new wine*." These passages will be sufficient to establish the fact that first-fruits of תִּירוֹשׁ, *tirosh*, were offered *annually* at the Temple, and that *daily morning and evening*, as well as *other sacrificial offerings*, were made of יַיִן, *yayin*, or שֶׁכָּר, *shekar*. These, then, were common wines of Judea, were used in sacrifice, especially *yayin* and *shekar*, and received the divine sanction.

Now let us see what effects are attributed to them in the sacred writings. The allusions to the effects of תִּירוֹשׁ, *tirosh*, are confined to a single passage, but that is a most decisive one, namely, Hosea iv, 11: "Whoredom and wine (יַיִן, *yayin*) and *new wine* (תִּירוֹשׁ, *tirosh*) take away the heart." In this passage *tirosh* appears as the climax of engrossing influence, in immediate connection with *yayin*. Dr. Clarke says on this passage, "These darken the understanding, deprave the judgment, pervert the will, debase all the passions," etc. There is a passage in Acts xi, 13, having allusion to the outpouring of the Spirit on the day of Pentecost, "These men are full of *new wine*," (γλεῦκος, *gleukos*;) and this term will be understood by Peter's re-

ply in the 15th verse, where the word *μεθυσίν*, *methuousin*, derived from *μέθυ*, *methu*, signifying wine, and which is applied to the effects which the Jews supposed resulted from an intemperate use of *gleukos*, is used. It is worthy of notice that "*new wine*" in this passage is translated in the modern Hebrew New Testament by the word *טירוש*, *tirosch*. Schleusner says of *gleukos* in this passage, "Semel legitur in N. T. Act. ii, 13, *γλεύκους μεμελωμένοι εἰσι*, *vino dulci (non musto; vindemiam enim in mensem Tisri cecidisse apud Judæos, satis notum est) pleni sunt.*"* In Job xxxii, 19, the word *wine* is translated from the Hebrew *יַיִן*, *yayin*, by the word *γλεύκους*, *gleukous*, in the Septuagint. The reading of the passage will convince every one of the character of *טירוש*, *Tirosch*. But the particular point to which I wish to call attention is this: In the Hebrew New Testament *γλεύκους*, *gleukous*, is translated *טירוש*, *tirosch*, and in the Septuagint *יַיִן*, *yayin*, is translated *γλεύκους*, *gleukous*. Things that are equal to the same thing are equal to each other. *Tirosch* must partake of the same nature as *yayin*, but *yayin* and *shekar* are used interchangeably in the divine command. *Shekar* is *strong wine*. By this grouping of facts one can easily understand why *tirosch* "*takes away the heart.*" Parkhurst says of this passage: "*Sweet wine—which distills of its own accord from the grapes, which is the sweetest and smoothest—the juice of the grape before it is trodden. If it be asked how there could be any γλεύκος, gleukos, or sweet wine, at Pentecost, it may be sufficient to reply that it appears both from the heathen and Jewish writers, cited by Wetstein on Acts ii, 13, (whom see,) that the ancients had a method of preserving the sweetness, and, by consequence, the strongly inebriating quality of the γλεύκος, for a long time.*" Robinson says of *γλεύκος*, *gleukos*: "In N. T. *sweet wine*, fermented and intoxicating, Acts ii, 13. Comp. v, 15, Sept., for *יַיִן*, *yayin*, Job xxxii, 19." Leigh, in *Critica Sacra*, says,† "*Alii vertunt, Vino dulci pleni erant—sed quum hæc gesta sunt die Pentecostes, quo tempore nullum est mustum.*" Arius

* "Once it is written in the N. T., Acts ii, 13: They are full of *sweet wine*, (not *must*, or unfermented juice, since it is to be observed that the vintage among the Jews occurred in the month Tisri.)"

† "Others render, 'were full of sweet wine,' but when these things were done it was the day of Pentecost, at which time there is no *must*," over seven months having elapsed since the preceding vintage."

Montanus, in "Sac. App. Antwerp Polyglott," gives the definition of "γλεύκος, *gleukos*,"* mustum, vinum, and succus dulcis," indicating that these terms were not synonymous. This will, however, suffice to give a tolerably clear understanding that while *gleukos* may mean *must*, yet that the weight of evidence leads us to the belief that *gleukos*, which is translated and used as the equivalent of *tiros*^h and *yayin*, could and did intoxicate, and was understood to be an intoxicating liquor by critics.

Perhaps before I pass to the consideration of the next word, *yayin*, I should call attention to the fact that in the Peshito Syriac New Testament, after the word ܡܪܝܬܗ, *meritho*, which is the Syriac equivalent of ܬܝܪܫܐ, *tiros*^h, and γλεύκος, *gleukos*, according to Ari. Mon., in "Sac. App.," and which is defined by Gutbir as "merum," pure wine, without mixture or alloy; or, as Ainsworth has it, "racy, neat wine," the Syriac word *arvii* (and *are intoxicated*) is appended. The same word which is rendered *well drunken* in John ii, 10, in the description of our Saviour's miracle in Cana.

To ܡܝ, *yayin*, are attributed the "darkly flashing eye." Gen. xlix, 12, "red;" but see "Gesen. Thes. Append.," p. 89; "the unbridled tongue" and "error of judgment," Prov. xx, 1; Isa. xxviii, 7; "the excitement and inflammation of the spirit," Prov. xxxi, 6; Isa. v, 11; Zech. ix, 15; x, 7; "the perverted judgment and debased affections of its votaries," Hosea iv, 11; "the indecent exposure," Hab. ii, 15, 16; and "the sickness resulting from the *heat* of wine," Hosea vii, 5. ܡܚܡܬܐ, *chemath meyayin*, translated in our version "bottles of wine," as ܡܚܡܬܐ, *chemath*, is likewise used in Gen. xxi, 15, 19, and v, 14, to signify a *leathern bottle*, a *water skin*; but in Job xxi, 20, and Hosea vii, 5, to designate *heat*, *anger*, but translated, as I have said, in the authorized version of the Scriptures "bottles of wine"—see Gesen.—a very significant fact in relation to the use of "leathern bottles." As *yayin* occurs so very frequently in the Holy Scriptures, I have only quoted the more pronounced allusions to the effects which it produced, showing that *yayin* would and did intoxicate, and its abuse would produce drunkenness with all its attendant evils.

In Isa. xxviii the word ܫܝܟܟܪܝ, *shikkori*, is used in the 1st and 3d verses to designate *drunkards*, and in the 7th verse ܫܝܟܪܝ,

* Must, wine and sweet juice.

shekar, is used with *yayin* to denote the cause of the error and backsliding of Israel. In this verse *yayin* occurs twice and *shekar* three times, and is translated *strong drink*. In Lev. x, 9, the priests are forbidden to use wine, *yayin*, and *shekar*, strong drink, in the performance of priestly service in the Tabernacle, conveying the impression that it was through the improper use of wine and strong drink that Nadab and Abihu offered strange fire unto the Lord, and died in their disobedience.

The word *shekar* seems to have been applied to *intoxicating* or *inebriating liquor* in general, and *as such* included the *ῥ*, *yayin*, of the sacrifices. So that when *shekar* is used to designate the wine used in the daily sacrifice in Num. xxviii, 7, it shows that when *yayin* was *shekar*, strong drink, it was acceptable to God when properly offered, that all *yayin* was *shekar*, or that *shekar*, in the sense of all intoxicating drinks, was acceptable to God in sacrifice. One or more of these conclusions seems unavoidable. I will not, however, press the matter beyond the statement that "the impression produced on the mind by this review of the biblical use of the terms is that both *yayin* and *tirosk*, in their ordinary and popular acceptance, referred to fermented, intoxicating wine. In all the condemnatory passages in the Bible no exception is made in favor of any other kind of liquid passing under the same name, but not invested with the same dangerous qualities. Nor, again, in these passages is there any decisive condemnation of the substance itself, which would enforce the conclusion that elsewhere an unfermented liquid must be understood. The condemnation must be understood of *excessive use* in any case; for even where this is not expressed it is implied; and, therefore, the instances of wine being drunk without any reproof of the act may, with as great a probability, imply the moderate use of an intoxicating beverage as the use of an unintoxicating one." As my present inquiry does not, however, include the examination of all Bible wines, nor the allusions made to them in the sacred Scriptures, but only those which were permissible in sacrifice, and especially the paschal solemnities, if it be true that the Lord's Supper was instituted during the celebration of them, or if it be true that the Lord's Supper was instituted at a common meal before the celebration of the Passover, the

wines which were in common use, according to divine law, in Judea at that time, must have been used.

It thus far appears, from biblical sanction, that *wine*, in its generally accepted sense, was *permissible* in these solemnities, since in no sense prohibited or proscribed by law, but sanctioned by divine acceptance in the Temple, in their daily religious service, and made an indispensable accompaniment in all their holocausts. Moreover, it was used from the earliest times, according to the Mishna, with no other regulation than that it be פֶּרִי הַנֶּחֱסִיךְ, *peri haggephen*, the fruit of the vine. Unless it can be proved that *all* the *passovers* were celebrated with the *unfermented* juice of the grape, kept from the general vintage of from the middle of September or November—for this vintage continued about that long—to the fourteenth day from the first new moon of April, in such quantities that every person celebrating it could at least have four cups, all the arguments in favor of the unfermented juice of the grape must fail.* If the *unfermented* juice of the grape was to be used during the *paschal supper only*, there would have been some mention of that fact, as of the bread required; if it was to be used during the entire feast of unleavened bread, it would necessitate the opening of new bottles of the unfermented juice, if it were possible to keep it so, for every day in that warm climate, which, in the absence of special accommodations and arrangements, and especially of all mention of such requirements in the ritual of that ceremony-loving people, seems to be an impossibility. If, as the Greek Church maintains, the Lord's Supper was instituted at a common meal preceding the paschal supper, it would necessitate the *common use* of this *unfermented juice* in order to support the theory of the use of *unfermented* wine in the institution of the Lord's Supper, and that in the face of all biblical notices and commands in reference to that which did intoxicate, without one allusion to this fact, which is, to say the least of it, absurd.

* The enormous amount of wine used in these services will appear when we consider that every male must be present, and they were accustomed in addition to take their families with them, (see Luke ii, 41, 42,) and every one must have four cups of wine! Josephus says, in A. D. 65, (War ii, 14. 3:) "3,000,000 Jews were present; and at the feast in the reign of Nero, 2,700,000, when 256,500 lambs were slain.—*Ib.*, vi, 9, 8. *Twelve million cups of unfermented wine in one evening of the feast!!!* Scarcely possible! And that six months after the vintage!

The vintage commences in Syria (I quote from Jahn's *Bib. Archæ.*) about the middle of September and continues until the middle of November. But grapes in Palestine, we are informed, were ripe as early as June or July, which probably arose from a triple-pruning, in which case there was also a third vintage. The first vintage was usually in August, the second in September, and the third usually in October. Grapes sometimes remained on the vines until November and December. The *must*, or new wine, as is still customary in the East, was preserved in large vessels, which were buried in the earth. The store-houses for wine were not subterranean, but built upon the earth. When deposited in these, the vessels, as is done at the present time in Persia, were sometimes buried in the ground and sometimes left standing upon it. Formerly, also, new wine was preserved in leathern bottles, and, lest they should burst during fermentation, the people were careful that the bottles should be new. See Job xxxii, 19; Matt. ix, 17; Mark ii, 22. The earliest wines were, doubtless, in all cases simple and pure, being obtained by mere expression and fermentation of the grape juice; but modifications in the way of increasing the saccharine element, by partial drying of the grapes, and of aiding the development of alcohol by heat, began very early to be introduced. Leaves and aromatic substances were infused in the expressed grape juice, additions were made of various resins, and, in order to give body and flavor to certain wines that would otherwise be thin and poor, a portion of must concentrated by boiling was, as at the present day, added to the fermenting juice. The very sweet wines of the present, or modern times, are produced by previously boiling the must to a considerable degree of thickness, or the grapes are left very long on the vines, and, by twisting the stalks, the access of fresh sap is checked and evaporation from the grapes allowed until they shrivel and appear like raisins. The extent to which the must will go on fermenting, if immediately bottled or put in casks, endangering the bursting of these, depends on the oxygen already in the liquid. It may be added that the fermentation is more prompt and satisfactory as the quantity of must in the vat is greater; and that the covering of the vats, by the preventing the escape of the carbonic acid, alcohol, and aroma, tends greatly to preserve the proper strength and quality of the

wine. Dr. Jahn tells us, in *Bib. Archæ.*, that the grapes of Palestine are mostly red or black, whence originated the phrase "blood of grapes," דם ענבים, *dam aonabim*. See Gen. xlix, 11; Deut. xxxii, 14; Isa. xxvii, 2.

Dr. Justin Perkins says, in "A Residence of Eight Years in Persia," p. 437 :

The juice of the grape is used in three ways in Persia. When simply expressed it is called "sweet," that is, sweet liquor. It is not drunk in that state, nor regarded as fit for use, any more than new, unsettled cider at the press in America.*† *Nor is it called wine till it is fermented.* A second and very extensive use of the juice of the grape is the syrup, made from boiling it from this sweet state, which resembles our molasses, and is used in the same way for sweetening, but is never used as a drink. This is, in fact, neither more nor less than oriental molasses. The third use of the juice of the grape is the distillation of it into arrack, or Asiatic brandy. The wines of Persia are, in general, much lighter than those of Europe, but they are still always intoxicating. Rev. Benjamin Labaree, Jun., writes to his father, Dr. Labaree, late President of Middlebury College, after a residence of seven years as a missionary among the Nestorians : "With the most careful inquiries I have been unable to learn that any wine is ever manufactured in the country which is not intoxicating. The various kinds made differ more or less in their intoxicating powers, but all are fermented, and all, sooner or later, produce the same effect. The simple unfermented juice of the grape is never used as a beverage. The very Syriac word *chemro*, by its etymology, signifies fermented." Dr. Eli Smith, long a resident in Syria, and to whom "Robinson's Biblical Researches" are largely indebted for their minute and accurate information, gives an account of the wines of Mount Lebanon in the *Bibliotheca Sacra*, in which he says : "The methods of making wine in Lebanon may be reduced to three : (a) The must is fermented without desiccation or boiling. Little is made in this way, and, except in cool localities, it does not keep well, though possessing rather strong intoxicating powers. (b) The must is boiled down about four or five per cent. and then fermented. (c) The grapes are dried in the sun from four to five days, till the stems are dry ; they are then pressed, and must, skins, stems, and all are put into open jars to ferment about a month. This wine keeps

* Is it true that new cider is not considered fit for use in America? We suspect that thousands would drink no other.—Ed.

† This use of the word *cider* has scarcely a warrant in the present popular use of the term among us, but it was not so originally understood. Dr. A. Clarke, in his comment on Lev. x, 9, says : "From the original word, probably, we have borrowed our term *cider*, or *sider*, which among us exclusively signifies the fermented juice of apples." So also M'Clintock & Strong, *Encyclo.*, Art. "Wine," Div. *Pagis*.

better, and will sometimes burn, but it is only about one third of the weight of the grapes that are used in making it. The best wines yield thirty-three per cent. of what is called good brandy. Wines are never enforced with brandy, but unintoxicating wines I have not been able to hear of. All wines, they say, intoxicate more or less. So, when inquiring for unfermented wine, I have uniformly been met with a stare of surprise. The very idea seems to be regarded as an absurdity. The name for wine in Arabic, *chemr*, *خمر*, *chemer*, is derived from the verb to ferment. I have not been able to learn that any process is ever adopted for arresting vinous fermentation before it is completed."

Dr. C. V. A. Van Dyck, who has been for more than a quarter of a century in Syria, says, in answer to Dr. Laurie :

In reply to your question about wine for communion there is not, and, as far as I can find out, never was (in Syria) any thing like what has been called unfermented wine. The thing is not known in the East. Syrup is made of the juice of the grape, and molasses, as you know, but nothing that is called wine. They have no unfermented drinks but water of licorice root. Raisins are sometimes soaked till they swell, and are then eaten and the water drank ; but it is never called wine or supposed to be related to wine. In Syria, and, as far as I can learn, in all the East, there is no wine preserved unfermented, and they never make wine of raisins, but they do make *دبس*, *dibs*, or molasses, of raisins, and they ferment them and make arrack of them, (by distillation,) *but they could not keep grape juice or raisin water unfermented if they would.* It would become either wine or vinegar in a few days, or go into putrefactive fermentation. At the passover only fermented wine is used ; as I have said before, there is no other, and, therefore, they have no idea of any other. From the above you can easily infer my judgment as to the proper wine for the sacrament. The same as the blessed Saviour used when he instituted the ordinance, namely, the juice of the grape so fermented as to be capable of producing intoxication when taken in sufficient quantity. The wines of the East differ in the percentage of alcohol which they contain, but all the various kinds are used by the native Churches and by the Jews. They take that which chances to be at hand, just as the Saviour took that which was at hand at the passover.—*Bibliotheca Sacra*, Jan., 1869.

Thomas M'Mullen, in his "Hand-Book of Wines," says in relation to "*dibs* :

This compound *originated* in the prohibition placed upon the use of fermented and intoxicating liquors by the Mohammedan religion. The grape juice, therefore, *instead of being converted*

into wine, is chiefly boiled down to a syrup, which, under the name of "dibs," is much used in the East by all classes, where there are vineyards, *as a condiment with their food*. The grape juice is put into large boilers and reduced to one half or possibly one third of the original quantity. It is then removed to large earthen jars and subjected to a process not unlike churning, which is repeated for a few days until it thickens. *When properly churned or beaten* but little separation of the particles takes place. *It is represented to be a pleasant article for table use, and decidedly preferable to molasses*. The name "dibs," by which it is known in the East, is said to be the same as the original Hebrew word which in many passages of Scripture is rendered honey.—P. 146.

In reference to "boiled wines" he says:

The must is placed over a clear fire, with as little smoke as possible. The wine must be boiled until it is reduced to one third of its original quantity. It is then skimmed and poured into clean wooden vessels to remain until cool, after which it is to be barreled up close. This wine is very pleasant to the taste, of a deep amber color, delicate, and *generous*. Boiling is also adopted to make new wine have the appearance of old. For this purpose it is raised in temperature close to the boiling point, barreled and bunged up directly, *and in three months it is found possessed of the character of wine kept for some years*.—P. 148.

Dr. Jahn (in *Bib. Archæ.*) says:

Wine, although very rich in Eastern climates, was sometimes mixed with spices, especially myrrh, and this mixture was named from a Hebrew word which signifies *mixed*. This word, namely, מִחְוֶה, *mahul*, means also a wine diluted with water, which was given to the buyer *instead of good wine*, and was, consequently, used figuratively for any kind of adulteration. Wine in the East was frequently diluted after it was bought. There is a sort of wine called שֵׁכָר, *shekar*, *oukepa*, *sikera*, or *strong drink*. It was made of dates and of various seeds and roots, and was sufficiently powerful to occasion intoxication. It was drunk mixed with water. From the pure wine and "*sikera*" there was made an artificial beverage חֲמֶזֶק, *homets*, which was taken at meals with vegetables and bread. Ruth ii, 14. It was also a common drink, (Num. vi, 3,) and was used by the Roman soldiers. Further, there is a wine called by the Talmudists *vinegar*, whence the passage in Matt. xxviii, 34, may be explained.

Dr. Clarke says, (Commentary, Prov. ix, 5; Isa. i, 22:)

Among the ancient Jews, Greeks, and Romans wine was rarely drunk without being mingled with water; and among ancient writers we find several ordinances for this. Some direct three

parts of water to one of wine; some five parts; and Pliny mentions some wines that required twenty waters; but the most common proportions appear to have been three parts of water to two of wine. It is remarkable that whereas the Greeks and Latins by *mixed wine* always understood wine diluted and lowered with water, the Hebrews, on the contrary, mean by it a wine *made stronger and more inebriating* by the addition of higher and more powerful ingredients, such as *honey, spices, defrutum*, (or wine inspissated by boiling it down to two thirds or one half the quantity,) myrrh, mandragora, opiates, and other strong drugs. This יַיִן מִסַּח, *yayin masach*, mingled wine, however, was not permissible in the sacrifices, nor would our Saviour receive this drink-offering when offering up himself as a sacrifice for us; but that the paschal wine was mingled with water seems very probable from the directions to be found in the Mishna in relation to a pan to be used for the warming of water.

In alluding to the various sacrifices, offerings, and oblations, Dr. Clarke, on Lev. vii, says of מִסַּח, *mesech*, and מִמִּסַּח, *mim-sach*, that "it is a mixture-offering, or *mixed libation*, called a *drink-offering*, Isa. lv, 11, from מִסַּח, *masach*, to mingle; it seems in general to mean *old wine mixed with the lees*, which made it *extremely intoxicating*. This offering does not appear to have had any place in the worship of the true God; but, from Isa. lxxv, 11, and Prov. xxiii, 30, it seems to have been used for idolatrous purposes, such as the Bacchanalia among the Greeks and Romans, 'when all got drunk in honor of the god.' " נֶסֶח, *nesech*, libation or drink-offering from נָסַח, *na-sach*, to diffuse or pour out, consisted of water or wine poured out at the conclusion or confirmation of a treaty or covenant. To this kind of offering there is frequent allusion and reference in the New Testament, *as it typified the blood of Christ poured out for the sin of the world*; and to this our Lord himself alludes in the institution of the Eucharist. In this libation, as I have already shown, יַיִן, *yayin*, or שֵׁכָר, *shekar*, were used by special divine command. This wine seems to have been mixed with water in the paschal solemnities, and in all probability was so diluted in the "cup of blessing" used in the institution of the Lord's Supper.

Calmet says, "The wines of Palestine being heady, they used to qualify them with water that they might be drank without inconvenience. Prov. ix, 2, 5." The word *must*, from the Latin *mustum*, seems to have been derived from the same

word which is used to designate the *unleavened bread* of the Passover, namely, *matsoth*, from the root מץ , *mats*, to press or squeeze out, in general *separate*, or from משתה , *misteh*, a drink, or a banquet. See Esther v, 4; vii, 2, 8; Dan. i, 10; Ezra iii, 7. Since this word was used to designate *unleavened bread*, and might with equal appropriateness have been applied to the wine, *if there was the same restriction to the wine, it seems to me that it would have been so applied.**

יַיִן , *yayin*, as Dr. Lees admits, ("Preliminary Dissertation," "was also applied to every species of *fermented* grape juice;" but adds: "*Yayin*, then, being accepted as a general term, it would follow that we should expect, as time went on, that *specific* terms would be adopted to designate special kinds or states of wine, and this is exactly what we find to be the case in the later books." Just so, but in a case of such vital importance the divine sanction in the sacrificial offerings would be most carefully guarded if Dr. Lees' position was tenable, instead of which *yayin* and *shekar* are used interchangeably in the wording of the divine command instituting the sacrifice. Gesenius, in defining יַיִן , *yayin*, says: 1. Wine, so called from its *fermenting*, effervescing; as חֶמֶר , *chemer*, from חָמַר , *chamar*. 2. Meton., of cause for effect, wine for *drunkenness*, *intoxication*. Gen. ix, 24; 1 Sam. i, 14; xxv, 37. Parkhurst says: $\text{יָנַה$, to *press, squeeze, oppress, depress*, (see root נָנ with mutable ה), as a יַיִן , wine, which is made by squeezing the grapes, the expressed juice of grapes, (to be understood as *wine*, as in fourteen quoted languages.) Davidson says: יַיִן , *yayin*, from יָנַה , *yavan*, root not used; to which is ascribed the signification of *heat and fermentation*.

Leigh says of its Chaldee equivalent, (in *Critica Sacra*.) חָמַר , *chamar*, *Turbidus, lutulentus, turbatus, conturbatus, commotus, commixtus, confusus fuit*. (Wild, confused, disordered, thick, turbid, muddy, confused, disturbed, excited, intermingled, poured together, confounded, bewildered.)

Clement C. Moore derives יַיִן from יָנַה , *yanah*, to press, as Castell, who says: יַיִן , *vinum*, a יָנַה , *torpuit*, (to grow numb,

* According to Malmonides and all the Rabbins, "the juice of fruits does not leaven, but purifies, and the '*cherosef*' itself was made of the palm-tree branches, or of raisins, or other like berries; which they stamped, and put *vinegar* thereto," etc. See Malmonides on leaven, a. ii.

become *torpid or stupefied*,) ortum a יָנָה, *obtorpuit, somnolentus* fuit, quod torpidos vinum largius justo haustum facit et somnolentos. (Benumbs, stupefies, makes sleepy, because larger draughts of wine than suitable or proper stupefy the drinkers and make them slumber.) Michaelis, in Comment., says: * יָנָה, *yannah*, torpuit, enervavit, oppressit, perdidit. Verbum in *op-promendi, injuriæque, ac violentiæ* significatione notissimum, quod Syris prorsus periit, habent Arabes sub يَنِى, torpuit, unde vino nomen ductum esse, supra sub יָנָה conjecimus. Ab quomodo huic Hebraica verbi יָנָה in Hiphil notis, fluxerit, non satis liguet; conjecturæ licentia se detur, conferenda quarta Arabum conjugatio, in qua يَنِى, est, *debilitavit, defatigavit*, unde dicta oppressio, etc. "

Buxtorf says: † יָנָה, *vinum*. Vinum lætificat cor hominis, *Psa. civ, 15*; vino errant, *Ies. xxviii, 7*; vinum convivii ipsorum, *Dan. i, 16*; bibe animo hilari vinum tuum, *Eccles. ix, 7*.

Simonis says: † יָנָה, *rad*, innsit, cujus nullum in dialectis vestigium sed videtur inde, יָנָה et יָנָה orriri, quemadmodum הָמַר et הָמַר (הָמַר) ex uno fonte profluent; which root, namely, *yavan*, יָנָה, Gesenius says, means to boil up, to be in a ferment.

יָנָה, *vinum*, § *Gen. xix, 32-34*; *Lev. x, 9*; *Num. vi, 3*, etc. Metonym. de *crapula*. *Gen. ix, 24*; *1 Sam. i, 14*, etc., etc.

Gibbs says: † יָנָה, *wine: intoxication*, and Arius Montan., in *Sac. App.*, of יָנָה, *sicut vinum inebrians*, a יָנָה, *id est vinum*. ¶

* "It stupefies, enervates, oppresses, destroys. A word which especially has the signification of oppressing, doing violence, and working injury, which the Syrians generally render *to destroy*, and the Arabs have interpreted by the word *waneh*, to *stupefy*, whence the word *wine* is to be derived, as we have remarked under the word *yayin*. Although the meaning of the word '*hannah*' in Hiphil is not sufficiently clear in itself, by a comparison with the fourth Arabic conjugation, the word *Ooneh* is found; which signifies '*it has debilitated, it has wearied*,' whence the word oppression."

† *Yayin*, "wine which delights the heart of man." *Psa. civ, 15*. "They erred by wine." *Isa. xxviii, 7*. "The wine of their feasts," or, as in our version, "the wine that they should drink." *Dan. i, 16*. "Drink thy wine with a merry heart." *Eccles. ix, 7*.

‡ *Yavan*, root unused, of which there is no trace in the language; ("a common thing in Hebrew lexicography,") but evidently the source whence *yayin* and *yaven* arise in the same manner as *khomer* and *khemer* flow from the one source, *khamar*.

§ *Yayin*, wine, by metonymy, concerning drunkenness.

‖ *Yannah*, as wine that makes drunk, that is, *yayin*, or wine.

¶ Pliny says: "De vino: Fervet vinum cum ex musto in vinum transit." The wine boils up when it passes from must into wine.

Having thus briefly examined the authorities at hand in reference to *yayin*,* let us see what is said about *shekar*.

In the consideration of the word שֵׁכָר, Dr. Lees, in his "Preliminary Dissertation," in trying to maintain the definition he gives, "*saccharine drink*," quotes himself, because, I suppose, there was nobody else to quote, and intimates that Dr. Fuerst is the only lexicographer to combat on his position. Gesenius says: "שֵׁכָר, *shekar*, *temetum*, *strong drink*, any *intoxicating liquor*, whether wine, (Num. xxviii, 7,) or an *intoxicating drink* resembling wine, prepared or distilled from barley, from honey, or from dates. Arab. سكر, *sikkar*, wine prepared from dried grapes and dates." Parkhurst says, "*intoxicating or inebriating liquor* in general, *sicera*. It is once used for *wine*, (Num. xxviii, 7; comp. Exod. xxix, 40,) but most commonly for *any inebriating liquor* beside wine. So *Aquila*, *Symmachus*, and *Theodotion* render it in Isa. xxviii, 7, by *methusma μεθυσμα*. Lev. x, 9; Num. vi, 3; and al freq. *Jerome*, in *Epist. ad Nepotianum de vita Clericorum*, and in Isa. xxviii, 1, informs us that in Hebrew *any inebriating liquor* is called *sicera*." Davidson says: *Shekar*, *strong, intoxicating drink*, from שֵׁכָר. 1. *To drink to the full, drink to hilarity*. 2. *To be intoxicated: Metaph., to be giddy*. Bi. and Hiph., *to make drunken*. Hith. p., *to act like one drunken*." Leigh, in *Critica Sacra*,† says: "שֵׁכָר, *Sicera* omnis potus inebrians vel sitim expleus etiam vinum. Sed quando vino jmgitur notat vinum factitium ex pomis aut aliis fructibus: aut etiam hordeo. Lev. x, 9. *Shekar* is all manner of *strong drink which will make drunken*. The Greek turneth it *wine*. Psa. lxviii, 15, and Prov. xxxi, 4." Castell says:‡ "Sicera inebrians potus, vid. Chald., Lev. x, 9, etc., et vinum vetus, vid. Onkelos, Jonathan. Num. vi, 3; cap. xxviii, 7; Deut. xiv, 26; Aben. Esr. i; Reg. xvi, 9; Syr. Cum. Eccl. xxxi, 28; Syr. St. Luc. v, 39, etc., etc." Michaelis says: § "Jam atiam locis Mosaicis quæ שֵׁכָר et יַיִן conjungunt, ut

* So Avernarius, Calasius, Hasselbauer, Cocceius, Stockius, Castell, Schindler. etc.

† Sicera, all intoxicating drinks, either satisfying thirst or wine, but it is to be noted that this wine comprehends all factitious wines from fruits grown on trees and other fruits, and likewise that from grain.

‡ "Sicera is an inebriating drink, etc., and old wine."

§ "Now likewise in the places in the books of Moses in which *shekar* and *yayin* are joined together, as in Lev. x, 9; Num. vi, 3, is to be understood with

Lev. x, 9; Num. vi, 3. Cerevisiam cogitandum esse vix dubium, quid enim veri similis quam Mosen a *potu inebriante* interdictum populo in Ægypto cerevisiæ adueto, hanc sub שֵׁכָר intellexisse. Accedit quod ita intellexerunt Rabbini." Buxtorf says,* "שֵׁכָר, *inebriativum, inebrians potus*, qui Græcis hinc vocatus οικέπα, Latinis, *sicera*." "Aben Ezra scribit senter, xiv, esse *potum fortem factitium*, ex melle et dactylis, aut tro-tico et hordeo." Gibbs has, *Shekar, strong or intoxicating drink*; Moore, *strong drink, strong wine*; and Arius Montanus says,† "*Et ab inebriando vinum שֵׁכָר sechar vocatur Inebriativum: Isaiæ v, 11. Tharg., Vinum vetus, etc., Lev: x, 8, ubi שֵׁכָר comprehendit quicquid inebriat, præter vinum.*" Verily, Dr. Fuerst stands in a goodly company. I know of no lexicographer who differs from these definitions in the main. *Tirosh* now remains to be examined.

Dr. Lees says that "תִּירוֹשׁ, *tirosh*, is not 'wine' at all, but 'the fruit of the vineyard' in its natural condition," *namely, grapes. Grapes could not be drunk at the paschal supper, so Dr. Lees would vote tirosh out altogether.* But, in order to hold his position, he says that "nothing but a foregone conclusion, fostered by the mistranslation of ancient and modern versions—versions which traditionally sustain and deceive each other—could have hindered scholars from perceiving the true sense of this word. Neither versions nor lexicons, however, have been consistent." It is not absolutely necessary that this word should be considered in reference to the paschal supper, but if *tirosh* meant the vintage of the current year, it might have been, and perhaps partially was, used in these solemnities. Yayin, apparently, covers the whole ground, as *tirosh* was *yayin* and yayin might be, and frequently was, *shekar*. In other words, the *vintage of the current year was wine*, and

scarcely a doubt, the liquor of cereals, such as ale, beer, because the command was similar to the interdiction placed by Moses upon an *intoxicating drink* made of cereals, to which the people in Egypt were accustomed, which was known by the term *shekar*. Moreover, this was so understood by the Rabbins."

* "*Shekar*, that which makes drunk, an intoxicating drink, which the Greeks call *sikera*, and the Latins *sicera*. Aben Ezra writes, Deut. xiv, that it is a *strong factitious drink* made from honey and raisins, or wheat and barley."

† "And from intoxicating wine, sechar is called that which inebriates. Isa. v, 11. Targum, 'old wine,' and Lev. x, 8, where *shekar* comprehends whatever intoxicates beside wine."

wine was strong drink. This seems to be sufficiently clear, but the maintainance of this is not necessary to my position, which is that the wines in common use in Judea could and did intoxicate, and that such wines were used for libations at the altar of sacrifices with the sanction of the God of Israel, and, in all probability, were used in the paschal solemnities and at the institution of the Lord's Supper. But let us consider what these recalcitrant scholars say of *tirosh*.

Gesenius says: "תִּירוֹשׁ, *tirosh*, (רִיִּשׁ,) *new wine*, so called (*i. e.*, *tirosh*) because it gets possession of the brain, and inebriates." —*Com. Syr. Meritho*. Chald. מֵרַתְּ, *merath*, id, Hosea iv, 11, etc., etc. (All the passages go to show that *tirosh* is *new wine* of the first year, the *wine crop* or vintage of the season; and hence it is mostly coupled with wine and oil as a product of the land. That it was regarded as *intoxicating* is shown by Hosea iv, 11, as above.)

Parkhurst says: "New wine, so called (namely, *tirosh*) from its *strongly intoxicating* quality, by which it does, as it were, *take possession* of a man, and *drive him out* of himself, according to that of Hosea iv, 11. Comp. the following verse and Isa. xxviii, 7, and observe that in the text just cited from Hosea, LXX render *tirosh* by μεθυσμα, *methusma*, *drunkenness*; so Vulgate, by *ebrietas*." Davidson likewise derives *tirosh* from טִי, with same signification. Leigh says: * "*Tirosh, mustum*, sic dictum quod potum hominem facillime possideat et occupat mentemque, è rectà suà sede expellat." Castell says: "*Tirosh, mustum*, Num. xviii, 12. Liquor uvarum primum expressus: quod mentem hominis facile possidet. Sanhedr. LXX, 1; Isma, lxxvi, 2." Simonis says: "*Tirosh, mustum*. Gen. xxvii, 28, 37; Num. xviii, 12; Deut. xxviii, 51; Hosea ii, 11; Jes. lxxv, 8. Syr. *meritho*, sic dictum, quod se possessorem hominis facit, ejus cerebrum occupando, ut ille non amplius sui compos sit, sec. illud, Hosea iv, 11, etc., etc." Buxtorf says: "*Tirosh, mustum*, sed dictum, quod potem, hominem facillime possideat et

* "*Tirosh, mustum*, so called, because it most easily seizes and occupies the mind of man, and expels it from its rightful throne. Castell says: 'The liquor first expressed from the grape which easily possesses the mind of men.' Simonis says: 'Tirosh, mustum. Syriac meritho, so called, because it takes possession of man, seizing his brain, so that he is not fully of sound mind.' Buxtorf says. 'Tirosh, must, so called, because it is a drink which most easily seizes and holds men, and expels reason from her rightful throne.'"

occupet, mentemque e recta sua sede expellat." But it is needless to multiply authorities on this point.

The use of mixed wine is said to have been introduced by Pope Alexander I. It was expressly enacted in the twelfth century by Clement III. As early as the third century a sect called the *Aquarii* refused to offer any thing but water at the Eucharist, (Epiph. et Theod., likewise Bingham, Orig. Eccl., bk. xv, chap. xi, § 7.) The Manichæans also abstained wholly from wine. It is needless to say that these were strongly opposed by the teachers of all other parties. Pope Gelasius I., of the fifth century, called their practice "*grande sacrilegium*." In M'Clintock & Strong's "Encyclopedia" the following observations are made on this subject: "The question as to whether the wine originally used in the Lord's Supper was *fermented* or not would seem to be a futile one in view of the fact, 1. That the unfermented juice of the grape can hardly with propriety be called *wine* at all. 2. That fermented wine is of almost universal use in the East; and, 3. That it has invariably been employed for this purpose in the Church of all ages and countries. But for the excessive zeal of certain modern well-meaning reformers, the idea that our Lord used any other would hardly have gained the least currency." Pococke says, in his "Travels in Egypt," art. "The Religion of the Copts:" "In the Catholic Churches they must use wine, but in the others they use what they call zebib . . . Zebib is a sort of raisin wine. They put five rotolas of new grapes to five of water, or more grapes are used if they are older. It is left to steep seven days in winter and four in summer. The deacons strain it through two bags, one after another, to make it fine. This keeps seven years, and tastes like a sweet wine that is turned a little sour. They keep the zebib in a jar, and cover it closely so that no wind can come to it." According to the canons of the Coptic Church no other wine but the clear unadulterated juice of the grape can be used for the Eucharist. So particular are they on this point that they will permit none to prepare it but the ministers of the altar. The grapes are picked with great care, are bruised between the hands instead of being trodden under foot, and no one is permitted to touch them until the altar wine has been set aside. (See Renaudot, vol. i, pp. 176, 177.) The Copts will not celebrate the sacrament with wine

which has been purchased in a store, for the reason that it may not be pure. (*Ibid.*) The impure compounds which sometimes find their way to our sacramental tables through the carelessness of the officials whose duty it is to procure the wine for that service are a sad commentary upon the estimation in which that holy ordinance is held.

I will now briefly consider the bread to be used. Lord King, in his treatise on "The Primitive Church," says: "In some places, as in France and Africa, the communicants first made their offerings, presenting, according to their ability, *bread or wine,* or the like, as the first-fruits of their increase." "It being our duty," as Irenæus writes, "to offer unto God the first-fruits of his creatures, as Moses saith, 'Thou shalt not appear empty before the Lord.'" "Not as if God wanted these things, but to show our fruitfulness and gratitude unto him." Wherefore Cyprian thus severely blamed the rich matrons for their scanty oblation. "Thou art rich and wealthy," saith he, "and dost thou think duly to celebrate the Lord's Supper when thou refusest to give? Thou who comest to the sacrament without a sacrifice, what part canst thou have from the sacrifice which the poor offer up?" These offerings were employed to the relief of the poor and other uses of the Church; *and it seems probable that a sufficient quantity of that bread and wine was presented to the Bishop, or to him that officiated, to be employed for the sacramental elements.*" Perhaps no question has given rise to warmer dispute than that which touches the use of *leavened* or *unleavened* bread in the celebration of the Lord's Supper. Cardinal Bona tells us that the use of leavened and unleavened bread was common in the Latin Church until the beginning of the tenth century, when unleavened bread became obligatory on all. According to the discipline of that Church the bread must be made of (*panis triticeus*) wheat, must be unleavened, must be mixed with water, must be baked, not stewed, fried, or boiled. It is commonly held in that Church that when the Ebionite heretics taught that the precepts of the ancient law were binding upon Christian people, and that, in consequence, the Eucharist could not be celebrated at all unless the bread our Lord used, namely, *unleavened*, were employed, the Church also sanctioned the use of leavened bread to confound this teaching, and that this remained in force until

all traces of the Ebionites had died away. This statement has for its supporters several eminent theologians, among whom are Alexander of Hales, Duns Scotus, Bonaventure, Thomas Aquinas, etc. (See Card. Bona, *Rer. Liturg.*, lib. i, cap. xxiii, Kozma, 238; Neale, "Holy Eastern Church;" "On the Controversy Concerning the Azyones," vol. ii.) If we consider the Lord's Supper as part of the Passover, *unleavened bread* was certainly used; if as a common meal preceding it, then *leavened bread* was employed. The Latin Church holds to the one view, the Greek to the other; but both hold that the use of either is more a matter of discipline than dogma. The ancient Hebrews had several ways of baking bread. They often baked it under the ashes; so Abraham served the three angels. Gen. xviii, 6. *Huggoth* signifies loaves, much like our broad, thin cakes, which are baked under the ashes, or upon round copper plates, or in pans or stoves made for the purpose. The Hebrews, at their departure out of Egypt, made some of these unleavened loaves for their journey. Exodus xii, 39. Busbequius, "Constantinop.," p. 36, says, that in Bulgaria this sort of loaves is still very common. They are there called *hugaces*. As soon as they see a guest coming the women immediately make these unleavened loaves, which are baked under the ashes. The Hebrews and other Eastern people have an oven which they call *taanour*, like a large pitcher of gray stone, open at the top, in which they build a fire. When it is well heated they mix the flour with water until it is made into a paste, which they apply to the outside of the oven, which bakes it in an instant, and the bread is removed in thin, fine wafers. A third sort of bread used among the people of the East is baked in a great pitcher half full of flint stones, on which they cast the paste in the form of little flat cakes. This bread is white and smells well, but is good only for the day on which it is baked unless there be leaven mingled with it to preserve it longer. This is the most common way in Palestine. As the Hebrews generally made their bread very thin and in the form of little flat cakes or wafers, they did not cut it with a knife, but broke it; which gave rise to that expression so usual in Scripture of *breaking bread*, to signify eating, sitting down to table, making a meal. And so, in the institution of the Eucharist, our Saviour broke the bread which he had blessed. In the Latin Church the bread

is baked between heated irons, upon which is stamped the crucifixion, *Agnus dei*, or a simple cross. The instrument used for this purpose somewhat resembles a large forceps in appearance. It has two long handles, and at its extremities is a pair of circular heads, one overlapping the other. After this instrument has been sufficiently heated in the fire, a *little lard* or butter is rubbed over its surface to keep the paste from adhering. A thin coating of this paste is then spread over the surface of the under disk, and, the upper one being allowed to rest on it a moment or two, it is taken out perfectly baked. The irons are then separated, and the bread is taken out and trimmed for use. The Greek Church is very particular about the fabrication of the sacramental bread. They use leavened bread. The flour must always be kept in the church, where is also the oven in which it is baked. During the process of making the bread a constant chanting of psalms is kept up. The bread must be *new, fresh, and pure*, nor must a female knead it or bake it. The Syrian bread, called *aztha*, is made of the finest and purest flour, and is tempered with water, oil of olives, salt, and leaven. The preparation of it is carried on within the church by a priest or deacon. The bread used by the Greeks is peculiar. It is leavened, in form is round, with a square projection in the center, which is cut off with a lance prepared for the purpose. When the priest inserts the lance on the right side, he says, "He was led as a sheep to the slaughter;" on the left, "And as a blameless lamb dumb before his shearers, he opened not his mouth." In the upper part, he says, "In his humiliation his judgment was taken away;" in the lower, "And who shall declare his generation?" The deacon each time says, "Let us make our supplications to the Lord." (*Martène de Antiq. Eccl. Rit.*)

The most probable conclusion seems to be that the Lord's Supper was instituted at the paschal solemnities, and, consequently, the proper materials to be used in its celebration are those which were used at those solemnities, namely, *unleavened bread and wine*, not hermetically sealed inspissated grape juice, but *genuine wine* mingled with water. Whether the Supper was or was not instituted at the paschal feast will only affect the character of the bread to be used. The wine was that in common use, which had been tithed and was presentable to the

Lord of Israel. As Jesus did not institute merely *eating* and *drinking* as the memorial service, but *broke* the *bread* after he had *blessed it*, and gave to his disciples, saying, "*This is my body*," or a *memorial* of it, and took "*the cup of blessing*" (1 Cor. x, 16) and said, "*This is my blood of the new testament*," we ought to be exceedingly careful how we touch so sacred an institution, or tamper with the materials of which is built the monument of our Saviour's death; especially since he, in his last will and testament, gave such explicit directions for the perpetuation of his memory.

ART. VII.—THE REVISED VERSION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT.

THE time has not come for a complete critical estimate of the work of the Revisers of the New Testament, which has so recently made its appearance. The labors of so many eminent Christian scholars for ten and a half years cannot be satisfactorily examined by any one in a few short months. The best that can at present be done by each individual in reviewing their work is to consider the general character of the revision, and to discuss such passages as he may have time and opportunity to examine. The scholarship of the Revisers is unquestioned, their integrity undoubted, and every inducement was before them to make this revision of the New Testament what it was expected to be, the representative of the best scholarship of the nineteenth century. No one will venture to charge them with want of fidelity or with unseemly haste.

It is proper, however, that their work should be subjected to a rigid criticism. The version which this is to succeed has been before the world for two hundred and seventy years; and it is no small proof of its general excellence that it has endured so long. It has deeply impressed itself on the language, literature, and life of all English-speaking people; its choicest passages have been chanted in music and recited in the ritual of the Church; it has been read in the hearing of the people with the most graceful elocution and with the most wonderful effect; the very form and the order of the words

have fallen on the ears like sweetest music; so that any change, however slight, jars upon them like some strange discord.

In our criticism of the Revised Version, then, it is not wise to lay too much stress on the rhythm of the Old Version, since the familiar language of that has formed the taste of the present generation. Its language in many places, no doubt, sounded very strangely to those who first heard it; and when years have made us familiar with the Revision it may be as hard to receive another version as it is now to receive this. Every change in a book so venerable and sacred must win its way by slow processes into the affections and confidence of the people.

The Revised Version comes to us with presumptions in its favor which cannot be lightly set aside.

1. It has long been conceded that a revision was needed.

2. This revision has been instituted by competent authority, and carried through by gentlemen of acknowledged scholarship and fidelity.

3. The work has not been confined to any denomination of Christians, but is the result of the united labors of evangelical Christendom, so far as our language is concerned.

4. It is to be presumed that where changes have been made reasons satisfactory to the committee must have been offered, such possibly as may escape the observation of the individual student, however scholarly.

These presumptions, however, should not free the work from candid criticism, since, however well the work is done, it is but another step in the march toward an absolutely perfect translation.

All that could properly be demanded of the revisers is that their work should represent the present state of biblical scholarship. It should be a work of truth, having no regard to sectarian opinions, neither inclined to orthodoxy nor heterodoxy. As pure scholars, their sole aim must be to give to the people the most accurate translation possible.

The main points demanding their attention may be comprised under five general heads. The translation should represent the present state of, 1, *Text-Criticism*; 2, *Grammatical Knowledge*; 3, *Lexicography*; 4, *Archæology*; 5, *The English Language*.

Other matters of interest are mainly connected with these.

The first, second, and fifth of these points will chiefly claim our attention in this paper.

I. *Changes originating in the criticism of the Greek text.*—While it was not the direct aim of the revisers to “construct a continuous and complete Greek text,” yet it was necessary that they should substantially do so. At every step the first questions would be, “What did the evangelist or apostle actually write?” “Are these the exact words of the inspired penman?” Whenever a possible change of text would require a change of translation, it was absolutely essential that the text should be settled as exhaustively as it was possible to do it. This is the part of the work on which we think the greatest stress of the revisers should have been laid. The uncertainty of the text has been so constantly urged by objectors to the Christian religion, that we must be able to say that the text which is here translated is the nearest possible attainment to the autographs of the original writers. This is especially important inasmuch as but few of those who are to read the book are competent to pass judgment on it in this particular. Nor was it desirable that they should be. The number of great textual critics is not large, and this question must, therefore, be decided by the few rather than by the many. Nor is this statement any disparagement of the scholarship of those who have not made such studies a specialty. It only means that scholarship, in its highest forms, is not universal; that, for example, the most capable men in text-revision might not be the most valuable in translating, and *vice versa*.

This committee had, however, abundant material ready to their hand. The authorities had been most carefully collated, and were within the reach of all. The latest and best critics have left the results of their labors. Lachmann, Tischendorf, Tregelles, and Alford had each lived long enough to finish editions of the Greek Testament, valuable not only because of the conclusions they reached, but especially for the digest of materials which accompany their texts. Thus, if any members of the committee were not professionals in this particular field, they had ample basis for judgment, and might have been a check on those who were in danger of extreme adherence to technical textual scholarship. In the judgment, therefore, of the whole body we have stronger assurances of a true Greek text than

we should have had in the decision of those alone who were chiefly professional text-critics.

We are, therefore, led to the conclusion that the text made by them, so far as it relates to the points on which different translations may arise, is the best now attainable; and, while we cannot agree with them in all their conclusions, we can readily accept their work in this regard as of the highest value.

The most advanced advocates of a *purely historical criticism* cannot complain of this text. Lachmann, who first attempted the formation of a text solely on ancient authorities, was not more rigid in his adherence to them than the revisers. In the rigid adherence to the rule that the evidence must be "decidedly preponderating," meaning thereby the documentary evidence, we think they have sometimes erred, but that they have insisted strongly on the most ancient authorities no one can question. On the wisdom of this we shall speak later.

Dr. Roberts, ("Companion to the Revised Version,") who was a member of the committee, gives the authorities chiefly relied upon, namely: A, or the Alexandrian MS., fifth century; B, or the Vatican MS., fourth century; C, or the Codex Ephraem, fifth century; D, or the Beza MS.; $\aleph$, or the Sinaitic MS., fourth century; of versions, Peshito Syriac, second century; Old Latin, third century; Gothic, fourth century; Coptic, third century; Armenian, fifth century; Ethiopic, sixth century. He also mentions Clement of Rome, first century; Justin Martyr and Irenæus, second century; Clement of Alexandria, Tertullian, Cyprian, and Origen, third century. These are the chief witnesses on which they relied, and these must be the main sources of all true study of the New Testament text.

By observing the results of their labors we can readily see that they have been largely governed by these authorities, giving little weight to later manuscripts, and that they have almost entirely discarded subjective criticism.

Let us notice some of the improvements in which we think nearly all modern scholarship will agree. It was well that they rejected the passage concerning the angel who "troubled the water." John v, 4. The putting of this is true to fact. The marginal note saying, that "Many ancient authorities insert wholly or in part" this verse gives a fair statement of the evidence in the case, and while it asserts the preponderance to be

for its omission, there is no attempt to discredit the opinion of those who, like Lachmann, an authority little likely to err on the side of subjective testimony, retain it. They declare by their note that its retention is, in their view, a possible reading, which is all that any one would now venture to claim for it.

In Rom. viii, 1, the omission of "who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit," is in harmony with the best manuscript authority, and is adopted by the most eminent editors of the text. It is also demanded by the line of argument. In the revised text the verse now stands as a universal proposition, and gives great force to the apostle's reasoning. The introduction of the omitted portions can be so readily accounted for that the case seems a very clear one.

"The heavenly witnesses," 1 John v, 7, 8, are so transparently spurious that their omission caused no surprise on the part of those familiar with the facts, and these verses have long ceased to be appealed to in any doctrinal controversy. The most devoted advocate of the Trinity would not have appealed to this passage for a long while past, so that it is wrong to say, as some Unitarians have done, that the argument for this doctrine is impaired by this omission. This doctrine is so inwoven with the whole New Testament that the removal of no single passage can possibly affect it.

These are simply specimens of the good work the revisers have done in removing excrescences from the sacred text. There are some passages, however, on which we think their action has not been so wise. They have left some texts of great importance practically undecided, neither giving them a place as alternative readings nor placing them in the text, but putting them in an abnormal position as a part of the sacred narrative. A crucial case of this kind is Mark xvi, 9-20. We cannot but believe that the mode of its retention is unwise, and that, granting the conclusion at which they arrived, it would have been better to leave it as it was in our Authorized Version, and to accompany it with a marginal explanation. Its removal from close connection with verse 8 in a way to show that it is no part of Mark's Gospel, and yet its retention as gospel, though by another author, is a refinement difficult to comprehend by the ordinary reader, and calculated to mislead many pious but uncritical readers.

It is, we think, by no means proven that this is not a part of Mark's Gospel. A look at any of the critical discussions on this passage will not show such a preponderance of testimony against its genuineness as the committee's action would indicate.

A brief survey of the state of the evidence on this much-disputed passage will show that it might safely have been left as in the Authorized Version. Against it are the Vatican and Sinaitic manuscripts. The adverse testimony of the Vatican, however, is greatly impaired by the fact that a column is left vacant, as if there were something that needed to be inserted. One MS. of the Itala and two of the Æthiopic and the Armenian substantially omit it. Of the early Fathers, Eusebius is the only one now conceded to be against it. The statement of Dr. Roberts, ("Companion," p. 38,) quoted from Tregelles, that "Eusebius, Gregory of Nyssa, Victor of Antioch, Severus of Antioch, Jerome, as well as other writers, especially Greeks, testify that these verses were not written by St. Mark, or are not found in the best copies," does not properly present the case. Burgon, in his book on "The Last Twelve Verses of the Gospel According to St. Mark," has shown that these writers quoted from Eusebius, and that, therefore, their independent testimony is worthless. (See "Hammond's Textual Criticism," p. 110.)

The internal evidence cited against it arises out of supposed contradictions, namely, that verse 9 disagrees with Matthew xxviii, 1; that verses 19 and 20 are in opposition to the Ascension on the fortieth day; that the style is manifestly not Mark's, since it contains a number of words and phrases not elsewhere used by him. Among the editors Tischendorf and Meyer omit it, while Tregelles, Alford, and Westcott and Hort insert it after a separation, or in brackets, showing doubts of its genuineness.

In its favor are almost all the great manuscripts, both uncial and cursive, including the Alexandrian and the Codex Ephraem of the uncials; 33, the "Queen of the Cursives;" and the Old Latin except k., Syriac, Memphitic, Gothic, and Georgian versions. Justin Martyr, Irenæus, and Hippolytus approve its admission. The internal evidence is mainly in its favor. It is not likely that these statements, apparently contradictory to the others, would have been inserted

by any writer who was manufacturing an explanatory addition. The whole section is a unit, and necessary to the completion of the narrative. We cannot conceive of the Gospel of Mark closing with the eighth verse. This passage is defended by such critical scholars as Lachmann, Wordsworth, Ebrard, Lange, Scrivener. Scrivener closes his review of the evidence with these words: "All opposition to the authenticity of the paragraph resolves itself into the allegations of Eusebius and the testimony of κ B. Let us accord to them the weight which is their due; but, against their verdict we can appeal to the reading of Irenæus and of both the elder Syriac translations in the second century, of nearly all other versions, and of all extant manuscripts excepting two." The argument against its being Mark's, because of its style, has been urged against too many writings acknowledged to be genuine, to afford proof for its rejection. Such being the testimony in this passage, we think the committee, in view of the conservative spirit in which they were pledged to act, would not only have been justified in leaving this passage untouched, but were required to do so. No sufficiently strong preponderating evidence to warrant a change is here apparent. In separating the passage from the rest of the Gospel they have, in fact, weakened its authority. We again assert that the truth would have been better served by a marginal explanatory note.

The story of the woman taken in adultery, in John vii, 53, to viii, 11, is differently treated. It is broadly distinguished from the rest, and placed in brackets. Dr. Roberts says that the "right conclusion probably is, that it is no part of St. John's Gospel, and yet is a perfectly true narrative which has descended to us from the apostolic age." The brackets, then, mean that it does not belong to John's Gospel, but is a *true narrative*. The conclusion that the passage is not a part of John's Gospel is not fully established when such scholars as Mill, Michaelis, Bengel, Ebrard, Stier, and others retain and defend it as genuine. Even Alford, with whose text the Revisers agree, says: "After all, the most weighty argument against the passage is found in its entire diversity from the style of narrative of our Evangelist." If this is the most weighty argument against it, both he and the Revisers might well have retained it in the text. The requirements of criticism would have been met by

leaving it, as in the authorized version, with an explanatory note stating that "many believe it to be a true narrative, but not a part of John's Gospel."

Romans v, 1, presents a case in which the value of internal evidence has been too entirely overlooked. The Authorized Version reads, "Therefore being justified by faith, *we have* (*ἐχουμεν*) peace with God." The Revised Version reads, "Being therefore justified by faith, *let us have* (*ἐχωμεν*) peace with God."

It is at once admitted that the hortatory form has the support of the chief uncials, cursives, and versions; so that, if the decision were made solely on external evidence this is the undoubted reading of the text. Scrivener gives, in favor of the indicative, "ⲙ B' F G (in spite of the contrary testimony of f. g., their respective Latin versions,) P, the majority of the cursive manuscripts, Epiphanius, Cyril, and the Slavonic. The later Syriac seems to combine both readings."

We have in this an acknowledged case for the discussion of the admissibility of internal evidence. While we admit that its employment is exceedingly dangerous, it does not thereby follow that it is to be set aside altogether, and here seems a proper place for its use. Notwithstanding the weight of external evidence for the subjunctive, there is, nevertheless, sufficient authority in favor of the indicative to prevent a rash rejection of it.

In the first place, cursive manuscripts may, although later in date, represent earlier texts than the most ancient uncials. They may be copies of some that have passed away and of which we have no trace. In the next place, the manuscripts may be valuable for the notes of the corrector. While the corrector, in his attempt to make the meaning more clear, has often changed the text for the worse, it is nevertheless possible that his corrections may represent a removal of errors. With the acknowledged difficulty of copying any manuscript accurately, we may well pause before we give the sole importance always to the first hand.

In the text before us both ⲙ B have *ἐχουμεν* by the hands of correctors, and this fact, together with the very great difficulty of reconciling the subjunctive with the course of the argument, has led some of the most eminent critics to vary in their conclusions.

Alford, who reads *ἐχωμεν*, in his note shows the almost overpowering influence of internal evidence in favor of *ἐχωμεν*, against which he struggled. His language is: "It is impossible to resist the strong manuscript authority for the reading *ἐχωμεν* in this verse. For, indeed, this may well be cited as the crucial instance of overpowering diplomatic authority compelling us to adopt a reading against which our subjective feelings rebel. Every internal consideration tends to impugn it."

How very near Alford came, however, to the retention of the indicative will appear by quoting from his "Prolegomena to the New Testament," where, after saying that the "consideration of the *context* is the very last that should be allowed by a critic to be present to his mind as an element of his judgment," he adds: "I do not say that in some extreme cases it may not have to be introduced, as perhaps (but I should now speak doubtfully even in this case) in Rom. v, 1, where there are so many confusing considerations arising from the habits of the manuscripts."

On the other hand, Meyer, in his "Critical Notes" on this passage, (Moore's Translation,) yields to the internal evidence, and retains the indicative. His capacity, both as a Greek scholar and critic, is beyond question, and his conclusion is that of one of the most independent inquirers. After quoting the authorities in favor of the subjunctive, he says: "But this reading, (the subjunctive,) though very strongly attested, yields a sense that is here utterly unsuitable; because the writer now enters a new and important *doctrinal topic*, and an exhortation at the very outset, especially regarding a subject not yet expressly spoken of, would at this stage be out of place."

It is somewhat remarkable that Tischendorf, over whom manuscript authority had such great influence as against internal evidence, favored the indicative until the finding of the Sinaitic manuscript. In his seventh edition we have *ἐχωμεν*. Lachmann, too, who is the most uncompromising adherent to early evidence, hesitates to accept the subjunctive, and places *ἐχωμεν* in the margin. Westcott retains *ἐχωμεν* as a marginal reading. We maintain, therefore, with Scrivener, that the *itacism*, *ω* for *ο*, so common in the early manuscripts, may at a very early period have led to the insertion of *ω*, and thus it became incorporated in many of the most ancient of

them; and that in this case the strong internal evidence must outweigh the preponderance of the external. We do not think the revisers have done justice to the Authorized reading or to its evidence in simply saying in the margin, "Some authorities read *we have*." We think they should have retained *we have*, and have said in the margin, "Strong manuscript authority supports *let us have*." The American Committee (see Appendix to the Revised Version) retain the indicative, with a marginal reading similar to the one we have indicated. As the American Committee was full as likely to make changes, where the evidence was "decidedly preponderating," as the English Committee, their conclusion goes to show that the insertion of the subjunctive in the text was not required by the evidence.

The rule of text criticism, *Proclivi lectioni præstat ardua*, is in danger of being overpressed. In the case before us the indicative is the easier and more natural reading, and while the above rule must be generally accepted, cases may arise in which, as in this one and the one immediately to follow, it is the wiser course to set it aside.

In 1 Timothy iii, 16, for the clause, "God was manifest in the flesh," the Revised Version reads, "He who was manifested in the flesh." The word *θεός*, *God*, in the Authorized Version again gives way to the testimony of manuscripts, and we have *ὃς*, translated *He who*, in its place. Even Scrivener, the most conservative of modern text-critics, surrenders the Authorized Version. If it were granted, as many believe, that the Alexandrian manuscript reads *θεός*, then the internal evidence, arising out of the strange grammatical structure which the introduction of *ὃς* gives to the Revised Version, would be a sufficient reason for retaining the text as it was, and inserting a marginal note, stating that, "very strong manuscript authority reads, *who* instead of *God*." If, however, this be accepted, the relative being without any immediate antecedent, the implied one is God, and no such doctrinal change is wrought by the substitution of *ὃς* as some imagine.

The Revisers have introduced some changes not called for by their own rule, such as Mark xv, 45, where the new text inserts *πρῶτα* for *σῶμα*, and translates, "he granted the *corpse* to Joseph." Their rule is, that the question of text should only be raised when the translation would be affected by the

change. Certainly, while the new translation on this text more correctly renders the text which they have adopted, no important change in meaning is thereby made to the Authorized reading. It is better, however, to have the right text than the wrong one, and in this case they have done wisely in stretching to its utmost their own rule. Of the translation itself we shall speak hereafter.

These are some of the objections which, we think, might be justly raised to the Greek text, but they are so few in comparison with the great improvements which have been made in this regard, that we believe this text, as revised by the Committee, must now be received as the *Textus Receptus* for students of the Greek Testament. The Greek text, as accepted by the Revisers, has been published at Oxford, England, after notes made during the progress of revision by Rev. F. H. Scrivener, LL.D., under the editorial supervision of the Rev. Archdeacon Palmer, of Oxford, and is the only Greek text corresponding to the Revision of 1881 now accessible. It is to this text reference is made in this paper. All the other Greek Testament texts now before the public are the work of individual editors. This text must take a high rank, as the result of the joint labors of the best modern text-critics with the conclusions of these scholars before them.

II. *Changes arising out of conformity to the present state of grammatical knowledge.*

Like text-criticism, the advance in the knowledge of New Testament grammar has of late been very great. The great works of Winer, Buttmann, and Thomas Sheldon Green, have given an impulse to the study which must be felt in both the translation and the interpretation of the New Testament. The grammatical commentaries of Meyer and Ellicott have given a further impulse in the same direction. So far as the translation is concerned this advance has been most manifest in the case of the Greek article and of the tenses.

The accurate comprehension of the force of the Greek article is not easy, and many passages have been made obscure by the failure of the translator to understand its significance. No complete rules on the subject have yet been given, but it has been well observed that its insertion or omission has always a significance. Sometimes the article is omitted where at first view it would

most naturally appear necessary, as in the English phrase, "He has gone to town," meaning some particular town with which we are acquainted. Again, we say, "He has gone to the city," with a similar significance. These differences of expression may arise out of the rhythm of the sentence, or from use. Mr. Thomas Sheldon Green has most thoroughly grasped the idea of the article. His language is, "The article is prefixed to a word, or combination of words, when there is intended to be conveyed thereby, in the particular instance, an idea in some degree familiarized to the mind; it points to a previous familiarity, real or presumed." He regards the article as a sign of identification, and "closely and consequently, but not primarily, connected with definiteness." (Green's Grammar, pp. 6, 9.) This view throws light on many passages otherwise obscure, and shows the necessity for the proper translation of the article. We place the two translations of the first part of 1 Tim. i, 15 together. Authorized: "This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptance." Revised: "Faithful is the saying, and worthy of all acceptance." The article with "saying," "*the* saying," refers to that one "just recorded, touching the mercy and grace so singularly bestowed." The translators have here, by their literalness, added both to the force and to the dignity of the passage, and have given it a connection with the context not apparent in the Authorized Version.

The instances in which the sense has been greatly improved by the translation of the article are too numerous to be recited at length. The rendering of "the Christ" very frequently in the Gospels instead of Christ; "he looked for *the* city which hath foundations" instead of *a* city; *the* prophet instead of *that* prophet. These, among many instances, will occur even to the most cursory reader of the Revised Version. A good illustration is John iii, 10, "Art thou *the* teacher of Israel, [*i. e.*, the teacher well known,] and understandest not these things?" instead of the Authorized "Art thou *a* master of Israel, and knowest not these things?"

A text which in the Greek clearly shows the force of the article is Col. iii, 5, "Mortify therefore your members," etc. In the Authorized Version there is no article before any of the words, but in the Greek text the article is employed before the last noun, *πλεονεχία*. The article before this last noun marks

it as a "notorious immorality, especially to be avoided," which, in the Revised Version, is expressed by "*the* which is idolatry," but which would have been better brought out by "the covetousness which is idolatry." (Winer's Grammar, Thayer's Edition, p. 117.)

There are, however, some cases of the translation, or omission to translate the article, which are difficult to account for, and are quite important because of their exegetical significance.

With the word νόμος, in Romans and Galatians, the absence or presence of the article has much to do with the meaning, and their decision in regard to it cannot be received as final. The general rule in regard to νόμος is, that with the article it means the Mosaic law, and without it, law in general, although often inclusive of a reference to the Mosaic law. The revisers have manifestly appreciated the difficulty, as shown by their marginal notes.

Alford, Ellicott, Meyer, and Conybeare and Howson agree with the revisers, namely, the almost indifferent use of νόμος and ὁ νόμος, while Lightfoot, Thomas Sheldon Green, Middleton, Vaughan, and others recognize a broad distinction between the two. As the revisers have proposed the translation of the article with precision, a review of their work can only be seen by placing the text which they have translated and the Revision side by side, and then tracing the peculiarities of translation. The passages are selected from Romans and Galatians. The italics are our own, and are merely used to call attention to the point on which we make our comparison. The word appears with and without the article very frequently.

Rom. ii, 12-18; 23-27.

"Ὅσοι γὰρ ἀνόμως ἥμαρτον, ἀνόμως καὶ ἀπολοῦνται· καὶ ὅσοι ἐν νόμῳ ἥμαρτον, διὰ νόμον κριθέσονται· οὐ γὰρ οἱ ἄκροαται νόμον δίκαιοι παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ, ἀλλ' οἱ ποιῆται τοῦ νόμου δικαιωθήσονται· ὅταν γὰρ ἔθνη τὰ μὴ νόμον ἔχοντα φύσει τὰ τοῦ νόμου ποιῶσιν, οὗτοι νόμον μὴ ἔχοντες ἑαυτοῖς εἰσι νόμος· οἵτινες ἐνδείκνυνται τὸ ἔργον τοῦ νόμου γραπτὸν ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις αὐτῶν, συμμαρτυρούσης αὐτῶν τῆς συνειδήσεως, καὶ μεταξὺ ἀλλήλων τῶν λογισμῶν κατηγορούντων ἢ καὶ ἀπολογουμένων, ἐν ἡμέρᾳ ὅτε κρινεῖ ὁ Θεὸς τὰ κρυπτὰ τῶν ἀνθρώπων κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιόν μου διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned *under law* shall be judged *by law*; for not the hearers of a law are just before God, but the doers of a law shall be justified: for when Gentiles which have no law do by nature the things of the law, these, having no law, are a law unto themselves; in that they shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience bearing witness therewith, and their thoughts one with another accusing or else excusing *them*; in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men, according to my gospel, by Jesus Christ.

Εἰ δὲ σὺ Ἰουδαίος ἐπονόμαζ, καὶ ἐπαπαύῃ νόμῳ, καὶ καυχᾶσαι ἐν Θεῷ, καὶ γινώσκεις τὸ θέλημα, καὶ δοκιμάζεις τὰ διαφέροντα, κατηχούμενος ἐκ τοῦ νόμου.

Ὅς ἐν νόμῳ καυχᾶσαι, διὰ τῆς παραβάσεως τοῦ νόμου τὸν Θεὸν ὑμιάζεις; τὸ γὰρ ὄνομα τοῦ Θεοῦ δι' ὑμῶν βλασφημεῖται ἐν τοῖς ἔθνεσι, καθὼς γέγραπται. περιτομὴ μὲν γὰρ ὠφελεῖ, ἐν νόμῳ πρυσσῆς· ἐν δὲ παραβύτης νόμῳ ἤ, ἡ περιτομὴ σου ἀκροβυστία γέγονεν. ἐὰν οὖν ἡ ἀκροβυστία τὰ δικαιώματα τοῦ νόμου φυλάσῃ, οὐχὶ ἡ ἀκροβυστία αὐτοῦ εἰς περιτομὴν λογισθήσεται, καὶ κρινεῖ ἡ ἐκ φύσεως ἀκροβυστία τὸν νόμον τελούσα σὲ τὸν διὰ γράμματος καὶ περιτομῆς παραβάτην νόμου.

But if thou bearest the name of a Jew, and retest upon *the law*, [marg. *a law*,] and gloriest in God, and knowest his will, and approvest the things that are excellent, being instructed out of the law.

Thou who gloriest in *the law*, through thy transgression of *the law* dishonourest thou God? For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles because of you, even as it is written. For circumcision indeed profiteth, if thou be a doer of *the law*: but if thou be a transgressor of *the law*, thy circumcision is become uncircumcision. If therefore the uncircumcision keep the ordinances of *the law*, shall not his uncircumcision be reckoned for circumcision? and shall not the uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfill *the law*, judge thee, who with the letter and circumcision art a transgressor of *the law*?

Rom. iii, 19-21.

Οἶδμεν δὲ ὅτι ὅσα ὁ νόμος λέγει, τοῖς ἐν τῷ νόμῳ λαλεῖ, ἵνα πᾶν στόμα φραγῇ, καὶ ὑπόδικος γένηται πᾶς ὁ κόσμος τῷ Θεῷ· διότι ἐξ ἔργων νόμου οὐ δικαιοθήσεται πᾶσα σὰρξ ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ· διὰ γὰρ νόμον ἐπιγνώσις ἁμαρτίας. νυνὶ δὲ χωρὶς νόμου δικαιοσύνη Θεοῦ πεφανέρωται, μαρτυρουμένη ὑπὸ τοῦ νόμου καὶ τῶν προφητῶν.

Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it speaketh to them that are under the law; that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may be brought under the judgement of God: because by the works of *the law* shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for *through the law cometh* the knowledge of sin. But now apart from *the law* a righteousness of God hath been manifested, being witnessed by *the law* and the propheta.

Gal. iii, 18.

Εἰ γὰρ ἐκ νόμου ἡ κληρονομία, οὐκέτι ἐξ ἐπαγγελίας.

For if the inheritance is of *the law*, it is no more of promise.

Gal. iv, 4, 5.

Ἐξάπεσται ἐν ὁ Θεὸς τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ, γενόμενον ἐκ γυναικός, γενόμενον ὑπὸ νόμον, ἵνα τοὺς ὑπὸ νόμον ἐξαγοράσῃ, ἵνα τὴν υἰοθεσίαν ἀπολάβωμεν.

God sent forth his Son, born of a woman, born under *the law*, that he might redeem them which were under *the law*, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

Gal. iv, 21.

Ἀγέγε μοι, οἱ ὑπὸ νόμον θέλοντες εἶναι, τὸν νόμον οὐκ ἀκούετε;

Tell me, ye that desire to be under *the law*, do ye not hear *the law*?

Gal. vi, 13.

Οὐδὲ γὰρ οἱ περιτενόμενοι αὐτοὶ νόμον φυλάσσουν·

For not even they who receive circumcision do themselves keep *the law*.

The above passages afford ample scope to study the translation of the article in relation to the word law. Our attention is first arrested by the apparent desire of the revisers to translate the article in accordance with the Greek. In Rom. ii, 12, the word νόμος is in the Greek, in every case, without the article, and it is translated accordingly, whereas

our Authorized Version reads *the law*. In verse 13 the first word *law* in the Greek wants the article, and the second has the article. Yet the revisers translate both words without the article. The omission of the article in the last clause of that verse, when it is preserved in their own Greek text, seems unaccountable. It is possible that the retention of the second article in the Greek text is an error. The American Committee read "*the law*" for "*a law*" in this verse. In the 17th verse there is no article in the text, but they have inserted it, though with a marginal note omitting it. In the 25th verse it is translated *the law*, although the article is not in the text. The last word of verse 27 is without the article, though it is written *the law* in the Revision.

Rom. iii, 20, is a very important passage, rendering its accurate translation worthy of careful study. The Revision inserts the article in both cases before *law*, whereas no article is found in the Greek. Rom. iii, 21: the first *law* is without article and the last has it, though both are translated *the law*.

All the passages cited from Galatians are translated as if they had the article. In Gal. iv, 21, we find that the translators refuse to recognize any distinction between *law* and *the law*, translating both as if having the article.

This seems to be an anomaly in translation as compared with their own rule of uniformity. It appears reasonable that here as elsewhere the words ought to have been translated uniformly, as in the Greek text, with a marginal explanation stating the general facts of the case.

It does not seem supposable that so careful a writer as Paul would in such a succession of instances use such an important word so indiscriminately. We can hardly imagine that hearers of *a law* and doers of *a law* should be represented, the former without the article and the latter with it. It is hard to believe that νόμος and τὸ νόμος mean exactly the same thing. If such be the case, would it not be better, as a matter of translation, to give the word after the Greek original in every case, and leave the meaning to be decided by the reader rather than by the translator? The omission or insertion of the article, as done by the revisers in this case, cannot carry with it full conviction, however plausible the exegetical reasons may be which seem to require it.

Justice to the Revision requires the statement that the use of *νόμος*, especially in Romans and Galatians, is a vexed question with grammarians and commentators, but the final result, we think, must uphold the apostle's discriminations.

Green ("Grammar of New Testament," p. 80) remarks :

Whenever the word *νόμος*, in the New Testament, has the article prefixed without reference to the context, the term must then be used to signify the Mosaic law. At the same time this is a case in which, as the effect of familiar currency, the article might drop away, and the anarthrous term itself come to have a conversational meaning, and pass, as it were, into a proper noun. Whether, however, this license is to be recognized in the language of St. Paul is a point well worthy of consideration, and not to be disregarded, because such usage is possible. . . . There are certain places where, though the word is anarthrous, the Mosaic law, and that alone, evidently was present to the mind of the writer ; but still an effect of the absence of the article is clearly discernible, namely, a greater prominence of the internal force of the word, a suggesting of the attributes of law rather than the law ; and, besides this, by means of the unrestricted term the proposition is given with a broader and more imposing cast. . . . It is reasonable, then, whenever in the Epistles of St. Paul the term *νόμος* is anarthrous, though the Mosaic law must have been present to the mind of the writer, to recognize a resulting effect, such as has been here exemplified in particular instances, and to attribute it to design.

It seems clear, in harmony with the main thought of this accurate scholar, that there was in the mind of Paul a distinction, resulting from the absence of the article, which is obliterated by its insertion in English. In conformity with this view he translates Gal. ii, 19, "For I through *law* died to *law*," omitting the article which the revisers insert in the text, though they also omit it in the margin.

He makes similar remarks on the distinction as shown in Gal. ii, 16, 21 ; iii, 18 ; and Rom. iii, 28. In these cases the revisers insert the article, irrespective of its absence in most of them in the original.

The translation of the tenses has been greatly improved in the Revision. It is surprising how little discrimination was made in our Authorized Version, especially between the aorist and the perfect. The aorist is also frequently translated as a present, greatly to the confusion of the sense. There is no clearer view of the change which arises out of the more exact

rendering of this tense than is given in Rom. vi, 1-11. The Revisers most accurately render this great passage, and thus throw new and beautiful light upon it. We give their translation entire :

What shall we say then ? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound ? God forbid. We who died to sin, how shall we any longer live therein ? Or are ye ignorant that all we who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death ? We were buried therefore with him through baptism into death : that like as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, so we also might walk in newness of life. For if we have become united with *him* by the likeness of his death, we shall be also *by the likeness* of his resurrection ; knowing this, that our old man was crucified with *him*, that the body of sin might be done away, that so we should no longer be in bondage to sin ; for he that hath died is justified from sin. But if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him ; knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more ; death no more hath dominion over him. For the death that he died, he died unto sin once : but the life that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

Here they have translated every verb in its true aoristic sense, whereas the Authorized Version employs the present. Whether the aorist should ever be translated as a present is a question still undecided, although evidently the translators have regarded it as possible, and have acted accordingly.

Some of these variations of translation of this tense, however, are somewhat remarkable, and are legitimate subjects of criticism. They are, in some instances, of great significance, and cannot be lightly passed over. The aorist *ἥμαρτον* is translated *sinned* in Rom. v, 12, whereas in Rom. ii, 12, and iii, 23, the same word is translated *have sinned*. The use of this aorist for the perfect is denied by Winer, the most eminent of New Testament grammarians, and while it is allowed by Buttmann, is not established with certainty. There are some cases in which, when the term is definitely fixed by the circumstances or context, tenses in all languages are used somewhat indifferently to give variety or force to the expression. In such cases no special complications can arise, and no criticism is called for. The case of Rom. v, 12, is more important. The Authorized Version reads, "Death passed upon all men, for that all *have sinned*." The Revised Version reads,

"Death passed unto all men, for that *all sinned*." This passage is so similar, both in construction and thought, to Rom. iii, 22, that it is a matter of surprise that the same term and word should in one case be translated *have sinned*, and in the other *sinned*. Dr. Whedon (Commentary on Romans) on this passage gives, with great force and clearness, an aoristic sense to it, which is recognized both in classical and in New Testament usage, namely, that in both cases it is a gnostic aorist. His language is: "The aorist or past tense, here used of the word *sinned*, does in this epistle often imply a general certain fact or state of facts. So it is used in Rom. iii, 23; ix, 22, 23; viii, 29, 30." This force of the aorist is recognized by the revisers in their translation of 1 Pet. i, 25, "The grass withereth, and the flower falleth," where both verbs in the original are in the aorist tense.

Inasmuch as the *gnomic* is an established Greek usage, and the aorist for the perfect is questioned by many grammarians, the better way for the revisers would have been to have translated the aorist with uniform strictness, or to have left the Authorized Version unchanged in this respect. The American Committee suggest the marginal reading *sinned* in Rom. ii, 12, and iii, 23.

III. *Changes arising out of the present state of the English language and of the more exact knowledge of the meaning of the original.*

In this may properly be included both archæology and lexicography. These subjects are so broad that we can do little more than refer to them.

With regard to the removal of archaisms they have done well, and have ceased at the proper point. In this regard the conservatism of the committee has rendered good service in retaining all the old words which involve no misapprehension of the sense. The quaintness of the style is one of the great beauties of the Old Version, and it should only be removed when necessary to make clear the meaning.

It would be a superfluous task to notice the many improvements in translation and in punctuation. Mark ix, 22, 23 is a case in point: "And oft-times it hath cast him both into the fire and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us. And Jesus

said unto him, If thou canst ! All things are possible to him that believeth."

Again, how richly they have brought out the meaning of 2 Cor. ii, 14. The Authorized Version reads, "Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ." The Revised reads, "But thanks be unto God, which always leadeth us in triumph in Christ." It is the thanks of the great apostle to Christ, who has subjected him, that is here brought into view. In many, very many passages, the Revised Version will form a most valuable commentary.

There are some changes, however, the reasons for which are not so apparent. In Heb. i, 1, the Revision reads, "God, having of old time spoken unto the fathers in the prophets by divers portions and in divers manners." The changed meanings of the words *Πολυμερος καὶ Πολυτρόπως*, by *divers portions and in divers manners*, are strictly accurate, but the change of the order of the words, placing them out of the position they occupy in the Greek, is neither fortified by Greek usage nor by the antithesis required in the sense. There seems to be a double antithesis, but the chief one, which is that between the *divers portions and divers manners* of the old revelation and the singleness of the revelation in Christ, is obscured by the change. The Geneva, the Rheims, and the Authorized all agree in placing these words among the earliest in the sentence, and none of the versions make such a transfer of them as is found in this Revision.

A very remarkable case of explanatory translation is found in 2 Tim. ii, 26 : *καὶ ἀνανήψωσιν ἐκ τῆς τοῦ διαβόλου παγίδος ἐζωγραμένοι ὑπ' αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸ ἐκείνου θέλημα*. The Authorized Version reads, "And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will." The Revision has it, "And they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, having been taken captive by the Lord's servant unto the will of God." "The Lord's servant" is not in the Greek at all, nor is the word "God" in the Greek, as is admitted in the margin. This is not, therefore, a revised translation, but a paraphrase, which, whether correct or not, should have no place in an attempt at literal translation. The Authorized Version is more exact as a representation of the Greek, and should have been retained.

In James i, 17, "Neither *shadow of turning*," in the Revised reads, "Neither shadow that is cast by turning." The Greek of which this is a translation is, *τροπῆς ἀποσκίασμα*. It is, literally, *shadow of turning*. The exact nature of the genitive here may be a question; but in making it a subjective genitive, and expounding it to mean *cast by turning*, they have gone beyond the sphere of translators. The same remark is applicable to the clause in the Lord's Prayer, "Deliver us from the evil *one*." They have inserted *one* without authorization, and, irrespective of what it means, its insertion was unnecessary. Also, in Hebrews iii, 2, 5, and 6, in which the words *his house* occur, they have in each case placed in the margin an explanatory note saying, "that is, *God's house*." The only explanations called for in the margin were such as were necessary to explain the translation.

The matter of punctuation is very important, and because of the absence of marks of punctuation in the most ancient manuscripts, required great care on the part of the revisers. An instance in point, showing the difficulty, is found in Rom. ix, 5. Our Authorized Translation reads: "Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen."

The Revision reads: "Whose are the fathers, and of whom is Christ as concerning the flesh, 'who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen.'" To which the revisers add in the margin: "'Some modern interpreters place a full stop after *flesh*, and translate, *He who is God over all be (is) blessed forever*; or, *He who is over all is God, blessed forever*. Others punctuate, *flesh, who is over all. God be (is) blessed forever*.'" It will at once appear how delicate and difficult is the work of translation when so many ways of punctuation are possible. They have wisely adhered to the old method, and have very good grounds for their preference. This part of the revisers' work has been done with great care, and will be found to throw much light upon the sacred page. The absence of punctuation marks in the most ancient manuscripts makes this part of the work of revision partake of the nature of a commentary; but this is unavoidable, and the concurrent judgment of so many scholars as to what the punctuation ought to be carries with it great weight.

A point on which the revisers have insisted with much emphasis, is uniformity of translation, that is, the employment of the same English word for the same Greek word, whenever it is exegetically possible to do so. The principle is a good one, and has cleared up many passages to the ordinary reader. That this should be the case with all words where no essential difference in meaning would arise, seems highly proper. It is a rule, however, which requires great care and skill in its exercise. We are scarcely aware how frequently, even in English, we use the same word in close contextual connection, with different shades of meaning which are at once apparent to the reader. The same is true in Greek, and in such cases the skill of the translator is taxed to the utmost. A word that in itself has a distinct meaning has an entirely different meaning in its relations to an entire sentence. This is often seen in the difference between the word given in a translation and the same word as employed in the same commentary. Bishop Ellicott, the Chairman of the English Committee of the New Testament Revision, makes the following remarks in regard to the translations in connection with some of his own commentaries. His language is, (Preface to Philippians, page ix :)

I have more than once had my attention called to passages in former commentaries, where the translation in the notes has not appeared in perfect unison with that in the Revised Version. [His own translation accompanying his Commentary.] In most instances these seeming discrepancies have arisen from the fact that the fixed principles on which I venture to revise the Authorized Version do not always admit of exact identity of language in the version and in the note. In a word, the translation in the note presents what has been considered the most exact rendering of the words taken *per se*; the Revised Version preserves that rendering as far as is compatible with the *lex operis*, the context, the idioms of our language, or, lastly, that grace and archaic tone of our admirable version which, even in a revised form of it, designed only *for the closet*, it seemed a kind of sacrilege to displace for the possibly more precise, yet often really less expressive, phraseology of modern diction. Needlessly to divorce the original and that version with which our ears are so familiar, and often our highest associations and purest sympathies so intimately bound, is an ill-considered course, which, more than any thing else, may tend to foster an unyoked spirit of scriptural study and translation, alike unfilial and presumptuous, and to which a modern reviser may hereafter bitterly repent to have lent his example or his contributions.

This language of this distinguished scholar has in it the spirit of the true translator.

The Revisers' doctrine of *consequence*, however, that is, changes in translation, arising out of some former alteration, may easily be carried too far, and in some cases has injured rather than helped the sense.

There are instances in which they have not made the translation of the same word uniform, even when no confusion could arise out of such uniformity. In Mark xv, 45, they have, in accordance with the best manuscript authority, changed *σῶμα* to *πρῶμα*, and translated the latter by the English word *corpse*. This translation occurs with Matt. xiv, 12, and Mark vi, 29. In Matt. xxiv, 28, the same word is translated *carcase*, and in Rev. xi, 8, *dead bodies*, with the word *carcase* in the margin. The Greek word in each case is the same. The Revisers' distinction is between the human body, which they translate *corpse*, and the body of an animal, which they call both *dead body* and *carcase*. Would it not have been as well to give one name for all, and thus have complete uniformity, namely, in every case translate *πρῶμα* by *dead body*?

That this doctrine of *consequence* may easily lead astray is seen in Matt. xvi, 26, "For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his life? or what shall a man give in exchange for his life?" The margin for *life* reads *soul*. The meaning of that passage in the Revision is quite different from the impression made upon us by the Authorized Version: "For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" *ψυχή*, according to the translation, is not *soul*, but, as Alford says, "life in the highest sense." Yet they allow a marginal reading, *soul*. Also they had previously translated the same word by *soul*. In Matt. x, 28, the Revised translation retains the word *soul* for *ψυχή*. It reads: "And be not afraid of them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell." The comparison of this verse with Matt. xvi, 26, shows that in the latter case, in order to preserve a uniform translation of the same word, they have adopted a reading which weakens the force of the passage, confining to a pure earthly life that which we believe to refer to the spiritual and

immortal nature. The loss of our merely earthly life is not treated of in Scripture as a great calamity. In both of these cases there is no gain, either in sense or force, in the changes made in the Revision.

The subject of prepositions is extremely important, and has been handled by the revisers with much care. They have, however, contrary to their own doctrine of *consequence*, made some unnecessary changes in the rendering of the same word. The preposition *ὑπὲρ* is one of frequent use, especially by the Apostle Paul. We do not raise the question of the meaning of the word, but of the uniformity of translation. Whether in Pauline usage it is equivalent to *αὐτί* is not pertinent to our present inquiry. *ὑπὲρ* is employed in Paul's Epistles over one hundred times, while *αὐτί* is used but seven times. In the Gospels, 1 Corinthians, Galatians, Romans, it is in almost every case translated *for*; whereas in Phil. i, 4, 7, 29; Col. i, 7; and many places in 2 Corinthians, the same word is translated *in behalf of*. Why *for* is employed in Romans, Galatians and 1 Corinthians, and *in behalf of* in 2 Corinthians and Philippians, does not appear. *For* is susceptible of two meanings, and may, therefore, properly represent the uncertainty in the minds of many in regard to its exact force in some passages of great doctrinal significance. But why change from *for* to *in behalf of* in cases where no interest either of translation or of exegesis seems to require it? Here the doctrine of *consequence* is apparently violated without any reason for it. This seems to be the case where the rule, the "same word for the same thing," except in cases of decided exegetical necessity, would appear to be strictly in order and has been unnecessarily violated. That the word *for* as equivalent to *ὑπὲρ* in Romans is not out of order in Philippians, is shown by the translation of so scholarly a man as Bishop Ellicott, above referred to, a member of the English Committee. He translates *ὑπὲρ* *for* in Phil. i, 4, whereas in verse 19 he adheres to the Authorized *in behalf of*.

In their translation they should have put the more pronounced Hebraisms in modern English, that is, in every case where the sense is affected thereby. A more idiomatic English rendering of Luke xxii, 15, might have increased its force to the English reader, "And he said unto them, *With desire I have desired* to eat this passover with you before I suffer."

The phrase, *with desire I have desired*, is a translation of ἐπιθυμία ἐπεθύμησα, a recognized Hebraism, corresponding to the infinitive absolute joined to the finite verb, as מוֹת מוֹת, (Septuagint, θανάτω ἀποθάνειοθι,) *to die, thou shalt die*, or *thou shalt surely die*, in Gen. ii, 17. The sense of this verse in Luke is, "*I earnestly desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer*," a meaning which is not at first apparent to the reader of either the Authorized or the Revised Version.

These are some considerations in regard to this great work which have been suggested by a general perusal of parts of its contents. As we have looked at it more and more the conviction has gained in force that this is a great advance in the accurate presentation of the meaning of the original, and that in many cases, as already suggested, where no reason for the change appears to us, some reason must have appeared to those to whom the work was intrusted.

The reverent student of the Bible will not trouble himself too much with the effect this Revision will have on the current theological doctrines. Of one thing we are well assured: no vital doctrine has been affected to its injury by this work. The Trinity, the divinity of Christ, the atonement, regeneration and sanctification by faith, the eternity of rewards and punishments, stand out none the less clearly in the Revision of 1881 than in that of 1611. In any case, whatever theology is contained in the Bible must be accepted; whatever cannot be maintained and proved out of the holy Scriptures is not necessary to salvation.

In the case of the New Testament the wise men have once again brought their treasures and laid them at the feet of Christ in reverent homage to him as King of kings and Lord of lords; and in translating to men the revelation of his life and teachings they have won for themselves the heartfelt thanks of the generations that are to come. Honored, thrice honored, are these Christian scholars, who have thus been permitted to share the toil of opening to the millions of the English-speaking world the rich treasures of divine wisdom.

ART. VIII.—SYNOPSIS OF THE QUARTERLIES AND OTHERS OF THE HIGHER PERIODICALS.

American Reviews.

BIBLIOTHECA SACRA, July, 1881. (Andover.)—1. Old Catholicism; by Rev. Frank H. Foster. 2. The Know-Nothing Position in Religion; by Prof. James T. Bixby. 3. Does the New Testament Warrant the Hope of a Probation Beyond the Grave? by Prof. R. D. C. Robbins. 4. Exegesis of Matthew i, 1; by Rev. Charles C. Starbuck. 5. A Christian Sabbath in the New Dispensation: Biblical and Patristical Evidence; by Rev. William De Loss Love, D.D. 6. The New Testament Revision; by Rev. Frederic Gardiner, D.D. 7. Polyglot Bibles in the "John Carter Brown Library;" by Rev. J. C. Stockbridge, D.D.

NEW ENGLANDER, July, 1881. (New Haven.)—1. The Thoughts of the Emperor Marcus Aurelius; by Prof. R. B. Richardson. 2. The Authority of Faith; by Rev. Geo. B. Stevens. 3. Concerning Sacred Music, Ancient and Modern; by Rev. G. H. Griffin. 4. The Philosophy of Value; by Prof. J. B. Clark. 5. The Indo-European Family—its Subdivisions; by Prof. J. H. Wright. 6. More Light upon Maryland Toleration; by President Magoun. 7. The Progress of Liberty of Conscience in Christendom; by Rev. E. Woodward Brown. 8. The Constitution of Yale College; by Rev. Leonard Bacon, D.D.

September.—1. Professor David Paige Smith, M.D.: a Memorial Discourse; by President Porter. 2. The Minority in the Mother Country, 1774; by Rev. T. Harwood Pattison, D.D. 3. Moses and his Wife; by Rev. Moses C. Welch. 4. Old and New Calvinism; by Rev. John M. Williams. 5. Our National Name: What Does it Mean? by Charles H. J. Douglass. 6. College and University: President Carter's Inaugural Address; by Rev. Edward B. Coe, D.D. 7. Does Psyche "fly out of the Window?" by Rev. S. B. Goodenow. 8. Psychical Mechanics: Address of Dr. Gustave Glogau, of University of Zurich, Switzerland; translated by Rev. John B. Chase.

PRINCETON REVIEW, July, 1881. (New York.)—1. Continental and Island Life; by John W. Dawson, LL.D. 2. English Poetry in the Eighteenth Century; by Principal John D. Shairp, D.C.L. 3. The Historical Proofs of Christianity; by Prof. George P. Fisher, D.D., LL.D. 4. Philosophical Results of a Denial of Miracles; by President John Bascom. 5. Late American Statesmen; by Francis Wharton, D.D., LL.D. 6. Anthropomorphism; by M. Stuart Phelps, Ph.D.

September.—1. Assassination and the Spoils System; by Dorman B. Eaton, Esq. 2. The Prospective Civilization of Africa; by Canon George Rawlinson. 3. The Subjective Theory of Inspiration; by Prof. Charles Elliott, D.D. 4. Our Public Debts; by Robert P. Porter, Esq. 5. The Historical Proofs of Christianity; by George P. Fisher, D.D., LL.D. 6. On Certain Abuses in Language; by Edward A. Freeman, D.C.L.

PRESBYTERIAN REVIEW, July, 1881. (New York.)—1. The Plan of the New Bible Revision; by the Rev. Talbot W. Chambers, D.D. 2. Henry Boynton Smith; by Prof. Zephaniah M. Humphrey, D.D. 3. The Grounds and Methods of the Temperance Reform; by Prof. John W. Mears, D.D. 4. The Ethical Element in our Earlier Literature; by Prof. Theodore W. Hunt, Ph.D. 5. Critical Theories of the Sacred Scriptures in Relation to their Inspiration; by Prof. Charles A. Briggs, D.D. 6. Notes and Notices.

"The Presbyterian Review," conducted by Dr. A. A. Hodge and Charles A. Briggs as chief editors, with five learned gentlemen as associates, comes to us freighted with the learning and ability which we should expect from the great denomination it

represents. It is not the name of Hodge alone that impressively reminds us of the "Princeton" as it once was.

The article on the *New Bible Revision*, by Dr. Chambers, one of the revisers, expresses a favorable judgment of the work :

The deviations from the *textus receptus* are very many, averaging in the gospels five in every eight verses, (although of course many of these are very slight,) while in the Acts one of the revisers says there are sixteen hundred, the most of which, however, do not appear in the Revision. The work, then, may be fairly considered as exhibiting a faithful application of the principles of biblical criticism : and the result shown in its pages proves afresh the ignorance and the stupidity of the clamor which enemies of the truth have made about the various readings, as if they impeached the authority of the sacred text. . . . The book is more intelligible to the unlearned reader, and yet preserves the antique flavor which so well befits its age and character. Of course there are many who will object to the continued use of *which* to denote persons, and *be* in the sense of "are," but this, after all, is a matter of taste, since the archaisms do not mislead any body, and children do not read the Bible in order to learn modern grammar. On the other hand, some have denounced the changes which have been made as "frivolous and capricious." It is certain that this charge cannot be sustained. Caprice has had no hand in any thing that has been done. The character of the revisers is sufficient evidence of this. They had a reason for whatever they inserted or omitted. The reason may have been insufficient, but in their view it was well grounded and adequate. —Pp. 471, 473.

Eight pages of fine print are devoted to a survey of the doings of the Presbyterian General Assembly, 1881, written by Dr. A. A. Hodge. We note the two topics *Vacant Churches and Unemployed Ministers* and *Temperance*.

The deplorable facts as to failure of our Church, as at present administered, to distribute advantageously the ministerial force at her disposal, is clearly exhibited by the committee in the following table :

States.	Min- isters.	Without charge.	Vacant churches
New York.....	998	63	89
New Jersey.....	865	15	26
Pennsylvania.....	858	82	165
Ohio.....	504	32	106
Indiana.....	185	15	84
Illinois.....	401	42	135
Missouri.....	130	19	52
Kansas.....	181	20	43
Colorado.....	37	6	12
Utah.....	12	0	0
California.....	122	7	40

This condition they attribute to three causes: (1) Want of adequate support for the ministry; (2) A lack of consecration on the part of the ministry to its work; (3) A want of system in bringing those who are willing and able to work and the vacant Churches together.—P. 584.

A plan was formed for remedying this evil by organic action.

On the subject of *temperance* there was appointed a permanent committee, with its center at New York, consisting of seven ministers and seven elders. Some objection was raised against this movement, as forming a precedent for "an endless series of other reformatory agencies." But the Assembly wisely viewed intemperance as such a specialty as to relieve this organization from being a precedent. We then have the following two paragraphs, for which Dr. H. seems to be personal sponsor:

The great danger lies in the practical matter of the use of real wine (that is, fermented juice of the grape) at the Lord's Supper. This Assembly decided that its predecessors "had always recognized the right of each Church Session to decide what is bread and what is wine." This appears to be an extreme concession, in view of the fact that the traditions of the fathers, the *consensus* of the Churches, the history of the past, the scholarship of the present, the testimony of travelers and missionaries, stand as one unbroken wall in testimony to the fact that to become WINE it is necessary that the juice of the grape should be fermented. This is so true that any real or apparent testimony to the contrary is received only as a puzzle of eccentricity or of accident.

Yet there need be no danger until the use of unfermented fruit-juice is erected into a *moral* principle. If a man who knows that Christ used the fermented juice of the grape in the institution of the Last Supper, to symbolize his atoning blood, yet declares that it is immoral for us to do so, he is evidently guilty of an unsurpassed blasphemy. But the great mass of competent scholars know that Christ did so. Those brethren, therefore, who press this question as a *moral* one threaten not only to oppress the consciences of their brethren, but to introduce an occasion of schism far deeper and broader than any mere difference of doctrine or Church government, or of sacramental mode or virtue. As for the rest, if this question of BIBLE WINES were once settled we ought to be all one. Every Christian must be a sincere temperance man, and in this age the great mass of us are ready, in all social relations, to advocate the practice of total abstinence on the ground of Christian expediency, which of course carries with the obligation of Christian duty.—P. 586.

All that seems to us extremely perpendicular and positive phraseology. If Dr. Hodge *knows* that "competent scholars

know that Christ used the fermented juice of the grape in the institution of the Lord's Supper," that of course settles the question; but Dr. Hodge scarcely knows that "competent scholars know" so; and that they "know" so is, mayhap, not a fact. Says "M'Clintock & Strong's Cyclopaedia," noticed on another page, "There is no positive proof that the fluid used by our Lord in instituting the sacred communion was alcoholic." Now, if there is "no positive proof," there can be no positive knowledge, and even competent scholars cannot "know" it. We doubt not that an intense repugnance to the use of a dishonest exegesis to attain a reformatory end lies at the bottom of these very positive assertions of questionable opinions. And surely the attainment of an ethical end by an unethical process is to be most peremptorily rejected. Yet the overstrained fear of such a dishonesty may destroy the mental balance, and lead to as fearful a moral disaster on the other side. We think these venerated men ought to feel some misgivings, ought to deal in gentler statements, when they find themselves intensely maintaining the absolute duty of *poison in the communion cup*. So startling a position should give pause, and leave a most serious query whether their reasonings are not terribly invalidated by their results—amounting to very near a *reductio ad absurdum*. And we may further hint that any assumption to read out of the guild of scholarship any questioner of these assertions will be no success.

AMERICAN CATHOLIC QUARTERLY REVIEW, July, 1881. (Philadelphia.)—1. The Soul and Evolution; by St. George Mivart, F.R.S., etc. 2. Catholic Colonization in the West; by William J. Onahan. 3. Richard Crashaw; by Joseph A. Nolan, M.D., Ph.D. 4. The Latest of the Revisions; by Very Rev. James A. Corcoran, D.D. 5. The Irish Land Bill; by M. F. Sullivan. 6. What Right has the Federal Government to Mismanage the Indians; by John Gilmary Shea, LL.D. 7. Biology; or, The Principle of Life; by Rev. Thos. Hughes, S. J.

The article on CATHOLIC COLONIZATION IN THE WEST indicates a new departure for the Catholic immigrants into our country. While other races and religious denominations pass our great cities and lay their proprietorship upon the large landed areas of our West, the Irish Catholics fill the tenement houses of New York. They are the victims of the saloon and the caucus; they become impoverished and demoralized, and stand as the most terrible indictment against Catholicism in the whole field of controversy. The whole country views them as "the

slums" of the city and dregs of the country; and exclaim, "And this, forsooth, is the Holy Catholic Church!" While this sad repute of her immigrants remains Catholicism will find that her immigration is her only source of increase. It is at a terrible cost that she plays subservient to our lowest demagogism and purloins money from our public funds, through the fingers of our party "Bosses," to build cathedrals. No conversions from Protestantism can take place; and when the foreign fountain is exhausted the stream is dry and the lake to which it flowed becomes stagnant and putrid.

But let her spread her Ireland in the broad West, and industry, republicanism, and piety may make them a beauty and a power. We have no fear of them. Time and events can mutate the immutable and correct the infallible. The pastorate of the Pope will first become solely spiritual and then nominal. The inducements to maintain transubstantiation and priestly substitution will cease. And then there will be a splendid residue of truth, history, and piety in Catholicism which we all can admire and love when her present over-lofty claims shall be duly lowered. At present she is still *Roman* Catholic; when she drops her Roman traits and becomes purely Catholic she will form a concordant *part* of what is truly the Catholic Church of Christ.

The article on THE LATEST OF THE REVISIONS, by the learned and able editor, Dr. Corcoran, is rather preparatory to a second article, and so is a survey of the past revisions. That survey, we are sorry to say, is written in the bitterest style of old partisanship, suited by him to his own audience, but little fitted to stand the criticism of a broader and less partisan public. Not that the charges of partisan translating of the Bible are in all cases untenable, especially in the case of Beza. But, with the learned Doctor, all on the Protestant side is black, and all on the other side seems spotless white. He well knows what criticisms can be passed upon the Rhemish version, both text and notes. And his candid acknowledgments of the excellence of the latest revision admit that as the mists of partisanship are dispersed Protestantism rejoices in the attainment of purer truth. Would that we could say the same of Romanism! Very soon then might Romanism disappear, and Catholicism be the noble remainder.

Omitting the extended remarks upon the early English versions, much of which is good only for its intended audience, we quote the following *statement* of the *three steps* by which Protestantism secured its independence of the domination of Rome :

First, they began by clamoring for toleration, or what would now be called religious liberty. When, by fair means or foul, they had secured this, their next cry was for religious supremacy. Successful in this, as they were too often, by tumult, rebellion, and crime, the third effort was to procure the extermination of the adherents of the old creed. This third step was common to all countries, whether the Reformation had grown upward from the people or downward from the throne.—P. 483.

Leaving out the opprobrious phrases here as elsewhere interpolated through nearly the whole article, Dr. Corcoran's *three steps* may thus be restated : First, the Romanists denied the Protestants' right to their own religious opinions, and claimed the right, and exercised it, to crush it out by force and bloodshed ; while the Protestants asserted the rights of religious liberty and maintained them in battle. Thus far the Romanists were cruel despots and the Protestants the asserters of the rights of man. Second, the Protestants aimed at "supremacy ;" that is, they found they could secure their religious freedom against their assailants only by conquering them and compelling them to keep the peace. We submit they were and are right in both these steps, and the Romanists wrong. Third, they aimed at the "extermination" of those who purposed to exterminate them. Protestants have rightly destroyed their inveterate destroyers. Nevertheless, that in this great contest of three centuries for religious freedom the Protestants have never overstepped their own principles and become assailants unnecessarily, need not be affirmed. But the great whole of the history is that Romanism has permanently aimed to crush out religious freedom and Protestantism to maintain it. Hence, when Dr. Corcoran scatters through his learned "Quarterly" his complaints of the "persecution of Catholics," we may remind him that such utterance will only do for his own limited audience ; to all outsiders it reads like most preposterous gush ; like the whine of a highwayman "persecuted" from his bloody attempt to murder and rob you of your dearest

rights. How gladly would we be able to say that this denial of the right of private opinion, and this affirmation of Romish right to crush it out by force and bloodshed when Rome has the power, was renounced by Romanists in our America. But it is still held, and not exercised only for *want of power*. The very terms of the learned Doctor's own statement of the *three steps* show that his whole soul is in favor of the crushers. That Protestants should claim religious freedom, that they should, rather than be enslaved, prefer to attain the supremacy, nay, that they should even exterminate their exterminators, is in the Doctor's view a very great impertinence on the part of Protestants. That such views as his could be boldly uttered in this our free Protestant America displays great sincerity and heroism. We wait for his next article, hoping to profit by some acute criticisms on the new version from his stand-point.

NORTH AMERICAN REVIEW, July, 1881. (New York.)—1. Present Aspects of the Indian Problem; by Carl Schurz. 2. The Religious Conflicts of the Age; by A Yankee Farmer. 3. The Power of Public Plunder; by James Parton. 4. The Common Sense of Taxation; by Henry George. 5. The Cost of Cruelty; by Henry Bergh. 6. A Study of Tennyson; by Richard Henry Stoddard.

August.—1. The Christian Religion; by Robert G. Ingersoll, Jeremiah S. Black. 2. Obstacles to Annexation; by Frederic G. Mather. 3. Crime and Punishment in New York; by Rev. Dr. Howard Crosby. 4. A Militia for the Sea; by John Roach. 5. Astronomical Observatories; by Prof. Simon Newcomb. 6. The Public Lands of the United States; by Thomas Donaldson.

September.—1. The Church, the State, and the School; by Prof. W. T. Harris. 2. Natural Ethics; by M. J. Savage. 3. The Monroe Declaration; John A. Kasson. 4. Shall Church Property be Taxed?; by Rev. E. E. Hale. 5. Jewish Ostracism in America; by Nina Morais. 6. The Decay of New England Thought; by Rev. J. H. Ward; 7. Ghost-Seeing; by Prof. F. H. Hedge. 8. Factitious History; by Rossiter Johnson.

The article on NATURAL ETHICS, by M. J. Savage, is simply a flippant specific chapter from what we call the great Brutalistic Philosophy. The writer begins, as is usual with his class, to pour forth a jubilate over the approaching downfall of Christianity. He tells, with a very self-confident magniloquence, about the growing disbelief of the Bible as an infallibility; that "the best conscience of the age" rejects the God of the Bible, etc., etc. The coterie of mutual admirers who chant this sort of triteness, we have little doubt, are perfectly sincere, and still less doubt are most egregious simpletons. They are ignorant of the plainest historic and statistical facts of the past and present in regard to the actual power, growth, and gigantic advances of the Bible Christianity of to-day.

They know nothing of the millions annually poured forth by Christian liberality every year. They see nothing of the rapid multiplication of Christian churches, colleges, and theological schools in this, and growingly in every other land of the habitable globe. They overlook the vast associate agencies of Christianity, translating the Bible and its attendant literature into every language, and scattering its copies in every land. Biblical literature, they are unaware, has never before builded such libraries of commentary, travels, researches, and developments as at this hour. They never count the missionaries that are going forth, forming Churches in India, in China, Japan, and winning the isles of the sea to Christ. They have not dreamed, what is true, that Christianity, in all her past history, never increased so rapidly, going forth conquering and to conquer so triumphantly, as during the last seventy years. They take no cognizance of the statistical fact that evangelical Christianity shows a more rapid increase than our national population. Does the wonderful sensation, religious, literary, commercial, and popular, over the appearance of the new version of the New Testament indicate that the Bible is growing obsolete? Some years since a New York meeting called to honor Mr. Tyndall as a scientist seemed to indicate that infidelity was mounting the ascendant; but in a few brief days an infidel convention assembled in the same city and the orators therein were left to mouth their blasphemies to each other and to empty benches. And perhaps no assemblage ever caused such a week of moral excitement in this city as the Evangelical Alliance about the same period. When we contemplate the earnest and stupendous movements now being made by Christianity and then turn to see these flatulent vaporers, sitting on their cushions like a true "rump parliament" and declaiming about the downfall of Christianity, we are strongly reminded of Thersites in Homer railing at the chiefs and armies of Greece, and think it time for some Ulysses to lay due castigation upon their effervescences.

Never has Christian literature been so immense, so bold, so learned and triumphant as now. Infidels find their attacks not shunned, but promptly met and routed. Look at the immense library of Christian literature poured out by the Clarkes of Edinburgh. Notice our own powerful "Book Concern," the

Bible House, and the many religious publishing houses of America. Who can count the issues of religious newspapers? Con the pages of our synopsis, and see what a list of religious Quarterlies. And we hang out our colors boldly, while anti-christianity inserts itself under euphemistic cover. We have "Christian Advocates," but no bold "Infidel Advocate;" we have "Wesleyan Journals," but no "Tom Paine Journals," no "Voltaire Intelligencers." Our Christian Quarterlies are not ashamed of even their denominational names, but are "The Methodist Quarterly Review," "The Presbyterian Quarterly Review," "The Baptist Review," etc. But Mr. Savage does not record his boasts and doctrinal brutalisms in "The Brutalistic Review," nor have we any above-board "Atheist Quarterly" or "Agnostic Magazine."

Mr. Savage rejects the supernatural and transcendent; holding that all living, intellectual, and moral nature emerges by heredity from below, and nothing comes to man from above. We are evolved from brute nature, and are nothing but more complexly brute ourselves. The human race is a joint-stock menagerie, and ethics is nothing more than a calculation of joint-stock interest. This calculation simply concerns our comfortable condition. It is developed in man, the more complex brute, from the nature of the simpler brute. It is the same in kind but more "specialized" in degree. The hedgehog and the hyena rule themselves by the same ethics as the homo. The brutes are as real, but less developed, philosophers. Mr. S. knows no immortality. Man, like his fellow brute, exhales all the soul he has with his final breath. And so we have an exposition, after the latest and most improved pattern, of the true, orthodox, elevated, ennobling, all-conquering BRUTALISTIC PHILOSOPHY.

UNIVERSALIST QUARTERLY, July, 1881. (Boston.)—1. Origin, History, and Doctrines of the Ancient Jewish Sects; by Rev. O. D. Miller. 2. A Study of American Archæology—Process of Investigation; by Rev. J. P. MacLean. 3. The New Orthodoxy; by A. C. Barry, D.D. 4. Paul's Gospel; by Rev. J. Smith Dodge. 5. The Sacrifice of Christ; by Rev. S. S. Hebbard. 6. Science and Art in Relation to Plant Life; Rev. S. H. McColister. 7. The Gospel for all the World; by J. G. Adams, D.D.

The "Universalist Quarterly" evinces its repugnance to neology by its cool reception of Robertson Smith's Lectures, and its opposition to the materialism of Maudsley and Ham-

mond, by narrating authentic facts showing that mind does often perceive beyond the reach of the physical instrumentalities of the senses. It furnishes, as illustration, the autobiographic account given by the eminent German scientist, litterateur, and preacher, Heinrich Zschokke, of his own frequent mental perception, when he met a stranger, of the most vivid and accurate scenes and doings of the person's past life. People came to him invested with their own antecedents; which seems much like an anticipation of that recognition of each other in the resurrection state which we have described in our note on 1 Cor. xv, 44. The editor also narrates the perception by Swedenborg, when in Gottenburg, of a fire at that moment taking place in Stockholm, three hundred miles distant, attested (in a letter given in full) as being beyond all question by the eminent German philosopher Kant. Both these narratives are facts, and facts that materialistic pseudo-science cannot explain.

We said, in a former Quarterly, that such indubitable facts are constantly occurring, often suppressed, but often published and intentionally forgotten. They are appearing every now and then, uncontradicted and inexplicable, in the daily newspapers. Here is one from the "London Daily News," in regard to the celebrated Assyriologist George Smith, and his friend, Dr. Delitzsch :

Mr. Smith, the Assyriologist, died at Aleppo on the 19th of August, at or about the hour of six in the afternoon. On the same day, and between three quarters of an hour and an hour later, a friend and fellow-worker of Mr. Smith's (Dr. Delitzsch) was going to the house of a third person, the author of the account of the labors of the departed scholar which appeared in a weekly contemporary, (the "Academy.") In the course of his walk Dr. Delitzsch passed within a stone's throw of the house in which Mr. Smith lived when in London, and suddenly heard his own name uttered aloud in a "most piercing cry," which thrilled him to the marrow. The fact impressed him so strongly that he looked at his watch, noted the hour, and, although he did not mention the circumstance at the time, recorded it in his note-book. In this particular case, as it is reported, the skeptic can scarcely make much use of the fact that Dr. Delitzsch did not mention his experience to any one at the time it happened. The record in his note-book would be amply sufficient evidence of the liveliness of the impression. Criticism would be better employed in discovering the possibility of a suggestion of Mr. Smith to Dr. Delitzsch's mind. He was at the moment "passing the end

of Crogsland road in which Mr. George Smith lived. He was, however, not thinking of him, and it is difficult to imagine that an unconscious suggestion of the brain, caused by the law of the association of ideas, could take the shape of a seeming cry, not of his friend's name, but of his own, so piercing as to thrill him to the marrow.

The following we take from the "New York Times:"

SINGULAR INCIDENT CONNECTED WITH BISHOP LEE'S DEATH.

A private letter from Davenport, Iowa, received in Boston, contains the following: "We have been very anxious the last two weeks over the illness of Bishop Lee, which terminated in his death on Saturday morning. The whole community is saddened by the event. Some two months ago he got up in the night and took a bath, and on returning to his room he made a mistake and stepped off a long flight of stairs, and landed at the foot with a tremendous crash, as he was very heavy, weighing over two hundred pounds. It aroused the whole family, and Mrs. Lee and Carrie sprang from their beds, and, lighting each a candle, went to see what had happened, and found the Bishop lying on the floor of the entry. He got up, however, without aid, and seemed to have received no injury except a few slight bruises, though his right hand was a little lamed. Mr. H. and myself called on him two days after, and while telling us the circumstance of the fall he mentioned this coincidence: He had a letter in his hand, which he had just received from his son Henry, living at Kansas City. His son wrote: 'Are you well? for last night I had a dream that troubles me. I heard a crash, and, standing up, said to my wife, "Did you hear that crash?" I dreamed that father had a fall and was dead. I got up and looked at my watch, and it was 2 o'clock. I could not sleep again, so vivid was the dream.' And it made him anxious to hear from home. The Bishop said he was not superstitious, but he thought it remarkable that Henry should have had the dream at the very hour of the same night that the accident occurred. The difference in the time there and here is just fifteen minutes, and it was 2:15 by his watch, making it at the same moment. It was as if he had actually heard the fall. And the fall finally caused the Bishop's death. His hand became intensely painful, and gangrene set in, which, after two weeks of suffering, terminated his life."

Now, it cannot be conceived that a fire at Stockholm pictured itself on the retina of Swedenborg at Gottenburg, or that a sound from Asia, by atmospheric vibration, touched the tympanum of Delitzsch at London. Nor could a special air-wave go from Davenport to Kansas City to strike on Henry's eardrum. Without the material organ the mind must have seen

and heard. And the idea seems to suggest itself that the organism is as much a *limitation* upon the far-reaching powers of the soul as an *instrument* of its ordinary action. And such facts are so numerous that "criticism" cannot be allowed to palm upon them any sham interpretations.

This "Quarterly" tells us that fifty years ago the "evangelical" pulpits proclaimed "that the heathen generally would be given over to the devil and eternal torments." Such has never been the doctrine of Methodism nor the teaching of her pulpits. The old Arminians of Holland rejected it; Wesley and Fletcher and all our standards repudiate it. The doctrine of Dr. Fowler, quoted by this "Quarterly," is at variance with our Methodist standards.

QUARTERLY REVIEW OF THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH, SOUTH, July, 1881. (Nashville, Tenn.)—1. The Genesis of Infidelity; by Geo. T. Gould, D.D. 2. The Benson Family: Father and Son; by George J. Stevenson, M.A. 3. Carlyle's Reminiscences; by President A. B. Stark. 4. The Sabbath; by Rev. E. O. Frierson. 5. The Memorial Volume; by J. B. Wardlaw, Jun., M.A. 6. Holiness and Sin—New Theory Noticed; by T. N. Ralston, D.D. 7. Wesleyan Methodism. 8. Prophecy: its Interpretation and Uses; by Henry Cowles, D.D. 9. May Women Preach? 10. The Revised Version of the English New Testament. 11. The Church Corrupted; by Rev. John Armitage.

The Quarterly of our Southern sister Church is always a welcomed visitor at our table. We note with pleasure that the names of the contributors appear with the articles, so that we may in due time learn who form the literary republic of Southern Methodism. Our own Quarterly usually presents some contribution from the ablest pens of the South. The articles of the Southern are rather too short for the full unfolding of a topic for which a Quarterly exists. The editorial, beside the book notices, has a multifarious miscellany of literary matters, where high literary dignity sometimes drops, perhaps, into a too colloquial phraseology.

The editor, who is himself a commentator, has taken a great interest in the Revised Version, especially in the matter of a correct text. His critical judgment indicates that if the Revision Committee were now to be selected he would be the proper representative of our Church South, in the work. His judgment of the Revision, as a substitute for the Old Version, is adverse:

We repeat the *caveat* which we gave in April, as a careful examination of the R. V. satisfies us that the English-speaking

Churches will never adopt it "to be read in Churches" till it is subjected to a more careful revision.—P. 494.

He imputes to our last Quarterly a *twit* and a *fling* at "the illiteracy of the South," and advises us to read Dr. Haygood. But *twit* and *fling* are below the level of our Quarterly, and the very words are below the normal level of its vocabulary. It has uttered in the past many rebukes and criticisms, but always in a serious and earnest style, worthy of the dignity of the subject, and solely with a view not to malign, but to produce a reformatory effect. It is unjust in Dr. Summers to impute to us any desire to depreciate, offend, or wrong the South.

By this time he knows that we have read Dr. H. with high approval, and have noted the contrast between Macon and Nashville. When the South takes firm and active stand on Dr. Haygood's platform the echoes of rebuke from the North will be gladly silent, and the waves of approval and congratulation will roll southward. And here we record our pleasure at the magnificent success of the meeting of the National Teachers' Association at Atlanta; at the noble lead given by the eloquent Governor Colquit, of Georgia, and the appointment of that distinguished Southern educator, Dr. G. J. Orr, as President of the National Association. And the "Atlanta Exposition" will open before our eyes a vista of the new, free, industrial, prosperous South, over which the Southerner's gratification cannot be higher than ours. Many of the people of our South have been asking compensation for their slaves. The South will receive it, a hundred and a thousand fold, in that grand prosperity which the abolition of slavery has inaugurated, and which never could have existed under the old iron system. She would have had it, a hundred and a thousand fold, long ere this, had she struck for freedom when Garrison first rang the "fire-bell in the night" of "immediate emancipation." That terrible bell-ringer was the South's truest friend. Such is the romance of our history!

And another flash of that romance has just crossed our national sky in the assassination of our President. How has the whole nation's heart melted by his apparently dying bed! One great national sympathy has fused all hearts into oneness: and we are again, as in the olden time, and better, one people as one man. Such immediacy, spontaneity, and unanimity of feeling

were poured from the South as from the North; and we have all one loyal heart for our common Great Republic. Sectional confidence is being restored, and our Southern brethren will yet find and feel that it was a great mistake to suppose we cherished hatred in our hearts. By the light of this flash of the assassin's pistol all eyes have been able to see the simplicity and the grandeur, the goodness and the greatness, of our President's nature; and, as a great sufferer, he has achieved more than the greatest of exploits could have wrought.

BAPTIST REVIEW, July, August, September, 1881. (Cincinnati.)—1. *The Natural Headship of Adam*; by Rev. Philip S. Moxom. 2. *The Apocalypse—its Authorship and its Date*; by D. W. Phillips, D.D. 3. *The Baptism of Fire*; by Rev. C. E. Smith. 4. *The Moral and Spiritual Elements of the Atonement*; by Rev. George B. Stevens. 5. *The Mother of God*; by C. E. W. Dobbs, D.D. 6. *A Study of the Inquisition*; by Rev. J. C. Fernald. 7. *The Place of Preaching in the Plan of God*; by Rev. J. M. Taylor. 8. *Fasting as a Religious Exercise—its Place and Purpose*; by Rev. P. A. Nordell.

The article on the Natural Headship of Adam is an able refutation of the Calvinistic doctrine of "hereditary guilt," in the sense of a direct lineal damnation of those born of Adam. This doctrine is thus stated: "Adam's sin entailed guilt and penalty. It entailed guilt and penalty for himself; but as he was the race, his sin entailed guilt and penalty for the race."

We may here note that Mr. Wesley excluded this doctrine of "hereditary guilt" from our Twenty-five Articles. From the Ninth Article of the Church of England his own hand erased the words, (in regard to original sin,) AND, THEREFORE, IN EVERY PERSON THAT IS BORN INTO THE WORLD IT DESERVETH GOD'S WRATH AND DAMNATION.

The doctrine, then, of a born desert of wrath and damnation is not Wesleyan. He struck the doctrine out, and, if we are herein Wesleyan, we strike it out also. This does not deny the doctrine of what is called Original Sin; nor of the sinward tendency of the natural man; nor the contrariety between the purity of God and this sinwardness of man. It does deny its responsibility; its DESERT OF WRATH AND DAMNATION. "Hereditary guilt" in the sense of desert of wrath and damnation, is expressly excluded from our Wesleyan Theology by Wesley's latest authority. As Dr. Fisk well affirms, man is never responsible for his hereditary "fault" until he has made it his own by personal actual sin; and that saves our theology from the doctrine of "infant damnation."

denies that "punishment" was transferred to Christ; affirms that Christ's sufferings satisfied "the righteous element in divine love;" and that it "testifies to the guilt of sin, and proclaims the righteousness of God in its punishment."

English Reviews.

BRITISH AND FOREIGN EVANGELICAL REVIEW, July, 1881. (London.)—1. Recent Attacks on Calvinism; by Rev. R. M'Cheyne Edgar. 2. The Christian Ministry Not a Priesthood; by Rev. John Kelly. 3. Culdee Colonies in the North and West; by Rev. John Campbell. 4. A Great Doxology. 5. The Liberal Theology; by Sup.-Lic. Gust. Kreibitz. 6. Presbyterian Consolidation in Canada; by Rev. Robert Campbell, M.A. 7. The Reasonableness of Faith; by Principal Shairp. 8. Inspiration; by Dr. A. A. Hodge and Prof. B. B. Warfield.

INDIAN EVANGELICAL REVIEW, July, 1881. (Calcutta.)—1. The Sunday-School in India; by Rev. T. J. Scott, D.D. 2. List of Important Scriptural Terms, with proposed Renderings in Bengali. 3. The Primacy of the Bishop of Rome; by the editor. 4. Historical Sketches of Primary Education in the Madras Presidency; by Rev. James Cooling. 5. The Great Commission, Matt. xxviii, 19; by Rev. D. Downie. 6. India's Immediate Conversion; by a Young Missionary. 7. Santal Kherwarism in Chutia Nagpore and Santal Pergannas; by Rev. A. Campbell. 8. Modern Spiritualism: Its Claims and Pretensions; by an English Medical Missionary.

WESTMINSTER REVIEW, July, 1881. (New York.)—1. Characteristics of Aristotle. 2. Island Life. 3. Mr. Fitzgerald's Life of George the Fourth. 4. The Sugar Bounties Question. 5. The Development of Religion. 6. George Eliot: her Life and Writings.

LONDON QUARTERLY REVIEW, July, 1881. (New York.)—1. Madame de Staël: A Study of her Life and Times. 2. Sir Richard Temple's "India in 1880." 3. Earthquakes, their Cause and Origin. 4. Thomas Aquinas and the Vatican. 5. Walks in England. 6. Florence. 7. Schliemann's "Ilios." 8. Radical History and Tory Government. 9. English Trade and Foreign Competition.

LONDON QUARTERLY REVIEW, July, 1881. (London.)—1. Lord Clyde and the Indian Mutiny. 2. Japanese Laureates. 3. The Hampden of Holland. 4. Degeneration. 5. The Italian and Scotch Missions to Northumbria. 6. The Rights of Hindu Women. 7. Prehistoric Europe and Man. 7. The Wesleyan Hymnology; Recent Criticism. 9. The Revised Version.

The article of **DEGENERATION** calls our attention to the fact that genetic evolution has been mistaken in affirming that all development is upward and never downward. There is in nature, under the proper conditions, *degeneration* as well as exaltation. The conditions of this degeneration are given as three:

1. Parasitism is a very general cause of degeneration. "Any new set of conditions occurring to an animal which render its food and safety very easily attained, seem to lead, as a rule, to degeneration. . . . The habit of parasitism clearly acts upon

animal organization in this way. Let the parasitic life once be secured, and away go legs, jaws, eyes, and ears; the active, highly-gifted crab, insect, or annelid may become a mere sac, absorbing nourishment and laying eggs." 2. Fixity or immobility is another reason, as we see in the case of the barnacle. 3. Another cause of the degeneration of animal forms is distinguished as *vegetative nutrition*. "Let us suppose a race of animals fitted and accustomed to catch their food, and having a variety of organs to help them in this chase—suppose such animals suddenly to acquire the power of feeding on the carbonic acid dissolved in the water around them, just as green plants do. This would lead to a degeneration; they would cease to hunt their food, and would bask in the sunlight, taking food in by the whole surface, as plants do by their leaves. Certain small flat worms, by name *Convoluta*, of a bright green color, appear to be in this condition. Their green color is known to be the same substance as leaf-green; and Mr. Patrick Geddes has recently shown that by the aid of this green substance they feed on carbonic acid, making starch from it as plants do. As a consequence, we find that their stomachs and intestines, as well as their locomotive organs, become simplified, since they are but little wanted."—Pp. 363, 364.

Now these three conditions upon inspection will, we think, be found reducible to one, *inactivity*, or rather the cessation of the need of activity for satisfied existence. The hardships of life requiring exertion for existence are the sources of improvement, progress, elevation. All nature, perhaps, must thus *work* to obtain ascendancy in the scale of being.

Applying this to the races of mankind, it is said that the law of human progress and regress is explained. Hardships train a people to action, and the ascendancy or even supremacy is thereby attained. But the repose of victory is the fatal beginning of decay. Prof. Lankester maintains, however, that science is for the human race the source of safety. *Men know the causes of decline*, and thence are able to avoid them. Hence, for our race, at its present summit of advancement, the course of ascending progress is a plain, clear, maintainable line. To this our reviewer demurs.

He denies that the *knowledge* is likely to secure the requisite action. Will a people at the summit of prosperous ease subject themselves to the hardships of their earlier adversity? The very nature of their enjoyment secures that enervation which is the very *exhaustion of the power* of energetic action. And hence he concludes that the true safeguard lies in the transcendent

element of our *spiritual nature*. The value of that element we readily concede ; but our spiritual elevation must not be of the Simon Stylites order, for that produced degeneration.

The source of elevation, the proof against degeneration, let us call *athletism*. It is the vigorous training of our whole nature to its highest tension, physical, mental, moral. Now is it necessary, in order to this *athletic* training, to reproduce the hardships of barbarian or semi-civilized life ? May not action be as attainable, and as fully motivated, by the desire of higher ascendancies as by the lower ? May not each new level of life become platform for further arduous exertion for a still higher step of the terrace ? That lower stage was but one of the lower platforms of the terrace. Where is the topmost plane that leaves no incitement for the higher ?

Both Moses and Darwin declare for an ascending evolution. According to both ascending progress is the law, degeneration is the limited exception. And the degeneration tends to destruction, and so the ascent becomes cleaner and more positive. The first chapter of Genesis gives us the ascending steps. Assuming, as we do, the immutability of the boundary line between species, large on any view may be the area of mutability within the boundary of a given species. We know what varieties are included within the limits of humanity. We are not convinced that any lower species has crossed the line up into humanity ; we do not believe that man on earth will ever cross the upper line and rise above humanity. But as our GENESIS pictures the process by which man attained his supremacy at the head of creation, so our APOCALYPSE tells us of man's gradual attainment of the height of his own terrene nature, and then the sudden more than restoration of his Edenic state.

ON THE REVISED VERSION the verdict of this Review accords very much with our own expressed opinion :

On the average, every verse of the New Testament undergoes some change, and every change may be said, as a rule, to aim at a more faithful rendering of the Greek. The reader, as he goes on, is presently arrested by some unfamiliar expression, and immediately, as matter of course, revolts against it. On second thoughts, and with the Greek before him, he finds that he has a more exact English rendering of the passage. Either the order of the words, or a new term introduced, or some slight omission corrects the sentence in an undefinable manner, and thus gives

him—the reader—the pleasant feeling of having the writer's thought more clearly in his mind. It will always—or at least for a long time—be matter of question whether it would not have been better to leave hundreds of these emendations alone. We should not be at all surprised if these should long hinder the acceptance of the book, though, for ourselves, we think them most valuable, and must vote in their favor. . . . Meanwhile, we venture to assert that the present translation of the New Testament is in a thousand instances more precise, as a reflection of the sacred original, than the old one, and that this fact ought to settle the question of its success. . . . Even supposing the prognostications of many to be fulfilled, and the New Version never to supersede the Old one in authorized use, it will be a great advantage that it was ever published. It will prove to be one of the most useful theological helps of the many which are constantly pouring from the press.—Pp. 480, 481.

The article on PREHISTORIC MAN IN EUROPE has the following paragraph on the HYMN OF THE CREATION of Genesis i :

The most ancient traditions of civilization are concentrated around that Eastern region which the Book of Genesis points to as the cradle of the race. A hundred years ago it could not have been demonstrated, as it can now, that the languages spoken between Iceland and Bengal are descended from the same stock. A very ingenious article has lately been published in the "Dublin Review" by the Roman Catholic Bishop of Clifton on the first thirty-four verses of Genesis. He is of opinion that it is a hymn of ancient Egypt which Moses introduced into his history. The monumental Records and other authorities quoted by the Bishop, refer to the dedication of each day of the week in separate worship ; and he thinks that the hymn belongs to the earliest and purest period of the religion which flourished on the banks of the Nile. Whether the hymn is due to such an origin or not, there is at least so much evidence furnished of a simple, theistic worship in Egypt in the earliest period, confirming other testimony to "the heaven which lies about us in our infancy," and which was vividly near to the primitive peoples.

This idea first appeared, we believe, in "The Aids to Faith," from the pen of Rev. Mr. Rorison, and was favorably noticed by our Quarterly. Our view of it, however, was that it is an antediluvian hymn inherited from the Church of the first-born of men. It came with Abraham from Chaldea, and George Smith's records indicate that it was truly rhythmical. It may also have come down to and through Egypt by another stream of tradition. The thought has been beautifully wrought out by Prof. Cocker, of the University of Michigan, in his work on Theism.

paigms in Britain. 3. Sweden under Gustavus III. 4. The Society of Antiquaries. 5. Japan Revolutionized. 6. The Revised Version of the New Testament. 7. General Shadwell's Life of Lord Clyde. 8. Philippsen's Henri IV. and Philip III. 9. The Storage of Electricity. 10. Landlords and Tenants in Ireland.

The article on METHODISM is free in its criticisms, yet no way intentionally uncandid. We give only its estimates of the forces of Methodism :

With strong confidence in the accuracy of our statements, we compute the adherents of Methodism at five millions in connection with the Bristol Conferences and fourteen millions with the American. The ecclesiastical property in Great Britain may be calculated at eleven millions, and in America at eighteen millions sterling. The annual contributions for purely Methodist purposes in Great Britain amount to two and a half millions sterling, and in the rest of Methodism to three times that amount.—P. 17.

The judgment upon the Revised Version is decidedly adverse :

In conclusion, we reiterate our disappointment with this Revised Version as a whole. It will remain a monument of the industry of its authors and a treasury of their opinions and erudition ; but, unless we are entirely mistaken, until its English has undergone thorough revision it will not supplant the Authorized Version. After all, the chief use of the present attempt will be as a work of reference in which the grammatical niceties of the New Testament diction are treated with labored fidelity. It will no more furnish an authorized version to eighty millions of English-speaking people than any number of *mémoires pour servir* will give them a standard history. The superior critical apparatus at the disposal of our scholars, and their advanced scientific knowledge of grammar, seem to have been rather impediments than aids ; and we are left with another critical commentary on the New Testament, but not with a new version which will mold our thoughts and afford a dignified vehicle for the great truths of revelation.—P. 96.

BRITISH QUARTERLY REVIEW, July, 1881. (London.)—1. Augustodunum. 2. Carlyle, and Mrs. Carlyle : A Ten-Years' Reminiscence. 3. New Policy of the Vatican. 4. The Land Difficulty in India. 5. The Revised Version of the New Testament. 6. The French Republic.

The decision of this Quarterly upon the New Revision is somewhat dubious :

It is almost impossible, in a critical paper, to avoid dwelling mainly on the demerits rather than on the merits of a book. Our business here has been criticism and not panegyric, and we have said little of numerous improvements made by the revisers ; but we cannot close without again expressing our sense of the high value of this version, which is an honor to the scholarship

of our time, and a gift of real value to the Christian Church. The marginal notes will be found to be a mine of information, and will be helpful to the student of the Greek Testament as well as to the English reader. Whether this Revision becomes, as its predecessor did, the New Testament of England for a long period, or is soon superseded by another, we feel sure that the English New Testament will always continue to bear many marks of the painstaking hand of the revisers of 1881.—P. 143.

German Reviews.

THEOLOGISCHE STUDIEN UND KRITIKEN. (Theological Essays and Reviews.) 1881. Fourth Number. *Essays*: 1. BEYSCHLAG, The Apostolic Apothegms and Our Four Gospels. 2. ZOCKLER, Dionysius the Carthusian, and his Book *De Venustate Mundi*. *Thoughts and Remarks*: 1. TRECHSEL, Was Servetus with Luther in Wittenberg? 2. KRAAKE, Was Luther's Mother a born Ziegler? 3. BOHL, Ancient Christian Inscriptions. *Reviews*: GODET, *Commentaire sur l'épître aux Romains*, reviewed by DIESTERBECK. 2. HEINRICI, The First Epistle of the Apostle Paul to the Corinthians, reviewed by SCHMIDT.

Decidedly the most interesting article in this number is that by Böhl on "The Ancient Christian Inscriptions." He commences his treatise by a generous reference to the work in this line now being done by the French *savants* Le Bas and Waddington—the latter recently minister of Instruction in France. The French government has kindly sustained these investigations, and the famous Villemain, while Minister some forty years ago, paid special attention to this study. Le Bas traveled over Greece and its islands and Asia Minor, and as a result of his labors published a valuable work entitled, *Inscriptions Grecques et Latines*. These inscriptions were printed up to the number 1,898, when the learned and industrious author died, and Waddington was intrusted with the labor of finishing the undertaking. He traveled over the same ground and profited by the researches of Le Bas, and extended them on the same line. The result of his labors was a valuable treatise on inscriptions gathered in Greece, Asia Minor, and Syria. This work appears in numbers, commencing with the year 1870, and it is still in the course of publication.

Besides this monumental publication we may quote the important labors of Dr. Wetzstein, Consul at Damascus, extensively used by the reviewer, and those of Professor Kirchhoff in the "Transactions of the Royal Academy at Berlin."

De Vogué's *Architecture de la Syrie Centrale*, in two volumes, is very learned, as is also the *Corpus Inscriptionum Graecarum*, by Curtius and Kirchhoff. The fourth volume of this publication contains Christian inscriptions. Among the 2,841 inscriptions given thus far, in the serial of Le Bas and Waddington, are some which strongly attract the eyes of theologians. These are specially the ancient Christian inscriptions according to the text of the Septuagint thus transmitted to our period. These are of special interest from their contents and their form. Their contents prove to us the familiarity of the Christians of Syria, of the land east of the Jordan, and Arabia, with the Old Testament in the Greek version of the Septuagint, and this at a period when the sources of this knowledge flowed but sparingly, namely, from the fourth to the seventh century after Christ. They seem thus to fill out a chasm in Church history. With regard to their form, these inscriptions present to us the Bible text in a shape in which it appears in extremely few manuscripts. We allude to the form of the text of the Septuagint from the fourth to the seventh century, which was not changed in the course of this time, and now appears inscribed on these tables of stone. The accord of the text of these inscriptions with that of the present *Codex Vaticanus* is very patent on examination. The variations are quite irrelevant aside from errors of orthography, provincialisms, and the arbitrary changes which lie in the nature of the case.

And in this same number there is still another article on Servetus, discussing the question of his presence with Luther in Wittenberg. This same Servetus certainly receives a great meed of honor from investigators and reviewers, who would seem never to tire of reference to the great literary hero of his period. This time, however, it is not Tollin, but a new investigator who dares to question some of the points laid down by Tollin, which will probably give rise to a new controversy of endless length and a ransacking of all the theological libraries of Europe for authorities. But Trechsel is quite likely to have the sympathies of the German scholars of the day, who are certainly growing tired of this endless stream of enthusiasm flowing from the pen of Tollin, which they would now gladly see turning to some other subject.

ZEITSCHRIFT FÜR KIRCHENGESCHICHTE. (Journal for Church History.) Edited by Dr. BRIEGER. Vol. V, No. 1. *Essays*: 1. STEUDE, On the Origin of the Cathari. 2. KELLER, On the History of the Anabaptists, (1538.) 3. BUDDENSIEG, John Henry Newman and his Share in the Oxford Movement. *Critical Reviews*: TH. SCHOTT, History of French Protestantism, Literature of the Years 1876-80. *Analecta*: 1. BÄTHGEN, Philoxenus on the Faith. 2. WINTER, History of Bishop Anselm of Havelberg. 3. *Epistola Reformatorem in the Church Library at Neustadt on Aisch, with a Supplement by TH. BRIEGER.*

German Church historians are now vigorously turning their attention to the history of the Anabaptists among them, who for a while they had seemed to forget. Karl Kraft, in a recent volume of the "Transactions of the Association of Rhenish Pastors," reminds his colleagues of the influence of this sect in the Protestant movements in Switzerland, West Germany, and the Netherlands. The labors of Bouterwek, of Holland, brought many new facts to light, and more recently the Dutch theologian De Wederdoopers and the German Von Egli have opened up a new current in their accounts of the Anabaptists during the period of the Reformation. And still there is more to be said by the author of the present article on the history of this sect in its stronghold at Münster. The Dutch historian, Hoop-Scheffer, declares that the history of the Anabaptists of Holland, during the Reformation, ran parallel with that great movement, and the same may be asserted of certain German territories. By the aid of this work Anabaptist communities have been discovered where there was previously no suspicion of their existence, and the author hints that Catholic writers have intentionally ignored the history of their existence and trials. A persistent effort was made by many chroniclers to represent the sect as the quintessence of all vileness and blasphemy, and they did not in some quarters recover from this base slander until they laid aside the name of Anabaptists and assumed that of "Mennonites." In later years many of these left Germany in a body and settled in the plains of Southern Russia, under promise of protection from the government. This pledge has not been fulfilled to the satisfaction of these people, and they are now emigrating in large numbers to our own land, and settling in colonies in the north-west.

The article on "French Protestantism and its Literature in the Last Four Years" is a critical and valuable review of this interesting subject. Some five years ago, in this same Review, Dr. Schott treated at large of French Protestantism in the year

1875, and then made a reputation for thorough and honest research in this matter, so that a continuation of the subject from his pen will be received with pleasure by German scholars. The article is quite free from that hidden vein of contempt that too often mars all German criticism of any thing in France, and the author treats his French contemporaries as colleagues and brothers in the great Protestant work. He acknowledges the assistance received from the records of the *Société de l'histoire du Protestantisme Français*, and quotes this energetic body as the solid center for the history of the French Protestants. Whoever will study this interesting thesis will find in its members friendly assistance and true counsel. By its annual convocations, its literary organ, and its periodical bulletin; by the library which it has established and the prizes that are offered for valuable essays on its hundred subjects, it has greatly forwarded the good cause of Protestantism in France and vindicated the honor of its predecessors in the work of antagonism and resistance to Catholic injustice and oppression. A very marked advantage of this society is the neutral ground that it assumes in the various minor divisions of the Protestant Church in France, which is a common bond among those whose great interests are mutual. A valuable complement to its usefulness is the publication of an "Encyclopedia of Religious Sciences," under the direction of Lichtenberger, well known as a thorough scholar and fine critic—a Frenchman, though bearing a German cognomen. Nine volumes of this work have already appeared and brought it to the letter H. It is published by the Protestant publisher of Paris, Fishbacher. The geography, ethnography, and statistics of French Protestantism given in this work can be found nowhere else in French publications, because of the custom of French critics and scholars to ignore the Protestant element in France. Hence its great usefulness.

French Reviews.

REVUE CHRETIENNE, (Christian Review.) June, 1881.—1. BRIDEL, The Pessimism of Hartmann and the Gospel, (second and last paper.) 2. ROLLER, Tolerance. 3. SAINT-ANDRE, The Arctic Regions. 4. BERGER, The Part of Dogmatics in Preaching. English Chronicle, Miscellanea, and the Monthly Review. July, 1881.—1. PETER, The Centenary of Saint Benoit at Mont Cassin. 2. SAINT-ANDRE, The Arctic Regions, (second article.) 3. VISME, On August Stahl. Philosophical Chronicle and Review of the Month.

As we opened the June and July numbers of the "*Revue Chretienne*" we were struck with the activity of the French Protestant writers at present, as displayed by the publisher's announcement of new works. Bruston, professor in the Faculty of Theology at Montauban, is out with a "Critical History of the Prophetic Literature of the Hebrews;" Sabatier, of the Protestant Theological Faculty of Paris, announces a new work on the Apostle Paul; and Bonnet-Maury, of the same Faculty, gives us a bulky volume on "The Origin of Unitary Christianity among the English." Kruger, a licentiate in theology, presents the Church with an "Essay on the Theology of Isaiah," while Cuvier, a pastor, treats of the "Advent of Jesus Christ." Then we have the "Words of Faith and Liberty," by Bouvier, professor in the Academy of Geneva, and the "Christians of the Roman Empire," by Aubé. This very remarkable activity on the part of all branches of the Church workers, and especially among the members of the few Protestant Faculties, shows us that the laborers are comparatively many among this small but chosen and truly evangelical people, in the midst of the opposing forces of Catholicism and infidelity. And their literary labors are generally of that practical character that makes them intelligible and attractive to the lay workers in the cause as well as to the professional theologians.

The article on Tolerance in the June number by Roller is quite exhaustive, and fairly illustrates the significant history of the persecutions endured by French Protestants in the course of their history. It was suggested to the author in a very gratifying way on hearing this subject treated as a thesis by a young candidate for theological orders before the Protestant Faculty of Paris. This was no less a personage than the son of the venerable Puaux, for many years one of the foremost

of the combatants in the ranks of French Protestantism. The young Puaux made so decided an impression on his examiners that they were delighted at this promise of a new worker among them; and the auditors declared that the examiners might say, without humiliation, that they knew less than the candidate about the special matter of which he treated. The hearers loudly applauded the worthy son of a venerable father, whose pen had added so much toward exhuming and popularizing the annals of the past. The task of the young theologian was a sad one in respect to his matter, for it was quite impossible to enumerate the cases of toleration toward their faith without evoking the lugubrious specter of the great company of persecutors, among whom the Catholic clergy and Louis XIV. figured in the first ranks.

In the July number we find a very interesting article on the History of Philosophy ("*Chronique Philosophique*") by Bridel. Philosophy has been treated so vainly, and vaguely, and superficially by the French as a nation, in comparison with the labors of the German and Scotch scholars, that there is a growing desire to have the prolific subject presented to the French nation in a more solid and reliable garb. To this end the editors of the "*Revue Chretienne*" have engaged Bridel, a deep and thoughtful student in this line, to supply for their periodical a "*Bulletin Philosophique*," and this article is the first of a series, and perhaps of a regular department. The opening page gives us the platform of the author, and the sources whence he expects to find cognate matter for his labor. He would have desired to treat, in commencing, of the principal features of the condition of philosophy in France from the beginning of the century, but, in default of space for this purpose, he contents himself with detailing to the reader the principal works in French that may serve as guides and teachers in this matter. The first authority quoted is Damison, ("*Essai sur l'histoire de la Philosophie en France au XIX^e siècle.*") This work is declared to be now a little antiquated, while that of Poitou is too hasty, ("*Les Philosophes Contemporains Français.*") The Reviews of Renouvier, in his "*Année Philosophique*," are highly spoken of, and our own observations would authorize us in saying that this author is rapidly growing in power and influence among the French Protestants. Taine is

especially recommended in his treatise on "Eclecticism and its Antecedents," while Cousin, of course, holds a high place in philosophical disquisition. But the highest praise is given to the "*Histoire de la Philosophie en France au XIX^e siècle*," now in course of publication by Ferraz, professor in the Faculty of Letters in Lyons. This work fills an actual chasm, and traces, for the first time, in a series of careful essays, well written and happily grouped, a general and complete tableau of all the philosophical systems that have appeared in France since the beginning of the present century. Four volumes of this work have already appeared; the first devoted to the study of socialism, naturalism, and positivism; and the second to the traditionalistic and ultramontane tendencies. The closing essay of the first volume is dedicated to "semi-rationalistic socialism;" and in the last essay of the second volume he treats of Christian "semi-rationalism," as well as "Gallilcan rationalism," and other phases that lead him to the spiritualistic school of thinkers, to whom he proposes to devote his third volume, while a fourth will contain a review of all the most recent schools now struggling for recognition. It must be conceded that in endeavoring to present a harmonious study of all these authors M. Bridel has undertaken a giant task, and if his "*Bulletin Philosophique*" continues its course until this task is finished, the readers of the "*Revue*" will be favored with his contributions for many a year yet. We are glad to acknowledge that his first "Bulletin" in this number is a veritable review article, and gives promise of thoughtful and fruitful work.

The review of the month by Pressensé, the responsible editor, is a very rich and attractive collection of facts and opinions concerning the living questions of the day. It is quite difficult for a French reviewer to confine himself to questions of mere thought and theory; begin where he will he must step aside in order, for a moment, to treat of the questions of the day. His views in relation to the last hours of Littré are a little peculiar, and, we think, tinged with a little jealousy, because the work of conversion, if such took place, was effected by the priests and nuns admitted to his bedside by the wife and daughter, and he regards the whole affair as quite inconclusive and unsatisfactory. But French Protestantism gladly accepts all these

ground in political influence, in contradistinction to its long seclusion. We see with pleasure that the new *régime* is working with success, and that the departmental synods are to meet at their prescribed dates. A semi-official synod is to meet in Marseilles in October. There is no better apprenticeship for this reviving Church than to use its liberty in cultivating activity and autonomy. These free meetings of the representatives of the Reformed Church are quite as useful as a synod that is broken and decapitated. These unofficial synods harm no one, and produce a sort of pacification which has really modified the tone of ecclesiastical journalism. Harmony is thus on the increase in the ranks of evangelical Protestantism in the form of fraternal collaboration. All those who belong to its ranks, whether official or not, feel that they are serving the same cause.

ART. IX.—FOREIGN RELIGIOUS INTELLIGENCE.

THE JEWISH QUESTION IN EUROPE.

THE burning question of the hour in the line of popular religious intelligence in Europe is that of the Jewish persecutions, which continue with unabated severity in Southern and Western Russia especially. The statistics of damage and outrage in several cities are appalling. Many of those in which the Jews largely preponderated have been burned to the ground—destroyed root and branch—and this in Russia is synonymous with the total destruction of all means of existence. Witebsk (23,000 inhabitants) has been thus swept away; Bornisk, (20,000,) Mohilew, (25,000,) and a score of minor cities and settlements. The latest and most terrible are Korek and Minsk; in the former 1,020 houses and stores have been destroyed, among them the great synagogue and several smaller houses of prayer. Every thing was consumed by the flames—forty lives were lost, and 5,000 persons are absolutely without a place to lay their heads or a crust of bread to eat. In Minsk this devastation and suffering are reported as three times as great. Under these circumstances it is no wonder that the Jewish question is one of absorbing interest, and that it has called forth a timely manual that will be read far and wide in the hope of obtaining some key to the great trouble. This highly interesting and acceptable book is by a well-known publicist, who is more capable than most men of giving an honest and objective view of the matter, untinged by partisan feeling or prejudice. (*Zur Volkskunde der Juden*, by Richard Andree. Velhagen & Klasing. Leipsic, 1881.) We think the readers of

the QUARTERLY will thank us for giving them a compact *résumé* of so timely a contribution to the burning question. The author wisely touches the subject only in so far as there can be no doubt about the case, and therefore meets the scientific view of the matter. The results are thus so thorough and comprehensive that every intelligent person must find as much pleasure as profit in perusing it.

The fullness of facts displayed in this volume are very apropos to the question as to whether the Jews are a nation or a sect. The first chapter treats of the Semitic people as a nation, whose original home was in the lands south of the Caspian Sea, while the second gives us the physical HABITUS, or nature and characteristics of the people, which have at all times and in all zones remained the same. The Jew is distinguished from all other nations of the world, indeed, from all other Semitic nationalities, by his specifically Jewish exterior. The third chapter treats of the commingling of the Jews with other nationalities. Although the national religion expressly forbids this, (Deut. vii. 1-5,) it has nevertheless frequently occurred; and the Jews have issued from it victorious. It is a very interesting fact that the Jews in the Balearic Islands, who have been Christians for over four hundred years, still intermarry only among themselves. The same thing is true of the Christian Jews in Portugal, and those converted to Mohammedanism in Salonica. All examples teach us that it is simply impossible for Jews completely to mingle with other nationalities. And this, by the way, is the great complaint in Germany, namely, that the Jews do not become Germans, but remain a foreign nationality as well as a foreign sect in the bosom of the country. The non-Christian Jews cling to their nationality, even when they desert the Mosaic faith. In Prussia, of a thousand Jewish men who marry, only thirty-nine take non-Jewish wives. Thus the Jews every-where remain "strangers," as formerly in the Roman Empire, with which they refused to assimilate. In the intelligent Roman State no Christians stood over them as stern masters, but still they held their isolated position. "The Jews do not pray with the nations with which they live, celebrate no great Church festival with them, do not intermarry with them. They do not fully enter into the labor of other people, but choose that which befits their condition or suits their taste—physically and spiritually they are different from and antagonistic to the people among whom they live. Such differences stamp them everywhere as a strange race. And such they remain every-where, as far as their inherited peculiarities enable them to demand recognition—that is, where their numbers are great enough to obtain it." Here Andree claims that were such a status allowed to any other nation there would be danger of a race of caste, as in India, where the castes rest partly on ethnological distinctions. Chapter four treats of the peculiar physical relations of the nation. The Jew flourishes in every climate, and multiplies with great rapidity, as he has more children and longer life than most other people. And besides this he avoids all dangerous callings, such as that of the sailor or the soldier. The fifth chapter is highly

interesting in its treatment of the *pseudo-Jews*; through the fiction of a sort of adoption through Abraham, those who are not Jews are received as such into the Mosaic community, as the Falaschas in Abyssinia, the black Jews of the Malabar coast, and the Karaites of the Crimea. Physically these people have neither the characteristics nor the tendencies of the genuine Jews.

Chapter six treats of the language of the Jews. Here, among other things, very curious specimens of "*Jew-German*" are given. The Jew's characteristic speech will often betray him in Germany when nothing else will. Chapter seven treats of Jewish names, and the eighth chapter makes us acquainted with the manners and customs among the Jews. This leads the Christian into a strange and unsympathetic world: we have not even the same chronology, for the Jew begins the year on a different day from ours. "They are in all their home-life strangers to the Germans, as were their forefathers when they first touched German soil." The tenth and last chapter gives a very valuable study of the Jews as they are scattered over the world. According to Andree they number on the whole 6,100,000, of whom about 5,225,000 live on European soil; and the volume closes with an interesting map showing the relative Jewish population in Central Europe. We need scarcely say that the book is written from a German stand-point, as the above remarks clearly show; but this makes it more interesting to the careful inquirer who would closely study the cause of the difficulty now existing between the Jews and the German nation at large.

FRENCH PROTESTANTISM.

A severe and irreparable loss has just been suffered by French Protestantism in the death of Pastor Fisch, one of its most beloved and eminent representatives, and well known in this country and England. Pressensé, his noted colleague in religious work, pays a beautiful tribute to this brother in Christ, as tender and loving as were he a brother in the flesh. The good pastor had just arrived in Switzerland for a short vacation, when he was struck with apoplexy. He leaves a void in the Free Churches of France that is incalculable. His power of work was incomparable and his zeal for the cause of the Gospel was without rival. Fisch was a Swiss by birth, and sixty-seven years old. At an early age he experienced the influence of a religious awakening, and accepted an orthodoxy that was too austere for many, but which was neither narrow nor intolerant.

He went through a course of study with the Faculty of Lausanne at a period when this body was in the height of its power and brilliancy. He began his ministerial labors at Vevay, in a little German church, whose language he spoke with a singular facility; but he was soon called to Lyons, in France, as assistant to Adolphe Monod, who had separated for a time from the official Church. The rationalistic party had succeeded in deposing this great preacher because his burning eloquence was too much for their easy conscience. When Monod definitely left

Lyons for the Faculty of Montauban, Fisch succeeded him as stated pastor in this Church, which soon became a zealous center for home mission work. He drew hundreds of recruits from Catholicism, and his Church soon became one of the distinguished centers of the Protestant Gospel, and he gave himself without reserve to the work of propagating a pure religion. In 1846 he assisted in laying the foundation in London of the Evangelical Alliance, of which it may be truly said that in the sequel he was the veritable incarnation. He afterward met with that body in Paris, Amsterdam, and New York, and he was the very soul of it in France. Before a Christian community of faith and love all petty divergence disappeared from his view. He knew no trivial rivalry nor ecclesiastical jealousy. His affectionate eye and cordial hand expressed the most heartfelt and elevated Christian love. This, indeed, was the secret of his increasing influence in French Protestantism. But this breadth of mind and heart which made him the representative of true evangelical Catholicity, did not prevent him from having well defined Christian principles. He belonged heart and soul to the cause of the Free Church, (*Eglise Libre*), and took part in the synod of 1859, whence sprang the union of the Evangelical Churches in France. After the death of Frederic Monod he became the veritable leader in this cause, and presided over several of its synods with a rare conception of the difficult task which required a prompt and clear mind, and much tact with great impartiality. He was so clearly a model president that for twenty years he directed the synodal commission, and guided the course of the Free Churches in the most difficult period of their history in a country where they form so infinitesimal a minority, and he frequently represented them in the synods of Ireland, Scotland, England, and the United States.

Pastor Fisch was an active member of nearly all of the great Protestant religious societies. Last January we found him pleading for the great African missions which the war with the Basutos threatened to destroy. All the burden of the Evangelical Society seemed to lie on him, and as secretary he visited all its stations. He took a most active part in all home mission work, even to addressing several times weekly the popular meetings of M'All. He was pastor of the Taitbout Chapel, and preached there regularly, and gave pastoral care to one of the sections in the center of Paris, and at the same time gathered in his home at stated intervals all the young men who were looking forward to the pastoral work. One can imagine what a treasure of sympathy they found in him whose charity and love were inexhaustible. God had given him rare gifts: an extraordinary power of work, a singularly ready mind, a marvelous ease in speaking foreign languages, and great physical endurance, which, alas! he abused in doing the work of three or four men. But his greatest power was the flame that glowed within him—the deep love for Christ and for souls, and his ardent ambition to save them. His love was so expansive and his zeal so intense that they extended also to us, and therefore this feeble tribute to his memory.

ART. X.—FOREIGN LITERARY INTELLIGENCE.

THE German theologians are busy as ever in ceaseless efforts in their respective fields, and the list of their labors is not easily enumerated. We find Dorner, of Berlin, enriching the repertory of his works by the issue of the third volume of his *System of Christian Doctrine*, (*Christliche Glaubenslehre*), of which the first and second are noticed on another page. In these he treats of the doctrine of sin, of the devil, of Christ, of the "*Official God-manhood of Christ*," and of the post-existence of Christ in his elevation to the Godhead.

George Ebers, the most popular authority in Germany in regard to Egyptian matters, is just undertaking the publication of a work entitled, *Palestina in Bild und Wort*—that is, in pen and picture. After the completion of the magnificently illustrated work on Egypt, his publishers were desirous that he would turn his attention to the Holy Land with the same lively enthusiasm. But it happened that a similar work was projected in England by the foremost investigators of the last ten years, among whom are Wilson, Warner, and Condor, who are at the head of the undertakings of the English Palestine Association. The German publishers then resolved to give the English work in German garb, and put this task into the hands of the Leipsic *savants*, Ebers and Guthe—the latter being the editor of the journal of the German Palestine Association. The first of the sixty-five numbers that will compose the work has appeared, and treats of the city of Jerusalem. It gives promise of being brilliant and successful in spite of the crowd of works now treating of the Holy Land.

Quite a new feature among German scholars, or at least theologians, is a respectful treatment of Methodism. That there is a growing desire to know what it is, as a new and aggressive power among them, is proved by the fact that Lecky's "*Origin and Characteristics of Methodism*" is just announced in translation by Ferdinand Löwe, of Leipsic. The German critic acknowledges that the "*Religious Revolution*" brought about by the preaching of the two Wesleys and Whitefield has acquired a great significance, not only because a large, active, and powerful sect has sprung from it, that has extended over both hemispheres, but because it has also exerted a deep and lasting influence on the Established Church, and is likely to exert an influence also on the ethical powers of the nation, and affect the course of political affairs in England. With such an introduction to German thinkers in the Church, we predict that the era of contempt has passed away, and that of respectful inquiry has begun—this is all that our faithful workers on the other side now demand. This being granted, their work will certainly go forward.

Doctors of theology and philosophy are wonderfully stirred up in regard to Africa. Dr. Paulitschke is just out with an exhaustive work

on "The Geographical Exploration of the African Continent," from the most ancient period down to our day; published by Brockhausen & Bräner, in Vienna, second and enlarged edition. Such a broad programme as the entire history of African exploration, of course necessitates the review and quotation of a great many noted explorers and authors, and seems a little, in the reading, like beginning *ab ovo*. But the object is clearly to give a sort of encyclopedic review of the work, that one may overlook the entire field in one book and trace the chain of events that are so full of interest. We find, therefore, with the series of authors in its pages, embracing all the great authorities from Alexander von Humboldt down to the heroes of the hour, such as Rohlfs and Nachtigal. To this, Berghaus publishes a new "Physical Wall-map of Africa," through the great geographical establishment of Perthes in Gotha. This has been enlarged and enriched with great zeal, and is full of the newest and richest materials drawn from the latest explorations and discoveries. We need scarcely add that the "Unknown" finds no place in this production of the great map-maker.

The Evangelical Church in Germany is increasing its activity of late in sympathy with the general liberal movements in all fields of thought, and the popular demand is for more light as to the way to counteract the influence and rule of the State Church. In sympathy with this desire we notice occasional works in regard to this very active branch of Protestantism. The latest is that by Aurbach (*Die Evangelische Kirche im Deutschen Reiche*), the Evangelical Church in the German Empire. The author has evidently the best will and the most earnest intention to advance the interests of the popular Church, as it certainly is, but he finds it very difficult to follow out his principles to their logical consequences. The great German Church needs rebuilding from foundation to summit. It was natural in its first steps for it to copy largely from the official machinery of the *Established* powers, but it has long been able to break away entirely from traditions and customs of an official hierarchy, and it is now the desire of the masses to do so. This would soon be effected if the leaders had more courage, and were bold enough to cut away the bridges behind them. To do this the present author has not the heart—the motto on his title-page is *In omnibus Caritas*.

If the Egyptians of the period took half as much interest in their own matters as do other people, there would soon be a flood of warm sunshine penetrating their barren labors and warming them up to new life and effort. Scarcely a month passes without the appearance of some new treatise on a subject quite different from any that has yet been given, so that before long there will be no new worlds to conquer in the matter of Egyptian antiquities. This time it is the Ancient Egyptian Agriculture, by Thaer, (*Die alt-ägyptische Landwirthschaft*), just published in Berlin. The little book gives, in compact form and systematic arrangement, many things taught us by the classical scholars and the monuments concerning the agriculture of the ancient Egyptians. It was

written with a view to making agriculture a more successful method of a people once famous for their agricultural success; but its lively and graphic style, and the excellent plates of ancient monuments illustrating the subject from historical tables of stone, have given it the *entrée* to a higher order of thinkers. Theologians and statesmen may easily find lessons in it—for the former it illustrates and confirms Holy Writ, and for the latter it contains many hints regarding the interests that establish the firmest basis for the prosperity of a nation. Under the rule of Mohammed Ali the first great impulse was given toward a regeneration of agricultural labor in his extensive planting of trees, which has been crowned with effect. Maize thrives in Egypt with proper culture, and might easily be made the standard food of the Fellahs, instead of peas and lentils. The Egyptian wheat of the day is not what it was in the olden time, and some of the *savants* have been trying, unsuccessfully so far, to germinate some of the plump and beautiful seed found with the mummies. Mariette complained that all his efforts had been fruitless, notwithstanding the frequent assertions that this noble grain preserves its vitality through ages.

Professor Schéele, of the University of Upsala, in Sweden, has lately surprised the theological world with an interesting treatise on symbolics that gives some new views regarding the comparison of creeds by this method of study. For some years he has been one of the bright lights of the famous Swedish school, and has conquered attention from his compeers in other lands, notwithstanding the barrier of his tongue, so little studied by the scholars of other countries. A German translation of it is heralded and indorsed by the famous commentator, Doctor Zöckler, whose sign manual to any enterprise is a sufficient guarantee of its worth. With all its learned exactness, however, it does not run the gauntlet of German criticism unscathed. We judge from some of this that the trouble may be partly in the fact that the Swedish scholar leans too strongly toward Lutheranism, a *penchant* not now so popular as in former times. But the fact that Swedish scholars are thus attracting attention is one of interest.

A recent number of the "Russian Review," a monthly journal for the study of Russian affairs, is quite significant in the character of its articles. One of these is on the "Oasis of Achal-Teke," and the means of communication with *India*. Another on the "Hydrometric Measurements on the Amoor Daria, and the climatic relations of Khiva." Still another gives the adventures and studies of a ride through the region of the Anti-Caucasus. . . . We submit that these are very significant subjects to attract the attention of the Russians in a review devoted to Russian affairs; it would indicate that these latter have much interest on the road to *India*.

The Bulletin for the Theological Faculty of Berlin, for its *semester* opening in the middle of October, has just been posted, and it may interest some of our young theologians to have a list of the studies and

teachers for the winter: *Dillmann*: Introduction to the Old Testament; Old Testament History; Exposition of the Psalms.—*Dorner*: Society for Systematic Theology.—*Kleinert*: Exposition of the Book of Job; Homiletics and Catechetics; History of the Constitution of the Evangelical Church.—*Pfliederer*: Exposition of the Epistle to the Romans, and of that to the Galatians. Special Dogmatics.—*Semisch*: Church History; History of Christian Dogmatics.—*Steinmeyer*: The Passion of Jesus; System of Practical Theology.—*Weiss*: Exposition of the Epistles to the Corinthians; The Life of Jesus.—*Goltz*: Christian Dogmatics in its Foundation.—*Lommatsch*: Theological Encyclopedia; Christian Symbolics; Society for Dogmatics and Symbolical Theology.—*Messner*: Historical and Critical Introduction to the Writings of the New Testament; Christology of the New Testament.—*Nawack*: Exegesis of Genesis; Exposition of the Poetical Passages in the Historical Books of the Old Testament. Hebrew Exercises.—*Piper*: Sources of Church History; Archæological Criticism and Hermeneutics; Exposition of Biblical History and the Life of Jesus from the Monuments.—*Strack*: Exegesis of the Aramaic Portion of the Book of Daniel, together with an outline of Biblical Aramaics; Hebrew Grammar.—*Batke*: Introduction to the Old Testament; Origin of the Pentateuch.—*Docent Miller*: Church History; History and Doctrine of the Sects now extant in Germany.—*Plath*: General History of Missions; The Christian Church and the English Government in India.—*Run*: System of Ethics; History of Philosophical and Christian Ethics.

ART. XI.—QUARTERLY BOOK-TABLE.

Religion, Theology, and Biblical Literature.

The Old Testament in the Jewish Church. Twelve Lectures on Biblical Criticism. W. ROBERTSON SMITH, M.A. Pp. 446. New York: D. Appleton & Co. 1881.

The case of Professor Smith seems to present a serious ethical question. Is it right for a man to ensconce himself in a theological chair and use his place for the covert inculcation of biblical opinions subversive of the doctrines held by the Church and intended by its founders and authorities to be therein maintained? If it was an editorial chair of a political party, or a medical chair of an allopathic profession, and the incumbent suddenly assailed the political or professional creed of his founders, we know what would be the quiet and unquestioned result. The incumbent would be authoritatively invited to a perpetual vacation. There would be no hue and cry of "persecution;" no blatancies about "bigotry," "intolerance," *et cetera*. Every one would see at once

that an allopathic professor advocating the opposite practice, a party editor supporting his political opponents, is violating the contract of his occupancy. But the moment a Church acts upon the same obvious principle, namely, that such an officer violate the compact upon which he is selected, then a newspaper rave commences. Bring the question before a judicial court, and we know what the cool application of established principles would decide. But when editors, who on this point seem to have no principles, vociferate against "ecclesiastical tyranny," eulogize the wonderful popularity, learning, and ability of the violator of his obligations, and vilify the maintainers of the right of the Church to decide its own teachings, the Church is abundantly warned to stand deaf to such howlings.

The question will then very properly arise: Are all discussions of the canon to be foreclosed and silenced? Are there to be no free exercises of judgment, however scholarly or candid, upon the sacred records of the Church? That is a fair question. A great advantage would be given to the enemies of truth if they could be really allowed the position of maintainers of free inquiry after the truth of things. And, first, we may answer, that Professor Smith does not occupy the position of an inquirer, but of a dogmatic teacher. In his chair, removed from public audience, he pronounces, or claims right to pronounce, what the truth of biblical science is to listening pupils, who are to accept his *dicta*, to be by them palmed upon the pulpit and the Church. No outside voice must question his *dicta*; for that would be "bigotry," "persecution," "interference with the right of investigation." Regardless of the long-established principles of founders of the chair, and of the pure force of position of the Church, and amenable to no questionings, he is in effect to make his own private opinions by pure force of position the ruling dogma of a large share of the future ministry of the Church. It will at once be seen that the tyranny inheres to the professor and his chair; and that the demand for freedom from illegitimate despotism rightly comes from his opponents. It is a fair and honest demand against a bold usurpation. Professor Smith's position and conduct are morally unjustifiable; his Church did right to deal with him; and the clamors of his partisans are demagogism.

Had this book been written by a studious biblical scholar, and laid before the public for free discussions, it might then be a very different case. The ordinary ministrations of his pulpit wo

not properly involve their introduction before a popular religious congregation. It would be a book that might claim to be addressed to biblical scientists in the interests of religious truth, perfectly consistent with devout orthodoxy of doctrine, and allowing by its publicity a fair play for free criticism. The rightness of such a course would be greatly clarified by the fact of a discovery of new facts in physical science, in history, in archæology, or in ancient manuscripts. Revolutionary changes both in text and exegesis have been repeatedly effected. New discoveries are made, scholarly discussions are prosecuted, radical changes are adopted, and finally brought into orthodox and popular acceptance. The spurious text of the "three witnesses" was first invalidated by a scholarly comparison of manuscripts; it was then boldly impugned by Churchly scholars; it was next condemned by orthodox commentators; it was thence disused as a proof-text by defenders of the doctrine of the trinity; and finally it was, with a great unanimity, omitted from our new Revised Version. So, also, when geology began to reveal the secrets of the earth's structure, a few sentences from the illustrious Chalmers opened a revolution in our exegesis of the first chapter of Genesis. We are told by those who profess to know that the unanimity among scientists augurs, and will soon compel, a similar revolution in the exegesis of chapter second. Romanism allows Mivart to interpret both chapters by the light of his doctrine of evolution. These revolutionary changes, however, require a fundamental demand, not the needs of a schemer for originality of invention. They must come from a high and well-tried authority, not be imported from Germany by a dapper young gentleman in his overcoat pocket.

At start Professor Smith entirely rejects, it is right to say, the dogma of anti-supernaturalism. He accepts miracle and inspiration. He professes faith in our evangelicism, and expresses his religious impressions in language which, unless we charge him with the use of those double meanings with which "liberalists" love to clothe rationalistic thoughts in evangelistic language, must be accepted as sincere. The Old Testament, however, in his hands, (as successor to his German teachers,) is demolished and reconstructed. In his view the reconstruction leaves undisturbed the experience and theology of the evangelical Church. It might be hoped that his reconstruction changes only the arrangement of parts, and leaves the entire canon an unbroken whole. But his whole strain diminishes

the authority of the priests or scribes, and the validity of the selection of the books. The authority of the Jewish Church is reduced to a *nihil*, and the authority of Christ and the apostolic Church is ignored. Isaiah is sawn asunder; Daniel is shut into Apocrypha; Canticles and Esther are abolished; all which seems a consistent finish of the process by which the Pentateuch is dismembered at the beginning, and leaves us from the generous professor's hands a battered, shattered, tattered, fragment of our Old Testament. We are thankful at being assured that the final fragments are a most precious lot of chips. The prophets were eloquent preachers, sustaining a high spirituality, and "have more of Christ in them than the Levitical Law." Whether any predictions of Christ are in them or not (as Jesus supposed there were in Daniel) is not said.

The professor's demolition begins with Genesis and Exodus. He is an implicit believer in the questionable theory that those books are made up of a junction of documents distinguishable by the names of Jehovah and Elohim. But as this distinction rules also in Joshua and Judges, so the composition of Genesis and Exodus could be no earlier than the time of the Judges. We are at once relieved from trouble about any Mosaic cosmogony or Edenic fall of man.

In the Pentateuch he finds three distinct Legislations made at very different epochs of Hebrew history. The *First or Wilderness Legislation* is found in Exod. xxi-xxiii. These three brief chapters, destitute of all ritual directions, are simply the code of secular law for a simple, primitive, Oriental people. This is all of Moses' real Law. The *Second or Deuteronomic Legislation* is found in the Book of Deuteronomy, and first appeared in the time of Josiah; being the *Law* found in the temple, and read in that monarch's hearing with a great reformatory effect. Author unknown. The *Third or Levitical Legislation*, comprised in the Books of Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers, first appeared in the time of Ezra, was designed to segregate Israel more exclusively from surrounding religions, and was a ritual code for the nation as a Church. That we do not know the authors of these Legislations the professor holds to have no influence on the question of their authority or canonicity. But Moses seems reduced to a *minimum*, if not to a myth.

This non-existence of the Levitical Law before the time of Ezra relies for proof on the historic disregard by the Israelites of

its prescriptions during all the previous time, and the actual practice, even by devout Hebrews, of contrary rites. So uniform a disuse of Leviticism proves the non-existence of its code. In detail his arguments from this disuse are admirably anticipated, and nearly all refuted, in Dr. Harman's INTRODUCTION. As to the matter of disuse in total, it is patent on the face of Israel's national history, and, indeed, forms its very structure, that this neglect of the law did take place; that it constituted Israel's great apostasy; and that for it he was swept from his land, his temple demolished, and his people cast into captivity. This very neglect of Leviticus, which disconcerts poor Mr. Smith, is key to Israel's history. Israel's first downfall was for his rejection of Moses; his second for his rejection of Christ.

The lectures are written in a mild and amiable spirit, in a clear and rather pleasing style, and in a lucid but not very forcible logic. Whether the lecturer's erudition is great, as his admirers claim, there is nothing to decide; but he has studied his thesis, of course, however one-sidedly, with great thoroughness. His book suggests a field of research for our biblical scholars; but it opens no epoch, it will work no revolution, it will never stand as a standard. Its whole theory is but one of the countless ephemeral mist-structures formed by the exhalations rising from the neological swamp.

The Theistic Argument as Affected by Recent Theories. A Course of Lectures delivered at the Lowell Institute, in Boston, by J. LEWIS DIMAN, D.D., late Professor of History and Political Economy in Brown University. 8vo, pp. 392. Boston: Houghton, Mifflin & Co. Riverside Press, Cambridge. 1881.

These Lectures indicate that in the decease of the author, in 1881, Christian philosophy lost an able expositor. Dr. Diman was a distinguished professor in Brown University, whose philosophical education had been completed in Germany, under the instructions of such masters as Julius Müller, Rothe, Erdmann, Ulrici, and Trendelenburg. These Lectures were delivered in course at the Lowell Institute in 1880. The eminent scholar found no difficulty in adjusting his style to his popular audience. Avoiding the schoolman's technics, and adopting a free, fresh, flowing diction, he has not failed to give a popular clearness and a fine zest to even the most recondite parts of his subject. An invariable candor and courtesy toward his opponents reign throughout. He is naturally diffuse and copious, but often lacking a terse grapple at the pinch of the argument, and seldom summarizing the conclusion in comprehensive aphorism.

relativity of our knowledge, in which he concludes that the limitations of our faculties, rigid as they are, allow us to attain the knowledge of a basal Absolute. His next Lecture ascertains that this Absolute is truly primordial *Cause*, even though thus far in the argument we have not attained complete Deity. Thence contemplating the general Order of the cosmical arrangements we attain, as based upon this Absolute, the conception of Law. Passing from Law as reigning in the organic Cosmos, to Law and combinations of Law in the minuter details of biology, we attain Design. This argument, he next asserts, in an extended lecture, is rather re-enforced than enfeebled by the doctrine of evolution. God as ruling in human history, and God as endowed with personality and infinity, with a final deduction of inferences from theism, complete the argument and the series. We may now touch some special points of criticism.

In the second Lecture it is conceded, as is generally done by metaphysicians, that Hume's professed reduction of *soul* to a series of thoughts brings in complete skepticism, that is, as to the reality and immortality of the soul. Let us query. It would be well, if possible, at this point to checkmate skepticism. *A series may be as persistent as an entity.* If that series of thoughts is persistent and consistent through eighty years of one's life, it may be persistent and consistent eighty millions of years. A thread of continuity may be as endless as the permanence of a substance. If, as Hume maintains, the world is an ideal system moving on in endless order, why may not an ego be also an ideal series moving on in endless order? If matter is an ideal indestructible entity, why not thought an indestructible line of continuity? The ideal earth through all the past geological eternity has been a continuous ideal persistence, and so will be in the future; what more wonderful, then, would be the eternal persistence of the ideal ego? We should, however, use this argument simply as a rebuttal of the skeptic, not in approval of the reduction of soul to serial thought. The mind, we hold, does intuitively attach the series of thought to a subject entity, a conscious Ego. That Ego is localized by consciousness in our organism, but not identified with any spot or part of the organism.

The agnostic philosophers of the present day, as Herbert Spencer, affirm that the human mind cannot attribute *intelligence, personality*, to an infinite Being. The two ideas, personality and infinity, are so incompatible that thought cannot combine them

in unity. Now, we would like to see that affirmation brought to a closer issue and a manly repudiation. It is a question of psychological *fact*, to be decided by consciousness, and to our own consciousness is the appeal to be made. When, then, for instance, Mr. Spencer tells us that *he* cannot combine the two thoughts in the same subject we, of course, in courtesy concede him the mental impotence he claims. But when he grows aggressive, and tells me that I cannot, I am entitled to reply that I know by the conclusive evidence of consciousness that affirmation to be a falsity. I can, without the slightest mental difficulty, think the conception of an infinite, perfectly powerful, and perfectly wise, ONE. I can think it much more perfectly than I can most finites; as, for instance, such a finite being as Mr. Spencer himself, especially such a Spencer as he here presents himself, a man of great intellect who cannot conceive of an intelligent Omnipotent. Such a divine conception we psychologically possessed for many years before we ever thought out this eminent philosopher; and we cannot now be persuaded that our mind is truly vacant of that composite idea. And, next, having answered for ourself individually, we hesitate not to appeal to our readers or our hearers for the testimony of their consciousness. Can you not conceive the unity of an infinite Being, perfectly potent and perfectly sapient, just as easily as you can conceive an ocean extending from pole to pole, or a luminiferous ether bathing the worlds in light, or a gravitation holding the spheres in harmonious roll? And, then, extending the range of our interrogation, we ask the Christendom of eighteen centuries: Have you the conception of an infinite, all-wise, omnipotent God? We put the question to an older Judaism and to a younger Mohammedanism, and from this whole wide jury of the human intellect we know what responsive verdict we obtain. It is, then, too late in the day for our accomplished philosopher to tell us that an all-wise Omnipotent is "unthinkable" by the human mind. The statement is historically a falsehood, philosophically a "pseud-idea."

In his chapter on *Personality and the Infinite* the professor aims to connect and endow the Deity, thus far evinced by the design argument, with absolute infinity. This aim is, we think, rather in the interest of metaphysics than of religion. Practically we need trouble our faith with the question, whether the God whose wisdom reigns through the known universe is metaphysically infinite, as little as the astronomer troubles himself with the question whether gravitation extends its lines to a

attains a metaphysical certainty on that point. The most that we can say is, that if these metaphysical attributes have a true validity and belong to some being, there is no other known candidate for that crown than the Deity of the design argument. The nomination of any other aspirant is illegitimate.

The refusal of Herbert Spencer to attribute intelligence to his Unknown Absolute, his substitute for God, is also answered by Diman, clearly, if not trenchantly. Spencer admits that his *Unknown* is truly *known* as cause and ground of the universe; a universe whose objective character very much resembles a product of mind. This refusal of intelligence to such a cause of such a product looks much like a voluntary perverseness. Nor is that look much relieved by the pretext assigned by Spencer for his refusal. His pretext is the fact that there may be attributes immensely transcending intelligence inconceivable to us. But if to us inconceivable they cannot legitimately come into our reasoning, for "thinkability" is a fundamental test with Mr. Spencer of the validity of a conception; the unthinkable is the non-existent. And justly here: for a man might as well say that a mathematical square is not square because there may be an unthinkable square infinitely squarer. Again, if there is a higher and a lower in attributes, why does the possibility of a higher exclude or render questionable the existence of a lower? Why may not both co-exist? Again, the withdrawal of intelligence, intelligence of the most transcendent character, leaves an irreparably maimed conception, destroying its claim as an "Absolute." Whatever its other attributes, if it knows neither itself nor any thing else, if it can never act with intelligence, the greater its being the greater its monstrosity. It has no claim to existence, and its very conception should be precipitated out of human thought.

The closing chapter, *Inferences from Theism*, should, we think, have presented some definite and impressive Christian views of the belief in God. We wish our eloquent professor, without violating that courtesy which he so finely maintains toward opponents throughout his volume, had called to attention the fact that theism is not only an intellectual but a moral and profoundly religious question, involving something more of responsibility than does the question of the nature of the comet or the plutonic theory of the earth. How eloquently could he have pictured the desolateness of the spirit vacant of the divine Idea, the fearfulness of the probability that an atheistic creed, being the result of a god-

less heart, has within it an infinite danger; and how completely the impossibility of prayer for an atheistic soul leaves it without all remedy or rescue. And when he tells so well how little men are theists from the arguments he has presented, why does he omit to tell us whence comes the cap-stone and crown of all our theistic argument? Men do believe in God from the design argument but feebly, justly conclusive as it is. Why? Just because, since it is not only an intellectual but a spiritual question, the intellectual proof furnishes the intellectual conviction, but not the true spiritual REALIZATION of God. That, the demonstration of the Spirit, the truly *knowing* God, comes only from profound religious experience. The human spirit that communes with God *realizes* the divine presence, and truly knows God. The great argument is then finished and crowned, and the undoubting soul rests in perfect peace. Hence it is from our estrangement of the heart from God that springs all doubt of the existence of God. Atheism is, therefore, included in the very body of human sin, the very body of death.

Cyclopædia of Biblical, Theological, and Ecclesiastical Literature. Prepared by Rev. JOHN MCCLINTOCK, D.D., and JAMES STRONG, S.T.D. Vol. X, S-Z. Quarto, pp. 1120. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

We congratulate Dr. Strong on the completion of his big Alphabet. It is a *monumentum ære*, etc. The present volume, with its able articles and plentiful and pertinent illustrations, is at least equal to any of its predecessors. We are gratified to see the announcement that there is to be added a supplement volume. And that will have to be supplemented by another, and so on; so that the good doctor's work will always be "being done," but never "having been done." Thereby comes into existence a new sort of periodical, indicating that no department of thought is more alive and "progressing" than biblical and theological science.

Among the articles we specially note those on the Talmud and the Targums, by Dr. Benard Pick, of Rochester. The articles on Unitarianism and Universalism are contributed by eminent ministers of those denominations. Valuable articles by the editor are Tabernacle, Temple, Council of Trent, Wesley and Wesleyanism, and Wines. Upon the doctrine of the human Will, the editor has impartially selected an Arminian and a Calvinistic writer to present the opposite sides of freedom and necessity, namely, Dr. Raymond and Dr. A. A. Hodge, a selection very satisfactory to all parties.

objects, himself, to Edwards, (quoting Dr. Smith,) as making Will too mechanically caused by antecedents; but, nevertheless, neither Dr. S. nor Dr. H. get one hair beyond Edwards; all denying that there is any adequate power to choose otherwise than the given choice, and so giving us nothing more than the freedom of the clock-hammer to strike no otherwise than it does strike. Their freedom is simply clock-hammer freedom; they never with all their struggles and wriggles get beyond *clock-hammerism*. And on this vital point they are all exactly identical and one. Dr. H. quotes Calvin as acknowledging a will that "determines itself by itself;" but without adding "with power to determine itself by itself," in any other than one given direction; so that we are still in *clock-hammerism*. For a clock-hammer "determines itself by itself" in one solely possible direction. Dr. H. assures us that Edwards' argument of the Infinite series (against the Arminian self-determining power) is triumphant; then, we reply, Edwards triumphantly proved that there is no self-determining power that can self-determine any other than one sole way, which is again clock-hammer self-determination. Again, Dr. H. tells us that Edwards never intended to deny that freedom of choice which is witnessed for in conscience; but, we answer, he did intend to deny all freedom for other than a given choice, as truly as he denied that a clock-hammer can strike any other than a given stroke. So that Edwards did deny, and did intend to deny, that very freedom of choice which actually and truly is witnessed for in conscience; and so does Dr. Hodge. The difference between the necessitation of the clock stroke and of the volition is, that the former is physical and the latter is psychological; but the absoluteness of the necessitation and exclusion of all responsible freedom is in both equal and one. The one is physical and the other psychological *clock-hammerism*. Universally, volitional necessitation is *clock-hammerism*, and should go by that name. And this clock-hammerism can be no more reconciled with the moral sense than a mathematical axiom can be erased from the human mind. Dr. H. condemns our volume on the Will for not investigating it as a purely psychological and not as a theological question. Isaac Taylor censured Edwards (as Dr. H. also does) for the same thing. But is not the criticism absurd? Does Dr. H. affirm that the Will is not to be analyzed in its theological bearings, as well as in its psychological nature? The title of our volume is: *The Freedom of the Will, as a Basis of*

Human Responsibility and a Divine Government, Elucidated and Maintained, etc. Now is it not perfectly legitimate for a thinker to discuss human volitional freedom in its relation to the divine government? In our treatment, the "Psychological Argument" and the "Theological Argument" are each discussed in separate full sections, and the mutual bearings attempted to be adjusted; which we submit is the right treatment of a legitimate subject.

The Editor's Article on *Wines* is a valuable summary, and yet seems to us a little one-sided. As to *Γλεύκος*, the new wine of Acts ii, 13, he doubts whether it is ever called *wine*, and also whether it intoxicates. But Aristotle, a decisive authority, is quoted by Dr. Samson as saying, "There is a certain *wine*, the unfermented *gleukos*, which may both be congealed and evaporated." Again, of the sweet wine or *glukos*, Aristotle says, "In name, indeed, it is wine, but not in operation, first its taste is not wine-like; again, for this reason that it does not intoxicate." It seems that this article should acknowledge that there was a wine, customarily used, which did not intoxicate. There are ample other proofs which we think are not duly noticed. Dr. S. admits that there is "no positive proof" that the eucharistic wine was alcoholic. But he believes it was alcoholic on authority of the Rabbies in the Mishna. But when we remember that the Jews almost universally use not fermented wine but raisin water at Passover in spite of the Rabbies, how is it possible that Jesus, with whom Rabbinical tradition (for Scripture does not command wine at all at Passover) was no favorite, should obey the Rabbinical rule? If the Passover did not allow fermented bread, much less should it admit fermented wine. Even many pagans had scruples about offering fermented wine to their purer gods.

Faith, Doubt, and Evidence. God's Vouchers for His Written Word, with Critical Illustrations from the Autobiography of Dr. Franklin. By Rev. Geo. B. CHEEVER, D.D. 12mo, pp. 318. New York: A. D. F. Randolph & Co. Price, \$1 50.

Ever since the day of Deacon Giles and his distillery, Dr. Cheever has been known as a vigorous and individualistic thinker and writer. He is what he is intensely, as antislavery, anti-intemperance, evangelistic champion; as a Puritan of the Puritans, and a most stalwart defender of the sacred canon.

The nucleus of the present volume is, as the title shows, a parallelism between the MSS. of "Franklin's Memoirs" and some of the New Testament documents. Franklin, before printing,

French friend, which was in due time mostly translated into French and published, being the first publication of the work. It was then translated back into English, which became the second publication—a translation of a French translation. On Franklin's death his autograph descended to his grandson, William Temple Franklin, who went to London to edit its publication. But, instead of printing the autograph itself, Temple Franklin, in order, doubtless, to prevent the precious original from being soiled in the printing, exchanged it off with the French friend for the loaned copy; so that the loaned copy was thus far the source of all the publications. To make matters worse, Temple Franklin made a large amount of modifications according to his own taste, so that it became, in some degree, a spurious Memoir. What became of the original autograph? It descended through the heirs of the French proprietor until a few years since it fell into the hands of our French Minister, Mr. Bigelow. By him it has for the first time been published with all the thorough care of a competent editor.

But the novel point remains to be told. Mr. Bigelow finds in the autograph eight concluding pages which are omitted from all the previous publications! They form, in most respects, the most important part of the Memoir, as narrating the most brilliant points of Franklin's career. Yet they were not in the machine copy; and hence are wanting in all the publications before Mr. Bigelow's. Even William Temple Franklin himself was ignorant of their existence! Dr. Cheever uses these curious facts to illustrate the omission in the majority of manuscripts of the conclusion of Mark's Gospel. In Mark's case the abrupt ending in the midst of a transaction strongly demonstrates that the ending is omitted. Irenæus, who quotes the missing *ending*, is a witness that it existed in very early copies. And Franklin's case shows how the multiplication of copies without the ending does not disprove its existence in the earliest copies, or even in the autograph. Mr. Bigelow here, in a degree, represents Irenæus, having in hand the autograph as Irenæus had the early copy, both nullifying the vast majority of copies with the omission.

Appended to this nucleus, and more or less connected with the subject, Dr. C. gives us critical notes on the genuine text, with a large amount of trenchant *miscellanea*, advocating the high authority of the sacred oracles.

Hours with the Bible; or, Scriptures in the Light of Modern Discovery and Knowledge. By CUNNINGHAM GEIKIE, D.D., author of "The Life and Words of Christ." Vol. II., From Moses to the Judges. With Illustrations. 12mo, pp. 520. New York: James Pott. 1881.

Dr. Geikie's second volume leads us through some of the most difficult parts of the Old Testament, spreading illustration on both sides the onward path. Sixteen chapters preparing with Goshen, Egypt before the sojourn, the oppression in Egypt, and Moses; and moving on with the Exodus, Sinai, the wilderness, and the law; finish with the conquest of Canaan, the settlement, and age of the Judges, until the era of Samson. The twenty-one engravings do not much ornament the book, but do somewhat illustrate the subjects. The revelations of modern research brought to illumine Israel's history are marvelously new and affluent. The wonderful exactness with which the Mosaic narrative dovetails in with Egyptian discovery leaves no excuse for skepticism. Unquestionably true, we now know, were the pens that traced those old events. The volume will not, of course, afford the textual criticism of a commentary, and so could not fill its place, but it presents and illustrates the consecutive history more connectedly and luminously than any textual commentary can. Hence both Dr. Geikie's volumes may be recommended as the latest and best extant historical accompaniment of text and commentary for the biblical student.

The Resurrection Life; or, "Beyond the Grave" Examined. By REV. I. VILLARS, of the Illinois Conference, Methodist Episcopal Church. 12mo, pp. 426. Cincinnati: Printed by Walden & Stowe for the author. 1881.

Mr. Villars here furnishes an extended and elaborate view of Bishop Foster's well-known work, and maintains the doctrine of the resurrection of the body. We do not say *the* "literal" *resurrection of the body*; for a resurrection that is not a literal resurrection is for a theology which states literal truth no resurrection at all. Mr. Villars finds at first, that the Bishop's statements of his conclusions are a little indecisive, and so gives an extended *resumé* of the book by Dr. Curry, which brings the matter to a more explicit point. Whether the Bishop ought to be made responsible for the respected doctor's statements is a little doubtful. But even this quotation from Dr. C. is far from completely giving its author's complete view. If we rightly recollect, his view, elsewhere stated, is that *the resurrection of the body* is the ascent of the soul from Hades to the heavenly state. We think this view is defective in two respects: for, first, there is no *body* in the

case, and, second, no *resurrection*. For surely the soul is not the body, and the soul's going up from Hades to paradise is no more a resurrection than a man's going up stairs to a higher room is a resurrection.

History, Biography, and Topography.

The Problem of Religious Progress. By DANIEL DORCHESTER, D.D. 12mo, pp. 608. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

So loud and general are the boasts of infidels, rationalists, free-thinkers, and no-thinkers, that Christianity is on the wane, and fast reaching its vanishing point, that Dr. Dorchester has concluded to bring them to the decisive test of arithmetic and statistics. Theodore Parker, though claiming nominally to be a Christian minister, yet declared that Christianity is dying, and wondered that Christians cannot see it. The brave Colonel Ingersoll, in his attack on Christianity, quoted from the "North American" on another page, opens battle with a shout of death to his victim. And it is a general assumption with a large share of the secular press at the present time that "the orthodoxy of the day" is obsolete, that it is not believed by its preachers, and that it is to fade before the clear light of science, atheism, and nothingism. During the last winter a Congregationalist minister of Brooklyn resigned his pulpit and seceded into rationalism, and the "Brooklyn Eagle," a leading democratic paper, abounding in ability and recklessness, had the impudent mendacity to declare that if all the ministers of Brooklyn who did not believe what they preached should retire, the Brooklyn pulpits would be mostly empty. We think, therefore, with Dr. Dorchester, that it is time such calumniators should be taught a lesson in arithmetic, so that in prosecuting such talk in the future it should be made clear that they are direct, conscious, and responsible falsifiers.

Our author opens with a recapitulation of the boasts and brag-gartisms of some responsible spokesmen, namely, of Bishop Hughes and Rev. Mr. Ewer, prophesying the downfall of Protestantism, and of Buckle, the "Atlantic Monthly," and Goldwin Smith in behalf of rationalism, predicting the abolition of Christian faith. There would be no difficulty in a brief period of making a volume of such assumptions from the periodicals of the day, that at least the present form of faith was rapidly disintegrating and ready to vanish away.

Now, first, in three leading chapters, headed FAITH, MORALS,

and SPIRITUAL VITALITY, Dr. Dorchester shows by a clear survey that faith in our central doctrines was never more firm, that Christian morals had never before so purified and elevated the age, and that Spiritual Vitality was never so energetic, so active, so all-pervading, and so all-conquering as at the present hour. As a *survey* all this might be contested but for a fourth chapter of STATISTICAL EXHIBITS, which forms the whole argument into an arithmetical demonstration, leaving no room for doubt.

He begins with Romanism, and portrays its rapid decline from circumference to center in nearly all parts of the world. It once had a large share of North America, but has lost its hold forever, and is fading in South America. In Europe the papacy is losing its grasp over the governments, the populations are passing from Papal to Protestant, the intolerance of the Romish nations is breaking up, and Protestantism is building her churches in the precincts of the Vatican. In America, Romanism's gains are mostly from immigration, and these gains are made at a terrible loss of millions in the transfer. Yet, with all these helps, which are temporary as well as costly, Romanism does not advance as rapidly as the population, and is overwhelmingly distanced in progress by the evangelical denominations. It seems to be arithmetically certain that Romanism has about attained her growth in America; and that, hereafter, her history is to be resistless decline. As to the "Liberal" Christians, the disbelievers in the "Trinitarian and sacrificial theology," their history is a monitory lesson. From them, either organized or unorganized, comes the boast that Christianity, or "orthodoxy," is to yield to some new form of faith. And yet *their own history is abortion!* If they stay unorganized, undefined, as no religion at all, but as a chaotic body of "nothingarians," they can keep up a clangor of half philosophical and half declamatory opposition to Christianity as it is, and serve the cause of immorality and vice a great deal more than they intend. For very plainly, it is the very religion they oppose that possesses the aggressive and conquering power. The semi-religion of Unitarianism and Liberalism has, as religion, no vital energy; its main essence is doubt; it disintegrates in its organisms, and is ever likely to melt into pantheism or merge into atheism. Young Unitarianism sprung up in Boston, proud of its talents, wealth, and rank, with a Channing for its leader, and Harvard for its captured stronghold, and it gracefully promised to take the country and the age. What and where is it now? A congeries of rationalism, pantheism, atheism, and

an sort of egotism. In short, shapeless, but highly conceited thing. Missions? How should they, who do not know what themselves believe, organize for the conversion of others? Churches? They are diminished and diminishing in number. Congregations? They have nearly gone over to the "orthodox." That is the plain sum total of Dr. Dorchester's figures.

The conclusive power of these figures can be fully felt only by perusal in detail, or carefully noting a number of totalized conclusions. But with peculiar skill, the author has summarized them in a few interesting diagrams, of which each contains a volume in itself. One diagram exhibits the growth of Christianity since the year *one*, and finds that by far its most stupendous growth has occurred since A. D. 1800. Another pictures the comparative growth of Romanism, Greek Church, and Protestantism, and shows that Protestantism equaled Romanism in 1800, and has made a most surpassing spring of superiority since 1830. The diagrammatic breadth of Protestantism is in 1876 more than twice that of Romanism. And not only the gains, but the forces for future gains, are rapidly going over to Protestant Christianity, and in Protestant Christianity to Evangelical Christianity. If there is to be any religion at all in the future, that religion is to be the *holy Trinitarian sacrificial religion of Protestant Christianity*. That alone is gaining, relatively, absolutely, and rapidly. It gains over all rivals; it gains over the increase of population, and, judging the future by the present, it will gain all the nations of the earth.

There is a wonderful energizing life in these demonstrations. No minister, no reflecting Christian layman, can contemplate them without feeling a fresh spring of hope and strength within him. The book should be studied by both, and the boast of the enemy should be thoroughly encountered, defeated, and silenced. We have no doubt the volume will make a profound impression in Europe as well as in America.

Madame De Staël. A Story of her Life and Times. The First Revolution and the First Empire. By ABEL STEVENS, LL.D. In Two Volumes. Vol. I, pp. 367; Vol. II, pp. 373. New York: Harper and Brothers. 1881.

Dr. Stevens appears as an admirable master in the field of secular history. The same fascination of style and power of delineating character, of picturing scenes and narrating events, exhibited in his churchly volumes, reign through these exhilarating pages. With a rare industry, born of a love of his subject,

he has collected the varied traces of Madame De Staël's character scattered through literature, and brought them into a coherent picture. Hence she appears truly a much greater personage than her past diffusive reputation has indicated. And to those who imagine that Dr. Stevens eulogizes his heroine in too diffusive and lofty a strain it may be replied that the large share of the apparent hyperbole is in the language of her contemporaries, whose supposed extravagances were inspired by an acquaintance with the living subject. The whole group of characters which she centralizes belongs, we might dream, to a higher order of humanity, and there is much that is elevating in being for a while, even in narrative, in their society. The most testing point of Madame De Staël's innate nobleness appears in her heroic self-abandonment in rescuing her friends from the Parisian mobs during the bloody days of their power. How boldly did she rush into a hair-breadth of death, thoughtless of herself, agonized for the safety of others! How nobly she moves at Coppet amid her rescued friends! Her unpurchasable heroism in resisting the power of Napoleon when she clearly saw that he was in purpose a Cæsar rather than a Washington, constitutes a great claim upon our admiration. And her firm and eloquent maintenance of Christian faith, on the lofty grounds of immortality, right, holiness, God, as realities consonant with the highest intuitions of the human soul, furnishes us an inspiring lesson.

Perhaps it is asking too much of Madame De Staël that after spending the heroic vitality of her whole past life in opposing the bastard despotism of Napoleon, she should not finally succumb to the "legitimate" despotism of Alexander of Russia and his allied victors. She received with loyalty and gratitude the visit of the czar at Coppet; and there appears no protest or remonstrance on her part against the attempted restoration of absolutism. That was left to Brougham and his Whig compeers of England, who made Europe ring with denunciations of the knot of royal conspirators who, under the blasphemous epithet of "Holy Alliance," aimed to stamp out the rights of humanity. In due time they marched their armies into Spain and crushed the constitutional government of that country; and they were preparing to send their fleets across the ocean to reduce the South American republics to the rule of Spain, when a few sentences in the Annual Message of President Monroe warned them back to their own shores, and inflicted a wholesome paralysis upon their royal corporeities. We expect a full review of these volumes.

From our first intellectual acquaintance with Dr. Doggett—and we had no personal—as Editor of the “Southern Quarterly” at Richmond, we recognized the impress of a refined and elevated character. We could readily have presupposed the fine description here given, that “he was an unusually handsome and courtly man, in port and *physique*. His complexion was bright and ruddy, his features delicately chiseled, his eye a lustrous blue, and his hand and head a model for a sculptor. As a public speaker, he had a finely modulated voice, with striking facial expression and graceful gesture—all of which was rendered doubly effective by the genuine and unaffected goodness that beamed in every feature, and shone out so conspicuously in every utterance of his lips.” By personal endowments, bodily and mental, he was spontaneously a natural orator, and by grace and nature a model Methodist preacher. His versatility is conspicuous from the flexible ease and success with which he was master at camp-meeting, in the metropolitan pulpit, in the college chaplaincy, in the editorial sanctum, and in the episcopal chair.

Of course, in reading sermons we strive in vain to supply the person and delivery of the orator himself. It is plain that he did not win popularity by any airy neglect of scriptural or theological truth. His sermons are true sermons, admirable analyses, and animated statements of Bible doctrine. He is not in a high degree ornate or pictorial, though his description of the flood and some other passages show ample possession of descriptive power. His sentences are clean cut and classical; his paragraphs often rise into eloquence, but never soar into bombast. We read with special interest his life-like portraiture of Bishop Early, whose stalwart form we remember sitting with the Virginia delegation, as we gazed in our young manhood down upon him from the gallery of the General Conference of 1844.

But the crowning excellence of Dr. Doggett's sermons was that they were no mere eloquent orations, but effective appeals; thrilling congregations, arousing revivals, and gathering prosperous accessions to the Church of God. In better times his reputation and influence would have been not provincial, but national as a complete and princely man. As it is he belongs as a general to the universal Church.

Politics, Law, and General Morals.

The "Spoils" System and Civil-Service Reform in the Custom-house and Post-office at New York. By DORMAN B. EATON. 12mo, pp. 123. New York: Published for the Civil-service Reform Association, by G. P. Putnam's Sons. 1881.

The Beginning of the "Spoils" System in the National Government, 1829-30. (Reprinted by permission from Parton's "Life of Andrew Jackson.") 12mo, pp. 23. New York: Published for the Civil-service Reform Association. By G. P. Putnam's Sons. 1881.

True American freedom must be maintained by perpetual battles against the successive despotisms, which accumulate and rule from epoch to epoch. First came the *slaveocracy*, the overthrow of which cost us thousands of lives and billions of debt. That work is about done; since even its bravest supporters are beginning to tell us they do not desire its restoration. Three more despotisms are now standing in row before us for a similar though bloodless fate. The first let us call the *demagocracy*, or oligarchy of trading politicians; the second is the *rumocracy*, or oligarchy of alcoholic traders and drinkers; the third is the *plutocracy*, or moneyed and especially railroad monopoly.

The *demagocracy*, (an uncouth term for a very uncouth thing,) first in this row of fated destiny, against which the *Civil-service Reform Association* is forming its ranks, is happily the easiest to overcome; and when overcome, the victory over its fellow despotisms will be the more easily accomplished. When our politics are purified, when they become less polluted with mercenary motives, and the minds of men are turned from questions of booty and spoils to principles and public measures, high moral, as well as economical, questions can be brought before the decision of the ballot. Our elections, instead of great moral dangers and depreciations, may become great self-regenerating processes. The ballot will acquire new dignity, power, and glory. It will be the expression of a high and ever rising public sentiment. Our government will feel its ennobling effect, and become less sordid, selfish, violent, and regardless of all high moral interests.

And when our elections become more clearly decisions upon moral and economical questions a temperance platform may be laid, and a contest waged without producing a reaction which places the extreme rum party in power. And then our deep thinkers will study out the methods by which the extremes of human condition can be in some degree lessened; by which the rich may become less rich and the poor less poor, and the number of both millionaires and paupers become comparatively fewer.

As it is now, our rail kings are becoming the true successors of the cotton kings. They have bound us all in fetters of iron. And the maxim of imposing rates in proportion "as the business can bear" enables them to "tax without representation" more despotically than ever the King of England claimed to do over his American colonies.

The method of the Civil-service Reformers is most legitimate. It is an organization to spread the truth and keep it before the public mind. Its purpose is to reveal to our eyes the baseness of the oligarchy which rules and degrades us, to expose its history, its methods, and its destructive tendencies, and to point out the mode by which its whole system may be abolished. That this execrable system can be abolished is fully proved by the example of England, which has gone through the process of reform successfully, as Mr. Dorman B. Eaton has amply shown in his valuable "History of the English Reform," noticed by us in a former Quarterly. It is to arouse the good men of all parties to the need of reform by presenting the facts. And when the public mind is roused to the determined point, it is wonderful with what spontaneity our public men will fall into line, emulous to show that *they* are true Civil-service Reformers. Let the great body of citizens, not belonging to the *demagoguery*, speak with unanimity and decision, and the gang of public thieves will disperse or come quite expeditiously to order.

Offices under governments are either political proper, as dealing directly with governmental policies, as cabinet or congressional positions; or they may be merely clerical or mechanical, as clerkships, postmasterships, etc., the duties of which are the same whatever policies are adopted. It is in the latter class, where mere expertness in a duty is required, that political opinions are not to be taken into account, but solely fitness for the routine work. Thereby the main body of the vast armies of hired retainers no longer exists. Our presidential elections may cease to be great crises of danger in which a hundred thousand office-holders and a million of office-seekers are arrayed in national contest for the "spoils" of victory.

Of the beginning and growth of this oligarchy Mr. Eaton and Mr. Parton, in the above tracts, give a very readable history. Its fitting founder was Aaron Burr. And his successors in the line of infamy were Martin Van Buren, Andrew Jackson, and William L. Marcy. It consisted in organizing either the party, or a faction in the party, into a sort of feudal system. A chief boss was to be at

the head; secondary bosses surrounded and sustained his throne, and a tertiary stratum of bosses underlay them, until the power of the central bossism extended down to the lowest dregs of the whisky saloon and the gutter. Powerful we know is organization. This well-trained organism would as easily overrule the non-political citizenship as Cortes' phalanxes could subdue the sporadic Mexicans. Each lower stratum was fastened under the upper layer by sordid self-interests. It was bound to its masters by bribes in the form of official salaries, gifts, treats and steals; or by the fascinating hope of salaries, gifts, treats and steals. The system was easily self-perpetuating; and, victoriously used by one party, it had to be adopted by the other party; so that the simple citizen proper had his choice between opposite demagogueries. The effect on our public men has been disastrous. We still have statesmen; some in public life, and immensely more in private life. But our public men have great temptations not to be statesmen. Our indictment against Mr. Conkling is that, with the greatest power of being a statesman, he has resolutely refused, and determined to be a place politician. He refused to rise into the character of a great expositor of principles and national policies, trusting to his high statesmanly qualities for appreciation and honor; and has preferred to mouse among stipendiaries, to win support by bargains and cabals. Profoundly we sorrowed over his self-degradation and were compelled to rejoice over his political downfall. It showed how great was Mr. Conkling's power when he could for long weeks hold the American Senate dead-locked; and it showed his profound want of moral sensibilities, when he could stand before the American people during those weeks, demanding that the New York Custom-house, a national and not a State institution, should be put into his pocket as a fund to bind his retainers to his own person by the bribe of salaried stipends.

Yet the greatest danger from this venal system was during the Tweed dynasty. So firmly compacted was the venal gang under that "statesman," so completely bound hand and foot was the entire general body politic, that when his robberies were laid fully before the public, the great model Boss could defiantly respond, "And what are you going to do about it?" Happy it was that he found out by quick experience what could be done. For there can be no doubt that the purpose existed to transfer Tweedism from New York to Washington. The Boss and his gang were in a fair way to draw upon the New York tax-payers

chair, where, on his liberal system, the Nation might be robbed as profusely and defiantly as the city had been.

Civil-service Reform, as we have before remarked, though a political, is not a partisan question. It is *an oralizing* movement, and belongs alike to the private citizen, the press, and even the pulpit. The startling events of the past few months have given a new power to the movement; and the organs of public sentiment should allow the question to "sleep no more." If President Garfield survive the bloody assault which a fitting representative of the system has made upon his life, we rejoice to know that he is abundantly on record in behalf of this reform. Among his many utterances we can select but one: "To reform this service is one of the highest and most imperative duties of statesmanship."

In the line of contributors to the cause of the Reform came first Presidents Grant and Hayes, both of whom gave strong testimonials, and initiated measures which were largely defeated by an obstructive Congress elected on the "plunder" system. Great are the services of George W. Curtis to this Reform. Senator Pendleton, on the Democratic side, has introduced a bill instituting and maintaining competitive examinations, and Mr. Willis, of Kentucky, a bill prohibiting the levy of assessments upon office holders. Thus support comes from both parties and both sections. Both these measures were adopted by the Association at the late meeting of its representatives in Newport. These are very simple and sure remedies. The office-seeking fever will wonderfully cool off when the aspirant knows that no political service, no Congressman's nomination, and no neighbor's signature will aid his ambition, and realizes that he must win by fair examination and pre-eminent qualification.

The Divine Law as to Wines; Established by the Testimony of Sages, Physicians, and Legislators against the Use of Fermented and Intoxicating Wines; confirmed by their Provision of Unfermented Wines to be used for Medicinal and Sacramental Purposes. By G. W. SAMSON, D.D., former President of Columbian University, Washington, D. C. 12mo, pp. 326. New York: National Temperance Society and Publication House. 1880.

If Dr. Samson had left the stiff word "Law" out, and had called his book what it is, a history—*A history of the wine battle through all lands and ages*—he would have presented a much more inviting title and won more readers. His style, too, is often slightly stiff, giving the impression of the pedantic, and unsuitable to the pop-

ular purpose of his volume. But these are slight disparagements. He does give a very interesting survey of the historic field of the moral war against alcohol, waged by the wise and good from the dawn to the present day, through all the recorded nations of the earth. Appetite has cried *Give! give!* and wisdom has cried *Withhold! withhold!* The drunkard, the moderate drinker, and the total abstainer, each has a pedigree that stretches back to the flood. And the advancing ages diminish not the heat of the battle or the danger of the result. Alcoholism is as fatal to civilized as to savage life. Wealth and refinement bring on luxuries and the wondrously delicate mixtures that infuse fascination into the cup of death. Art, guided by science, strengthens the alcoholic proportions of the draught, and aims a deadlier poison as well as a deeper attraction to the destroyer of mind, life, and soul. Never were its organized forces so great as now, never its threats so full of power and fatality. Mr. Parton is not far from right when he says the human race is on probation; and that it is a most serious question whether human existence is not to be drowned in the bottomless, burning hell of alcohol.

There have been, as Dr. Samson fully shows, three methods by which the wise and good have endeavored to restrain and prevent the ravages of the alcoholic curse. These are *dilution*, the remedy of the "moderate drinker;" *unfermented grape juice*, the divine method of pure nature; and *total abstinence*, the method of the purist and the reformer. The Egyptian priests appear to have been total abstainers, and they prohibited to their kings all but *the unfermented grape juice*. The apparatuses by which the Egyptian people strained out the pure juice are still preserved in picture. The three or four methods by which this preservation of the unfermented juice was attained are amply furnished in the Greek and Latin classics. And this unfermented juice was called *wine*. It was expressly and repeatedly called *wine* by so great a master of Greek as Aristotle, not "by courtesy," as Dr. Crosby unwisely imagines, but as its true, generic name. The very words by which the unfermented wine was designated in both Greek and Latin, namely, *gleukos* and *mustum*, are adjectives with the word *wine* understood. By long use, indicating the protracted popular existence of the unfermented article, the adjective degenerated into a noun, until the implication of the word *wine* was popularly forgotten. And now our learned missionaries duly report from the East that the *must* is never called *wine!* And then some of our home divines, as Dr. Crosby and

Dr. Hodge, with a very dynamic emphasis proclaim that alcohol is a necessary element in the communion cup !

Among the holy sages and saints of various ages purity from alcohol was a sacred maxim. The Egyptian priest, the Brahman, the Nazarite, the Spartan, all were pure. And the purest of sacred rites were *wineless*, even among those we are accustomed to call *heathen*. Both Æschylus and Sophocles represent the offerers as bringing *wineless* oblations to the holy gods. The Grecian offerers to the Sun, Athenæus tells us, presented libations not of wine but honey, since the pure Sun has no affinity with drunkenness. Others offered wine only to evil deities. The wine at the Passover came not from the divine Law, but from the vinous Rabbies, but even they prescribed dilution. And it is from these Rabbies alone that our Cyclopedist, noticed on another page, draws the conclusion that Jesus drank a paschal alcohol. All the four narrations of the sacred supper say that the cup contained simply the *offspring of the vine*, which alcohol is not. And the following testimony, given by Dr. Samson, indicates that however obedient the Christian disciples of these Rabbies are, or hold Jesus to have been, their Jewish disciples set the rabbinical rule at defiance :

In visits to the synagogues of Cairo, Jerusalem, and other Oriental cities, in inquiries at Washington, D. C., from eminent Rabbies resident in the East, as far as Bagdad, and in familiar acquaintance with Rabbies and merchants who are Israelites in New York, the writer has found one universal testimony, that *conformity to the law requires abstinence, if possible, from fermented wines at the Passover*. In the metropolitan city of the New World, where representatives of every Hebrew community and sect are met, the Passover wine is prepared from crushed raisins or dried grapes, steeped in water, pressed, and made into a sweet but unfermented wine.—P. 188.

Miscellaneous.

Lectures in Defense of the Christian Faith. By Professor F. GODET, author of "Commentaries on St. Luke, St. John, and Romans," etc. Translated by N. H. LYTTELTON, M.A., Rector of Hadley and Canon of Gloucester. 12mo, pp. 848. Edinburgh: T. T. Clark. 1881. [Scribner & Welford's Imported Edition. Price \$2 50.]

The genius of Godet appears at its best in these "Lectures," shedding fresh light and luster on old questions and topics. We hope to express our appreciation at fuller length in a future Quarterly.

Shakespeare's Tragedy of Cymbeline. Edited with notes, by WILLIAM J. ROLFE, A.M., formerly Head Master of the High School, Cambridge, Mass. With Engravings. 12mo, pp. 231. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Shakespeare's The Comedy of Errors. Edited, with notes, by WILLIAM J. ROLFE, A.M., formerly Head Master of the High School, Cambridge, Mass. With Engravings. 12mo, pp. 153. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Landor. By SIDNEY COLVIN, A. M., Fellow of Trinity College and Slade Professor of Fine Art, Cambridge. 12mo, pp. 224. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

/// By GEORGE H. HEPPWORTH, Author of "Starboard and Port," etc. 12mo, pp. 196. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Byrne Ransom's Building. By HILES C. PARDOE. Three Illustrations. 12mo, pp. 208. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

Toby Tyler; or, Ten Weeks with a Circus. By JAMES OTIS. Illustrated. 12mo, pp. 265. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Gerald. A Story of To-day. By EMMA LESLIE, Author of "Conrad," "Margarethe," "Saxby," "Walter," etc. Four Illustrations. 12mo, pp. 334. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

Havilah. By Mrs. LUCY A. SPOTTSWOOD, Author of "The Fentons," and "Hugh Cheston's Vow." Four Illustrations. 12mo, pp. 262. New York: Phillips & Hunt. Cincinnati: Walden & Stowe. 1881.

Wordsworth. By F. W. H. MYERS. 12mo, pp. 182. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Farm Festivals. By Will Carleton, Author of "Farm Ballads," "Farm Legends," etc. Illustrated. 12mo, pp. 151. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The Foreigner in China. By J. M. WHEELER, D.D. With an Introduction by Prof. W. C. SAWYER, Ph.D. 12mo, pp. 268. Chicago: S. C. Griggs & Co. 1881.

The Westminster Confession of Faith. With Introduction and Notes by Rev. JOHN MACPHERSON, M.A., Findhorn. 12mo, pp. 168. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark. 1881.

Thomas Carlyle. By MONGURE D. CONWAY. Illustrated. 12mo, pp. 255. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Beauty in Dress. By Miss OAKLEY. 12mo, pp. 196. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

Revised Odd-fellowship Illustrated. The Complete Revised Ritual of the Lodge and Encampment, and the Rebekah Degree. Profusely Illustrated. With an Historical Sketch of the Order, and an Introduction and Critical Analysis of the Character of each Degree. By President J. BLANCHARD, of Wheaton College, and Foot-note Quotations from Standard Authorities of the Order, showing its Character and Teachings. 12mo, pp. 281. Chicago: Ezra A. Cook. 1881.

The Beautiful Wretch. A Brighton Story. By WILLIAM BLACK, Author of "Sunrise," "A Princess of Thule," "Macleod of Dare," "The Strange Adventures of a Phœton," etc. Illustrated. 12mo, pp. 240. New York: Harper & Brothers. 1881.

The Incarnate Saviour. A Life of Jesus Christ. By Rev. W. R. NICOLL, M. A., Kelso, Scotland. 12mo, pp. 356. New York: Robert Carter & Brothers. 1881.

The Holy Bible According to the Authorized Version, (A.D. 1611.) With an Explanatory and Critical Commentary and a Revision of the Translation by Bishops and other Clergy of the Anglican Church. Edited by F. C. COOK, A. M., Canon, of Exeter, Late Preacher at Lincoln's Inn, Chaplain in Ordinary to the Queen. New Testament, Vol. III, Romans to Philemon. 8vo, pp. 844. New York: Charles Scribners' Sons. 1881.

INDEX.

Abolitionism	Page 270, 474	Bibles, The Old. The Hebrew Bible distinguished among them	Page 281
Adam, Natural Headship of	752	Why God selected Abraham from whom the Promised Redeemer should come	242
Africa, South, Bassuto Mission	867	Biblical Criticism	772
Expedition of	769	Bibliotheca Sacra	144, 544, 789
Alaska, The Territory of	405	Böhl, Ancient Christian Inscriptions	758
Description of, by Hubert H. Bancroft	406	Bose, Rain Chander. Hindu Eclecticism	605
Sec'y Seward censured for purchase of	406	Botany	551
Importance of Alaska	407	Boutwell on "free ballot and free count"	157
Policy of Russia in selling Alaska	408	Boyce's Higher Criticism and the Bible	875
Climate, Resources, and Population	409	Bredif's Political Eloquence in Greece	600
Thirty Thousand Souls in need of the Gospel	420	Bridel, History of Philosophy	788
Religion and Character	416	British and For'n Evang'l Review. 182, 357, 753	
American Cath. Quar. Review	144, 389, 742	British Quarterly Review	182, 357, 547, 757
American Reviews	144, 389, 537, 739	Brown, J. Baldwin, on Pious Atheism	154
Amoeba, lowest form of animal life	553	Brotherhood of Men	569
Anabaptists	760	Buttz, H. A., Revised Version of New Testament	715
Anecdotes of Phineas Rice's Preaching	543		
Angels	563	Cæsar	586
Animal Life, Lowest Form, Amoeba	553	Caïrd's Philosophy of Religion	162
Anti-Semitic Persecutions	556	Calaveras' Skull, Prof. Whitney's	583
Antislavery Movement, American, Churches and Mr. Garrison	270, 474	Calderwood's Science and Religion	581
Apocrypha, (The Old Testament.) Christianity not independent of Judaism	77	Calvinism	752
I Esdras. II Esdras	80	Carey's Circumstantial Evidences of Christianity	569
Tobit and Judith	82, 88	Characteristics of English Thought in the Eighteenth Century	246
Additions to Esther and Daniel	85, 86	Literature, Characteristic Features of the Century	247
The Prayer of Manasseh	87	First Characteristic. A tendency to exalt logical reason at the expense of the intuitions	247
The Wisdom of Solomon	88	Second. Superficiality of thought	248
Ecclesiasticus and Baruch	90, 92	Third. Superficial political discussion	250
Epistle of Jeremiah	92	Fourth. The thought of the century, critical and destructive philosophy	251
The Book of Maccabees	93	Carlyle, Thomas, Reminiscences	547, 549
The Question of Canonicty	97	Chamberlain's History of the Bible	560
Deutero-Canonical Character	99	Chambers, New Bible Revision	740
Criticism and Literature	101	Cheever's Faith, Doubt, and Evidence	782
Argyle, Duke of, quoted	152, 154	Chemistry, Religion and	575
Atheism of the Day, Professedly Pious	154	Chinese Education, Philosophy, Letters	604
Athletism	735	In America, Gibson's	23
Atonement	758	Question, Miller's	23
Aurbach: Evangelical Church in Germany	770	Choice, The Freedom of, J. Miley	494
Authorship of Fourth Gospel	173	Christ	567, 569
		Christ and our Century, A. A. Lipscomb	635
Baird's "Rise of the Huguenots"	108	Christ and Man, same relations	659
"Ballot, a free and a fair count"	157	Christ furnished a typical manhood	663
Bancroft's Native Races, etc	405	Skepticism result of Materialism	666
Baptism, Taylor's Letters to Quaker	408	Criticisms of Froude	667
Baptist Review	144, 389, 537, 732	Ruskin	401
Barrande, on Derivation of Species	180	Christian Art Monuments, Italy	357
Bassutos, French Mission among	867	Christian Doctrine, Hagenbach's	579
Beet's Commentary on Romans	855	Church Building in Middle Ages	474
Bernath, on the Italian Reformation	169	Churches and Slavery	270, 583
Bible, disbelief of	745	Cicero	790
Higher Criticism and	375	Civil Service Reform	356
Genesis	376, 544, 562	Clarke, J. F., Shakespeare and Bacon	180, 501
In Pictures, Schnorr's	558	Clark's Wesley Memorial Volume	601
Italian Translations of	170	Colfax's Old Times in the Colonies	138
New Testament, Meyer's	383	Coligny, Admiral, Character of	137
Pentateuch	795		
Poems descriptive of	599		
Romans, Godet's	855		
Romans, Godet's	574		
Revised N. T.	560, 740, 750		
Revisions, Concoran	743		
Story, Bömbeld's, Illustrated	557		

Congregationalism, its Place in History and Literature, J. F. Hurst.....	286	Faith and Infidelity in Germany.....	Page 128
Plymouth Colonists in 1620. The Oldest Religious Elements in this permanent American life.....	287	Faith, Doubt, and Evidence.....	753
Separation from the Church of England.....	292	Fiji, King and People of.....	521.
Flight to Holland.....	296	Fisch, Pastor.....	767
John Robinson.....	298	Fitzgerald's George the Fourth.....	592
Progress of Congregationalism.....	301	Foreign Literary Intelligence.....	373, 557, 769
Declaration of General Court of Massachusetts in 1621.....	303	Foreign Religious Intelligence. 175, 370, 554, 765	
Conscience, Amelia de Lessaulx.....	171	Poster's Cyclopaedia of Poetry, 2d series.....	599
Contemporary Review.....	151, 184, 340	Fox, A. J., Shakespeare: His Genius and Times.....	622
Convent Schools in Belgium.....	554	Fradenburgh, J. N., Zoroaster and Zoroastrianism.....	61
Cooke's Religion and Chemistry.....	575	Freedmen.....	594
Corcoran, Bible Revisions.....	748	Freedmen's Aid Society, 1880.....	333
Crimes, Invasion of, Kinglake's.....	891	Freedom of Choice.....	484
Cumberland Presbyterian Quarterly.....	144, 587	French Protestant Literature, Recent.....	760, 763
Cyclopedia, Herzog's, German, New Edition.....	873	Protestantism, Recent.....	760, 762, 767
Cyclopedia, M'C. & S., Vol. X, S-Z.....	750	Reviews.....	171, 367, 769
Dall's Alaska.....	405	Froude's Caesar: A Sketch.....	586
Dall's North American Ethnology.....	405	Froude's Carlyle's Reminiscences.....	584
Daniel, Book of, Genuineness of.....	145	Garrison, William Lloyd.....	370, 474
First Attack on, by Porphyry.....	145	Gelkie's Hours with the Bible.....	562, 784
Recent discoveries Indorse the book.....	148	Geological.....	538
Daniel's Memorials of Gilbert Haven.....	892	Geological Record, Unbroken.....	152
Darwin, on Plant Action.....	551	George, A. C., Pan-Presbyterian Council.....	45
Darwinism.....	197, 571, 758	George the Fourth, Life of.....	592
Dawkins' Early Man in Britain.....	205	Gerhardt und Harnack, C. dex.....	601
Dawson, Notices, Barrande on Species.....	160	German Empire, Aurbach, Evangelical Church in.....	770
Dawson's Chain of Life in Geological Time.....	188	German Methodism: Its Hopes and Dangers.....	448
Dean's Gibbon's Roman Empire.....	188	Jacob Albright as Missionary.....	463
Degeneration in Nature.....	758	Marvelous Growth of Ger. Methodism.....	465
De Hass, "Bible Lands," notice of, by Universalist Quarterly, quoted.....	151	Financial Statement.....	466
Delitzsch mentally hears J. Smith.....	748	Success of Sunday-school work in.....	467
Delitzsch, Messianic Prophecies.....	181	Successful educational interests in.....	468
Demosthenes.....	600	The German language and literature.....	471
De Staël, Madame.....	787	Lutheran against.....	357
Dexter's Congregationalism, etc.....	286	German Philosophy.....	312
Diman's Theistic Argument.....	776	German Reviews.....	165, 362, 758
Divorce and Marriage, Roedenberg on.....	862	German Ultramontanes.....	555
Doctrine, Christian, Hagenbach's.....	857	Germany.....	399
Doggett, Sermons by.....	737	Phases of the Conflict Between Faith and Infidelity, in.....	128
Dorchester's Problem of Religious Progress.....	735	Gibson's Chinese in America.....	23
Dorne, on Hartmann's Pessimism.....	168	Mosaic Era.....	795
Douglas's Christian Doctrine.....	769	Pastoral Days.....	303
Dunn's Angels of God.....	568	Given's Truth of Scripture: Revelation, Inspiration, and the Canon.....	565
Durfee's Index to Harper's Magazine.....	600	God, Unity of, and of Nature.....	840
Eaton's "Spoils" System, etc.....	790	Godet's Lectures, Christian Faith.....	796
Ebers' Palestine in Pen and Picture.....	769	Gooding, W. L., Hermann Lotze.....	812
Edinburgh Review.....	357, 549, 757	Gospels, The Four, Gregory's.....	855
Education, Popular, the Genius of American Institutions, B. Hawley.....	685	Greece, Political Eloquence in.....	800
Justin S. Morrell in U. S. Senate.....	686	Greek New Testament.....	796
Burnside's Bill in Congress.....	637	Gregory's The Four Gospels.....	385
Early History.....	689	Guth, G., Our German Methodism: Its Hopes and Dangers.....	468
Times of the Reformation.....	639	Hagenbach's History of Christian Doctrine Vol. II.....	567
Harvard, Yale, William and Mary College.....	640	Hamline, Life and Works of.....	5
Mass. and New York in early times.....	643	Early Ministry and Editorial Life.....	10
Public Libraries.....	644	Ladies' Repository.....	14
Presbyterian Church.....	644	Elected Bishop.....	16
Columbia College established.....	644	Resignation.....	26
Methodist Discipline.....	645	Last Days.....	37
Common Schools.....	651	Hanson, A. G., Our Pacific Coast Problem.....	28
Religion and Schools.....	651	Harper's Magazine, Index to.....	600
Tourgee's plan.....	658	Hartmann, Life and Works of.....	165
Convent, in Belgium.....	654	Haug's Religion of the Parsis.....	61
Egyptian Agriculture, Ancient Thaeer.....	770	Haven, Gilbert, Daniels.....	892
Elements of the Lord's Supper.....	694	Hayes, President, Message.....	159
English Reviews.....	162, 367, 547, 758	Haygood's Our Brother in Black.....	594
English Style and Spelling.....	861	Haygood's Platform for South.....	751
English Thought in the Eighteenth Century, Some Characteristics of.....	246	Henning, G. W., The Old Bibles, The Hebrew Bible Distinguished among them.....	281
Ethics, Natural, Savage.....	745	"Hereditary Guilt," Doctrine of.....	752
"Evidences".....	569, 570	Herzog's Cyclopaedia, new edition.....	873
Evidences.....	784	Hilgenfeld on Marcion of Pontus.....	864

Hindu Eclecticism, Ram Chander Bose..Page	605	Materialism, "Universalist Quarterly"....	747
Bhagavad Gita, the Hindu Text-Book..	607	Matlock, Antislavery Struggle and Tri-	
What is Hindu Eclecticism?.....	607	umph in M. E. Church.....	582
Its Theology.....	612	Mental Phenomena, Singular.....	748, 749
Anthropology.....	616	Methodism, Carlyle on.....	586
Soteriology.....	619	Methodism, Edinburgh Review on.....	767
Eschatology.....	621	Methodism, German, in United States.....	483
History of Christian Doctrine.....	187, 887	Methodism, German Scholars on.....	769
Hodge, A. A., Vacant Churches, etc.....	740	Methodist Office-Bearer.....	571
Homer, Schliemann's Illos.....	398	Methodists, Sunday Service of.....	830
Houghton's At the Threshold.....	64	Meyer's Commentary on New Testament.....	886
Huguenots, Baird's Rise of the.....	108	Miller's Chinese Question.....	23
Margaret of Angoulême, Queen of Na-		Ministers, Unemployed, Vacant Churches.....	740
varre.....	108	Minto's Defoe, (Eng. Men of Letters).....	246
Calvin, born in 1509, youth, studies.....	110	Mission, French, among Bassutos.....	867
Heresy, Punished with Death.....	112	Missions, Are Indian, a Failure?.....	424
First Protestant Church, 1556.....	113	Missions in Fiji.....	521
The First National Synod of the Re-		Morley's Voltaire, Rousseau, Diderot.....	246
formed Church, on May 26, 1559.....	118	Morris' British Thoughts and Thinkers.....	185
History of French Protestantism.....	115	Morris' Report on Alaska.....	405
The name of "Huguenots".....	115	Moxom, Natural Headship of Adam.....	752
Hunt's Religious Thought in England.....	246		
Hurst, J. F., The Place of Congregation-		Nagler, F. L.: Phases of the Conflict be-	
alism in History and Literature.....	296	tween Faith and Infidelity in Germany.....	128
Huxley's Hume, English Men of Letters.....	246	Natural Ethics, Savage.....	745
"Hymn and Prayer Book," Evangelical		Nature, Unity of, and of God.....	840
Germany.....	569	Naville, The Christ.....	569
		Navy, United States, Story of.....	591
Illiteracy, especially of the South.....	858	Neeley's Young Workers in the Church.....	579
Illustrated Bible Story, Böhmeld's.....	857	New Englander.....	144, 840, 868,
Indian Evangelical Review.....	357, 758	New England Hist. and Gen. Register.....	144, 840
India, Russian Review on.....	771	New Testament, Revised Version.....	560, 715, 750,
Missions in.....	424		763, 796
Infidelity.....	745	In Original Greek.....	796
Faith and, in Germany.....	128	New York Times, quoted.....	749
Inscriptions, Ancient Christian.....	758	Nicolls, The Incarnate Saviour.....	587
Inspiration.....	566	North American Review.....	167, 853, 587,
Italian Reformation, Library on.....	170	Norton, Church Building in Middle Ages.....	579
Italy, Protestantism in.....	870		
		Ocean Grove, President's Report.....	302
Jackson's Alaska and Missions.....	405	Old Catholic Church.....	175
Jewish Question in Europe.....	541, 556, 765	Onahan, Romanist Colonization.....	742
Church, Old Testament Church.....	772	Otheman, E. B.: Baird's "Rise of the Hu-	
French Protestantism.....	767	guenots,".....	108
Johnson's Christianity's Challenge.....	570		
Journalism, American, Infidel in.....	542	Paleontology, Researches of Barrande in.....	160
European, Jew in.....	542	Palmer's Life and Letters of Hamline.....	5
		Pan-Presbyterian Council, A. C. George.....	45
Kinglake's Invasion of the Crimea.....	891	Parsa, Haug's Religion of the.....	61
		Paulitcheke on African Exploration.....	769
Language, Science of, Sayce's.....	887	Persians, Ancient.....	61
Larned's Tales—Norse Grandmother.....	893	Pessimism, Hartmann's, Dorner on.....	183
Lassaulx, Amelia de, Old Catholic.....	171	Petroff's Report on Alaska.....	406
Lecky's History of England, etc.....	246	Philology, The Early Errors and Recent	
Lee, Bishop, mentally heard by son.....	749	Progress of.....	670
Lefèvre, Jacques.....	106	History of the Discarded Philology.....	671
Guillaume Briconnet, Bishop of Meaux.....	107	What is the Science of Comparative	
"Liberallism".....	756	Philology?.....	671
Lichtenberger's Encyclopedie des Sciences		Philosophy, History of, Bridel.....	768
Religieuses.....	199	Plant Movement, Mechanical.....	552
Lipscomb, A. A., Christ and Our Century.....	653	Poetry, Cyclopedias of.....	599
London Quarterly Review.....	162, 357, 647, 738	Politics, Aaron's Rod in, Tongree.....	803
Lord's Supper, Elements of, J. C. Hagey.....	694	Popular Education the Genius of American	
Lossing's United States Navy.....	591	Institutions.....	635
Lotze, Hermann.....	812	Potts' Golden Dawn.....	570
Philosophy of.....	817	Potts' Methodist Office Bearer.....	571
Thoughts of God.....	822	Preachers, Great, Withrow's.....	408
Lutheran Quarterly.....	144, 840, 837	Pre-Adamites: Wilson answers Winchell.....	583
Lutherans against German Methodism.....	837	Presbyterian Council, Pan-, A. C. George.....	789
Lynch, Kemper County Vindicated.....	568	Presbyterian Review.....	583, 789
		Princeton Review.....	159, 840, 868,
McClintock & Strong's Cyclo., Vol. X, S-Z.....	730	Protestantism.....	738
Macaulay, Miscellaneous Works of Lord.....	189	Protestantism in Italy.....	870
Macracken's "Leaders" Criticised.....	839	Waldenses.....	87
McFarlan, in Scotch Sermons, quoted.....	168	Free Italian Church.....	?
Man's Place in Time.....	805	Free Christian Church.....	
Man of Pontus, Hilgenfeld on.....	864	Wesleyan Church.....	
Marriage and Divorce, Rodenberg on.....	862	Methodist Episcopal Church.....	
Martin, The Chinese.....	604	Baptists.....	
Martineau, Harriet.....	880	Protestantism, Recent French.....	

Quarterly Review, M. E. Church, South.	Pages 588, 750	Stephen's Hist. of Eng. Thought, etc.	Page 246
"Real Encyclopædie," Herzog's new edition. 878		Stephen's Johnston, (Eng. M. of L.)	246
Reformation, Italian	169	Stevens' Madame De Staël	787
Relations of the Church and Mr. Garrison to the American Antislavery Movement	270	Stoughton's Religions in England, etc.	246
The Movement Sprang out of the Re- ligious Sentiment of the People	271	Stuckenburgh's Christian Sociology	186
Resurrection, "Beyond the Grave.	784	Summers on Revised New Testament	750
Reusch's Die deutschen Bischöfe und der Aberglaube	899	Sunday Service of the Methodists in his Majesty's Dominions	880
Reviews, German	165, 862, 758	Sunday Service of the Methodists in North America	880
American	144, 889, 587, 739	Supreme Court, Partisanship in, Morgan	356
English	162, 887, 547, 758	Symbolica, Schöele	771
French	171, 867, 762	Symonds' Studies of the Greek Poets	183
Revised Version of the New Testament	715	Synopsis of the Quarterlies	144, 389, 687, 789
Presumptions in its favor	716	Taylor's Letters to a Quaker on Baptism	408
Acknowledged need	716	Temperance	562, 740, 798
Competent authority and ability	716	Tempter, Serpent, in Oriental Mythology	544
Revue Chrétienne (Chris. Review)	171, 867, 762	Terry, M. S., The Old Testament Apocrypha	77
Rice, Phineas, Anecdote of	548	Thaez, Ancient Egyptian Agriculture	770
Rodenburg on Marriage and Divorce	862	Thakomban, Cannibal and Christian	521
Roller on Tolerance	762	Theistic Argument and Recent Theories	776
Romanism	766, 554, 899	Theological Course of Berlin	771
Romanist Colonization in West	742	Theologische Studien und Kritiken 165, 862, 758	
Römhel'd's Illustrirte Biblische Geschichte	557	Theology, Dörner	769
Russian Review	771	Tolerance, Roller on	762
Sabbath Home Readings	201	Tollin, H., on Michael Servetus	864
Samson's Divine Law as to Wines	798	Tourgee, "Aaron's Rod in Politics"	858
Sargent's Cyclopædia of Poetry	599	Trechsel on Michael Servetus	759
Savage, Natural Ethics	745	Trollope's, A., Life of Cicero	588
Sayer's Science of Languages	887	Troy, Schliemann's Researches	893
Schaft's Commentary on New Testament	188	"Unity of Nature," by Argyie, quoted	840
Schöele on Symbolica	771	Universalist Quarterly	145, 840, 588
Schliemann's Ilios	898	Unsworth's Brotherhood of Men	569
Schmid's Die Darwin's chew Theorien und ihre Stellung zur Philosophie, Religion und Moral	197 558	Villars' Resurrection Life	794
Schnorr's Bible in Pictures	558	Wallace's Island Life	571
Schultz's Archæologische Studien über Alt- christliche Monumente	401	Waterhouse's King and People of Fiji	521
Science and Religion, Relations of	581	Wesley Memorial Volume, The	501
Scotch Sermons, Specimen by M'Farlan	162	Westcott's Greek New Testament	796
Scott, "Are Indian Missions a Failure?"	424	Westminster Review	162, 547, 758
I. Direct Progress of the Native Church	424	Wheeler's First Decade, W. F. M. S.	590
II. Educational, Advancement and In- direct influence of Indian Missions	429	Whitney's Auriferous Gravels, etc.	205
Ultimate Success of Missions	432	Whympser's Travel in Alaska	405
Scottish Rationalistic Movement	162	Will, Edwards, Whedon and Hodge on	751
Sermons by Bishop Doaggett	789	Will, Freedom of Choice	484
Serpent Tempter in Oriental Mythology	544	Winchell's Pre-Adamites	206
Servetus, Michael, H. Tollin on	864	Winchester, Prof., Some Characteristics of English Thought in Eighteenth Century	246
Servetus, Michael, Trechsel on	759	Wine Battle, History of	793
Shakespeare, His Genius and Times	628	Wine, Communion, Presbyterian	740
Theories as to his personality	625	Wine, two kinds in Egypt	562
His style	628	Wines, M'Clintock & Strong's Cyclopædia on	752
Skull, Prof. Whitney's Calaveras	538	Wise, D., The Territory of Alaska	405
Slavery and M. E. Church	563	Withrow's Great Preachers, Ancient and Modern	408
Sledd, R. N., The Wesley Memorial Volume	501	Woman's Foreign Missionary Society	590
Smalley's Analysis and Formation of Latin Words	901	Workers, Young, in the Church	570
Smith's Old Testament in Jewish Church	773	Year of Wreck, A	186
Southall, J. C., Man's Place in Time	206	Young Christians, Talks with	604
Species, Barrande on Derivation of	160	Zettschrift für Kirchengeschichte, (Journal for Church History)	162, 760
Species, Preservation of, by concealment	158	Zettschrift für Wissenschaftliche Theologie (Journal for Scientific Theology)	864
Spelling, English, Reform coming	862	Zoology	658
"Spells" System, Eaton, Parton	790	Zoroaster and Zoroastrianism, J. A. Fra- denburgh	61
Stanley's Christian Institutions	604		
State Rights, Morgan	856		

